



LONG LIVE SUMMONS

BOOK 06

Xia Fei Shuang Jia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Long Live Summons

(召唤万岁)

by

Xia Fei Shuang Jia

(霞飞双颊)

Synopsis

The Soaring Dragon Continent is a world of summons, you can only become strong if you become a summoner! Yue Yang, an average high school boy, was suddenly transported into this world. When he woke up, he was greeted with a lot of worried faces and found out that he had assumed another person's identity. Turns out he's the good-for-nothing third son of the Yue Family, who had just recently drowned himself because of a failed engagement. Unlike the third son of the Yue Family who was useless in summoning, Yue Yang succeeded in making a contract with a summoning grimoire on his first try, even when the other guy failed for the past fifteen years. Others would have a headache making contracts with beasts afterwards, but countless beasts tried to gain favour with Yue Yang instead, acting like a good kid before him.

Yue Yang the brat, however, didn't feel grateful at all: "Scram, Mythical Beasts! Do you think you are cool like that? Go away from me now, I only like beautiful summons!"

Even when royal families approached him for his talents, the shameless brat replied, "I'm not interested in government stuff, I'm only interested in beauties!"

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Honey, Crayon, Janet, May, Sheng, Andy, Shiro, Augere, Yunichan, Taffy, youcanbeKing, Sephilia, Zaza, Shiroyukineko, Ignis @ [Shiroyukineko Translations](#)

Translation Edits by Khh, Rango, Krithika, Based Jessica @ [Shiroyukineko Translations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 501 – Work Attire

Although everyone supported Yue Yang, he still decided to take things slowly.

He decided to collect the fresh blood of Liu Ye, Xia Yi and the half elf girl, so that he could refine more blood essence, such that he would be more well prepared. It was a pity that Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian, Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Night Empress and Zhi Zun were all not around, if not Yue Yang believed that the effect would be better.

Yue Yang returned to Yue Clan Castle and found Liu Ye.

While he was collecting her blood, Bao'er came over. "Do you want my blood?"

"Uh..." Yue Yang wasn't sure if the blood of Golden Elves would be able to fuse with that of a human's. But in order to not let her good will go to waste, he still nodded his head.

"I'm afraid of pain, so just take a little blood." Bao'er was normally scared of feeling pain, but when she saw that Liu Ye agreed to Yue Yang's request without hesitation, she stood out for once in her entire life and support him in his research. As for the ox-head Fan Lun Tie, she was a little hesitant when she saw that Yue Yang was collecting Bao'er's blood. She had already expected him to collect blood only from pretty girls. She decided that her blood probably wouldn't be of any use, so she didn't go over to be a busybody. Snorting, she went away.

After having Titan's meat, ox-head Fan Lun Tie's body had already rose to over four meters.

Her power increased by at least two times.

Her rank also rose from Level Seven [Overlord] to Level Eight [Emperor].

If she were to drink Titan's blood refined by Yue Yang, she would probably rise by another level.

Not only her, even ox-head Li Ao and the four orc girls also rose through the ranks rapidly. It seemed that Titan's meat had great effect in levelling up ox-head people and orc people. On the other hand, its effect was limited towards human beings.

Ye Kong and Fatty Hai quipped that ox-head people and the orc people's ability to digest was akin to that of beasts.

It was indeed so. Yue Yang also hadn't expected them to level up so quickly after having Titan's meat. Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li brothers were still alright as they were willing to eat Titan's meat. Anything for more power. But Tian Luo Prince and Xue Tan Lang were extremely against it, they'd rather lose the opportunity to level up than to eat Titan's meat. Of course, if it was Yue Yang, he wouldn't want to have it either... Although the Ancient Titan was huge, he bore a human form, it would feel slightly grotesque to eat his meat... Tian Luo Prince and Xue Tan Lang were still lucky as no one forced them to eat it, but Yan Po Jun and Feng Sha Qi were

met with misfortune.

They didn't want to have it, but the elders in their family coerced them into it. They almost vomited. Luckily, they still got some energy from eating it, if not they would have cried to death.

Lin En, Anna and Bao'er definitely wouldn't eat it. The Golden Elves rarely have meat, their normal diet consisted of vegetables and fruits.

Putting away the fresh blood of the two girls, Yue Yang headed towards the Sixth Level of Tong Tian Tower.

He then returned to the Thunder Fortress.

What puzzled him was that there seemed to be traces of a violent battle in the Thunder Fortress, and it seemed that the Sea Clan was behind it?

If the Sea Clan launched an attack, why didn't the Fat Toad inform him about it?

Carrying these questions, Yue Yang entered the door.

"Master, you are finally back, you don't know how exciting the battle was. It was earth-shaking and extremely exciting..." Fat Toad Jia De went up and delivered the good news even before Yue Yang stepped in.

“In summary, a few Sea Clan members came over and provoked us.” The butler Yan Zheng’s words were simple and easy to understand.

The Fat Toad complained loudly, indicating that summarizing it like that was not impressive enough.

He then embellished the story and made it super exaggerated.

But that finally made Yue Yang understood what was going on. The Sea Clan had already found out the small residency Titan Jr. had in the Thunder Fortress, they initially wanted King Chong Ni to chase Titan Jr.’s housekeepers away but they were rejected by him. Hence the ambassador sent by Empress Jellyfish ordered for the immediate surrender of the members of the Titan Merchant Guild, slaves and any other personnel related to Titan Jr. They also confiscated all assets Titan Jr. had in the Thunder Fortress.

Forget about the support of the Hybrids, even if they weren’t in the picture, Fat Toad Jia De and the rest wouldn’t have surrendered.

So, both sides adopted the measure of using a tournament to determine which side wins.

It is also known as ‘three-on-three battle’ in the Tong Tian Tower.

King Chong Ni was the judge while Blood River, Mountain Elf, Ma Long, Mr. Chen and other Innates helped Titan Jr.'s subordinate secretly, as they fought against the team of ambassadors sent by Empress Jellyfish.

Everyone thought that the ambassadors that were made up of experts would surely defeat Titan Jr.'s subordinates, but they were actually scared witless when the Octopus Man Boss Pan Chan, Swordfish Man Blast, Whale Zhang and Giant Crab Man Ao appeared. Forget about them who were Innate Level Eight, even the weakest Mudskipper Man Sui Zui could make them suffer...

Although they became Hybrids, they were Supreme Innates from thousands of years ago after all.

King Chong Ni was beyond shocked!

The battle was called to a stop immediately and the team of ambassador left after conceding defeat and compensating large amount of valuables... The Sea Clan suffered a heavy loss. Unless they used their entire force, they wouldn't be able to take over Thunder Fortress that was guarded by the Hybrids.

But as they were also facing separation and independence, Empress Jellyfish needed Innate Rankers to reassure her people urgently, so it wouldn't be possible for her to focus wholly on fighting against the Hybrids.

On the next day, she sent men over to deliver a peace treaty and even postponed her revenge plan to send her soldiers to the

Soaring Dragon Continent.

“So, that’s what happened.” Yue Yang had already expected this result.

Even without the Hybrids, the Sea Clan wouldn’t be able to conquer the entire Thunder Fortress. King Chong Ni, Blood River, Mountain Elf and Mr. Chen would never let them do it. This show was only put up by King Chong Ni for Empress Jellyfish. He merely wanted to warn her by showing their strength. Moreover, even if the Sea Clan were to conquer Thunder Fortress, Yue Yang would be able to get it back easily. They wouldn’t be able to move the Thunder Fortress back to the Ninth Level of the Tong Tian Tower right?

Xia Yi who was valiantly clad in a policewoman uniform suddenly spoke. “I fought too, although I didn’t win, I didn’t lose either.”

Fat Toad Jia De quickly nodded and bootlicked her. “Yes, yes. Miss Xia Yi went against a Lesser Innate. If that fella didn’t run down the arena, he would have been history. Miss Xia Yi undeniably took the first step in ensuring our victory during the battle!”

The butler Yan Zheng reminded: “King Chong Ni has other guests waiting currently, do you wish to rescheduling?”

Yue Yang felt that it would be better to wait for a while, so he waved his hand.

In from of the residency before the lake, the few Hybrids were still binge eating. Yue Yang walked towards them and hurled a few pieces of Titan's Meat to them casually.

The Octopus Man Boss smelled it and his complexion ashened.

Swordfish Man Blast looked at Yue Yang in awe: "What meat is this? An Elder Innate Levelled creature? You can kill one of those now?"

Mudskipper Man Sui Zui almost fainted in shock. He kept repeating that he couldn't believe it and that this was a hallucination! He crazily bit on the meat, and with a loud noise, one of his razor-sharp teeth broke. Even his teeth couldn't tear through Titan's Meat. He took out the bloodied tooth from his mouth and yelped in agony: "What the fuck is this meat? I couldn't even bite through it with my teeth... Look, my tooth broke!"

"It's okay now, if the owner of this meat was alive, you wouldn't be able to cut it even with your Platinum-ranked dagger." Mudskipper Man Sui Zui got so scared that he shuddered and got the urge to pee after hearing what Yue Yang said.

"You're a great guy. We haven't gotten to try out the meat of Innate Elder Level monster before, we have to try this." Whale Zhang nodded his head and cheered.

"Quickly reveal the answer, what is it exactly? My curiosity is killing me." Crab Man Ao wanted to know where the meat came

from.

“Ancient Titan.” Yue Yang’s words made all the Hybrids petrified.

They finally regained their composure long after Yue Yang left... The Octopus Man Boss wiped away the cold sweat on his forehead. “This guy is progressing at an alarming pace, he just killed Ocean Emperor, and now, he can even kill an Ancient Titan! The speed of his level up is unfathomable!”

Mudskipper Man Sui Zui laughed dryly. “What are you scared of, we aren’t his enemies And since he’s got a future, we’ll just work under him from now on!”

Swordfish Man Blast snorted. ”You don’t say.”

When Yue Yang returned to his main residency, the half elf girl went forward to welcome him joyously.

She had learnt from her previous mistake. She was very well prepared this time around when Yue Yang returned.

The table was filled with dishes.

She already had warm water prepared and practiced the most comfortable massage technique. Other than her gentle service, she also had interesting performances prepared. The half elf girl practiced a beautiful dance especially for Yue Yang, and eagerly

put it up for him. She even dragged Xia Yi along and prepared a fashion show for him. The half elf girl had already completed all the costumes previously designed by Yue Yang.

There were costumes of policewoman, soldier, air stewardess, nurse, office lady, queen, princess, student and maid. You name it, she has it.

Yue Yang almost howled and push down the two girls on the spot.

“Are they nice? Your slave still has a few unfinished ones, it’d be much better if there’s more time.” The half elf girl who was wearing a maid costume with cat ears on her head was so adorable that she’d be able to bewitch all otakus.

“Perverted guy, I can’t even go out in these costumes.” Xia Yi looked extremely hot and wild. She wore a biker gang outfit. She wore an army cap, leather clothes with short shorts and fishnet pantyhose together with high heels. The only problem was that she didn’t have spilling boobs, if not she’d be able to make Yue Yang’s nose bleed.

It was impossible for Xia Yi to wear this in front of others. And even more impossible for her to wear a silver cross on her neck and add studs on her collar to it.

Of course Yue Yang wouldn’t say that he was perfectly satisfied, he had to be strict in instructing his potential girl.

He pointed at Xia Yi and reprimanded her. “You can’t wear underwear under the fishnet.”

Xia Yi objected to it immediately: “Then you can see everything wouldn’t it? There are holes everywhere on the leather jacket, I can’t even cover anything. And this goddamn shorts, this so short that my butt can be seen!”

“You don’t say, your shorts have to be cut shorter, if not it won’t fit the golden ratio, and your curves won’t be ideally shown. These clothes show your wild side, how can you wear them like a quail? Your shirt has to be shorter too, show your belly, it would be ideal if it goes to your chest, but the sleeves must be long!” Xia Yi was incensed to be scolded by Yue Yang. It was good enough that she was willing to put on this outfit for the perverted guy to see, yet he still felt that it wasn’t good enough? He knew that she doesn’t have a huge chest, but still made her wear this damned attire. And yet the half elf girl with big boobs covered herself so much, but insist on breaking her shirt apart with her big tits, what kind of sick mentality is that?

“Understood, I will definitely alter it more perfectly.” The half elf girl was the most obedient among all as she would listen to all of his instructions unconditionally.

“Master, there are three guests outside, they did not name themselves, but they specified that they wanted to see you.” The maid outside went in to report.

“...” Yue Yang was stunned. For the maid to report to him, it proved that Fat Toad Jia De and the butler Yan Zheng weren’t able

stop the other party. Without knowing the other party's name, who could it be? Xia Yi discreetly asked the maid if the person was a male or a female, upon hearing that she was a female, she immediately followed behind Yue Yang. As for the half elf girl, she totally didn't care about it as she hummed to herself joyfully. It was as if altering the parts of the shirt pointed out by Yue Yang was the most important thing to do on earth.

When Yue Yang stepped out of the hall, he was immediately speechless. "It's you guys?"

Chapter 502 – Blood Oath

The visitors were Shark King, Hai Yingwu and the Big-headed Carp General.

Needless to mention, Shark King had a tall build with a peculiar appearance. He also possessed a super strong power, so it wouldn't help no matter how much he tried to disguise himself, so he did not attempt to disguise himself this time and came straight over. Big-headed Carp General did not dress himself up and came in his normal self, with a funny appearance of a big head and small body. It was Hai Yingwu that made herself look very mysterious as she wore a thick cloak and copied Yue Yang as she wore a mask. But her mask was a Silver-ranked Coral Mask, so it only covered the upper half of her face. The part below her lips weren't covered.

She did not wear the Ocean Emperor's Holy Armor today, neither did she hold the Holy Halberd.

Like many elders of the Sea Clan, she held a White Whale Staff, but no matter how much she dressed up, Yue Yang was able to see through it.

When Yue Yang came out, everyone stepped down.

Only Xia Yi was still peeking at the corner. She wasn't trying eavesdrop, she merely wanted to take a look at Hai Yingwu.

At the same time, Hai Yingwu's eyes behind the Coral Mask were also looking at Xia Yi clad in her biker gang outfit. Both parties

looked at each other in silence.

Shark King was someone who didn't like to speak superfluous words, so he revealed his intentions directly: "The reason behind our visit is very simple, we want to collaborate with you."

"Did I hear it wrongly?" Yue Yang laughed.

The chess piece he laid earlier on was taking effect.

And it came earlier than he expected. He thought that he would have to wait a while more, but he did not think that it would be this early.

"Let's talk about the condition of our collaboration first. We have a common enemy, that is, the Sea Clan. They will definitely send out soldiers to attack the Soaring Dragon Continent since Empress Jellyfish will definitely use revenge as an excuse to continue to control them. Now that they don't have a leader, they would definitely be in chaos and fall apart, if there aren't any battles. Also, other than the Ocean Emperor, the most powerful Nine Headed Ocean Demon King is preparing to seize power. He is the lover of Empress Jellyfish, and has the power of a Level Nine Innate. Although he's not bad, he does not have enough prestige, so he has to make use of the expedition to Soaring Dragon Continent to get the throne." Shark King said truthfully.

"I thought you were the one leading the Sea Clan soldiers?" Yue Yang asked.

“On the surface, it may seem like I am taking the lead in the expedition to Soaring Dragon Continent, but that’s just a trick to get me away. Empress Jellyfish deployed me away from the Seventh Floor of Tong Tian Tower just to make it easier for her to take control of the oceans there. Due to the death of the Crown Prince, she hates me to the core, so she won’t let me have any power.” Shark King smiled bitterly.

“What’s your plan?” Yue Yang asked again.

“I don’t care about anything else, I’ll be contented as long as I can accomplish my father’s last wish and help my sister become the Ocean Emperor again.”

Shark King similarly hated the Sea Clan.

The tragedy of the Ocean Emperor was caused indirectly by Empress Jellyfish. Shark King was especially furious towards the scandal that the Sea Dragon Crown Prince isn’t the real crown prince. The death of Guan Lan was due to grudges from the previous generation, he couldn’t do anything about it. But his father gave all his power and blood to his sister before he died, so the thing that Shark King wanted to do the most was to kill Empress Jellyfish and the Nine Headed Ocean Demon King and make his sister succeed the throne and become the real Ocean Empress who rules over the oceans.

Yue Yang muttered to himself for a while before nodding. “I’m fine with collaborating, but what’s there to collaborate?”

Shark King looked abnormally solemn. “Information!”

Yue Yang smiled. “Then talk about it...”

Shark King reached his hands into his clothes and fished out a special Rune Scroll and passed it to Yue Yang: “This is similar to a Bloodrose Map. It’s called the Three Colors Map, there’s a total of three of these, yours is gold, mine is black, while the one with my sister is silver. When you write on the map within a word limit of ten words, the words will be shown on my scroll map; When I write on the map, the words will be shown my my sister’s scroll, similarly, you will see what she writes. This is the connection between the Three Colors Map. With it, you can ask me anything, and my sister will relay it to me. Of course it is limited to once per day.”

Yue Yang nodded, and agreed that the Three Colors Map was indeed good stuff.

With it, Shark King in the enemy camp would be the best mole, and would be able to deliver the most updated information.

The only shortcoming was that the word limit was too little, capped at ten words.

And it was only limited to once per day.

“Forget about information about the Sea Clan, I believe that other than the Nine Headed Ocean Demon King, the rest of the old

guys aren't your match." Shark King looked at Yue Yang and spoke solemnly: "Now, what I want to say is the information of the other two races."

"The Winged Clan and the Underworld Clan?" Yue Yang secretly frowned his brows when he heard it.

"That's right." Shark King nodded. "The Winged Clan have been living in the Ninth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, and their ruler is the Sky Emperor. They are similar to humans only with wings on their back. They look handsome and are asexual. It's said that there will be a batch of them born in the Birth Lake every five hundred years, and their average lifespan is around two thousand years. Generally speaking, they are very powerful and are Rankers in the Ninth Floor of the Tong Tian Tower. They occupy the largest Sky Island. It is said that they are the descendants of the Winged Clan in the Heaven Realm, and the Sky Emperor is the most talented of them in these thousands of years. He was born with a holy body and after contracting a Grimoire, he owns a Bright Angel as his Guardian Beast.

"..." Yue Yang listened in silence as he started to ponder.

"The Winged Clan descendants call themselves Angels, but actually there is a gap between them and those in the Heaven Realm. It is said that Angels actually have genders, but somehow the gender identity is lost in the Winged Clan, so they became asexual. They used to be an extremely powerful race in the Tong Tian Tower, and helped the Three Leaders of the Heaven Realm with attacking the Soaring Dragon Continent. But ever since their previous Sky Emperor was killed by the invincible Prison Emperor,

they were almost wiped out. The entire race wallowed for five thousand years. They regained their strength around one thousand years ago under the lead of the current the Sky Emperor, Ba Yi.” Shark King stopped for a while before he continued. “The Sky Emperor Ba Yi’s power should be stronger than my father. He already possesses more than three Holy Equipment and formed alliance with the Black Hell King and Empress Jellyfish, and agreed to send troops from Tong Tian Tower.”

“How about the Emperor of the Underworld?” Yue Yang had already guessed that the Sky Emperor wouldn’t just sit still, so he wasn’t surprised by his decision.

“...” Hai Yingwu thought that Yue Yang would be astonished after hearing this, but never did she expect that he would react so calmly.

“Hmph!” Xia Yi felt that Yue Yang was just putting up a strong front.

If not it would be because he was numb to it already with the joint forces comprising of the Black Hell Army and the Sea Clan, he didn’t care about the Winged Clan coming into the picture.

Shark King paused for a while. “The Emperor of the Underworld is a very mysterious Ranker, he ruled over a region even larger than Demon Abyss in the Ninth Floor of Tong Tian Tower. He could possibly be the strongest one among the Ocean Emperor and the Sky Emperor, and following closely behind the Dragon Emperor. But since they had not yet fought each other, it may not be accurate. He doesn’t have any plans of sending troops to the

Soaring Dragon Continent, but towards the Black Hell King's invitation, he said that he would come to the Soaring Dragon Continent to witness the battle and meet you in person!"

Yue Yang laughed loudly. "Alright, this guy's zodiac sign is probably monkey, he's too cunning! With this, he won't offend any sides and can benefit from this without losing any soldiers. It's hard not to admire him!"

Hai Yingwu finally couldn't take it. She did not understand how Yue Yang could still remain so optimistic. "There's still a lot of people out there like the Emperor of the Underworld. For example, the Emperor of Zi Wei Shun Tian, the Black Prince, Thousand Goblin Sect Leader and a huge bunch of other Innate Rankers, you won't be able to fight against them even if you have three heads and six limbs! Do you know exactly why did they choose to collaborate? They are afraid that you will become the new Prison Emperor, so they want to kill you at all cost! As for the treasures in God's Ruins, they can take their time to split it among themselves after they kill their greatest competitor, which is you!" Hai Yingwu warned.

"Ah..." Xia Yi's face turned pale after hearing it.

All the names she mentioned were Supreme Innates that could shake the entire Tong Tian Tower.

If they work together to kill Titan Jr., the big pervert, then wouldn't he be a dead meat?

Although Xia Yi was normally angry at Yue Yang and felt that he's an eyesore, and would quarrel with him every time they meet to vent her anger, she felt uncontrollably anxious for him now that he's facing a huge threat.

She hated the fact that she didn't have enough power, if not she could help him.

It would be enough if she could just help kill one of his opponents. Why was she always the weak one? Why did she reject him when he told her that she could become powerful?"

Xia Yi stomped her feet and left quickly after leaving a footprint on the sturdy ground.

She balled up and fist and seemed to have made certain decisions.

"Shun Tian, Black Prince and the rest are just opportunists, so they aren't the biggest threat." Shark King shook his head. "The ones you should guard against the most would be the Dragon Emperor of the Eastern Goblin Tribe, and the Demon Kings in Demon Abyss. One of them belongs to the strongest race in Tong Tian Tower while the other one belonged to the largest and most despised race in the Tong Tian Tower, so you definitely can't belittle them. But I don't mix with these races, so I don't have any informations about them. You can try it yourself, since the Dragon Emperor has a good impression of you, it will be worth trying. The Demon Kings are the most troublesome one and even the Black Hell Army and Sea Clan are wary of them. As Demon Abyss and Soaring Dragon Continent are all situated in the first level of Tong Tian Tower, the troop from Demon Abyss will be able to enter

Soaring Dragon Continent via the Ancient Passage without having to pay a high price. As for the Winged Clan, the Black Hell Army and the Sea Clan, all of their soldiers will have to pay a price ten times higher in order to teleport via the Ancient Passage. If they were to fail, their strength will be lost tremendously.”

“Well said, I am the least afraid of the large number of soldiers. Let all of them come so that they will be more heavily injured.” Yue Yang laughed loudly: “Shark King, no wonder you are the most outstanding son of the Ocean Emperor! With an ally like you, why do I have to search for another one in a further place. Alright, we are allies from today onwards.”

“I’m willing to make a blood oath that no matter what the outcome of this battle is, I will never betray you. Even if I die, I’m willing!” Shark King sliced a dagger across his arms and fresh blood oozed out.

“Same pledge.” Yue Yang got out his Dragon Slaying Dagger and sliced his palm.

Yue Yang looked at Shark King seriously and then looked at Hai Yingwu.

He raised his right hand that was filled out blood.”No matter what the outcome of this battle is, as long as I am alive, I’ll never betray my ally. If I were to win, I agree to distribute the possessions I got from the battle to the son and daughter of the Ocean Emperor, Shark King and Hai Yingwu, and let them own the vast oceans. I will help Hai Yingwu obtain the throne. I will not go back on my words!”

A teardrop rolled down the Coral Mask of Hai Yingwu.

She walked forward and pulled away the Dragon Slaying Dagger in Yue Yang's hand and similarly sliced her palm.

She then kneeled down, raised her bloodied hand and made her pledge firmly. "I make a blood pledge that if this man before me can accomplish the wish of my father and brother, the day I succeed the throne will be the day I worship him as the new Prison Emperor of Tong Tian Tower. I will lead my people in being devoted to him and never betray him. If i were to break this vow, the future generations of the Ocean Emperor will be cursed and be consigned to eternal damnation!"

Chapter 503 – Xia Yi And Hai Yingwu

After the blood oath, Yue Yang, Shark King and Hai Yingwu discussed for a while more and decided on all kinds of secret languages.

The Shark King then proceeded to find the Hybrids.

After fighting with them, he left the Thunder Fortress. Since he couldn't hide his identity, Empress Jellyfish would definitely suspect something if she were to know about his visit. So he pretended that he was here to seek revenge and let Octopus Man Boss and Swordfish Man injure him before leaving to make it seem more logical. As for Hai Yingwu, she did not follow her brother back to the Flame Island and stayed behind.

When Yue Yang returned to his room, Xia Yi dashed out from the hallway and called out to Hai Yingwu, who was following the maid back for a rest.

“Hey, you, why do you want to stay?” Xia Yi asked. Xia Yi had asked Yue Yang about her before and according to what she heard and saw a while ago, she already knew that Hai Yingwu was the daughter of the Ocean Emperor, so she was even more guarded towards her.

Xia Yi wasn't hostile towards the half elf girl at all.

She was merely a little female slave that was ordered around by Yue Yang, and she's gentle and obedient, so there were no

problems with her.

But the one before her was the daughter of the Ocean Emperor, not only was she extremely powerful, she was also ambitious. Most importantly, the big pervert was her arch enemy since he killed her father. Now, she was asking to collaborate with Yue Yang, could she really not have any ulterior motives?

“Since my father left, there’s no place in this world for us. Brother and I felt that this is the safest place. I guess I will stay here temporarily for a year before I leave. Rest assured that I only have hatred towards Titan Jr., so I won’t steal him away from you. There are two reasons for my stay here. First, I need the protection of my ally; Second, I’m here to be a hostage, this is to show the sincerity of my brother and I.” As Hai Yingwu’s Coral Mask only covered half of her face without covering her mouth, her bitter smile could be seen.

“Is he really your arch enemy that killed your father?” This was what that puzzled Xia Yi the most. How could they collaborate with a man that killed their father?

“My brother told me that father killed himself. He was conspired against by the bastard child of Empress Jellyfish. This cause everyone to leave him. Coupled with the fight with An Xi previously, father was heavily injured. If Titan Jr. did not assist him at that time, brother wouldn’t have been alive. It was because of Titan Jr.’s help that my father was able to die with dignity. So he isn’t the enemy of my brother and I. Regarding the issue about my father. He’s merely a competitor in the fight for treasures!” Hai Yingwu paused for a while, as if she was hesitant, before she

explained.

“So you are saying that you don’t hate him at all?” Xia Yi still felt that this woman is a big threat.

“Yes I do, but it isn’t anything related to my father, it was what he did to me.” Hai Yingwu explained.

“...He did it on you?” Xia Yi felt jealous. That pervert really like girl with big tits so much? Forget about the half elf girl with big boobs, even this daughter of the Ocean Emperor had huge breast, it was only her who was always laughed at by him for being too flat-chested.

“No.” Hai Yingwu muttered to herself before continuing: “It’s my personal matter, I don’t wish to say it.”

“What’s your rank now?” Xia Yi asked again.

“Innate Level One... Is this important? Oh, I undertand now, you are suspecting that he helped to level me up? No, I inherited it from my father.” Hai Yingwu was very smart as she knew what Xia Yi was thinking.

“I don’t know what he is thinking, neither do I care about it.” Xia Yi looked at Hai Yingwu. “But, I will keep me eyes on you.”

“I can understand that you don’t welcome me.” Hai Yingwu suddenly smiled and changed the topic. “Your clothes are very

unique, did he design it especially for you? I have never seen such a peculiar outfit. It's filled with style. It is also very sexy and wild, very attractive."

"None of your business, guest." Xia Yi turned and left.

Hai Yingwu sighed as she saw Xia Yi's completely left.

She had expected Xia Yi's response, so she did not take it to heart.

It was just that her last word made her feel a bit wronged... Guest... if Yue Yang had agreed to her at the Flame Island, then her father might not have died. She might even be able to convince her father to give him the Mother Earth Potion and things wouldn't have turned out like this. It would have been a perfect ending where he would work together with her father. She would help him, serve him... it was a pity that he rejected her, and made her fall back to the cold hard reality from cloud nine.

Of course Hai Yingwu understood that even if he were to agree, things might not turn out better, it was a hope after all.

Now, her father died, and he became a stranger that doesn't belong to her. She had brushed past happiness.

Sigh!

Hai Yingwu started to sigh as she felt undecriably lost.

What did the future hold for her?

She had no idea. Even her father couldn't truly rule over the oceans. Could she become the new Ocean Empress? Moreover, is becoming Ocean Empress really what she wanted? Rather than becoming a almighty Ocean Empress, she'd rather be the naive, dreaming girl guarding outside his room that day on the Flame Island... How good would it be if she could rewind time, but it was impossible...

Lakeside residency.

In the study room outside the masterroom.

“Isn't this business too good!” Yue Yang would probably be the only person on Earth to be unhappy over his prosperous business.

Because Yue Yang was this impressive. He first killed Nightmare and Tiger Nian before slaying Demon Eye and Sky Dragon. Even the Ocean Emperor died in the end. This attracted all the merchants as they flooded the place and were fighting to work with the Titan Merchant Guild. They knew about Titan Jr. being wanted by the Sea Clan but it didn't matter at all as even a blind man could see that the Sea Clan were just putting it up for show.

If the Sea Clan were really capable, Empress Jellyfish would have killed Titan Jr. to avenge the Ocean Emperor long ago, why would she issue a wanted warrant?

Right now the Titan Merchant Guild was just setting out, this was the best time to work with them.

There were also Rankers whose skills weren't appreciated by others there, hoping to join Titan Merchant Guild... The successful case of Fat Toad Jia De had become the most inspiring example in the whole of Tong Tian Tower.

No matter how weak they were, they would definitely be more powerful than the fat toad, who only knew how to bootlick.

Even the fat toad could become the assistant Butler and the president of Titan Merchant Guild, how could those who were stronger than him by a hundred times not shine in the Titan Merchant Guild?

So the Titan Merchant Guild became famous overnight. There were merchants who came over for business opportunities, lords who presented money for protection, and warriors who offered their skills to serve under Yue Yang. They were truly countless. When Yue Yang wasn't around, the butler Yan Zheng and the fat toad could still barely suppress them and didn't report it to him. But now that Yue Yang was back, Yan Zheng immediately reported everything to him.

This troubled Yue Yang.

He came back to the Thunder Fortress to enjoy the gentle treatment of the half elf girl, he wasn't back to painstakingly earn

money...

It wouldn't do if he push it aside, so this made Yue Yang very frustrated.

He sighed secretly. Why wasn't there anyone who can help him with management issues other than the butler Yan Zheng!

Yan Zheng was a capable person, he was meticulous and detailed, but it was a pity that he was too old-fashioned and had to listen to Yue Yang's opinion in everything. With him around, his business would become more prosperous but it would tire him out. Moreover, it's true that he wouldn't be able to manage so many things at one go!

The fat toad was an expert at bootlicking, his interaction skills weren't bad, but his management skills sucked.

The Hybrids only knew how to eat and fight. They want to enjoy life more than he did, so they wouldn't step out to help him with management stuff...

Xia Yi?

She wasn't cut out for it!

Yue Yang tested her just now and realised that she only knew how to fight.

The half elf girl was very smart, and possessed a certain extent of management skills, but she didn't like to do these things. She only wished to spend time serving him, and he wouldn't be able bear to see her being busy over work all day. She was his female slave after all, not a money making machine! Yue Yang didn't have any choice but to clear the mountainous pile of things himself. The half elf girl would gently massage his legs and feed him some food from time to time. She would also occasionally go in with a bowl of dessert. Yue Yang wouldn't lack any gentle treatment with her around.

"If you don't like to do these things, just burn them all!" Xia Yi felt that Yue Yang was asking for trouble, and was secretly pissed off that she couldn't help him.

"Don't shout, I asked you to help me categorize these but you told me to burn them. I'll be better off without you!" Yue Yang was furious.

"If it's not because I saw you being troubled, I wouldn't have point it out!" Xia Yi also became angry and retaliated.

"Hehe!" The half elf girl laughed discreetly.

She had already witnessed countless quarrels between Yue Yang and Xia Yi.

It was like they were born to be at heads with each other. They would quarrel whenever they see each other, but no matter how

much they quarrel, their hearts still lean to one another in the end.

Xia Yi sat in front of the table for the entire night, staring at Hai Yingwu silently. Hai Yingwu suddenly spoke. “Why not let me try it! I think they aren’t too difficult, but just a little complicated.”

Xia Yi felt upset when she heard it.

She was also a smart girl. She knew that it wouldn’t be hard to accomplish the task, but she couldn’t control her anger. She couldn’t help but flare up when she saw the self-recommendations of some arrogant, idiotic warriors; she would slam the table whenever she sees the trade bills that were filled with errors. They dare to deceive the Titan Merchant Guild? Do they think that the Titan Merchant guild is filled with rich fools?

It was because of this that she wasn’t willing to take charge of these. The best way to deal with these people would be to use violence.

Now that Hai Yingwu talked about it, Xia Yi was alarmed again.

Could it be that the daughter of the Ocean Emperor was really capable of this? She was good at these?

“Try it!” When Yue Yang heard her, he remembered the time they were on the Flame Island, she mentioned that if he were to stay, she would be willing to help him build his career. Could it be that the Hai Yingwu was really capable of doing so?

“You trust me so much?” Hai Yingwu looked at Xia Yi and the half elf girl before she asked.

“I’m giving you the all the oceans in the Tong Tian Tower, would I care about this small amount of money?” Yue Yang actually knew that Hai Yingwu’s intention was to quell Xia Yi’s hostility towards her using his own words. When he said this, Xia Yi really sent a disdainful glance towards Hai Yingwu. She was immediately assured. It’s impossible for Hai Yingwu to steal away his assets!

“I’ll try!” Hai Yingwu sat down after hearing it and picked out the huge stack of documents that required Yue Yang to look through.

“...” Xia Yi hmphed and sat down as well, patiently waiting for Hai Yingwu to embarrass herself.

It would be best if Hai Yingwu makes a lot of mistakes and make Yue Yang scold her till she’s ashamed. It would also make her less full of herself.

Ten minutes later, Hai Yingwu stood up.

She handed the documents in her hands over to Yue Yang: “Other than the agreement on top that needs your signature for verification, I have settled the other things.”

Xia Yi was stunned. So fast?

Yue Yang was also very surprised as he saw the documents. He saw that they were already settled and they were very well done. If it was him he would also have done it that way. Under the Xia Yi's gaze, Hai Yingwu carried all the documents on Yue Yang's desk and transferred it onto hers and immediately got started on them... Xia Yi was dazed for a moment before dashing towards Yue Yang. She grabbed him by the collar, and facing him eye eye and nose to nose, she glared at him. "What more do you have? Take them out immediately!"

The half elf girl laughed so hard that she bent over and continued laughing with joy in Yue Yang's embrace.

Chapter 504 – Mysterious Person

“It's not that there's no work. I still lack someone to wash my back, will you do it?” Once Yue Yang said this, Hai Yingwu who was pretending to seriously look at the documents couldn't help but to secretly laugh.

“You!” Xia Yi was so angry that she wanted to bite this brat to death.

“Actually, there is another thing that only you can do.” Once Yue Yang said this, Xia Yi once again became happy.

Something that only she could do?

Look at that, she was really a talented person.

Xia Yi shot a smug glance towards Hai Yingwu. Hai Yingwu was also surprised. What kind of job could that be, that only Xia Yi could do?

The two girls secretly competed. As for the half elf girl, she completely did not care about these things.

She even took the initiative to prepare a hot bath for Yue Yang.

Xia Yi quickly let go of Yue Yang and pulled out a ‘I am already prepared to set off at any time’ kind of appearance.

Yue Yang nodded his head. Then, he grabbed a small notebook from the desk and gave it to Xia Yi: “Tomorrow morning, head off to the Gu Feng Continent and help me inspect the continent’s Ancient Passage’s current situation. I need it as soon as possible. If you think that you cannot do it alone, then I can assign some people to you.”

“No need, I can do it alone.” Xia Yi patted her chest to show her confidence.

Let alone her current Lesser Innate Level strength, even her previous Level Six [Elder] strength was enough to complete the task unhindered.

However, she wondered why Yue Yang wanted to know the situation of the Ancient Passage.

Could it be that he wanted her to leave so that he can be in contact with the daughter of the Ocean Emperor? Thinking about this, Xia Yi became anxious and immediately asked: “Are you busy tomorrow?”

As if he saw through Xia Yi’s thoughts, he extended his hands towards her face and lightly caressed it: “I will return to the Soaring Dragon Continent tomorrow, but I’ll come back here after ten days. Within that ten days, you must grasp the situation of the Ancient Passage. If someone is currently using it, then immediately return to report it. Never let anyone notice you. If someone is using it, then you must record the situation down. The best thing

you could do is draw a picture of the entire situation.”

Xia Yi, who had been caressed by Yue Yang on the face, immediately blushed red.

Normally, she would already be angry, but now, she bashfully lowered her head and looked at her feet. It was as if she could not think at all.

“Remember this. If you discovered someone using the passage, immediately return and report to me. Here’s the Eye Destroying Dagger, use it to protect yourself.” Yue Yang lightly inserted the Eye Destroying Dagger on Xia Yi’s belt.

“If you meet a Demon that you cannot beat in the Gu Feng Continent, just note down his name. It would probably have its uses.” Hai Yingwu suddenly added.

“...” Xia Yi was driven mad and thought to herself, ‘If you do not speak, no one would treat you as a mute.’

She was not a stupid girl so how could she not even understand this?

Naturally, completing the task would be her first priority. She was not stupid enough to act impulsively and create trouble for Yue Yang.

Xia Yi turned around and immediately prepared to return to Gu

Feng Continent to inspect the Ancient Passage. Tomorrow? No, she wanted to quickly finish the task given to her.

Yue Yang suddenly shouted and chased after her.

Xia Yi was stunned. This brat hated to part with her? Or was it to cancel the task?

“Give me your hand.” Yue Yang indicted Xia Yi to extend her hand. Xia Yi looked at the notebook on her hand and felt that he must have regretted. He probably wanted to cancel her task, so she immediately resisted: “I can do it. Why don’t you let me try it? When she said that she could do it, you allowed her to help you. Why don’t you believe in me?” Xia Yi’s eyes were reddening. She felt wronged as her teardrops almost spilled out.

She wanted to throw a tantrum.

However, she desperately endured not to cry, not to let the teardrop fall down.

Yue Yang pulled her small hands and stared at her: “What are you talking about?” When she heard that it wasn’t to cancel the task, Xia Yi immediately stopped struggling and looked at him while pleasantly surprised. Yue Yang only placed a small pouch on her palm and urged her: “There are a few magic crystals and gold inside it. Try to make use of them as much as possible.”

“Ah, okay. Okay!” Xia Yi bashfully lowered her head. It seems

that she was just thinking too much.

“There are two Puppet Summoning Crystals inside. Each of them could summon two Gold Ranked Level Six “Earth General”. If the enemy is too strong, just summon them and let them slaughter without any distinction. You do not need to retrieve them. Safely returning and reporting to me is your most important mission! This golden bracelet is a distinguishing tool. You must wear it at all times and never lose it. It is the puppet’s true core.” Yue Yang softly helped Xia Yi put on the incomparably fine golden bracelet with a peculiar rune on her white arm.

“...” Xia Yi tightly bit on her soft lips.

She tried hard to endure her tears and prevent her overflowing feelings from bursting out in front of him.

However, there was still a single teardrop that didn’t listen and dropped down on his hand.

Hai Yingwu held onto two documents.

However, her eyes were not on it but on Xia Yi. She continued to look at Xia Yi, and at the golden bracelet that Yue Yang had put on her wrist.

After Xia Yi left, the place quieted down.

Hai Yingwu took back her gaze and suddenly asked Yue Yang:

“Tell me, will she encounter any danger?”

Yue Yang muttered to himself for a while and shook his head: “Hopefully my guess is wrong. However, I have a feeling that nothing will happen to Xia Yi, or else I wouldn’t have let her go alone.” Hai Yingwu wanted to speak again but stopped herself. She immediately lowered her head and continued to devotedly work on the documents on her hands.

After five minutes, Xia Yi, who had changed her enticing clothes into a black thief outfit, once again appeared in front of Yue Yang.

She did not say anything.

Her bright eyes seemed to contain thousands of words.

Yue Yang recalled something and waved to indicate her to come over: “I remembered. I am currently researching on blood. Give me a few drops. A few drops would be enough!”

Xia Yi used the Eye Destroying Dagger to lightly prick her finger and squeezed out a few drops of blood on the jade bottle in Yue Yang’s hand.

She looked at Yue Yang as if she wanted to leave.

However, her feet did not move.

Suddenly, she charged into Yue Yang's embrace and forcefully hugged him once. Afterwards, she left without looking back. Her stubborn figure gradually went further away.

Hai Yingwu kept pretending to look at the documents until Xia Yi left the second time. On the other hand, Yue Yang also prepared to take a bath so she spoke with a bitter tone: "She is very cute!"

"Sometimes!" Yue Yang replied.

"Are you the one who helped level up her body into one that could not be mind controlled?" Hai Yingwu calmly asked.

"You have the blood channel of the Ocean Emperor's Golden Dragon King. She also has a good blood channel and its not that inferior to yours. The only thing is that she does not have a father like the Ocean Emperor." Yue Yang removed the Gemini Mask on his face and confidently smiled.

"..." Seeing Yue Yang's smile, Hai Yingwu's expression became blank.

This was the second time her expression became blank. The first was three hours ago when he removed his Gemini Mask to show his true appearance.

After taking a bath, he enjoyed the half elf girl's massage.

After collecting Hai Yingwu and the half elf girl's blood, Yue

Yang decided to leave the Thunder Fortress by midnight.

Although the half elf girl hated to part with him, she still sent him off with a smile on her face. Yue Yang even gave her a goodbye kiss. Despite the kiss being on her forehead, she still felt incomparably blessed, like a wife sending off her husband. The half elf girl kept waving her hand until Yue Yang finally left. She returned to the room with incomparable shyness and happiness. She happily climbed onto the big bed and used the blanket to cover up till her head, slowly reminiscing his embrace and kiss.

In the Sixth Floor of the Tong Tian Tower.

Yue Yang arrived at the Warrior's Guild. After meeting Ou Gen, he decided to write letters to Zhi Zun, Night Empress, Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian.

“Heyy gurl... I miss you. How much? As much as you miss me!” This was the letter he wrote to Xue Wu Xia.

“Tigress, it's been a long time since I have heard your voice. I cannot get used to life without someone roaring like a lion beside my ears. Hurry up and come back! When you return this time, I will never let you go anymore. I will not allow those blind bastards to take away my house's tigress! Right, I have a question that I never dared to ask. Since you can't hit me right now, then let me ask you, are you really the flawlessly white White Tigress?” This was the letter he wrote to Princess Qian Qian. He predicted that Princess Qian Qian would explode in fury when she reads this letter.

“I won’t say too many things. Quickly bring small aunt Sky Disaster over the Tian Luo Palace and let me take liberties on her.” This was the letter he wrote to Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

“The world’s most beautiful, most generous, most kind hearted....(omitting 100 million more words) Night Empress, I am the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master. I understand the warmth of the bed. I know how to flatter people. I ask you to please provide for me. That was wrong. I ask for guidance. I wish to ask about the usage of the Dream Jadeite. Could a person who never dream in his sleep use the Dream Jadeite?” Yue Yang felt that he should still ask this question to the most authoritative person, Night Empress.

The Night Empress’ Mirage was just like a dreamland that was combined with reality.

It was said that she used the Dream Jadeite and another treasure to complete it.

It could even completely ignore the attacks from a Level Six Innate. The amount of people, who could breakthrough the Mirage, in the entire Tong Tian Tower could be counted with one hand.

The most important point was that the Code inside the Mirage was following Night Empress’ will and thoughts. It was not a divine object but it was comparable to one.

As for the letter Yue Yang wrote to Zhi Zun, he could not mess

around.

He diligently wrote: “Master Zhi Zun, the war is at hand. I sincerely invite you to visit. Your disciple wishes to welcome you.”

Just when Yue Yang was about to send the secret messages, the receptionist, who recognized Yue Yang, felt a headache: “It’s you again? Even if you have money, you should not waste it like this.”

“This time you can just deliver all of them to the Night Empress.” Naturally, Yue Yang would never waste tens of thousands of gold to send a secret letter. However, this kind of letter clearly should not be seen by normal people, or else, it would affect the Night Empress, Phoenix Fairy Beauty and the others’ images. Spending ten thousand gold would be safer. In any case, Yue Yang’s Titan Merchant Guild’s income was greater than robbing money.

“YES!” When the receptionist heard the Night Empress’ name, he was immediately surprised and quickly fixed his appearance. He respectfully bowed to receive the letter.

After writing the letters, Yue yang prepared to return to the Soaring Dragon Continent.

Suddenly, he saw three people waiting for him in front.

When these three people appeared, Yue Yang’s heartbeat immediately sped up. His body tensed up.

The two people on the side did not speak and only looked at Yue Yang. The tall man in the middle, who hid himself using a cloak, spoke in a warm voice. His incomparably beautiful voice carried a peculiar attraction and softly asked Yue Yang: “It’s a pleasure to meet you, Yue Clan’s Third Young Master. I have long heard of your distinguished name. I just happened to hear the news about Shark King’s defeat. As a result, I knew that you were in the Sixth Floor, so I intentionally waited for you here. Who knew that I would actually meet you. You are truly admirable. At your age, I was still a Level Five [Grandmaster] and worked hard to reach Level Six [Elder] and only succeeded after three years... A genius that only appears in a thousand years. I, Old Black, thought that the Prison Emperor at that time was the world’s most outstanding person. I never could have imagined that someone would be able to surpass him!”

Yue Yang’s pupils slightly shrunk as sharp as a knife.

He knew who the people in front are, but he would never have imagined that they would met like this on this day.

This opponent had used a good hand. It was truly unexpected, he was truly not simple!

Chapter 505 – Demonic Music Passing Through The Ears

The man who came was Black Hell King, the last person Yue Yang wanted to see at the moment.

Not only did he possess lots of Holy-ranked Equipment, even the cloak he was wearing was a Gold-ranked treasure called ‘Phantom’. This made Yue Yang extremely jealous.

What a parvenu, so ostentatious, wasn’t he afraid that others would snatch it away! Yue Yang wanted to snatch the cloak away very much, but with his current power, there was still a gap for him to fill up before he could snatch the Black Hell King’s treasures. However, the battle in Soaring Dragon Continent was about to start, so if he could kill Black Hell King during the battle, forget about the Gold-ranked cloak, the real goal would be the Holy-ranked Equipments that he was wearing.

So long as Zhi Zun returns, Yue Yang would be eighty percent sure that he could get rid of the Black Hell King, step on his corpse as he climbs up the Heaven Stairway and enter the Heaven Realm.

As for the Sky Emperor, the Emperor of the Underworld and other whatnots, they would just be minor characters. They would only be able to sit and watch. Yue Yang would never share the fruits of his labour with them.

“....uncle, you are?” Yue Yang pretended that he didn’t recognize the Black Hell King.

“Haha, interesting young man.” The Black Hell King didn’t answer Yue Yang as he pretended to be open-minded and laughed loudly.

He knew that Yue Yang was pretending that he didn’t know him in order to bash his ego.

So he immediately laughed.

Not only him, his capable followers, War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North beside him laughed out loud too. When they knew that the Shark King went to the Thunder Fortress to challenge him but was defeated within a few moves by Titan Jr., they immediately teleported to the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower. Sure enough, they caught this crafty Third Young Master with limitless potential easily. The Black Hell King wanted to kill him numerous times because it was very unwise for him to let this potentially limitless junior grow and become the new Prison Emperor.

But there someone who made the Black Hell King heavily apprehensive.

This person was Zhi Zun!

She was the introducer of Yue Yang into the Tong Tian Tower. Although she hadn’t admit it publicly, she was actually his master.

The Black Hell King had reasons to believe that if it hadn't been Zhi Zun, then no matter how much potential and gift Yue Yang had, he wouldn't be able to progress so rapidly.

It would be easy to kill the Yue Clan's Third Young Master, but it would anger Zhi Zun. The Black Hell King guessed that she would take revenge for her favourite disciple at all cost.

This was what that the Black Hell King didn't wish to see the most.

Who was the stronger one between Zhi Zun and himself? The Black Hell King couldn't arrive at a guaranteed answer but he knew that if Zhi Zun were to go all out, his troops would definitely be wiped out and no one would be left behind. Before obtaining the Divine Grimoire, and obtaining treasures like God's Blood or Martial Soul in the God's Ruins, he wouldn't want to fight against Zhi Zun. The situation where both sides get injured would only provide opportunities to be exploited by the Dragon Emperor, the Sky Emperor and the Emperor of the Underworld.

Moreover, the Black Hell King hadn't return to his peak strength yet, so this wasn't the best time to start the battle with Zhi Zun.

War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North looked at each other discreetly.

They began to test the water when it wasn't a convenient time for the Black Hell King to do so.

They would have to test the strength of this Third Young Master no matter what. If he were to pose a huge threat to them, they would then kill him at all cost. If not, they would teach him a lesson, which would also serve as a warning to Zhi Zun.

“I have heard of your distinguished name for a long time now. I hope that Third Young Master can enlighten me with some of your moves.” War Tiger of the East was seemingly very polite, but his words were filled with hidden threats. Ever since Zi Jin Kingdom’s sub base was destroyed by Yue Yang. This event disgraced War Tiger of the East due to the huge losses. War Tiger of the East harboured a deep hatred for Yue Yang. Forget about the Black Hell King being here, even if he wasn’t here, War Tiger of the East would also want to test Yue Yang’s combat skills.

“This Feng Shi had also seen Third Young Master before. Please enlighten me as well.” A middle aged man of two meters tall, buff body and dark skin tone removed his huge cloak first.

“...” Hearing that his surname was Feng, Yue Yang secretly frowned his brows.

Another one whose surname was Feng?

He had just previously settled the issue between the young lady of Feng family and his Fourth Uncle, and then he caught the lunatic Mr. Feng Jin in the sub base of Zi Jin Kingdom. Now this Fierce Tooth of the North’s surname was also Feng. How was he related to the Fengs?

Could it be that there was an unknown secret in the history of the Fengs?

Facing three strong opponents, Yue Yang could only suppress his curiosity.

“Don’t mention about enlightening, my skills may not be fine enough, so I’m afraid I may injure the both of you. If that really happens, it wouldn’t too good.” Yue Yang smiled.

“If it is really so, then you will have to enlighten them even more, if not they will be too full of themselves!” The Black Hell King’s gaze was a little chilly.

“Please enlighten us!” Fierce Tooth of the North and War Tiger of the East looked at each other again.

If this were to be said by other juniors, they would have laughed.

But they couldn’t take the words of the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master lightly.

Even the Emperor of Zi Wei, Shun Tian and the Black Prince mentioned that Yue Yang progresses rapidly, and they guessed that he would have a power of Innate Level Eight by now. Their comments even made the Black Hell King shocked. Regarding the progression of power, even the Prison Emperor wouldn’t be on par with Yue Yang. There had never been anyone in history who became an Innate at twenty years old, and then crazily rank up to

become an Innate Level Eight just within two years... Forget about normal warriors, even the gifted Prison Emperor from six thousand years ago couldn't achieve that.

Yue Yang smiled lightly to Fierce Tooth of the North who challenged him first. "This place doesn't seem like a good place to fight right?"

"It's lucky that I got to meet you guys. if it isn't convenient here, how about going to my place and have some light snacks before challenging each other?"

A polite and gentle voice resounded from a faraway place.

It was as if it came from the sky.

But it was so clear as if he was speaking to them in person.

A black dot unknowingly appeared and walked towards the lot, one step at a time. With each causal step he took, he advanced forward by a hundred meters, and within a few moments, he was already beside Yue Yang.

The man who came was clad in a black robe with white hair. But he looked very youthful and didn't look old at all.

While he was refined and courteous he was also naturally reserved.

He carried with him a sense of calmness that couldn't be taken away even if the world fell apart.

He was none other than Elder Nan Gong who went to the Soaring Dragon Continent to invite Yue Yang into the Innate Alliance... His appearance made Black Hell King withdraw a bit as he immediately greeted Elder Nan Gong, who then returned the greeting to Black Hell King, War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North.

“Why would I reject Mr. Nan Gong's invitation. Mr. Nan Gong, please!” The Black Hell King reached out his hands and pretended to be open-minded.

“You have already reached the Innate Elder level. Since we look at the power instead of the age at Tong Tian Tower, although I'm older than you by a few years, you shouldn't address me as sir, just call me Nan Gong will do.” Elder Nan Gong's words scared Yue Yang. The Black Hell King was already an old man from six thousand years ago, it was already exaggerated enough. Now, this Elder Nan Gong was actually still older than he was. Then how old would he be exactly?

It was therefore no wonder that even the extremely powerful Black Hell King had to greet him.

Yue Yang felt that he wouldn't be able to see through Elder Nan Gong even after the levelling up of his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision.

From this, it could be inferred that this old man was indeed not a

simple person. Yue Yang had previously underestimated him... Of course, he couldn't exclude the possibility that Elder Nan Gong had some treasures or Inherent skills used to hide himself, such that other weren't able to see through him.

“Mr.Nan Gong, please.” Fierce Tooth of the North and War Tiger of the East looked at Yue Yang before responding together.

“What about you Titan Jr.?” Mr. Nan Gong asked.

“I'm sorry, if there are no pretty girls, I won't go to a place with uncles and old men!” Yue Yang rejected him.

Elder Nan Gong took it lightly as he had expected Yue Yang's rejection already. His expression remained unchanged. The Black Hell King also acted like a mysterious man as he didn't comment further. Only War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North were shocked. No one in the world would dare to reject Elder Nan Gong's invitation. Yue Yang was really a freak. Mostly importantly, Mr. Nan Gong was obviously siding with Yue Yang but Yue Yang didn't appreciate it at all, could it be that he was really that confident to escape unharmed under the joint attack from the three of them?

A wave of heavenly [pipa](#) sound resonated through the atmosphere.

It was initially slow like gentle river flows.

It then gradually got faster, like the wind and the rain during Spring, making those who heard it indulge themselves in the song.

Its tempo changed again as it instantly got quicker, as if the strong wind during a chilly Winter.

Everyone felt as if they were in a world of ice and snow, with cold wind blowing by that caused them to be chilled to the bones. It almost made their blood froze. There was another eerie tone that became louder over time, as if thousands of soldiers were making a surprise attack in the snow, filling the place with deafening shouts and neighing war horses...

Suddenly, numerous terrifying horrid soldiers pounced towards them with a deafening roar.

They raised their bloodied sharp blades and beheaded everyone!

Even the strong-willed Yue Yang couldn't help but immerse himself when he heard the demonic song.

The demonic music was pressuring!

He was a little dazed by it, but suddenly, the Innate Qi in his dantian erupted as if a volcanic eruption, dispersing the hellish cold he was feeling.

“Well played, what a well played ‘Snowy Journey’.” The Black Hell King clapped his hands. Yue Yang used his Heaven Eyes

Divine Vision to capture the slight difference in energy between the Black Hell King's hands in one thousandth second. The Black Hell King's performance was worse than Yue Yang's as he still required to clap in order to disperse the negative effect caused by the hallucinatory music. Of course Yue Yang knew that with his Nirvana Flame and Innate Qi, it would be normal for him to be better at resisting against the demonic sound than the Black Hell King. But he didn't think that the Black Hell King, who was fully clad in Holy Equipments, would still be affected by this pipa's demonic music.

“This song is mesmerizing... “ Mr. Nan Gong complimented it too.

“Hoo... “ War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North couldn't speak. They opened their mouth only to breath out frosty cold air.

The curious warriors, who were looking from faraway, had all became ice sculptures.

Their expressions were frozen and their lives were lost unknowingly.

So this was the power of the demonic music?

Yue Yang was shocked, and shuddered uncontrollably.

He felt that the Black Hell King was secretly observing him. He

was alarmed and quickly pretended that he was badly affected by the demonic music and his body couldn't take it. He started to exaggeratedly shudder a lot.

The Black Hell King was sharp enough to differentiate the genuinity of Yue Yang's responses. He was secretly shocked that Yue Yang could recover by just by shuddering once.

He realised that the rumors were real. Yue Yang really possessed a power beyond that of an Innate Level Eight. His recovery from the effect of the demonic music was better than War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North, if not for the uncontrollable shudder, he would have been deceived by Yue Yang. Looks like Yue Yang's recovery skills was only behind himself and Mr. Nan Gong. Yue Yang was indeed as abnormal as the rumors said!

A beauty, clad in a snow gown and carrying a jade pipa, walked gently towards them,.

Before she arrived, her scent had already reached the lot.

(pipa – chinese flute)

Chapter 506 – Heaven Outside Heaven, Hidden Treasures

The beauty carrying the jade pipa first greeted Elder Nan Gong and then the Black Hell King.

When it was Yue Yang's turn at last, she gave him a beautiful smile. "We have met again."

"Do I know you?" Yue Yang pretended that he didn't know her as he scratched his head and looked at if he was thinking hard. After a long while, he clapped his hands. "Eh, I remembered, aren't you are the chick who went to a motel with me? I remember that you have a very sexy black mole on your butt!"

"What are you talking about!" The beauty was embarrassed after hearing his words. She blushed and rolled her eyes at Yue Yang shyly.

"Isn't that it? Or you are the fat chick who secretly liked me and kept sending me love letters? When did you get your plastic surgery done? You have a hot body now, that curves and your smooth and tender face, I wouldn't have rejected you had I known this. Fat chick, why didn't you tell me that you had successfully lost weight?" Yue Yang acted that he was remorseful.

"Are you sure you didn't recognise the wrong person? How about come closer and look at me more carefully?" The beauty knew that Yue Yang loves to play pranks, so she played along.

“Let me see...” Yue Yang recalled leaned in closer and looked at her carefully. He then suddenly slapped her shoulders and embraced her intimately as if he saw a familiar face again: “I was still thinking who you are, you are actually the tomboy right! I remember those times when we stood on top of a tree and peed towards a water jug, your body was as flat as a summoning grimoire. You had no chest and no butt, I didn’t expect the silly little girl to change into this kind of appearance, tsk tsk,..... Xiao Hua, surely your chest isn’t fake, is it? How can it be so big and full, be honest with me, aren’t these just water packs inside? Xiao Hua, don’t pretend to be someone you are not, these fake boobs can easily be identified by others, come, let me help you check it...”

“Pu!” War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North were amazed. This guy knew too many ways to flirt!

They had seen perverts, but none could even match him.

People said that the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master’s inherent skills were amazing and that he had limitless potential, War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North did not expect that the way he picks up girls would also be so impressive.

He was an expert!

Fierce Tooth of the North and War Tiger of the East had their fair share of fooling around with women, and they would even think of themselves as experienced playboys sometimes. Never did they think that in front of Yue Yang, they would all appear like

newbies, especially like those beginner newbies who had just learned their first steps!

“Check your foot!” The Beauty slapped Yue Yang’s touchy hands away.

She wanted to look as if she was angry initially , but she couldn’t hold it in in the end and laughed out loud from Yue Yang’s prank.

“Xiao Hua, you don’t recognise me anymore? I am brother Titan! You were crying when you said that you wanted to marry me, how can you forget all of these?” Yue Yang was very upset.

“This is the Southern Goblin King from the Eastern Goblin Tribe, her identity is normally the Pipa Goblin General, you should have seen her when the Eastern Goblin Tribe previously came to the Soaring Dragon Continent.” Elder Nan Gong helped to hint Yue Yang . Yue Yang then had his sudden realisation as he nodded. “Yes, we have seen each other before. Her guard dog came to our plantation the other time and I cooked it. When she came over to settle scores with me, she realised that she was actually at fault, so she felt guilty and decided to make her sister my concubine as a form of apology. I accepted it half heartedly at that time. I would have forgotten about it if you didn’t mention it.”

“Does the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master always blackmail people like this?” The Southern Goblin King carrying the jade pipa laughed as she asked.

“It’s normal for a young man like him to like pretty girls. It

would be nice if Third Young Master could marry the sister of the Southern Goblin King. It would spread far and wide inside the Tong Tian Tower.” The Black Hell King looked at the Southern Goblin King to see her response. If she also supported Yue Yang, then the Black Hell King would have gained another strong opponent unknowingly.

“It’s a pity that I don’t have a sister.” The Southern Goblin King smiled. “And it seems that Third Young Master already has a number of fiancées.”

“Being a womaniser, there are naturally lots of beauties around Third Young Master.” War Tiger of the East was assured. If this Southern Goblin King were to have a crush on Titan Jr., she wouldn’t have come over to find him so blatantly. He previously heard that the Dragon Emperor wished to make Titan Jr. his son-in-law, and even said that he was willing to marry off one of his princesses to Yue Yang as his concubine such that the royal family of the Eastern Goblin Tribe could form alliance with the Soaring Dragon Continent.

“I wonder what is the Southern Goblin King here for?” Fierce Tooth of the North feigned ignorance.

The Dragon Emperor thought highly of Yue Yang and wished to make him his son-in-law. So as the Southern Goblin King, she wouldn’t just sit there and watch.

She had three paths laid in front of her.

First, she could marry him before anyone else does;

Second, she could have a secret agreement with Yue Yang and disrupt the formation of an alliance between him and the Dragon Emperor;

Third, she could become complete enemies with Yue Yang and work together with even stronger Innates to kill him off, so that the Dragon Emperor's plan will fail.

In these three paths, the first two were the ones the Black Hell King didn't wish the Southern Goblin King would choose, because she was very powerful and even the Dragon Emperor couldn't do anything to her. If she were to become allies with Yue Yang, Yue Yang's strength will increase by a lot. And more terrifyingly, Yue Yang might ease the rivalry between her and the Dragon Emperor. Even if the rivalry ceased temporarily, it would still be terrifying. Once they started to work together to help Yue Yang, it would have great impact on the war. It might even allow Yue Yang to turn the tables around.

If she couldn't co-exist with the Dragon Emperor and chose the third path, it would be beneficial to the Black Hell King.

If the Southern Goblin King were to join the allied forces of the Black Hell Army, it would definitely cause a huge blow to the Soaring Dragon Continent. With the Eastern Goblin Tribe under her, he could restrict the Dragon Emperor and destroy Da Xia, Tian Luo and the four great clans in the Soaring Dragon Continent... Towards an ally like the Southern Goblin King, the Black Hell Army should try their hardest to win her over.

Not only War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North, even the Black Hell King was pondering over it.

He had been thinking of a way ever since the Southern Goblin King appeared.

“Actually I was just passing by the Sixth Floor, I didn’t think that I would unexpectedly meet with you seniors and the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master here.” The Southern Goblin King carrying the jade pipa smiled.

Her words didn’t rouse the suspicion of the Black Hell King as their plan to intercept Yue Yang was an impromptu one, so nobody would have known.

If Elder Nan Gong was here because he received the news, then the Southern Goblin King who was normally in the eighth and ninth Floor wouldn’t have come prepared. This was really a coincidence. The Southern Goblin King greeted Elder Nan Gong and the Black Hell King again. “Half a year ago, people found an ancient ruin in the ‘Heaven Outside Heaven’ of the Tenth Floor. It must have been left behind by a powerful senior, and I felt that it was a pity as I couldn’t explore it on my own... but since I met you all, how about we work together and hunt for the hidden treasure in the Ancient Ruins? “

“The Heaven Outside Heaven in the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower?” The Black Hell King started thinking.

“What’s Heaven Outside Heaven?” Yue Yang asked like a primary school kid that was having lessons.

“Titan Jr., Heaven Outside Heaven refers to the unknown region between Tong Tian Tower and the Heaven Realm. There is a vast space between Tong Tian Tower and the Door of Heaven Realm and there are countless individual worlds there with hostile environments that are unsuitable for any life forms. Forget about normal warriors, even Supreme Innates would be in danger in these death spaces.” Elder Nan Gong explained.

“I thought there’s a passage that leads to the Door of Heaven Realm from Tong Tian Tower?” Yue Yang raised a question again.

“Actually there’s no exact passage. It is just a safer route explored by countless seniors using their blood and lives. And you will have to go through ten individual worlds through this passage, so it isn’t a direct route... And in the individual worlds, there are still a lot of unexplored regions, broken gaps and even spacial vortices that we have limited knowledge of. But according to the annals, there is a ‘Shattered Void’ caused by an unimaginably strong ‘diety’ in a fight during the Tai Gu Period. Although the diety repaired it, the Heaven Realm that was originally in the Tenth Floor broke away from the Tong Tian Tower and became a new world by itself. It then became further and further from the mortal world... And later, the Heaven Realm didn’t recognise the mortal world and became a new realm by itself. If the warriors from the mortal world wishes to enter the Heaven Realm, they would have to pass through the extremely dangerous Shattered Void to reach the Door of Heaven Realm...” Elder Nan Gong explained patiently.

“Are there no other ways?” Yue Yang felt that it wouldn’t work just relying solely on the Door of Heaven Realm which opens only once a century.

“There may be. It was said that there’s a Heaven Stairway in the God’s Ruin. It can be used to enter Heaven Realm directly.” The Southern Goblin King revealed.

“It’s merely a legend. It may exist, but one wouldn’t be able to enter Heaven Realm without passing by the Door of Heaven Realm. This is the rule of ancient code, and no one is excluded.” Elder Nan Gong shook his head and indicated that it was ridiculous to think of using the Heaven Stairway to enter Heaven Realm. It could be that he was deliberately clearing things up to make fourth mother, who owned the secret of the Heaven Stairway, safer.

“Even if the Heaven Stairway couldn’t reach Heaven Realms, it wouldn’t hurt to try.” The Southern Goblin King said while smiling.

“Third Young Master, go back and ask your fourth mother, she may know.” The Black Hell King told Yue Yang.

“She’s a housewife that doesn’t go out often!” Yue Yang glared at the Black Hell King coldly while emitting a murderous vibe. He was warning the Black Hell King not to find trouble with Fourth mother.

“Please don’t be offended, my master was only making a joke. Seniors usually know more secrets than the juniors. Your Fourth

Mother is one who studies a lot, so she may know. Let's return back to the topic of the hidden treasures brought up by the Southern Goblin King. I'm most interested in the hidden treasures in the ancient ruins, so I will definitely go." War Tiger of the East laughed.

"Feng Shi is willing to go too." Fierce Tooth of the North looked at Yue Yang.

"If the Third Young Master is interested, then Nan Gong is willing to bring you around the Tenth Floor." Elder Nan Gong was definitely taking Yue Yang's side. Although Yue Yang hadn't joined the Innate Alliance officially, being someone who appreciates talents, Elder Nan Gong would never let the Black Hell King harm Yue Yang in the Tenth Level. He guessed that Yue Yang would be willing to go, so he made his stand even before Yue Yang responded.

"I'm curious too. What kind treasures are there to the point that even Southern Goblin King is so hooked onto them?" The Black Hell King looked at the Southern Goblin King, but in his peripheral vision, he was still looking at Yue Yang. If he wasn't going, then he won't go too.

"How do we split the treasures?" Yue Yang's question assured the Black Hell King. Yue Yang still had desires towards treasures.

Looks like this guy knew that he wasn't powerful enough and requires strengthening through treasures.

With the secret protection of Nan Gong Luo Yun that old guy, Yue Yang would definitely take the risk to fight over the treasures with him...

Most importantly, this treasure hunt would be an impromptu test by the Southern Goblin King. She was unable to choose who to form an alliance with between himself and Yue Yang, so she decided to reveal the ancient ruins and hoped to use this quest to pick a good ally. He had to get his hands on the hidden treasures in order to make the Southern Goblin King form an alliance with him willing. Conversely, if it were to be Yue Yang who got the treasures, she would definitely turn towards him.

Tong Tian Tower only believed in one kind of man.

That is the Rankers!

The Black Hell King looked at Yue Yang and was determined to defeat him. He set his mind on getting the hidden treasures in the ancient ruins, conquer the Soaring Dragon Continent, then the entire Tong Tian Tower. And this officially marked the beginning of his journey! Everything will start from defeating Yue Yang, the young junior!

Chapter 507 – Come, Let's Go Play Too

The group, each carrying with them different motives, left the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower and arrived at the Tenth Floor.

This was the most dangerous treasure hunt Yue Yang will participate in ever since he entered the Tong Tian Tower. It was because his so-called teammates were War Tiger of the East, Fierce Tooth of the North and the Black Hell King. Yue Yang knew that the three of them would grab onto any opportunity to kill him. Of course, he too would definitely kill the Black Hell King if he gets the chance to.

The Southern Goblin King carrying the jade pipa took a neutral stand.

Yue Yang's only ally was Elder Nan Gong.

If it wasn't that Elder Nan Gong hinted Yue Yang to come, Yue Yang wouldn't have agreed to go on such a dangerous expedition... It was undoubtedly dangerous to go on a quest with the Black Hell King!

Yue Yang wasn't stressed as he had entered the Seventh Floor of Tong Tian tower before.

The gravitational pull became heavier when they moved through the Eighth and Ninth Floor. In the Tenth Floor, the gravitational pull there was twenty five times of Soaring Dragon Continent's.

Entering Heaven Outside Heaven, it was even stronger and was thirty times of Soaring Dragon Continent. Even War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North had to unleash their power to Innate Level Seven in order to move on. The only ones who were able to continue moving without getting affected were Elder Nan Gong and the Black Hell King. The Southern Goblin King only had to unleash her power to Innate Level Five to be adapted to it. From this, it could be seen that she was much more powerful than War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North. It was therefore no wonder that Elder Nan Gong and Black Hell King thought highly of her.

“Are, are you alright?” The Southern Goblin King asked Yue Yang curiously.

Not only her, Elder Nan Gong and Black Hell King were curious too.

He had the power to defend himself against the thirty times gravitational pull, but why does he choose not to unleash his power to Innate Level?

Yue Yang didn't reply. He was lagging behind the lot by a few steps as he walked forward with great effort. He kept persevering, even as he was perspiring profusely and his muscles shook from weariness, he wouldn't unleash his power to Innate Level.

The Black Hell King frowned secretly. Yue Yang definitely wasn't trying to pretend that he was capable.

Could it be that he was deliberately showing that he was weak? No, even if he wanted to, he wouldn't have chosen such a stupid way.

Is he using the gravitational pull to train his body, such that he could be adapted to the thirty times gravitational pull below Innate Level? When the Black Hell King thought of this possibility, he was secretly shocked. Yue Yang was definitely an abnormal person, his thinking differed from that of a common man. Under the thirty times gravitational pull and being surrounded by enemies, he still had the mood to train, looks like he was trying to use this opportunity to make a breakthrough...

The Black Hell King definitely couldn't let such a young man continue to live, he would definitely surpass him one day!

The Black Hell King got more scared the more he thought. The thought of killing Yue Yang flashed across his mind.

After half an hour, Yue Yang who was covered in perspiration finally had an easier time walking as his footsteps became lighter. He who had been lagging behind slowly caught up with the rest.

War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North looked at each other, other than the astonishment they felt, the feeling of killing Yue Yang overwhelmed them... He got used to the thirty times gravitational pull so quickly, he wasn't a human being!

Elder Nan Gong didn't speak but his gaze was filled with

gratification. Seeing Yue Yang's rapid progression and unique gift, his determination to protect Yue Yang became even more firm.

Only the Southern Goblin King acted as if she hadn't seen anything.

In the Heaven Outside Heaven.

As early as ten minutes before they arrived, the entire world became a terrifying place.

There were occasional meteorite rains that sliced across the sky, causing a trail of blazing fire before falling to the ground with a boom.

The shock wave from the earthquake came wave after wave. There were rampant volcanic eruptions as numerous magma spurted to the sky and then splattered around the ground. Towards all these, although the group was mostly comprised of Supreme Innates, they had no choice but to dodge too. They weren't willing to waste their effort in combating these world ending disasters. Moreover, this was still mild as compared to the most terrifying Shattered Void in the Heaven Outside Heaven.

"We are entering the official zone of the Heaven Outside Heaven soon, everyone be on your alert, although we may have some misunderstandings in the past, I hope that all our priorities will be placed on getting the treasures, we'll talk about everything else after getting the hidden treasures in the ancient ruins" The Southern Goblin King gave the lot a heads up.

“Definitely, if we’re treasure hunting, I’m willing to go through thick and thin with you guys.” War Tiger of the East spoke on behalf of the Black Hell King.

“Lead the way!” Yue Yang hadn’t been on the Tenth Floor before. He had previously heard from the Night Empress and the Phoenix Fairy Beauty about how difficult it was to get through the Tenth Floor, he could understand why now.

The environment was already extremely harsh even before they officially entered Heaven Outside Heaven.

He could only imagine how harsh it would be in the Shattered Void of the Heaven Outside Heaven.

The Southern Goblin King led everyone into a canyon surrounded by five active volcanoes. In the middle of the a canyon was a dormant volcano, and half way above the vocano was an ancient passage. What one would have never expected would be that the teleportation point to the individual worlds were also the entrance to the ancient ruins... If it weren’t for the Southern Goblin King who led the way, nobody would have went into that place during a volcanic eruption.

The Black Hell King frowned his eyebrows slightly, he had never heard of this ancient ruins.

He had a very uneasy feeling...

He thought that the Southern Goblin King found a secret stash for treasures he already known about. Never had he thought that it wasn't!

Was the Southern Goblin King plotting against him together with Yue Yang? Would Night Empress and Zhi Zun be in there, waiting to ambush him?

The Black Hell King hesitated for a few seconds. But when he saw that Yue Yang was secretly observing him and that he looked like he was on his guards as well, the Black Hell King became at ease. If there was really an ambush, then Yue Yang would definitely not be so guarded. He would either be scorning or be sarcastic.

After teleporting into the individual world, everyone except the Southern Goblin King was stunned.

It was extremely hot outside, so much so that it was as if they were being roasted in an oven.

But in the individual world, it was extremely cold.

War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North who unleashed their power to Innate Level Six started to shudder uncontrollably. They began to freeze from their feet that were stepping on the sturdy ground. They became ice men within a few moments.

“Howl!” War Tiger of the East unleashed power to Innate Level Seven and summoned for his Scarlet Flame Tiger to barely defend himself against the chill.

“....” Fierce Tooth of the North used his sharp claws to tear his body apart. The blood that dripped out then became fire.

As the Southern Goblin King already had treasures to protect herself, she didn’t react towards the sudden change.

The Black Hell King and Elder Nan Gong both unleashed power to Innate Level One to defend themselves against the chill. Of course, both of them had Holy Equipments with them, so the reason why they unleashed their power to Innate Level One was to guard against their surrounding. It was almost impossible not to have any Ancient Beasts in this frozen wasteland. The Ancient Beasts in the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower could be described as abnormally strong. Even those who were Gold-ranked Level Ten were a hundred times, and even a thousand times stronger than those of the same rank as them in the lower levels of the Tong Tian Tower.

Moreover, there weren’t much Gold-ranked Ancient Beasts in Heaven Outside Heaven. Most of them would be Platinum-ranked.

For a sole Innate Level Eight warrior to enter the Heaven Outside Heaven, he would be dead meat if he were to meet a large group of the Ancient Beasts.

“Hoo!” Yue Yang heaved out a breath of chilly air.

Twirling his hands, countless strands of cold air entered his body.

The amazing thing was that not only did the chilly air not turn him into an ice sculpture, they became frost flowers that floated around his body, forming an ice cold space that surrounded him for ten meters. War Tiger of the East reached out his hands in an attempt to touch the flowers and his fingers immediately turned into a giant lump of ice. Everyone who saw this was shocked.

A murderous gaze flashed across the eyes of the Black Hell King. “Third Young Master indeed has great inherent skills. I have heard of your skills in controlling the Nirvana Flames, but I didn’t expect you to also be able control the chilly ice so easily as well.”

Yue Yang didn’t answer him as he was focussed on controlling the ice cold space around him. He made it absorb the Yin energy, and at the same time assist himself.

Of course, this was extremely difficult.

With Black Hell King beside him, it was even more terrifying thing to do it.

While the Southern Goblin King was leading the way, Elder Nan Gong suddenly turned around. After listening for a while, he spoke in a low voice. “There’s a violent battle occurring ten kilometers away from us. I can’t confirm what they are, but I can guess that it isn’t a fight between the Ancient Beasts but Innate Rankers who

are in trouble. Do we extend our help or continue our quest? With our power, even if we don't succeed, it won't be hard for us to escape. Holding on to the moral principle that warriors should help each other, I suggest we go forward and help them."

Yue Yang initially thought that the Black Hell King wouldn't agree to it. Never did he expect him to nod his head.

Could it be that he was using the Ancient Beasts to test me out?

Laughing coldly inside, Yue Yang nodded too. No one could say for sure who would fall into the other party's trap first!

The Black Hell King would definitely be alright. But what about War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North? Yue Yang felt that this might be a chance for him to get rid of either one of them. That would be akin to breaking one of the limbs of the Black Hell King. Then it would make it worth the risk to come here.

War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North also knew that they are the ones with the highest possibility of being killed, so they immediately summoned their Grimoire and their Guardian Beasts before increasing their level to Innate Level Eight.

They had to go all out!

Both the Black Hell King and Elder Nan Gong levelled up to Innate Level Five, while the Southern Goblin King levelled up to Innate Level Seven. No one took this lightly.

This was the internal part of the Heaven Outside Heaven. Even a Supreme Innate who was Innate Level Ten would die.

Only Yue Yang stopped after unleashing his power to Innate Level Three...

Of course, the power of his Innate Level Three was akin to that of Innate Level Eight, it was just that the level was lower.

“What’s matter with you?” The Southern Goblin King asked inquisitively: “By looking at you your power is not bad, but why are you just Innate Level Three?”

“Sister, how old do you think I am? It’s not bad for me to be able to go up to Innate Level Three already!” Yue Yang replied as he slowly condensed the Crystal Armor from his body, and brought out the Hui Jin Magic blade that was burning with purple flame. In this chilly place, the power of Hui Jin Magic Blade weakened by a lot as the fire shrunk to become smaller. On realising that it wasn’t strong enough after waving it for several times, Yue Yang quickly took out the Crescent Moon blade.

Conversely, the Crescent Moon Blade with the Ancient Rune, ‘Permanent Hardening’ and Heaven Runes ‘Frost’ and ‘Sharp’, was ten times more powerful in this individual world.

This was also the first time it managed to surpass Hui Jin magic Blade ever since it was created.

The Black Hell King snorted discreetly.

It wasn't that he was jealous of the of the Crescent Moon Blade, but he was feeling upset about the power of Yue Yang's Innate Level One being the same as Innate Level Six of others! The Black Hell King had never met such an abnormal person. If Yue Yang were to go up to Innate Level Six, then wouldn't he surpass Innate Realm and reach Innate Elder Level One?

If Elder Nan Gong wasn't around, he would have killed Yue Yang immediately!

Of course, even if Elder Nan Gong wanted to protect him, the Black Hell King would still do it. If the Night Empress and Zhi Zun weren't ambushing ahead, Yue Yang would be dead meat!

Ten kilometers away, there was a giant canyon made from eternal glacier.

Yue Yang and the rest arrived and landed on the top of the canyon. They gasped when they looked down.

In the canyon, a hundred giant Ancient Beasts were besieging the two sides of the canyon and there were also a few enormous Ancient Apes holding onto ice mountain and throwing them towards the Innate Warriors they were besieging. Additionally, more than ten Ice Dragon kept diving down and heaved out frosty dragon breaths.

The more terrifying thing was that the Innate Warriors weren't united at all in a moment like this.

They were still fighting amongst themselves even with the threat of death looming ahead.

"There are restrictions in this ice canyon. Upon entering, men and beasts won't be able to fly up into the air, but the Ice Dragons are an exception." The Southern Goblin King's complexion ashened.

"Danger!" Elder Nan Gong dived down after clearly seeing the two sides that were fighting.

"Come, let's go play too." Seeing the Black Hell King who was raising his right palm and preparing to attack, he gave a sarcastic smile. Yue Yang then dived into the canyon as he waved to the Black Hell King while he was still in mid air.

"...." The Black Hell King hesitated again, there's a restriction preventing one from going up into the sky? That was his achilles' heel, what if there really was an ambush?

Chapter 508 – Truth And Mutual Understanding

Below, the Winged Clan and the Eastern Goblin Tribe were involved in the violent fight.

There were even human Innate Rankers.

Yue Yang didn't know anyone from any one of the camps as he only saw them busily fighting against each other, with the ancient beasts besieging them. This made Yue Yang shocked. Are these people dumb? Didn't they want to live anymore? When he stepped onto the back of the Ice Dragon and glided down all the way, he realized the ice wall on the side of the valley had a huge teleportation circle. It seemed to be an entrance to a secret place.

Could it be that there's another ancient ruin in this individual world?

No matter what it was, Yue Yang realized that they were only fighting over the teleportation circle. As for the ancient beasts, they couldn't be bothered with them already.

As the Winged Clan were at the greatest disadvantage due to the restrictions that prevented them from flying, their combat power were halved. But they were at an advantage in terms of numbers, thus the team comprising of over twenty Winged Clan gained the upper hand, with the Eastern Goblin Tribe following closely behind. Although they only had three men, making them the minority, their combat power was strong enough and at least four

or five Winged Clan were required to guard against one of them.

The weakest were the human Innates comprising of six men.

Four of them were only Innate Level Six and all of them were injured. The remaining two were Innate Level Seven and were struggling to stay support the group.

They were considered superior in the lower floors of Tong Tian Tower. But the only thing they could do here was to defend themselves, if not they would be killed right on the spot.

Forget about the fight between the Winged Clan and the Eastern Goblin Tribe, even the attacks from ancient beasts posed a great threat to their lives... Luckily the fighting between the Winged Clan and the Eastern Goblin Tribe was very intense, so they didn't have time to bother about the six Innate Warriors, if not they would have died long ago.

“Ridiculous, you all actually came to Heaven Outside Heaven with a power like this?” When Elder Nan Gong reached the valley, he summoned his Grimoire, forming a shield. He then made all the six human Innates hide inside before gently unleashing an undefendable energy that repelled all the Ice Dragons and the ice hurled by the Ancient Apes, forming a huge empty space in the center.

Although the ancient beasts weren't Holy Beasts, they were still very smart.

They retreated when they saw the arrival of an Innate Ranker who was too powerful for them.

They watched at a distance, waiting for an opportunity to strike.

“Mister Nan Gong...” The six Human Innates who had a narrow escape were overjoyed and quickly greeted Elder Nan Gong.

“Could it be that the teleportation circle here leads to the ancient ruins?” When the Southern Goblin King descended, the expressions of the three warriors from Eastern Goblin Tribe changed. As they were all followers of the Dragon Emperor, they were sworn enemies with her.

“Black Hell King, Xiu Da greets you on behalf of Ba Yi the chief officer.” The leader of the Winged Clan was an Innate Ranker of Innate Level Eight. When Xiu Da saw the Black Hell King descended majestically from mid air, he immediately took a few steps forward and led all his men to greet the Black Hell King. Yue Yang raised his eyebrows a little. He knew about the alliance between the Black Hell King and Ba Yi, who was also known as Sky Emperor, long ago so this was totally expected.

“Xiu Da, what’s going on?” War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North descended too.

“We received information about an ancient ruin, that was why we came to this glacier canyon. Never did we expect to meet the Eastern Globin Tribe here too. They were very rude and prevented us from entering, so we started to fight. As for the ancient beasts,

they were attracted due to the commotion, but it seemed that they didn't really dared to go near the ancient teleportation circle on the ice wall, so we were lucky that we weren't attacked by them directly." The Winged Clan leader named Xiu Da had four wings on his back and was clad in a jewel armor. He was holding a shining golden crystal sword uniquely owned by the Winged Clan. These made him look smart and majestic.

"If that is so, let's kill the trio together!" War Tiger of the East turned to face the three people from Eastern Goblin Tribe.

"Nonsense..." One of the trio was the Mountain Shaking Bear with power at Innate Level Eight. The two other were Thunder Gold-eyed Leopards with power at peak Innate Level Seven. They weren't far from becoming Innate Level Eight. Although they were afraid of the Black Hell King, their expressions were extremely resolute.

They immediately unleashed all their power as they prepared for the battle.

They knew that they weren't going to win, but they weren't willing to wait for their death or surrender on their knees.

The Southern Goblin King didn't speak. But Yue Yang stood out and reached out his hand. "Wait... If we are all treasure hunters, why do we have to kill each other?"

A hot-tempered tall Winged Clan warrior stood out: "Who are you to be the middleman here? They killed two of my friends, our

vengeance won't be eased if we don't kill them! The Winged Clan and the Eastern Goblin Tribe will definitely not be able to coexist. If you still want to side with them, then we'll grant you your wish and kill you too!"

Yue Yang spat in contempt: "With all the [wretches](#) here?"

The word 'wretches' angered all the Winged Clan.

They all hated to be called wretches. Now that Yue Yang said it out in public, it placed them all to shame, making all of them incensed.

The three people from the Eastern Goblin Tribe were appreciative of Yue Yang's words because not many dared to speak up in front of the Black Hell King.

The trio stood behind Yue Yang.

They were prepared to fight together with him.

The four-winged Xiu Da looked at Yue Yang and felt that he was not a simple person. He then stopped his furious followers quickly .

He then asked War Tiger of the East confusedly: "Who is this young human being?"

“You guys are blind. This is the Third Young Master of the Yue Clan, the guy with the most potential in the Tong Tian Tower. He is also Titan Jr. who successfully assassinated the Ocean Emperor. You all have to be more respectful towards him, especially now that no one is his match now. Except for Sky Emperor and the three chief officers here, no one can fight him.” War Tiger of the East appeared to be a good guy when he helped to introduce Yue Yang to the lot, but he was actually secretly sowing discords to make the Winged Clan more hateful towards Yue Yang the young junior.

“Oh, I was still thinking, so you are Titan Jr.! You live up to your name indeed...” Xiu Da laughed coldly.

The Mountain Shaking Bear and the two Thunder Gold-eyed Leopard quickly greeted Yue Yang and used human’s ethics to bow to him respectfully.

“No biggie, I have always dislike trash that liked to bully the weak.” With this, Yue Yang infuriate all warriors of the Winged Clan completely .

They didn’t really like him initially.

Now, all the Winged Clan Warriors took the Black Hell King’s side.

Elder Nan Gong quickly came and waved his hand. “Everyone leave here quickly, I sense an abnormal sound in the distance. If we were to alarm the king of the ancient beasts, I’m afraid we won’t

be able to avoid a long-drawn battle.”

The six human Innates fought to reveal the secrets of the teleportation Circle.

The leader of the team spoke hurriedly. “Mr. Nan Gong, this teleportation circle leads to a place near the ancient ruins. According to the different rotation cycle everyday, the teleportation points will land at twelve locations respectively. If we don’t enter quickly, we will land ourselves in the furthest or the most dangerous region. Before us, there were two batches of people who went in. And this is the number of batches we are aware of, there may be even more...”

The Black Hell King glanced at the Southern Goblin King and saw that she was pondering over it.

He then looked at Elder Nan Gong. On seeing that he agreed on entering, he immediately indicated for Elder Nan Gong to lead them in.

Of course Elder Nan Gong wouldn’t be the first to enter the teleportation circle. It would be strange if the Black Hell King didn’t attack Yue Yang if he were to do so.

The six human Innates entered first, followed by War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North. When the Black Hell King saw that his followers entered safely, he looked at Yue Yang before disappearing into the teleportation circle on the ice wall.

“Little kid, if there’s a change in location of the teleportation point, remember to guard yourself against the Black Hell King. This is my indicator map, it will be effective for three days. After I enter, if I land closer to the north, I will wait for you at the north; if I’m closer to the south, I will be in the south; remember to come meet me quickly, be careful about everything.” Elder Nan Gong was caring towards Yue Yang. He had wanted to rush Yue Yang into entering, but thinking of it, Yue Yang would only enter after the Eastern Goblin Tribe. He should probably look after the six human Innates first to prevent any losses from attacks by the ancient beasts.

Human Innates were rare, and those that could go up to Innate Level Six were even rarer.

Any losses would result in an unrecoverable damage to the human-inhabited continents. Because they would at least be Heavenly Imperial Guardians, or even Imperial Guardians of an entire continent. Once they die, people from the Demon Abyss would definitely launch their invasion relentlessly.

When Elder Nan Gong left, the Winged Clan were slightly afraid.

But due to the conflicting interest between the Southern Goblin King and the three Eastern Goblin Tribe members, they weren’t afraid that Yue Yang and the three men from Eastern Goblin Tribe would attack them together.

If they were to start fighting, the Southern Goblin King would probably kill the Mountain Shaking Bear and the Thunder Gold-eyed Leopards.

Xiu Da was confident in dealing with Yue Yang. No matter how powerful he might be, Yue Yang was a newbie after all. The only tricky part was his extremely powerful World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame.

But Xiu Da had a way of ignoring Yue Yang in the battle.

He would be able to kill Yue Yang if he were to strike.

He was very confident of it.

Southern Goblin King looked at Mountain Shaking Bear and the two others and asked, “We have wasted quite some time, can we get going?”

“Yes.” Yue Yang instantly unleashed his power to Innate level Four and got out his Nirvana Flame and World Exterminating Wheel at the same time. He then smashed them towards the ancient teleportation circle. With a deafening boom, the entire glacier shook under the impact as the sound reverberated throughout the skies and the snowy ground. It was unknown how far the sound travelled.

The ancient teleportation circle collapsed.

While the Winged Clan were stunned, Yue Yang anchored his Prison Emperor’s Seven Stars Pillar heavily onto the glacier.

At the start, when Yue Yang was destroying the teleportation circle, Xiu Da didn't react to it but a tinge of skepticism could be found in his eyes.

But when the Prison Emperor's Seven Stars Pillar was used, his expression ashened immediately. The treasure he previously hid in his palm broke and turned into numerous golden light as it disappeared into thin air.

A light pillar shot down from the sky and the majestic vibe of the Black Hell King enveloped the atmosphere.

But when the light pillar descended, it became distorted under the effect of the Prison Emperor's Seven Stars Pillar.

It moved around like a snake. The Black Hell King tried to reach out his hands to tear apart the space, but to no avail. He then let out a terrifying groan discontentedly. The light pillar disappeared, and his teleportation failed...

The image of the Black Hell King disappeared!

Yue Yang dug his ears casually as he then place his fingers by his mouth and blew it, as if he had a huge chunk of ear wax that could be blown away on his finger. Yue Yang then spoke disinterestedly to Xiu Da who looked all stunned. "Wretched friends, please don't be so loud the next time you want to whisper secrets with others. Do you not know how irritating it was to listen to those boring secrets? If you wanna kill me, then do it, why do you want to waste so much effort? You think you can kill me by indicating your

location to the Black Hell King and make him teleport back? You guys are old men of over thousands of years old, why are you all still so naive?”

Southern Goblin King laughed as she clapped. “It’s always nice to watch a good show. The three of you go up and attack them!”

The three people from the Eastern Goblin Tribe shot towards warriors of the Winged Clan like arrows.

Xiu Da finally realized. “You guys are allies...”

“That’s right.” Southern Goblin King smiled lightly. “You are all idiots. You probably would thought that I, a traitor king of the Eastern Goblin Tribe, innately cannot coexist with the Dragon Emperor... Even if I am a traitor king , I won’t help outsiders kill people from our own tribe. We were only intentionally putting up a show. If we, the Eastern Goblin Tribe, didn’t do this, then we’ll undoubtedly become the strongest and most threatening competitor in the Tong Tian Tower. We will then become the enemy of all of the clans there, so we had to make up some internal conflict in order to make us appear less threatening. Looking at your expressions, I can tell that our plan has worked well.”

“Ba Yi the chief officer will take revenge for us!” Xiu Da shouted anxiously.

“Yes, your last words are very interesting!” Although Yue Yang and the Southern Goblin King hadn’t work together before, they understood each other’s intentions very well. They appeared at the

front and back of Xiu Da instantly as Yue Yang brought out his World Exterminating Wheel while the Southern Goblin King used her five fingers to strike her jade pipa, sending out waves of demonic sound. They all went toward Xiu Da, the leader of the Winged Clan!

(Last: For the record Yue Yang used the word ‘鸟人’ here, which literally translates to bird men but at the same time also means fucker/wretches)

Chapter 509 – Upholding Justice Like This?

Ding Ding Ding...

A few extremely high-pitched sound from the pipa flooded through Xiu Da's eardrum.

Xiu Da's entire body shook as he felt like he was struck by lightning. Even with the an energy barrier, his ears weren't able to take the demonic sound as his eardrums broke in an instant and fresh blood splattered out.

Time seemed to stand still as Xiu Da floated up in mid air without moving. Yue Yang stared at him coldly. Even the Innate Ranker, Ocean Emperor, Guan Lan, fell victim to Xiao Wen Li's Binding Inherent Skill, let alone Xiu Da. Under the situation of the demonic sound inundating the atmosphere, Xiu Da was confused and became even more defenseless.

"I'll slaughter you!" Yue Yang had always been an honest man who does not stand on ceremony. He struck with his deadliest move as he attacked.

With the Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus and the frost flower in his hands, he sent them towards Xiu Da's body. Although the mighty and powerful Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus wasn't as strong as the frost flower in this individual world, the mental shock wave it gave out wasn't any lesser.

Even the Southern Goblin King behind Xiu Da felt suffocated as if

the entire sky was pressed down by a giant hand.

This was even before Yue Yang launched his attack.

She couldn't imagine how agonising it would be for Xiu Da to be powerlessly hit by Yue Yang's direct attack.

The shock wave propagated out as both sides of the sky looked as if it was torn in half. It was a blazing hell on one side and cold hell on the other. All the Winged Clan rolled on the ground in pain, and even the strong Mountain Shaking Bear and Thunder Gold-eyed Leopards couldn't take it as they had to press down on the ground in order to defend themselves against the power of the Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus. The ancient apes, ancient demonic bear and ice dragons in the distance fled as they laid on the ground weakly, letting out weak groans. They looked completely different compared to before when they acted all mighty and arrogant.

Boom!

Xiu Da was struck.

Half of his body was burning hot while the other half froze from the chill.

Yue Yang was merciless towards the pathetic Xiu Da as he launched a powerful kick at Xiu Da's chest, causing a purple lightning to strike his heart.

Without a body like the Ancient Titan, Wu Su, and being bound, forget about Xiu Da, the leader of the Winged Clan who was just Innate Level Eight, even the strongest Sky Emperor would be severely injured.

Without requiring further intervention by the Southern Goblin King, Yue Yang turned around as his World Exterminating Wheel beheaded Xiu Da who had lost all of his combat power.

“So fast!” The Southern Goblin King seemed to understand something. She knew why the Black Hell King was wary of Yue Yang. The reason was that just with one chance, he would turn into a terrifying killer and kill his opponent instantly. If it was an opponent of the same power instead of Yue Yang, Xiu Da would at least be able to last for half an hour. But facing Yue Yang, once they faced each other head on, he was insta-killed before he could even react.

Xiu Da was a Level Eight Innate Ranker that was ranked within top five among the Winged Clan.

Who would have thought that he would be so easily killed by Yue Yang?

This was the power of Yue Yang!

And also one of the reason why the Black Hell King was wary.

The Southern Goblin King also knew that this wasn't Yue Yang's

full power. There were still the Nirvana Flame and terrifying Invisible Innate Sword Qi that wasn't used.

If not Xiu Da would have been more thoroughly defeated...

Yue Yang kept Xiu Da's dead body. As the body of an Innate Level Eight Ranker was extremely valuable, he couldn't waste it. Taking out Crescent Moon, he raised it high as he struck his first move, the Earth Splitting Slash!

"Ding ding ding..." With silky long hair, the Southern Goblin King went behind Yue Yang's back in the blink of an eye as she assisted him with her demonic music.

Her fair fingers fluttered around as she struck onto the chords of her pipa rapidly.

There were demonic music in the distance and sharp blades slashing close up, together with attacks by both the Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus and the frost flower.

The most tragic thing was that there was a unique no flying restriction in this Glacier Canyon that made it a nightmare for all the Winged Clan. Under the situation where there was no escape, the disturbed Winged Clan bonded together reluctantly and defended against Yue Yang's Earth Splitting Slash together.

Boom!

A number of the weaker Winged Clan vomited blood as their internal organs were injured by the shock wave from Yue Yang's blade.

Yue Yang who shot to the sky borrowed pressure exerted by the restriction as he dived towards the glacier. This was the second slash created by Yue Qiu, the Heaven and Earth Collapse!

It was unleashed in his hands.

With Yue Qiu's self invented trump card coupled with the power Yue Yang gained from his enlightenment, the impact would definitely be world shaking.

The slash was unstoppable.

The Winged Clan couldn't defend themselves against it even after gathering together to create a Giant Sword Tower. The giant sword broke into a million pieces as the surrounding Winged Clan were all sent flying. They subsequently smashed into the glacier and vomited large amount of blood. The more severely injured one even puked out broken fragments of their organs. The strength of the slash could be seen from here. The Winged Clan members at the front were slashed into half from top to bottom by Yue Yang... The Southern Goblin King was stunned when she saw it. She had seen powerful strikes like this, but she had never seen a Platinum-ranked treasure possessing the combat power of a Holy Equipment.

Just by comparing the power and majesty between those of similar strength, the Southern Goblin King believed that Yue Yang

would top the lot.

Forget about Yue Yang hiding his true power, just the Innate Level Three or to be more accurate Innate Level Eight Power he showed had surpassed Innate Level Eights like Xiu Da. Even Innate Level Nines like Shun Tian and the Black Prince mightn't be able to unleash their power to such an extent.

“Again!” Yue Yang jumped upwards again, under the no flying restriction, the height he leaped was nearly one hundred metres. Even the Southern Goblin King would admit that she wouldn't be able to do it.

Third Slash: Lord of Rivers and Mountains!

After the previous two slashes, Yue Yang decided to kill his opponent directly to prevent future worries.

His third slash was ten times more powerful than the previous two slashes and Yue Yang believed that none of his opponents could survive the third blow.

On a faraway mountain top, an ice dragon-like tornado went towards the lot at a breakneck speed.

While Yue Yang struck down, all the Winged Clan warriors closed their eyes waiting for death to descend, the ice dragon had already surpassed the speed of shockwaves and sound, quickly rushing over.

In the blizzard, a tall shadow with wings on his back reached out his hand and blocked Yue Yang's heaven rending slash... His golden palm collided with the Crescent Moon silently.

But an instant after, the centre of their collision exploded.

It was as if the entire space exploded as a circular shock wave expanded even before any sound arose. The ground and walls of the glacier valley shook from the shock wave as they collapsed. The ice dragons in the sky were drowned in the shock wave and snow that spread to the sky even before they could spread their wings and fly. The ancient apes and ancient demonic bears couldn't even stand straight as they rolled around.

The only person that could stabilize herself was the Southern Goblin King.

Even with the protection of her jade pipa, she glided three metres backwards before she eventually managed to stabilize herself.

Mountain Shaking Bear smashed into the ice wall, causing it to cave in. It was unknown where the Thunder Gold-eyed Leopards went. They'd probably flew more than hundreds of metres away.

The Winged Clan on the ground did not get shaken away as they were protected by an energy shield. It originated from the left hand of the mysterious man. His right hand was simultaneously defending against the sturdy Crescent Moon.

“Ha!” Yue Yang unleashed his power. The Crescent Moon did not manage to slash the mysterious man’s palm in half. Instead, Yue Yang was sent flying into the air from the impact.

It was only until he rotated around did he manage to get rid of the impact and descended gradually.

He realised that the mysterious man was a Winged Clan Innate Ranker with eight wings on his back.

He had a slender body with a height of around two metres. His legs were abnormally long and he looked otherworldly handsome. Coupled with his fair and pristine skin, he looked like a woman. There were eight wings on his back with snowy feathers that moved by itself. Other than the rainbow crystal sword tied on his waist, he didn’t carry any other weapons. He wasn’t even clad in an armour.

He merely used his body to defend just now and could easily take down Yue Yang’s third slash, Lord of Rivers and Mountains.

And he still had power remaining to protect his followers.

Such a powerful man?

Who was he exactly?

The Southern Goblin King's expression changed when she saw the person who came.

Of course she recognised this eight-winged man who resembled a woman. It was just that she didn't think that he would appear here, and specially in this very glacier canyon...

"Ah, it's Sky Emperor. My greetings, Your Majesty. "The Southern Goblin King changed her expression naturally as she smiled to the Sky Emperor.

"You are here too?" When the Sky Emperor Ba Yi saw Southern Goblin King he was a bit apprehensive. It seemed the intel he received on her had a few discrepancies. Nonetheless, he was rather polite as he greeted her, before looking at Yue Yang and asked knowingly: "Who is this young man? I wonder what kind of hatred drove you to kill my men, the descendants of Angels? Could it be that you are bullying us because we are the minority?"

"Sky Emperor, this is the Yue Clan's Third Young Master from the Soaring Dragon Continent, he is also the famous Titan Jr. of the Tong Tian Tower!" The Southern Goblin King helped to introduce Yue Yang to Sky Emperor Ba Yi.

"Even for you, the famous Titan Jr., you can't kill people without any reasons right?" Sky Emperor Ba Yi confronted Yue Yang coldly.

"Killing with no reasons? Sky Emperor, although you are part of the Five Emperors of Tong Tian Tower, you can't lie." Yue Yang

laughed out loud as he used his Crescent Moon to point to a Winged Clan Warrior at the feet of Sky Emperor: “They stole my Divine Equipment in broad daylight and then ate my Black Turtle Pearl. Nobody would want such outrageous individuals to be around. Could it be that Sky Emperor, you want to be biased toward your men while a junior like me can only be taken advantage of without any power to hunt for treasures? There’s justice in this world, if you want to protect them from their crimes just say it, if you were to force me to comply, I’ll turn away without second thoughts.”

“Pu...” The Winged Clan whom Yue Yang pointed to with his Crescent Moon vomited blood in anger.

The Southern Goblin King also acted as if she didn’t know him.

She had seen shameless people, but none as shameless as Yue Yang. It was him who killed others and snatched away their treasures, and now he’s trying to push the blame to them. This would probably make the Winged Clan, who was made into a scapegoat. vomit blood in fury.

Sky Emperor laughed too. “So it’s like this! Titan Jr., if my men were to really steal your Divine Equipment and Black Turtle Pearl, I’ll definitely kill them personally to preventing them from tainting our name of being the continent’s angels. But if they didn’t do it, and if I were to find out that you are lying, what then? Do I kill you personally to compensate for the shame you brought upon us?”

Yue Yang shrugged his shoulders. “Go and check quickly, they

stole my God's Blood and Martial Soul, make them vomit it out!"

The Southern Goblin King was speechless.

It was exaggerated enough to mention Divine Equipment and the Black Turtle Pearl. Now he's quoting God's Blood and Martial Soul? He shouldn't have exaggerate things so ridiculously, how was he gonna cover up for it later?

She poked out her fair fingers as she hurried Yue Yang via transmission. "Idiot, run away now, why are you wasting time with them, he is obviously trying to delay time, it would be too late if you don't do it now..."

There was a tinge of mysterious smile that flashed across the depth of Yue Yang's eyes. He replied the Southern Goblin King. "You can't run away randomly, you have to choose the right timing to do it."

In the sky, a dark shadow that was as gigantic as a Demonic Dragon descended.

It was none other than the Black Hell King.

He greeted Yue Yang in an abnormally gentle and polite manner. "Don't be afraid, Third Young Master, I'll uphold justice for you. Sky Emperor would give me some face. If it really were to be the Winged Clan who stole your Divine Equipment, Sky Emperor will definitely uphold justice for you!"

The Southern Goblin King was speechless again.

She wanted to speak to the Black Hell King very much about the level of intimacy between him and Sky Emperor to the point where they could form a Gay Alliance and talk about upholding justice?

She understood now, there was an affair going on between the Black Hell King and Sky Emperor, and they were fast enough to grab onto the opportunity to find trouble with Yue Yang. She didn't know how Yue Yang would deal with it subsequently... There would be a high chance that he would run away, but she wasn't sure how he was going to do it... The Southern Goblin King felt curious all of a sudden and wanted to see what would Yue Yang's reaction be.

How would he deal with it?

Chapter 510 – Divine Equipment? I Have Never Lacked Them!

“Since the Black Hell King is here to be the judge, we don’t have to worry about anything.” The Sky Emperor brushed away his long hair behind his ears. He asked Yue Yang: “Before we investigate, we should confirm one thing; Does the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master possess a Divine Equipment? If you had never possessed a Divine Equipment, then it proves that my men could never have stolen your Divine Equipment... This is because no one would be able to steal something that never existed!”

“Divine Equipments choose their owners. Maybe a genius junior like the Third Young Master would possess a Divine Equipment.” The Black Hell King and the Sky Emperor snickered.

“Yeah, bring out your Divine Equipment, then we will admit that we stole from you!” The Winged Clan warrior arrogantly provoked him.

They all thought that Divine Equipments are something that cannot randomly be picked up from the ground. Even the Sky Emperor and the Black Hell King had none, so the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master definitely had none. Now, they are forcing him to bring it out. If he did not bring it out, then everything he said was just slander. With this, the Black Hell King and the Sky Emperor could use it as a pretext to make a fuss and use this opportunity to attack.

The Southern Goblin King’s gaze slightly chilled.

There was no mistake in what the Black Hell King said a while ago about Divine Equipment choosing their owners, if that was the case Divine Equipment could not be stolen.

Divine Equipments have their own spirits and egos. Even if someone stole them, they would easily return to another person's side. Other than having the equipments recognize them, warriors could not use force to steal them. Within the Sky Emperor's words, he considered three points.

One, Yue Yang did not have a Divine Equipment at hand. If he had none, then Ba Yi's men could not steal his Divine Equipment. Therefore, Yue Yang was intentionally slandering them.

Two, even if Yue Yang had a Divine Equipment, other people could not steal it, so Yue Yang was still slandering them.

Three, by asking this, the Sky Emperor was not only attacking Yue Yang but also cleverly probing him. If Yue Yang could not prove that he had a Divine Equipment, then he was not only slandering the Winged Clan and challenging the Sky Emperor, he was also letting the Sky Emperor and the Black Hell King have a clear understanding of inside information. If Yue Yang did not have a Divine Equipment, there was nothing that could protect Yue Yang's life... The Sky Emperor and the Black Hell King could then use this as a pretext to make a move.

The Southern Goblin King knew that this wretch was not easy to deal with.

However, she never imagined that just one move was very hard to deal with. His words not only succeeded in counterattacking but also forced Yue Yang into a difficult spot.

“Since you have a Divine Equipment, why don’t you show it to us and expand our horizons? Right here, not only this emperor but also the Southern Goblin King is probably longing to see a Divine Equipment.” The Sky Emperor looked at the Southern Goblin King. He and the Black Hell King had intentions to kill Yue Yang, but they were not sure of the Southern Goblin King’s thoughts. If it was someone else, the Sky Emperor would not worry about anything, but since this person was the Southern Goblin King, who was an expert in using demonic music to kill people, they felt that it was best if they didn’t touch her.

“Is that so? Third Young Master has a Divine Equipment? I haven’t seen one before so I wonder what it looks like.” The Southern Goblin King’s words made the Sky Emperor and the Black Hell King relax. This woman was very clever and stayed neutral.

This kind of result was already very good.

If by any chance that the Southern Goblin King becomes fascinated by Yue Yang’s charisma and protect him, Yue Clan’s Third Young Master would most likely be able to run away.

If it was like that, the future would be troublesome... Zhi Zun, that extremely frightening woman, would probably charge into the

[Guang Ming](#) Continent or probably annihilate the entire Black Hell Army.

If they did not worry about this, then the Sky Emperor and the Black Hell King would have already made their moves!

The Southern Goblin King appeared to maintain neutrality but she was secretly sending mental messages to Yue Yang: “Idiot, you still won’t run away? If you delay anymore, the Black Hell King’s men would return. It is also possible that the Emperor of the Underworld would also join in. At that time, let alone escape, your life would also be forfeit.”

As if he did not hear Southern Goblin King’s secret message, Yue Yang slowly placed his hand into his chest.

When he moved, the Black Hell King and the Sky Emperor tensed up. They felt that the brat was going to shatter a teleportation crystal to escape. As a result, they were secretly on guard and preparing to attack at any second.

Unexpectedly, Yue Yang brought out an imperial seal that shone with great brilliance: “Divine Equipment? I have never lacked them!”

When he brought out the imperial seal, the entire sky above the glacier canyon seemed to be pressed down by the invisible hand of a god. All the lifeforms in the area couldn’t budge. Even those ice dragons, who were not restricted by the Ancient Code, sharply fell from the sky without being able to put up any kind of resistance

against the mighty force. If Yue Yang's Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus was compared to this imperial seal, the Fire Lotus was like a sailboat while the imperial seal was a ten-thousand-ton ship.

Although they both possess suppressive powers, their levels were completely different.

The most important thing is that the imperial seal carried an undefendable sealing power.

Let alone the beasts in the canyon, even the Sky Emperor and the Black Hell King were shocked to the point that they had the urge to escape. Facing this suppression and sealing power an uncontrollable fear welled up inside them.

This was especially true for the Black Hell King, who was once the Prison Emperor Divine General...

He was the one who thoroughly understood as to what kind of treasure the imperial seal, that Yue Yang was holding, is. This was the thing he feared the most, the 'Prison Emperor Divine Seal'! Compared to the 'Prison Emperor Divine Sword' and the 'Prison Emperor Divine Staff', the 'Prison Emperor Divine Seal' was the most terrifying thing for the Black Hell King.

This was because if he was defeated by the two people in front of him, he still had a chance to live.

If he was defeated by the Prison Emperor Divine Seal, then what

was waiting for him was either dying thoroughly or permanently sealed!

“The Prison Emperor Divine Seal. You have entered the Prison Emperor Divine Palace before?” The Black Hell King’s heart sunk down. If Yue Yang inherited the Prison Emperor Divine Sword and the Prison Emperor Divine Staff, along with his quick growth, becoming the next Prison Emperor was just around the corner. As a traitor general, he was in grave danger.

“It’s really a Divine Equipment?” The Sky Emperor’s pupils continued to shrink.

He also never could have imagined that Yue Yang would truly bring out a Divine Equipment. Moreover, it was an extremely high quality Divine Equipment!

The ancient beasts from afar already laid down on the ground from the Divine Equipment’s suppression and awe, and didn’t dare make any movements. The arrogant Winged Clan warriors behind the Sky Emperor Ba Yi were frightened yet greedily gulped their saliva. The legendary Divine Equipment was in front of them. Even if they extended their hands to reach out for it, they simply could never obtain it. How could it not drive them mad?

The most unfortunate thing was that these people said that if the other side was able to bring out a Divine Equipment, they would admit to stealing... They didn’t know what to do anymore.

The Southern Goblin King was also astonished.

It took a while for her to return to her senses.

She looked down upon the Winged Clan warrior's greedy appearance. They didn't have any strength at all yet they still wanted it.

Even if Yue Yang gifted them the Divine Equipment, they would never obtain the Divine Equipment. Divine Equipments have souls and choose their owners. It would absolutely never choose a weak owner!

As for why Yue Yang brought out the Divine Equipment, she could guess two points.

One was to calm her heart; Two was to defeat the opponent.

By bringing out the Prison Emperor Divine Seal, he was undoubtedly slapping the Black Hell King and the Sky Emperor in the face.

The villains, who were originally colluding with each other, would also split apart due to the Divine Equipment. If the Divine Equipment had chosen its owner then there was no problem, but it was ownerless. This means that the Sky Emperor and the Black Hell King had a certain chance to obtain its favor. Whether it was the Black Hell King or the Sky Emperor, the Prison Emperor Divine Seal was the best treasure. Even after a thousand years or ten thousand years pass, they would probably never obtain a better treasure.

Killing Yue Yang and stealing the Divine Seal was already a certainty.

The question was, who should have the Divine Seal?

If the Black Hell King agreed to give the Divine Seal to the Sky Emperor then he was an idiot. Giving it to the Black Hell King? The Sky Emperor was already weaker than the Black Hell King, if the Black Hell King obtained the Divine Seal, then the entire Guang Ming Continent would become his backyard and the Sky Emperor would become his prisoner, not an ally!

One Prisoner Emperor's Divine Seal, two competitors, how were they going to split it?

Moreover, the Yue Clan's Third Young Master was not made of tofu.

Although he had not been recognized as the Prison Emperor Divine Seal's owner, the Prison Emperor Divine Sword and Divine Staff had most likely recognized him as their owner...

The Southern Goblin King finally understood why this brat did not escape and remained with the two ambitious players. He actually had this kind of strength! When she thought about it, she smiled and walked two steps forward. She poured oil on the fire: "Oh! Is this a Divine Equipment? What a beautiful treasure. Third Young Master do you have any extras, you should gift me one!"

By declaring her position like this, the Sky Emperor and the Black Hell King became tensed.

When the Divine Equipment appeared, it seemed that this Eastern Goblin Tribe female goblin was slightly tempted... A handsome youth with a high quality Divine Equipment, when these two combine, no woman would stay sane else nothing could move their hearts!

“Not giving. Fourth Mother said that all treasures should be kept to attract a daughter-in-law.” Yue Yang indicated that everything was a betrothal gift.

“Stingy...” The Southern Goblin King pretended to pout playfully and used her white hands to lightly hit him.

The Black Hell King and the Sky Emperor looked at each other.

They would definitely steal it, but how were they going to do it.

Moreover, if they made their moves now, the Southern Goblin King would definitely assist the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master. This was undoubtedly an unwise action.

The Sky Emperor felt his stomach burn with jealousy. When he opened his mouth to counterattack against Yue Yang, he secretly felt proud of himself and felt that he would be able to trap this young beginner. He never imagined that the other side would

beautifully slap his face. Not only did he swallow a bitter pill, he also let the opponent sow dissent in their alliance.

Although the Black Hell King was an ally, he absolutely could not let him obtain the high quality Divine Equipment.

At the same time, the Black Hell King would never let him have it.

Regardless of the future, Yue Yang's method succeeded today.

As for the future of their cooperation, the Sky Emperor would not one hundred percent believe the Black Hell King and the Black Hell King would also not one hundred percent believe the Sky Emperor... All of these was caused by Yue Yang bringing out the Prison Emperor Divine Seal.

The Sky Emperor would rather Yue Yang never bring out the Prison Emperor Divine Seal. If that was the case, their cooperation would not have any misgivings.

“Let me touch this Divine Seal, just let me touch it once.” The Southern Goblin King extended her hands, wanting to touch it, but Yue Yang would not allow it.

“No. A while ago, the wretches stole my ‘Prison Emperor Divine Staff. If I lose the Prison Emperor Divine Seal now, it would be disastrous. If the little girl at home wanted to eat roasted chestnuts, I would have nothing to smash the shells anymore.” Yue

Yang's words almost made the Sky Emperor and the Black Hell King vomit blood. Using the Prison Emperor Divine Seal to smash chestnuts, couldn't this brat do something even more useless than that?

"We did not steal..." The Winged Clan bird men wanted to cry to death.

They had never even heard of the Prison Emperor Divine Staff before.

Moreover, Divine Equipments all have souls, how could they have stolen them?

Wasn't the Yue Clan's Third Young Master wrongfully accusing them too much. If this continues, Yue Clan's Third Young Master would probably even want them to vomit out God's Blood and Martial Soul. At that time, even if they wanted to hang themselves, they wouldn't be able to find a rope!

Moreover, they even said that if the other side had a Divine Equipment, they would admit to stealing...

A few bird men quickly fell on the ground, pretending to have fainted.

"Who?" The Black Hell King suddenly roared angrily. He looked towards the northwest sky.

“Yue Clan’s Third Young Master. As expected, you are truly worthy to be called a genius that only appears once every ten thousand years in the Tong Tian Tower. I never imagined that you would have innumerable Divine Equipment, that are so rare in the world.” From the sky, a completely unclear image of a man slowly floated down. The image made slight movements as if it was greeting the Black Hell King and the Sky Emperor. Then, it sent its greetings towards Yue Yang and the Southern Goblin King: “[I am You Ming](#). I have admired the Third Young Master’s reputation for a long time now. When I saw you today, you truly are a dragon among men! With Black Hell King as the judge, You Ming and Southern Goblin King as witnesses, Sky Emperor’s subordinates have stolen the Third Young Master’s Divine Equipment. If this is true, then it would smear the Guang Ming Continent’s name. Why not let your subordinates return the Third Young Master’s Divine Equipment?”

“You...” When the Sky Emperor Ba Yi looked at the person who arrived, his complexion immediately changed and his confidence disappeared.

(Last: Guang Ming means radiant/bright)

(Last: Here, You Ming AKA Emperor of the Underworld uses extremely polite words, and I am bad at writing them so assume that he is extremely polite.)

Chapter 511 – Ancient Ruins

This man who named himself as You Ming was actually one of the Five Emperors of Tong Tian Tower, the Emperor of the Underworld!

He was on par with the Sky Emperor and the Ocean Emperor.

The Emperor of the Underworld was an extremely mysterious Supreme Innate.

Rumour has it that his father was a Ranker from the Demon Abyss who settled down in the Hei Ye Continent of the Ninth Floor of Tong Tian Tower two thousand years ago. He then married his wife, who subsequently gave birth to the Emperor of the Underworld. The Emperor of the Underworld was born with incredible gifts and he was far more outstanding than his parents, making him the strongest Innate Ranker in the Hei Ye Continent . This also made him one of the Five Emperors of Tong Tian Tower. As there were frequent battles between the opposing Hei Ye Continent and the Guang Ming Continent in the Ninth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, the Emperor of the Underworld's father died on the battlefield when he was a young child. Therefore the Emperor of the Underworld and the Sky Emperor were arch enemies even though the Sky Emperor did not kill his father.

Although the Emperor of the Underworld wasn't very sure if he could kill the Sky Emperor, he would never become his ally.

He would oppose everything that the Sky Emperor approves.

He would give his all to make the Sky Emperor upset.

For example, him making use of Yue Yang to give the Sky Emperor a fierce slap across his face... Although the Emperor of the Underworld wasn't aware that the Black Hell King and the Sky Emperor were scheming against Yue Yang and did not know why Yue Yang stayed after falling into their trap, and even flashed his Divine Equipment, these wouldn't hinder him being supportive of Yue Yang in order to embarrass the Sky Emperor.

“So it is the Emperor of the Underworld, welcome.” Although the Black Hell King was polite on the surface, he was silently sighing.

It would be harder to kill Yue Yang now that the Emperor of the Underworld was here.

If the Emperor of the Underworld were to find trouble with the Sky Emperor, it wouldn't be easy for him to kill Yue Yang in front of the Southern Goblin King, and Yue Yang was not simple to begin with.

If he were to act with force, it would definitely push the neutral parties, the Emperor of the Underworld and Southern Goblin King, to Yue Yang's side. Yue Yang had the Prison Emperor Divine Seal for quite some time already but as long as he wasn't recognised by the Divine Equipment, the Black Hell King still had some chance.

The Black Hell King was upset, but he suppressed it.

The Sky Emperor Ba Yi was also dejected.

He felt that he got into trouble without benefitting from anything.

Had he known that the Emperor of the Underworld had been following behind him, he wouldn't have to appeared at all. He could have also kept a neutral stance to avoid becoming enemies with Yue Yang. He could have let the Black Hell King deal with Yue Yang... Now that he had become the bad guy. He even formed a new enemy with limitless potential without gaining any benefits and became a joke in front of the Emperor of the Underworld.

“Let's go!” The Sky Emperor felt too ashamed to stay as he brought his followers and tried to leave the glacier canyon.

“Wait.” Black Hell King wouldn't let the Sky Emperor leave just like this. He had to try and form an alliance with him. Since he couldn't obtain the Prison Emperor Divine Seal, it would be useful to make the Sky Emperor his ally.

He transmitted to the Sky Emperor.

“Since the Southern Goblin King found the ancient ruins left behind by our ancestors, and we had been brought together by fate, how about we venture around together to see if there are any treasures?”

Seeing that the Southern Goblin King didn't object to it, he felt that she was very smart as she did not indicate her stand at all. She didn't help Yue Yang nor did she try to secretly help the Black Hell King, she had only been enjoying the show all along. The Black Hell King looked at Yue Yang and the Emperor of the Underworld as if there weren't any past feuds between them. He extended his invitation to the duo politely. "If there's really any hidden treasures around, let's see which one of us has the affinity to obtain the treasures from our seniors."

His words made the Sky Emperor ponder silently.

Even if there weren't any treasures in the ancient ruins, it would all be worth it if he could kill Yue Yang and obtain the high quality 'Prison Emperor Divine Seal'.

If he were to leave hatefully, then he would never get the chance to obtain the Divine Equipment...

In the end, the Sky Emperor decided to stay.

"As a witness, You Ming is more than willing to go along. Perhaps the Sky Emperor will have the affinity to obtain another Supreme Divine Equipment so that you can return it to the Yue Clan's Third Young Master." the Emperor of the Underworld did not forget to be sarcastic towards the Sky Emperor.

"..." Yue Yang remained silent as he slowly put away the Prison Emperor Divine Seal.

Nobody could guess what Yue Yang was thinking. They were puzzled over why he didn't run, but showed his Prison Emperor Divine Seal to the lot instead.

It was precisely because of this that the Black Hell King found Yue Yang terrifying. There were a lot of amazing things that were associated with the Yue Clan's Third Young Master. Now that he saw him today, he finally understood that the way he did things were different from common men. With such strength and mentality, it was therefore no wonder that he could even kill the Ocean Emperor. The Black Hell King and the Sky Emperor looked at each other discreetly as they felt shiver down their spine after seeing Yue Yang's calm reaction.

There had never been a young man who was able to shock them so much.

This guy was very dangerous!

Black Hell King was determined to kill Yue Yang using his fastest speed when the opportunity comes, in order to prevent future worries!

If he couldn't find the best opportunity to do so, then he would kill Yue Yang once he leaves Heaven Outside Heaven... He couldn't let him leave Heaven Outside Heaven alive, if not there was a high chance that he would be defeated once Yue Yang matures.

“Seniors, and Third Young Master with a house full of Divine Equipments, let's proceed to the ancient ruins shall we? I no longer

wish to get the Divine Equipment that could only be used as a nut cracker. My biggest hope now is to obtain a Holy Equipment.” Southern Goblin King smiled as her slim hands struck the chords of her pipa lightly as gentle music gradually sounded. It was pleasant to hear and it soothed the souls of those who heard it.

Southern Goblin King ordered for Mountain Shaking Bear and the Thunder Gold-eyed Leopards to leave while the Sky Emperor ordered his men who pretended to faint to leave.

The teleportation circle in the glacier canyon had already been destroyed by Yue Yang and couldn't be repaired.

Luckily the Southern Goblin King knew of another teleportation circle.

While she was leading the way, she asked Yue Yang a lot of questions and it made her attitude change tremendously. This caused Black Hell King and the Sky Emperor to feel threatened.

It seemed that the Southern Goblin King still had a little interest in Yue Yang as he was a handsome guy with Divine Equipments after all. They did not have any way to stop them from communicating. The only way was to kill Yue Yang together after they enter the ancient ruins. That would be the best way.

Black Hell King and the Sky Emperor would be put to shame if Yue Yang were to get both the beauty and the hidden treasures...

They were discussing in discreet along the way, planning on how they would kill Yue Yang together.

The Emperor of the Underworld followed behind and kept quiet.

But the Black Hell King and the Sky Emperor were able to guarantee that if the situation was unfavorable, the Emperor of the Underworld would definitely be the first to strike and he would definitely attack the Sky Emperor.

The lot walked for another hundred kilometres before they entered another teleportation circle and went into the ancient ruins.

“...” Yue Yang realised to his dismay that the real test had only just began. The threat of the hostile environment was on par to the threat posed by the Black Hell King and the Sky Emperor.

The ancient ruins was located in a similarly unfathomably huge glacier canyon. The previous glacier canyon that spanned over more than ten kilometres previously wasn't even one percent of the current length. The top of the glacier canyon couldn't be seen when one looked up to the sky; if one were to look across, the other tall cliff would at least be a few hundred kilometres away, its borders couldn't even be seen.

If one were to look to the opposite side, one would also discover a snow white monument covering the sky in the distant horizon, shooting up through the clouds.

The hostility of the environment was horrifying.

Numerous tornados spiraled down from the clouds and continuously sucked in the snow on the ground.

Moreover, the frozen ground would break without warning, with an icy storm bursting out like a volcanic eruption.

Millions of ice crystals and groundwater shot to the sky. The power was so immense that being hit by it was akin to being hit by the full power of a peak Innate Level Ten. Even the Black Hell King, who was clad in holy equipments, was wary towards the ice crystals storms that shot up from the ground.

The more terrifying thing was the strange ‘disintegrating space’.

Yue Yang couldn’t understand why it was like this even with his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision. A huge part of the sky shattered without any warning.

In the shattered sky, anything would disintegrate.

And then vanish into thin air.

This was the most famous most terrifying scene known as the Shattered Void of the Heaven Outside Heaven!

Luckily this teleportation circle discovered by the Southern

Goblin King wasn't damaged unlike before. The place it would teleport people to was fixed, so Yue Yang, Southern Goblin King, the Emperor of the Underworld, the Sky Emperor and the Black Hell King landed in the same region that wasn't far away from each other.

With the Southern Goblin King around, Yue Yang and the lot were able to land safely.

Yue Yang saw the Black Hell King's attempt to attack him several times, especially when the Shattered Void appeared.

But once Yue Yang turned to face him, he would feign ignorance. The only thing he lacked was a tag saying 'I would never launch shady attacks' on his forehead.

"What's that?" Yue Yang saw a giant tornado pillar that was perpetually rotating in an extremely distant place. He asked inquisitively. "Could that be the entrance into the ancient ruins?"

"We haven't reach the real entrance yet... The real entrance into the ancient ruin is even more terrifying than that. Ice crystals and groundwater accumulates there, and Shattered Voids could be seen at any time. An Innate Level Eight warrior would be instantly killed if he were to encounter an Ice Crystal fountain or a Shattered Void. Even if he were to defend with all his might, he will most likely die if he were to be struck once." The Southern Goblin King had already unleashed her power to Innate Level Eight, and it seemed that she still had power to go up to Innate Level Nine. Looks like this pipa girl is not a simple person, she could be on par to the Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

“Third Young Master seems to have control over fire and ice, you definitely live up to your name.” Black Hell King said with unknown intentions.

“That can’t compare to the thickness of your skin, it couldn’t be corroded by any fire or water.” Yue Yang retaliated.

The Black Hell King wasn’t angry when he heard it as he laughed it off.

On the topic of self control, the Black Hell King was the strongest contender that Yue Yang had ever met.

If it was others, they wouldn’t be able to take such a critical personal attack, but as an Elder Innate clad with holy equipments and his allies by his side, he could still stand Yue Yang’s provocation, one could see how shrewd he was from this.

After walking for a few kilometers, half of the body of a frozen man appeared before them.

There were a few broken ice pieces lying around.

It most probably belonged to an Innate Ranker that got hit by the ice crystal groundwater, causing him to fall headfirst, shattering his head, neck and half of his chest. Only his abdomen and feet was left dangling outside.

“Help!”

A dark shadow escaped from the edge of the perpetually spinning tornado and ran towards Yue Yang’s direction in dire straits.

But before Yue Yang could figure out what was going on.

An Ancient Ice Demon King with a height of around sixty meters chased after him. The Demon King held a long curved ice blade and an ice crystal tornado swirled around him. Yue Yang immediately raised his Hui Jin Magic blade, but was stopped by the Southern Goblin King. “This Ancient Ice Demon King is probably the guard of the secret passage, he will only go after those intruders, so he won’t attack us... If we were to strike, it may then alert the entire team of guards and if that happens, we won’t be able to enter the ancient ruins even if we fight for three days and three nights.”

Even before the Southern Goblin King could finish her sentence, the Ancient Ice Demon King had already caught up with the foreign Innate who ran away.

With a slash, the ten metres long ice blade cut the foreign Innate into half.

After killing the foreign Innate, the Ancient Ice Demon King sunk into the glacier and gradually disappeared, leaving behind the corpse of the foreign Innate that was slashed into half a hundred metres away.

Yue Yang suddenly developed a weird feeling. The Ancient Ice Demon King seemed to have looked at him before he sunk into the glacier.

Was it his misconception?

Or could there be more than meets the eye?

Chapter 512 – Really? You Guys Are So Nice To Me!

The entrance of the ancient ruins.

In the center of the vast glacier canyon, there stood a tall conical crystal mountain. Its entire body was clear and pristine with a height of over a thousand meters. Under the reflections of the snow, it appeared light blue and was indescribably beautiful. If not for the crystal pillars that collapsed and caused it to appear a little ruined, nobody would believe that it was an ancient ruin.

A tornado was swirling around the mountain, wreaking havoc on the glacier.

Shattered Voids appeared occasionally, but the strangest thing was that it always appeared around the mountain and hence did not cause any damage to the crystal-shaped mountain.

Southern Goblin King brought everyone to enter through a crystal gate from the west, which was one of the only three entrances into the ancient ruins. It was said that there were the north, south, east and west gates in the past but the north gate had been completely demolished so nobody could enter from there. The east and south gates were also in shambles, causing the passage to be extremely dangerous. The only safe route was the entrance via the west gate that the Southern Goblin King entered in the past.

“Be careful everyone. There are a lot of internal passages, and if

you were to enter one of those passages, you will be confined within them for a few days.” Southern Goblin King alerted everyone.

“....” Yue Yang suddenly summoned Xiao Wen Li.

Black Hell King , Sky Emperor and Emperor of the Underworld were slightly shocked.

Why did he summon his Guardian Beast without any monsters appearing?

Yue Yang had been to the Five Elements Palace and had suffered losses there before. If the Ancient Code inside the ancient ruin restricted the use of summoning, then no matter how strong his beasts were, they would be useless. The Ancient Ice Demon King that had just killed the foreign Innate just now wasn't a Holy Beast. It was only Platinum-ranked Level Ten beast, but its power was akin to that of a Innate Level Eight Warrior.

If hundreds of such beasts or those even stronger than it were hiding inside, and with nobody who could summon their beasts... Yue Yang couldn't imagine what the consequences would be!

Forget about how the Black Hell King would think of him, his safety should always come first.

Not only did Yue Yang summon Xiao Wen Li, he also summoned the Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man, who possessed the Heart of

Earth and never grow tired.

“Let’s go in!” Southern Goblin King did not react to it, but the Black Hell King and Sky Emperor were exceptionally cautious of Xiao Wen Li as they stole glances at her various times, as if to confirm if she was a Holy Beast or a Divine Beast. Xiao Wen Li laid on Yue Yang’s back like his daughter. Her eyes remained close as if she was in deep sleep.

The first reaction the Black Hell King had when he saw Xiao Wen Li was to stay away from her.

Although they hadn’t fought against each other before, Yue Yang’s loli lamia was very impressive as she possessed the immensely powerful [Binding] Inherent Skill that could restrict her opponent. The Supreme Innates in the higher levels of the Tong Tian Tower had long heard of it. Shun Tian and the Black Prince were past victims of Xiao Wen Li’s Binding Inherent Skill, even the great demon king of the Demon Abyss was no exception. There were even bold guesses that Guan Lan died under the joint attack of Yue Yang and Xiao Wen Li using the World Exterminating Wheel and Binding Inherent Skill respectively.

Sky Emperor was also wary of Xiao Wen Li.

After being binded, the Black Hell King was still protected by his body full of Holy Equipment, it was just that his becomes slightly weaker. The strength of the Holy Equipments weren’t as powerful as the Black Hell King.

He who was known for his speed, skills and light energy didn't possess any advantage when facing the Binding Inherent Skill.

It could be said that he would be completely restricted by it. This was why he didn't want to rashly find trouble with Yue Yang.

Only the silent Emperor of the Underworld looked at the Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man.

“How weird... There are no guards in the crystal passage.” Southern Goblin King brought Yue Yang and the rest in through the west gate, but she stopped dead on her track uneasily after a few hundred meters. “There should be ‘Demonic Shadows’, that could hide within the crystal passage, here. They can copy the skills of those who enter and will never die, so they caused others a terrible headache... They are now nowhere to be seen, what’s going on?”

“Are you sure we aren’t walking the wrong way?” Black Hell King asked.

“No, although the crystal passage here is like a confusing maze, I’m confident that I did not go the wrong way.” Southern Goblin King shook her head.

“Could it be that the passage itself is moving, causing the location to change?” Sky Emperor suggested a possibility.

“No, there’s no such possibility, I did not feel any shaking... I’m

very sensitive towards sound and scent, moreover the marking here isn't gone, so this was the route I took the other time." Southern Goblin King would put a note-like silver pin for every few meters she walked, they would then cause very weak vibrations which would serve as her marking. Yue Yang had noticed that she would collect all the pins she previously left behind, and would put new ones after every few meters, so according to these markings, Southern Goblin King believed that she did not take the wrong way.

"Let me ask you a question. The markings you left behind should be a song right? What song is it?" Yue Yang suddenly asked.

"Palace Misery." Southern Goblin King looked at Yue Yang thoughtfully.

"Don't doubt it everyone, we are walking on the correct path. But it's just that the distance is wrong. It may seem that we walked for only a few hundred meters but we actually walked for a few thousand meters or even further." Yue Yang pointed to Emperor of the Underworld behind him: "And he is the Demonic Shadow. I don't know where the real Emperor of the Underworld went, but it was definitely him who copied Emperor of the Underworld's hallucination ability and deceived us..."

"Come again?" Black Hell King's gaze turned chilly instantly.

He actually did not realize that Emperor of the Underworld was silently replaced.

If the guards were to possess other even more strange powers, then wouldn't that land him in danger?

Sky Emperor immediately unleashed his power to Innate Level Nine and attacked Emperor of the Underworld. Sure enough, his first strike made Emperor of the Underworld fly away from the impact. The Demonic Shadow could only copy the Emperor of the Underworld's hallucination ability but not his strength. Without the Emperor of the Underworld's strength, the Demonic Shadow that only had an Innate Level Seven's strength was easily defeated and flew more than ten meters away from the impact.

After its exit, the entire space became clear, as if it was being cleansed by certain energy.

The ground they were standing on did not change, but the passage changed.

It seemed be similar, but it looked foreign.

The Demonic Shadow that disguised itself as the Emperor of the Underworld showed itself as a dark shadow that looked asexual. This was its original form.

Emperor of the Underworld was replaced by the Demonic Shadow and the location of the real Emperor of the Underworld remained unknown. Just when Black Hell King was about to speak, he suddenly realised that there were numerous Sky Emperor flashing in the crystal passage, they all went for Sky Emperor at a breakneck speed, causing one to be unable to differentiate between

the real Sky Emperor and the phony ones. All the Sky Emperor roared loudly and attacked each other crazily, causing one to be dazed from seeing the scene.

“Take your time to fight, Sky Emperor. We’ll proceed to hunt for the treasures.” Yue Yang was pouring oil on the fire, causing the Sky Emperor to be even more incensed.

“Damn it, I’m the real one, help me get rid of the rest! Although they will not die, they have to take a long time to recover if you were to kill them!” Sky Emperor became frantic.

“I’m the real one...”

“You guys are goddamn phonies, I’ll kill you...”

All of the Sky Emperor claimed that they were the real one, even Black Hell King couldn’t differentiate between the real and fake ones.

Yue Yang did not bother helping when he saw that Sky Emperor was being targeted. One man less meant less competition. There might be just one hidden treasure, and even if there were millions of them, he wouldn’t spare one for the Sky Emperor.

Yue Yang grabbed Southern Goblin King and ran off, he didn’t care about the Sky Emperor no matter how crazed and angry he was.

Black Hell King was a little hesitant, but he decided to stay in the end.

He had a special ability which allowed him to sense his target, and although he could only sense one person, he had already locked on to Yue Yang, so Black Hell King wasn't afraid that he would escape.

Moreover, it wasn't guaranteed to be safe ahead...

But the Sky Emperor did not want Yue Yang to get the hidden treasure before him, so in a haste, he unleashed his power to Innate Level Ten.

“Grand Brilliance!”

With his trump card, all the ‘Sky Emperors’ who copied his high speed flying ability were sent flying, forcing them back to their original form. They were severely injured but not dead so they floated into the crystal passage one by one and went to hibernate. They could copy the special skills of those who barged in but not their strength, so this issue was still manageable for Sky Emperor except for the part that he was landed in a sorry state.

After defeating all the Demonic Shadows, Black Hell King and the Sky Emperor followed Yue Yang and Southern Goblin King anxiously. When they reached the crystal plaza, they were amazed by the view before them, just like Yue Yang.

It was definitely a unique sub-space. Just like the Twelve Zodiac Temples, it did not have any guards.

The entire crystal plaza was extremely huge.

But it was empty.

Yue Yang guessed that the entire space was the size of a hundred football fields, it might even occupy a larger space than the crystal mountain. There was a beautiful crystal dome above with thick crystal walls that were nearly thousand meters tall around... Talking about its current size, the crystal mountain outside wouldn't be able to fit it, let alone the crystal passage spanning over a mere few thousand meters.

In the center of the crystal plaza, there was a six meters tall crystal pillar right before Yue Yang.

There were all kinds of Heaven Runes noted down on it.

There were four neatly placed chests below. They were the golden chest, silver chest, bronze chest and wooden chest.

"It was this easy to find the hidden treasures?" The Sky Emperor was stunned.

"..." Black Hell King felt that it was not quite possible too.

He was even thinking if these were Demonic Shadows or the illusion used by the guards of the crystal plaza in order to deceive everyone.

Yue Yang did not reply.

Southern Goblin King sighed softly. “I have been here previously and I chose one out of the four chests. A ray shot out and the next thing I know, I was in an individual world in Heaven Outside Heaven. I was expelled by that ray.”

“What if I were to choose all four?” The Sky Emperor asked.

Yue Yang pointed to the Heaven Runes on the Crystal Pillar. “Sky Emperor, I didn’t know that you were illiterate! You can’t understand what is written up there? It is clearly written that we have to choose one out of the four chest and the hidden treasure will go to the one fated to have it. If you have no affinity with the hidden treasure, you will be expelled, like her. If you choose wrongly, then you’ll be doomed as it will teleport you to the Blood Lake Hell, where you can enjoy a free tour there with white bones as souvenirs and flaying meal set! Also, if you opt for all of these, I’ll have to congratulate you even more as an extremely strong ancient beast will appear in the crystal plaza. I believe you’ll be so happy that you’ll pee your pants!”

“Since you are so scared, then don’t choose anything!” The Sky Emperor almost couldn’t suppress his anger towards Yue Yang’s mean words.

“Southern Goblin King, what did you choose the other time?” The Black Hell King was a shrewd man, he did not bother about Yue Yang’s sarcastic remarks. Although he wasn’t as proficient as Yue Yang in reading Heaven Runes, he could understand part of them and he realised the meaning of the Heaven Runes was the same as the one Yue Yang mentioned.

“I have been here twice, taking this time into account, I’ve been here thrice... The positions and order of the boxes are different. I chose the silver chest the previous two times. The first one chased me away and the second one was empty, now that this is the third time, I can’t say anything for sure. You guys go choose first, I’ll be the last.” Southern Goblin King did not have enough confidence so she decided to leave the opportunity to take the risk to the rest.

“You choose first!” Sky Emperor pointed to Yue Yang.

“Why?” Yue Yang was puzzled. Why would he be so nice to him?

“The three of us voted and we agreed on letting you choose first!” The Sky Emperor indicated that he was very democratic, and even used the tactic of casting votes to show it.

“Really? You guys are so nice to me... I won’t stand on ceremony then!” Yue Yang looked at the Sky Emperor sarcastically and laughed coldly. As if he already knew which box would have the treasure, he lurched forward. With that, the Sky Emperor was super regretful. Darn, Yue Yang might have some special ability and was able to identify which chest contained the hidden treasure. If he were to let Yue Yang choose, he would definitely be suffer a huge loss.

Chapter 513 – Sleeping Ancient Giant

“I’m choosing the silver chest.” Yue Yang looked at the four chests for a long while before confidently picking up his target, the silver chest.

“Wait!” Sky Emperor anxiously stopped him.

If treasures were really inside the silver chest, he would be giving the treasures to Yue Yang for free. According to the rule of probability, the previous two choices made by Southern Goblin King resulted in one being chased away and the other obtaining an empty chest, so there was a high chance for him to obtain the treasures on the third try. There was at least fifty percent chance of the treasures being in the silver chest. Now that Yue Yang took away the silver chest, the Sky Emperor felt idiotic. He had the opportunity but he gave it to Yue Yang.

Yue Yang snatched to hold on to the silver chest as if there were really hidden treasures inside.

He looked at Sky Emperor coldly. “If I remembered correctly, you guys voted democratically for me to go first ten seconds ago. Are you going back on your words now?”

Sky Emperor was slightly stunned but he quickly regained his composure. “No, of course not. But apparently you misunderstood my words. I meant for you to choose the chest first, but not for you to take it, so in other words it doesn’t mean that I’ll let you have this silver chest. Because we aren’t sure if there are any hidden

treasures inside, so we should take the risk together since we are treasure hunting partners. We can discuss the allocation of the hidden treasures after we open the chest and obtain them.”

Black Hell King nodded in response indicating his agreement.

Southern Goblin King felt that they were shameless but she kept quiet and observed how Yue Yang would respond to it.

She became more and more interested in him now. His response always differed from that of common men, and sometimes it was a joy to see how he fiercely gave his enemies a fierce slap on the face.

Yue Yang handed the silver chest over to the Sky Emperor: “You just want my chest don’t you? Why bullshit so much, even I’m embarrassed for you! Take it if you want it, but do you know how to open it? You can only use the Heaven Runes to open it, do you know how to do it? Illiterate!”

Although the Sky Emperor couldn’t understand the heaven Runes on the crystal pillar, he was still able open the chest.

He didn’t even have to resort to violence as the Black Hell King pointed his finger in the air numerous times.

A bright light shone through the tip of his fingers.

The rays took shape and shot onto the silver chest.

The rays then shot towards the Heaven Runes on the silver chest as the dots connected together. The silver chest gradually gave off a blinding light... After the Black Hell King took a minute to unlock it, the silver chest was finally opened.

A white light pillar shot up to the sky. This was an important sign indicating the moment a hidden treasure was unsealed.

Sky Emperor could faintly see that there was a golden object at the bottom of the chest.

Sure enough, choosing the silver chest proved to be the right choice.

There was really a treasure inside!

Sky Emperor reached his hands into the chest at breakneck speed. He then held onto the golden object before Yue Yang and Southern Goblin King could respond.

“We made contributions to finding this treasure too.” Yue Yang was unhappy towards the Sky Emperor’s action.

“Our quest hasn’t ended yet, I will safekeep it first, and we can discuss the allocation of the treasures after this ends.” The Sky Emperor was very pleased, he actually wanted to say that he and the Black Hell King would kill him first before the quest even ends, even Yue Yang’s Prison Emperor Divine Seal would be theirs, let

alone this ancient hidden treasure.

“I think it’s best for you to quickly let go of this treasure now...” Yue Yang smiled coldly.

“Oh is it? I feel that it’ll be safest with me!” Sky Emperor didn’t bother about Yue Yang’s threat as he shrugged his shoulders causally.

“This may not be a treasure, put it down quickly.” Black Hell King’s expression changed suddenly. It was a pity that his advice came too late as the Sky Emperor disappeared with a white ray before he could continue showing off in front of Yue Yang. The golden treasure in his hand landed on the ground. When Black Hell King saw the Heaven Runes on the golden mirror like treasure, he took a deep breath.

The Heaven Rune on it was ‘Hell’s key’.

This should be the key that could be used to open Hell’s Gate, and the Sky Emperor should have been teleported to the legendary ‘Blood Lake Hell’. This place wasn’t Demon Abyss but a horrid place in Heaven Outside Heaven where numerous ancient beasts were imprisoned.

Comparing this terrifying individual world, ancient ruins, to the Blood Lake Hell, the ancient ruins could be considered as a safe paradise.

Even if the Sky Emperor could return from the Blood Lake Hell, he would need a long time.

Yue Yang laughed wickedly. “Sky Emperor must be enjoying his stay there, let’s wish him a pleasant journey!”

Black Hell King stared at Yue Yang coldly, like a poisonous snake staring at its prey: “You did it on purpose... Yue Clan’s Third young Master, you are very smart, but sometimes intelligence is nothing in front of sheer power, do you understand me?”

“You opened up the chest, he snatched the treasure away, no one forced him into it, everyone here can be the witness.” Yue Yang indicated he was an obedient child.

“Southern Goblin King, if you were to choose, which chest will you get?” Black Hell King turned towards the Southern Goblin King.

“What about you?” Southern Goblin King returned the question.

Suddenly Black Hell King took out a golden shimmering thunder hammer and struck it toward the chests, completely smashing them to pieces.

All of the chests were empty.

There weren’t any ray that chases people away, nor were there any treasures.

Black Hell King fixed his gaze on Yue Yang. “Third Young Master, your hands are very fast aren’t they. I don’t know when you took the treasures away, but I know for sure that it was you who took them.”

Yue Yang dug his nose calmly and nonchalantly replied. “You have no evidence. Although we are familiar with each other, I can still sue you for defamation!”

Southern Goblin King couldn’t stand his arrogant attitude. She pulled his ears. “Great, you deceived me too! What treasure did you take exactly, surrender them now! I came here thrice and more than ten of my useful followers are dead. Now, I didn’t even get to see the shadow of the treasure, you are actually playing this swapping game with me? I’m not done with you until you surrender the treasure!”

Yue Yang and Black Hell King were stunned by Southern Goblin King’s reaction.

They really couldn’t tell that the Southern Goblin King who was usually demure and polite would become so ferocious with the mention of treasures...

Yue Yang quickly took out a Gold-ranked Golden Compass out from his chest and handed it over to the ferocious woman with shaky hands: “Big sister, there’s only this treasure in the four chests, there’s also a Banishing Scroll!”

“Banishing Scroll? Never mind, I’ll leave that to you as a reward!” Southern Goblin King snatched away the Golden Compass and looked at it with loving eyes as she kept cheering: “OK, I’ll give you a name, let me call you ‘Gucci Plate’, from now on you are my one thousand nine hundred and twenty fifth collectible...”

Yue Yang and the Black Hell King almost collapsed onto the ground.

Oh boy, they had been fighting with each other all along just to benefit her.

And listening to what she said, she actually had one thousand nine hundred and twenty five treasures, Yue Yang and the Black Hell King maliciously guessed that she must have robbed the treasuries of lots of kingdoms!

Seeing the gold-ranked treasure in the hands of Southern Goblin King, Black Hell King decided not to find trouble with her.

His main target was Yue Yang.

And especially the Prison Emperor Divine Seal with Yue Yang. Black Hell King wouldn’t feel at ease as long as Yue Yang held on to it.

Since they had found the treasures in the ancient ruins, Black Hell King felt that it was time for his attack. With the treasure,

Southern Goblin King would be smart enough not to interfere in the matter between Yue Yang and himself. Moreover, even if she were to help Yue Yang, Black Hell King had the confidence of killing these two people in the crystal plaza. Moreover, there was only one crystal passage to enter.

There weren't any restrictions here that restricted the summoning of beasts, so Black Hell King felt that if he could block the crystal passage, then Yue Yang and Southern Goblin King would surely be dead meat!

Just when the Black Hell King was about to attack Yue Yang, the entire crystal plaza suddenly shook.

The crystal pillar sunk rapidly as the ground crumbled.

A gigantic crystal spiral stairs appeared amazingly. It was unknown how deep it goes into the ground.

Could it be that there were really the hidden treasures below?

Before Black Hell King could think further, he suddenly felt something was wrong.

Numerous powerful auras appeared behind the crystal spiral stairs. It seemed as though a troop of a thousand soldiers would soon appear.

Every single one possessed power akin to that of the Ancient Ice

Demon King, a handful were even stronger... Yue Yang used his hand to poke the Southern Goblin King who was still in her happy bubble: “Big sister, it’s time to go!”

“How naggy, just deal with the few rascals yourselves , you don’t have to ask for my opinion!” Southern Goblin King hated it when people interrupted her while she admired her treasures.

“Big sister look what’s on top of you... “ Yue Yang pulled her sleeves.

Upon hearing this, Black Hell King also raised up his head.

His pupils immediately shrunk.

It was unknown when a gigantic glowing light ball was floating on the roof of the crystal plaza.

Wrapped within the light ball was a huge Ancient Giant. It was curled up in deep sleep with a size of at least more than ten metres tall, if he were to stand up straight, he should be around the same height as an Ancient Titan.

Forget about Yue Yang, even Black Hell King was scared witless.

The Ancient Giant in deep sleep wasn’t someone to be trifled with, he would definitely wreck havoc if he were to be awoken!

“What’s wrong?” Southern Goblin King was shocked too as she shouted from a sudden realisation: “What did you all do? What happened here?”

“Shhh...” Yue Yang covered her mouth quickly. “This isn’t the time to talk about all these, we have to leave now!” Before he could finish what he wanted to say, the crystal passage one thousand meters away from them shut down with a boom. It closed so tightly that not even a hairline crack could be seen.

The light ball suspended in mid air gradually descended.

The hearts of Black Hell King, Yue Yang and the Southern Goblin King sunk too...

Which miser left this ancient ruins behind? There was only a Golden Compass and now not only did he release his dog out to chase after them, he also hired an Ancient Giant to bully them, did he still want them to live?

Chapter 514 – Death Arena

“Ha!”

Black Hell King instantly upgraded his ability, exploding with Innate Level 10 power.

A terrifying shockwave spread across the entire crystal plaza like a hurricane. Yue Yang and Southern Goblin King quickly retreated, staying away from Black Hell King. Even after upgrading to Innate Level 10, it was still not enough for him. Black Hell King pulled away his cloak, revealing his real body and continued to upgrade..... His aura turned into a tornado, madly spinning around him. Countless thunderbolts surrounded Black Hell King's body, like silver snakes dancing wildly and crackling loudly.

A Dark Domain with a diameter of 100 meters slowly emerged around Black Hell King, rapidly rising above the ground.

It formed a semicircle, encasing Black Hell King within it just like a shield.

Countless dark energy exploded from the ground like a fountain.

After boiling over several times, the dark energy formed thousands of weird shapes. Some of it looked like weapons, some like beasts, some like ghosts, others like humans. But since they were all formed from dark energy, they were all controlled by Black Hell King. The black figures neatly gathered around Black Hell King.

Black Hell King's 'Dark Sacred Armor' continuously sucked the dark energy around him, spilling out thousands of rays.

Those rays of darkness were tinted gold and looked as if they were of substance.

Countless weapons formed from dark energy sunk into the Dark Sacred Armor. The outer layer of Dark Sacred Armor kept growing, forming a pair of wings and shoulder pads, to a huge shield and sharp knuckle blades. After the Dark Sacred Armor turned into its second form, Black Hell King roared loudly again. His eyes turned bloody red and he forcefully unlocked his power to peak Innate Elder Level 1. The beasts formed from dark energy quickly pounced at him. When Black Hell King summoned his guardian beast 'Heaven Engulfing Demon Tiger', they fused with Heaven Engulfing Demon Tiger one by one to turn into an unusual tiger armor.

Heaven Engulfing Demon Tiger fused with the dark energy to instantly grow in size. It grew horns, wings and flame claws with an ice tail. On it, was a gold saddle with silver ropes.

It looked extremely formidable!

"A Diamond Rank Level 10 Holy Beast....." Yue Yang used Heaven Eyes Divine Vision to observe Heaven Engulfing Demon Tiger. He realised that its abilities were super strong. It was stronger than Shun Tian's Diamond Rank Level 9 Gold King by more than ten times, stronger than Phoenix Fairy Beauty's Charm

Demon Queen who had just levelled up to Diamond Rank Level 10 by four or five times.

Even though both were Diamond Rank Level 10, Phoenix Fairy Beauty's Charm Demon Queen, was the weakest one since she had only just levelled up.

As for An Xi's Hell Black Dragon King, it was only a little stronger than Charm Demon Queen, the difference was not large; while the Ocean Emperor Guan Lan's Three-headed Golden Dragon King was more powerful than the Black Dragon King and the Charm Demon Queen by a long stretch, most likely by three times. It was exactly because of Three-headed Golden Dragon King's valiance that allowed the Ocean Emperor Guan Lan be able to defeat Tong Tian Tower's top killer An Xi at Crystal Valley.

But this Heaven Engulfing Demon Tiger was much much stronger than the Three-headed Golden Dragon King.

If they were to fight, even if the Three-headed Golden Dragon King, the Hell Black Dragon King and the Charm Demon Queen joined forces, they still might not be able to defeat this Heaven Engulfing Demon Tiger.

"Strange, why is this tiger a holy beast even though it has no human form?" Southern Goblin King also seemed to have an ability that could read the enemy's beasts. Although it was not as useful as Yue Yang's Heaven Eyes Divine Vision since she did not know the truth and could only sense that something was not right.

“There is an ancient hidden technique that can turn a beast into its beast form, never able to turn into human form again. This fixation could make the beast become more powerful, but it has to be exchanged with future potential and intelligence. Compared to a normal Diamond Ranked Holy Beast, this Heaven Engulfing Demon Tiger at most only has elementary intelligence. Compared to some human-form holy beasts that were more well-rounded, with high intelligence and emotion, this tiger is mentally lacking!” Yue Yang knew about this from the memories that the tragic guy’s mother had passed down to him, but he was against this sort of heartless technique.

Since ancient times, this sort of hidden technique has been banned. This was because its usage essentially kills any possibility of the beast’s growth.

A beast’s future lies in turning into a human.

A holy beast was already very near to being human.

When a beast becomes a holy beast, it was no different from a human. It also had a high intelligence and emotion. It would be able to live and contract grimoires like a human, and also integrate into human society to learn and grow as a human. It could even get married and give birth like humans to produce offsprings.

The ‘Fixation Hidden Technique’ that Black Hell King used had locked the Heaven Engulfing Demon Tiger in tiger form forever.

Even though by doing this, the Heaven Engulfing Demon Tiger’s

power would increase by many times, its future would be devoid of any growth.

Furthermore, this was a type of imprisonment akin to slavery.

Heaven Engulfing Demon Tiger would always only be Black Hell King's ride, and never his partner in battle.....

Yue Yang would never do this. He not only treated Xiao Wen Li like his baby. Even Bloody Queen Red, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man, Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen Duo Duo were also showered with love. He even treats the Spirit of Earth Fire and the Reaper Mantis that have not turned into human form the same way. All of this goes without saying for the Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying who he treats just like his lover. Towards Jiang Ying and the girls, he treats them like humans and not as beasts..... Even though their forms varied, Yue Yang would never sacrifice any beast just because he needed power.

He felt that if he did not have enough power, he should train hard, to obtain power through his own hard work.

Yue Yang would never use a beast's life or their freedom, or their future growth in exchange for power.

“Black Hell King is crazy!” Southern Goblin King shouted. She despised sacrificing a beast to obtain any sort of benefit. Not to mention holy beasts that could turn into human form, even normal beasts would cry in grief when their owners abandon them.

Heaven Engulfing Demon Tiger was not only Black Hell King's Guardian Beast, it was also a holy beast. Yet, Black Hell King still wanted to reduce Heaven Engulfing Demon Tiger to only become his ride.

From this, Black Hell King's strong desire to obtain power was obvious.

This sort of mentality could no longer be describe with words.

It was simply heartless and ruthless.

“Rumble.....”

When the humans formed from dark energy fused with Black Hell King's body, he instantly grew by half a meter and his muscles tensed up with an immense amount of power.

The entire Dark Sacred Armor levelled up to its third form.

It emitted an especially scary brilliance. It was as dark as ink, powerful as a demon and fast as an arrow.

Even though Yue Yang and Southern Goblin King have already retreated to beyond two thousand metres, they could still feel the dark light pricking them. Southern Goblin King's jade pipa begun to vibrate and her face paled: “Looks like we have to be more

careful..... Black Hell King's Dark Domain is quite strange. Those beasts and human-forms are most likely lives he killed in the past. Those weapons are likely destroyed treasures..... He used some sort of magic to strengthen that Dark Sacred Armor. This Dark Sacred Armor's power is completely different from what the legends say!"

Yue Yang's Heaven Eyes Divine Vision had already understood this.

Black Hell King's Dark Sacred Armor was now very close to the power of a Divine Equipment.

Of course, this was not its original power. It was the result of Black Hell King's reinforcement using the Dark Domain. The Dark Domain had a sacrificial ability. It could absorb a part of the sacrifice's power to turn it into the owner's. But for Dark Sacred Armor to reinforce to such a state, it was hard to even estimate how many lives and treasures Black Hell King sacrificed.

By this time, Black Hell King had already upgraded to Innate Elder Level 1.

He was just like a black sun!

He seemed strange, but also extremely powerful.

In his left hand, he pulled out Dark Sacred Sword. In his right, he raised Heavenfall Thunder Hammer.

When that floating huge light ball landed on the ground, it gradually disappeared. The Ancient Giant that had just fallen into slumber did not look to be close to waking.

“Die!” Black Hell King shouted loudly, his voice exploded through the air. He raised Dark Sacred Sword and Heavenfall Thunder Hammer together, shooting out a dozen sword lights and hammer strikes. Thunder rolled through the skies, seeming to tear apart the sky and earth. Those hits heavily landed on Ancient Giant’s head. The Ancient Giant, who had not even opened its eyes, fell heavily to the ground.

Under Black Hell King’s deadly stealth attack, the Ancient Giant fainted from the serious damage.

Black Hell King still did not stop.

He waved Heavenfall Thunder Hammer and Dark Sacred Sword like rainfall, heavily striking Ancient Giant’s head continuously. He looked determined to kill Ancient Giant on the spot.

Yue Yang frowned: “Something is wrong.....”

He noticed that those monsters like Ancient Ice Demon King who had rushed out from crystal spiral stairs all stood staring at Black Hell King, completely stunned. As if they had turned into stone, no one went up to stop him and only stood there watching Black Hell King attack Ancient Giant.

At this moment, an energy that was vast as an ocean surged into the entire crystal plaza.

Compared to this surge of energy, the strongest Black Hell King was only like an ant.

At the same time this energy appeared, Yue Yang heard a mysterious voice say to him: In a minute, the death match will begin. Participants have to kill all enemies in order to leave. When the time limit of the match is up, all participants with less than 100 points will die immediately under the Death Code.

Before Yue Yang and the Southern Goblin King could react, crystal plaza quickly rose and expanded.

The east crystal wall shattered silently and disappeared.

A 1000 meter crystal tunnel that pointed east appeared. 10 kilometers away, an arena larger than crystal plaza by more than 10 times appeared. At the same time, Yue Yang sensed that countless powerful presences have emerged dozen of kilometres away. Among them, 3 presences were especially powerful. They were comparable to the existence of the Ancient Titan, Wu Su.

If Black Hell King had not heavily injured the Ancient Giant, there should have been 4 of such presences.

One each for north, south, east and west.

After a moment, Yue Yang quickly came back to his senses. He shouted furiously at the Black Hell King: “Black Hell King, you idiot! The Giant you attacked was one of our seeded players. Do you really not have anything to do. Why did you attack! Now one of our seeded players is almost dead! Stop, that is our helper. Without this Giant, even if you have 100 lives it would not be enough to survive!”

“What?” Black Hell King was stunned.

He was someone who would kill the opponent at the slightest threat. Seeing that the Ancient Giant was about to awaken, he felt threatened and attacked with his all.

How smart was he, not only had he gotten embroiled into this death arena, he had also injured his ‘ally’.

Southern Goblin King was extremely troubled.

Now she understood why people said ‘a boneheaded teammate can do you more harm than the most formidable opponent’.

To be on the same side as a selfish brat like Black Hell King was really burdensome..... She summoned her grimoire and looked at the information on it. Indeed, the map was covered with enemies. As for their side, the Ancient Giant was really a seeded player. It was a harmless existence just like Ancient Ice Demon King and the other warriors.

“Heal the Giant quickly!” Yue Yang itched to kill Black Hell King. Upon closer inspection, he realised that the Ancient Giant was a newborn Giant Loli. He raged at Black Hell King: “Did you eat too many retard pills, how could you hit a child? Scram, go and block the tunnel. If we cannot save this Giant Loli, all of us will die!”

“.....” Black Hell King was speechless. He never thought such a thing would really happen. He was just enjoying the attack, how would he have known this giant was his ally!

Different from Yue Yang’s situation, footsteps of giants echoed from the north, south and east directions.

Chapter 515 – Expedition Song

The Black Hell King also panicked.

Based on the presences, the east, north and south giants were very far from him. However, if they joined hands to attack, their entire side would be wiped out.

“What should we do now?” The Black Hell King hoped that Yue Yang would have a plan in this kind of desperate situation.

“You have already beaten her brutally yet you still have the nerve to ask? Go away! Don’t hinder me!” Yue Yang was anxious and angry. If Black Hell King didn’t think himself clever, this situation wouldn’t have happened yet he still dared to ask what was going to happen him. The most important thing now was to save this huge loli Ancient Giant and borrow her strength. Only then would they have any hope of withstanding the enemy.

Regarding Yue Yang’s angry scolding, indignance flashed with the Black Hell King’s eyes but he silently endured flaring out. Moreover, with the urgent situation, he also hoped that Yue Yang’s Nirvana Flames and World Exterminating Wheel would be effective in killing the enemy!

The Black Hell King retreated a hundred meters while his expression continued to fluctuate.

He couldn’t understand Yue Yang’s earlier words when he told him to guard the crystal passage.

Now, even an idiot would understand how dangerous defending the passage was. There were three giants. Once they joined hands, no one could be their opponent.

As a result, the still Black Hell King decided to first protect himself. He looked at the situation and decided..... In this death arena, the winners were those who could stay alive till the end. He absolutely disdained guarding the crystal passage like a hero.

Just like this, the Black Hell King stood still in his original spot.

He did not follow Yue Yang's plans to protect the crystal passage nor did he escape into his grimoire world.

“Let me guard the crystal passage!” Seeing that the Black Hell King was unwilling to risk his life to guard the passage and seeing Yue Yang was trying to save the giant, the Southern Goblin King could only grit her teeth and volunteer to defend the passage.

She understood that defend for too long.

However, it was still better than dying without any resistance...

The Southern Goblin King shrieked. Her strength instantly rose to peak Innate Level Nine. Her fingers danced on the jade pipa. The song ‘Expedition Song’ was being played and resounded in the entire crystal plaza. The song was played intensely yet carried a heroic passion.

The Southern Goblin King appeared like a descending fairy and floated towards the crystal passage.

Accompanied by a strong and clear pipa strums, a sweet-sounding voice spread across the passage.

Her voice was heartbreaking, almost moving anyone who heard her to tears.

“On the yellow sand, on the lush green plains, our troops set forth, singing courageously. Looking around the millions of men, I noticed a few of my age...”

“Carrying our flags and banners, whipping our horses, watching our comrades’ back as the sun sets across the horizon. Away from home, we slept on a faraway mountain...”

“Amidst the autumn wind, along the long streets and halls, I hear the voice of my elders, crying through the whole night as they launder their clothes...”

“After years of singing and dancing our battle cry, and countless warriors soaked in blood, our territory expanded by three thousand miles. But who would remember our faces...?”

“The general led the attack, fire beacons were set off continuously. The new recruits who were fighting their first battle, were as courageous as a castle moat. Blades and shields

clashed on both sides, bodies collapsed to the ground, pierced by spears and pikes. Arrows rained down from the sky, hitting their targets as quick as lightning. War cries shook the heavens, as the troop continued their bloody battle, although dead bodies covered the whole land and bones piled up to a mountain. Our battle song died down, along as the citizens in the country went back to their daily life of farming. As white lotus bloomed on our ponds, our families also slowly forget our existences.”

Behind her, countless ancient soldiers fearlessly entered the crystal passage with her.

Yue Yang did not know who these people were.

Nor did he know why they would appear here. He only knew one thing, that these people awakened from an ancient seal. They did not complain and joined the battlefield without turning back. Who were they fighting for? Who had built this death arena? What was the goal of this mutual slaughter? Yue Yang couldn't completely understand this right now. He could only feel that he was a threatened follower!

Hearing the Southern Goblin King's soul resonating song and the heartbreaking calls from the pipa, he couldn't help but grow an uncontrollable bloodlust. He itched to charge forward and fight alongside her.

As a man, how could he let a woman protect the crystal passage and hide at the back?

Yue Yang's hands were shaking!

His heart was burning.

Xiao Wen Li tightly hugged Yue Yang's thighs and silently dissuaded him. Right now, the most important thing to do was to wake up the huge loli Ancient Giant. If she couldn't join the battle, the war would be as good as over. Yue Yang bit his lips to the point that blood came out, only then was he able to endure the blood rush. He spared no effort to help her recover and transferred all his Innate Qi into the her head.

Under Yue Yang's command, Bloody Queen Red, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man, the small golden beast (Tong Tian Beast), Spirit of Earth Fire and Reaper Mantis all rushed to help the Southern Goblin King in defending.

Even the Golden Thorny Flower Queen, who was hibernating to evolve, couldn't help but stop evolving and join the battle.

As for the Hornless Dragon jiang Ying, that was still in a muddled state while hibernating, she was affected by Yue Yang's state of mind and let out a deep worry. However, she was still unable to wake up even though her body continued to shake as if she was about to wake up but unable to control her body...

The Black Hell King still did not respond and quietly stood on the spot as he coldly observed. Xiao Wen Li returned to the grimoire world and summoned out Stone Element Medusa, Storm Mermaid, Thunder Naga and Ice Serpent Demon. Only the Storm Mermaid,

who knew how to cure people, stayed beside Yue Yang. While the other three quickly joined the battle.

Seeing Yue Yang have so many beasts, the Black Hell King's gaze grew colder.

He had thought of making a move against Yue Yang for a while now.

In the end, he still endured it.

The one thing he could determine was that Yue Yang had become a thorn to his side and became the biggest threat. If they did not encounter this death arena, the Black Hell King would have done his all to kill Yue Yang.

Now, he was using the enemy to consume Yue Yang's strength. This was what the Black Hell King was happy about right now, so why would he help?

“Third Young Master, please stay here and continue healing her. Leave the crystal passage to me!” A shadow suddenly appeared. It was unknown when the Emperor of the Underworld arrived but he showed that he was willing to guard the crystal passage and let Yue Yang heal the Ancient Giant. Not only him, even the Sky Emperor, who was battered and exhausted, also appeared. The Sky Emperor was clearly teleported to the Blood Lake Hell, so why was he here?

“This is bad.....” A bad omen flashed in Yue Yang's mind. When

he saw Elder Nan Gong's figure, his entire body shook.

“Little Yue Yang, what happened?” Elder Nan Gong asked as if he did not know what was happening.

He was even more confused when War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North appeared on the same passage.

Yue Yang originally thought that the enemies coming from the three sides were the Emperor of the Underworld, Sky Emperor, Elder Nan Gong, War Tiger and Fierce Tooth. He never imagined that it was a stupid thought. However, this was something that he did not want to see. The fact that everyone who entered had gathered together made him think as to who the real enemy was. Yue Yang had thought of one possibility that signified the worst possible ending.

This possibility was that they were fighting a war in a foreign domain.

The Tong Tian Tower might not just be a single existence.

In other spaces, there might be three other Tong Tian Towers and the people there would become his enemies... This never-ending war would determine the last victor, just like how nature's survival of the fittest! Yue Yang believed that he was the most outstanding person but the amount of time he had cultivated was very short. If by any chance that the other Tong Tian Tower had another Black Hell King or someone that surpassed the Black Hell King, adding to the fact that their seeded player was injured, what

were the odds of winning?

“I remembered now...” When Elder Nan Gong heard Yue Yang’s explanation, he actually nodded his head and spoke with a serious certainty: “I have heard of a similar legend. This is an ancient war that happened every ten thousand years. I had always thought that only Heaven Realm had it and never imagined that we would accidentally be dragged into this ancient war.”

“This was not accidental. There is definitely someone that caused this and triggered the conditions for this ancient war.” Yue Yang didn’t have any time to think about it.

This was because the war was about to begin.

Anything could happen at the moment.

Elder Nan Gong quickly advanced to help the Southern Goblin King defend the crystal passage. However, War Tiger of the East, Fierce Tooth of the North and the Sky Emperor stopped besides the Black Hell King and did not join the war.

After Yue Yang went all out to save her, the huge loli Ancient Giant opened her eyes.

Her eyes were filled with bewilder as if she could not remember anything.

She shakingly sat up.

Because she was dizzy, she once again fell on the ground with a loud rumble.

After a long while, she once again propped herself up and even tried to stand up. Her entire body tottered. Without even taking two steps, she staggered and lost her footing. Once again, she fell onto the ground and shook the entire crystal plaza... Yue Yang truly hated the Black Hell King to the extreme. This huge loli was originally very strong but now she was given a cerebral concussion by that bastard the Black Hell King.

“Quickly wake up!” Yue Yang jumped beside the loli’s ear and loudly shouted.

The huge loli randomly grabbed with her hands and grabbed Yue Yang in between her fingers. With a puzzled expression and a booming voice, she asked: “Who are you?”

Yue Yang perspired profusely: “I am your friend but that is not important. The most important thing is: do you remember your name? The battle, our battle is about to begin. Could you remember what you were supposed to do when you wake up?”

The huge loli gently rubbed her forehead: “My head hurts, I can’t remember anything!”

Yue Yang was now completely out of options.

He quickly comforted her: “You should rest properly. You must come help me later because the enemy is about to approach here. Do you understand?”

When the huge loli heard that there was an enemy, she instantly looked around her surroundings with worry and shouted: “Titan...” This shout exploded and sent out shockwaves in the entire plaza. Yue Yang almost fainted from her voice. He could only see countless golden light rays emerge from the huge loli’s body. She was as bright as the sun and made others unable to look at her.

An extremely powerful energy directly sent Yue Yang flying a hundred meters away.

An extremely beautiful female battle armor appeared on the huge loli’s body. It was extremely big and shined brilliantly.

Countless Heaven Rune Circles became decorative marks on the battle armor. On the pit of her stomach, there was a mental protection mirror and a giant Ancient Rune. As for the helmet on her head, two palms and both knees, there were slightly smaller Ancient Runes.

Without a doubt, this was a Divine Equipment, that contained boundless power.

A feverish greed and desire appeared in the eyes of the Black Hell King and the Sky Emperor.

Unfortunately, they could only look at it because even if it was given to them, they could not even wear the huge divine-ranked armor. Moreover, the Divine Equipment were the ones who chose their owner.

“Yes, just like that. Battle. Let us go to battle!” Yue Yang was very excited. He felt that this huge loli was too awesome. She was wearing a Divine Equipment, what was there to fear? She could just directly charged ahead and smash the enemies with her fist! He was only happy for a few seconds. The huge loli, who was wearing the Divine Equipment, rubbed her own forehead as her body swayed: “So dizzy...”

With a rumble, she fell on the ground and fainted.

Everyone was flabbergasted.

Who would have known that this would happen..... Yue Yang shot an angry glare at the Black Hell King. He itched to tear that bastard to pieces. The Black Hell King was very embarrassed and turned his face, pretending to not have seen Yue Yang’s disdainful gaze and middle finger.

Countless enemies have already gathered on the arena on the other side of the crystal passage.

A sharp voice penetrated everyone’s ears: “People of Soaring Dragon, have you been scared to the point of peeing your pants already?”

A faintly discernible voice sneered: “It is rumored that the people of Soaring Dragon were the most arrogant. Who would have thought that they didn’t even dare come out of the crystal passage!”

Chapter 516 – The Target To Beat Is The Heaven Ranked Ranker!

People of the Soaring Dragon?

Yue Yang's heart trembled slightly upon hearing such words.

Why did the enemy call them the People of the Soaring Dragon instead of Demon Abyss, or perhaps the Eastern Goblin Tribe? Could it be that since ancient times, the Soaring Dragon had the most powerful Rankers?

Before Yue Yang even had the time to think, six shadows raced past the Southern Goblin King and Elder Nan Gong who were guarding the crystal passage. They moved at a speed a hundred times faster than lightning. They appeared instantly at the center of the crystal plaza. The Southern Goblin King and Elder Nan Gong noticed that the other party had no signs of fighting so the pair did not stop them. However, they quickly returned back to Yue Yang's side.

Within the square, six shadows appeared.

They stood together, in a circle, facing the opponents. As if they were afraid of the enemies' sneak attack.

Yue Yang, the Southern Goblin King and Elder Nan Gong did not make any moves yet. They decided to observe silently first.

Black Hell King and the Sky Emperor, as well as their two subordinates, War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North, reunited with the Emperor of the Underworld, who re-emerged out from the crystal passage. Meanwhile dozens of non-human Innates and human Innates stood hidden among the ancient warriors, refusing to reveal their identity. They were deeply afraid of being exposed by their enemies. They also wanted to be the first to attack.

The ancient warriors quickly returned and surrounded the six enemies.

Unfortunately, although they won by quantity, in terms of quality, they were pale in comparison.

Basically incomparable.

The six opponents were all powerful fighters who were Innate Elders... So much that there was a silver haired man whose eyes were closed. His appearance was delicate and pretty. His skills were way beyond that of the Black Hell King. This pretty man, whose long silver hair dangled to the ground seemed to be at Heaven Ranked Level 2. However, with his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, Yue Yang saw that his real strength was actually Heaven Ranked Level 3. Even though he was wearing an ordinary scholar robe, there was an invisible pressure from him. It was even stronger than the Black Hell King covered in Dark Sacred Armor.

Yue Yang could not imagine, what kind of power this person could unleash if he used Holy Equipments or Divine Equipments.

Not counting the pretty boy with long silver hair, there were two other people with strength equivalent to that of the Black Hell King,

One was a man burning with flames from head to toe. He appeared similar to a fire elemental. However, he was a real living organism, and he was an actual human.

The other one stood besides the burning man. He appeared to be entirely normal. However under Yue Yang's Heaven Eyes Divine Vision. He was in fact an odd life form which was covered in metal.

Yue Yang felt that this guy was similar to the T-1000 Advanced Prototype from 'The Terminator'. They all had the ability to freely change their body.

The only difference was that this guy was a perfect living organism made out of silicon.

He was not a robot.

This silicon based life form was incredibly powerful. His strength was equivalent to that of the burning man and Black Hell King. Their strengths were about the same.

The Black Hell King's hidden ability would make him more powerful than the burning man and the silicon-based metal man. However, when compared to the strongest, the silver haired man

whose eyes were closed, there would still be a certain difference.

Although the silicon-based metal body was incomparable to his Divine Molten Meteorite Gold, Yue Yang still had the urge to pluck out a piece of him to investigate. Perhaps he could make use of this special fluid metallic body to manufacture even better weapons or even more perfect humanoid Battle Dolls.

Other than the three people standing in front, the three other enemies who stood behind were not weak either.

Every single one of them were real Heaven Ranked Rankers. They were slightly weaker than the Black Hell King but compared to the Sky Emperor and the Emperor of the Underworld, they were much stronger...

The tallest of the three was a towering half human, half robot fighter.

His height exceeded ten meters.

Yue Yang could not imagine, how could flesh and blood integrate so perfectly with metal machines.

Although reality was right in front of his eyes.

Perhaps this guy's universe was a dimension just like Bio Booster Armour Guyver?

Yue Yang turned and looked at the fighter who was 5th in rank based on ability. He was a half skeleton, half specter freak. After his waist line there was no lower body, he did not have a actual arm either. There was only an energy arm and a skeletal hand in front. The skeletal hand which was half hidden in his energy glowed faintly with blue light... The appearance of such a freaky creature stunned the Emperor of the Underworld.

This was because he realised that this enemy had evolved to a much greater level than a Lich King. The opponent has already fused his skeletal bone, energy and soul together perfectly.

The 6th fighter was a Beastman that was similar to the East Goblin Tribe.

He was a three meter tall Tigerman.

There were not much difference between him and the members of the Eastern Goblin Tribe. Using his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision to see through, Yue Yang discovered that even his blood channels were similar to that of the East Goblin Tribe.

The only difference was that this huge and tough looking Tigerman had three eyes.

On the center of his forehead, was a golden eye pupil which had the size of a fist. It did not have an eyelid to cover it but it could swivel around to look at people. The Tigerman seemed to be uninterested in anyone except for the Southern Goblin King. The

Tigerman glanced at her once again and sniffed. He seemed to be puzzled by the fact that the Eastern Goblin Tribe's Southern Goblin King was biologically similar to him.

“What is all this about?” The Tigerman who just surveyed the scene noticed the huge loli sleeping on the ground. He was stupefied. “ Don't tell me you guys fought with the war goddess guarding the Soaring Dragon Continent and made her faint?”

“AHAHAHA!” The huge half human half robot fighter could not help but laugh after hearing the news. He laughed so hard he could not straighten his waist. White smoke came out from his machine body.

“Idiots, borned Idiots...” The half skeleton half specter fighter also let out a snicker. It sounded like the cries of ghosts. He jeered mercilessly at Yue Yang and the rest.

Yue Yang was speechless. In reality, all these were due to the Black Hell King's moronic actions. They were not related to him at all.

But now, everyone had to be ridiculed at by outsiders thanks to him.

It was really tragic!

Of course the Black Hell King pretended that he did not hear anything. He would never admit his mistake in public.

Furthermore, there were six powerful enemies here. He was still unsure what they wanted to do so he was secretly on his guard. He decided to observe how things go.

The good looking man with long silver hair, whose eyes were closed and mouth shut all along suddenly spoke, “ I am Huang Quan, the first disciple of the clan leader of Heaven Realm’s Gui Zang Sect. I have trained in the Heaven Realm for eight hundred years. I am the Eastern Heaven Realm’s chosen one to initiate the ancient wars. I thereby politely ask who is the chosen one from the Western Heaven Realm?”

Elder Nan Gong, Black Hell King, Sky Emperor, Emperor of the Underworld as well as the rest were all looking at each other, confused.

Chosen one?

Heaven Realm?

Ever since the Prison Emperor fought with the Three Great Leaders of Heaven Realm, after thousands of years, there had not been any news about anyone being able to go to the Heaven Realm, how could there be a chosen one to start the ancient wars?

“What is the chosen one? Must one enter the Heaven Realm to initiate this war? We know nothing!” The Southern Goblin King thought the four chests she triggered previously was the cause. She was guilty ever since. She felt that if she had not brought Yue Yang and the Black Hell King out for a treasure hunt, such things would

not have happened. Based on the enemy's words, it seemed that it had nothing to do with her. There was another inside story.

“Could it be that you people had never been to the Heaven Realm? You do not even know about the chosen one?” The three eyed Tiger appeared to be stunned.

“Bumpkins, which village did you guys came from? Are you trying to make joke and make me laugh to death?” The half human half robot fighter laughed so much he was rolling on the ground. One of the screws on his body came off because he laughed too hard.

“It appears that, in this battle between the North, South, East and West, the Western Heaven Realm would definitely lose. Before the battle, you people have to hand over thirty people for us to kill. We are stronger, we have the rights to gain more points. If not, we would kill all of you even before the battle begins. As for whether you people can even get past the death arena, it would be dependent on your ability. We, the Fire Clan, were never interested in forming alliances with weaklings.” The man covered with flames demanded the Black Hell King to hand over thirty people, right from the start.

The foreign Innates as well as the human Innates who were hidden among the ancient warriors were all terrified.

Right now, the Black Hell King could not even defend himself.

Why would he even bother about them?

The enemy's threat was clearly a way to impair them but they could not resist.

Although no one was willing to die here but many have already understood. They would probably have issues just trying to run away. No matter where they were, ability was a must. Without enough power, they would most likely be eliminated.

Facing the burning man's threat, Black Hell King and Sky Emperor's side had another problem: there were not enough people.

The 'people' the enemy was referring to was probably not the ancient warriors but the allies who entered along. However, even adding up people who entered, there were only twenty five people. Even if they agreed to their demands, how could they get thirty? Even after the enemies killed thirty people, how could they be sure they would not decide to attack themselves?"

"What death arena? Can you guys explain clearer?" Yue Yang was still confused.

"You people really don't know anything?" The three eyed Tigerman made a "囧" face.

"We... It has been a few thousand years since anyone has been to the Heaven Realm." Elder Nan Gong muttered, telling the truth.

“Impossible!” Who knew all of them would doubt them at once.

“The humans of the Soaring Dragon Continent were always the most powerful race. No matter how trashy they are there is no reason for them not to be able to enter the Heaven Realm! Moreover, if they can’t enter the Heaven Realm how could the ancient war be initiated? This is impossible!” The man covered with flames clung strongly to his own views.

“There must be someone from the Heaven Realm to initiate the ancient war, if not why would the ancient battlefield appear here?” The three eyed Tigerman did not believe Elder Nan Gong’s words.

“The person who initiated the ancient war, would be the chosen one!” The half human half robot guy added on.

“If it was the chosen one, then he would be able to hear the sound of the Ancient Code. He would be able to lead the entire race more efficiently to fight...” The three eyed Tigerman’s words made Yue Yang jump in surprise. He was the chosen one? Wasn’t that plain gibberish? He had never even seen the Heaven Realm before, how could he even start that ancient war they were referring to. This is freaking nonsense!

“Did you guys hear the sounds of the Ancient Code?” Yue Yang pretended to ask a question and hoped that the Black Hell King would raise his hand so he could be the black sheep.

“...” The people around Yue Yang all remained silent.

“Impossible, there is a chosen one. The chosen one would be your leader. Without your leader, you people would never be able to understand the different rules and requirements for the ancient war. You people are dead meat! The chosen one must be here. He must be hiding!” The burning man waved his hand, raging flames rose to the sky: “I do not care if you people have the chosen one or not. You are a bunch of weaklings, so you should have the consciousness of a weakling!”

“Battle to one’s death, never surrender.” Elder Nan Gong’s attitude was firm. No matter how strong the opponent was, he would never surrender.

“Allow Huang Quan to explain...” The silver haired man unhurriedly opened his mouth: “You people may be drawn into ancient war without being aware of anything. I can assure you that this is a Death Battlefield. It is also the place where the low level races from the Northern, Southern, Eastern, and Western Heaven Realm fight to their death. The winner would be able to obtain a Divine Equipment. The losers will remain dead for eternity, being sealed in this crystal plaza for millions and millions of years. Unless the losers have the ability to collect a hundred points in the coming battles, they would not be able to escape from the fate of being obliterated. Perhaps you would like to know, why is it that we have not killed you since we are your enemies. It is simply because even if we killed all of you, we may not be able to collect a hundred points...The first enemy we have to face is the ‘Ancient Slaughterer’ released by the Ancient Code. To prevent different races from forming alliance secretly, the Ancient Battlefield releases ten ‘Ancient Slaughterer’ every hour. These Ancient Slaughterer will attack randomly. Their mission is to kill all participants. Everytime they kill a participant, they will gain a fellow Ancient Slaughterer comrade... You people from Soaring

Dragon have already lost the chance to compete for the Divine Equipment. By convention, you people must hand over thirty people for us to gain points. We would then decide if the stronger participants left would join in to kill the Ancient Slaughterers to gain points so as to leave.

“If this is the case, why don’t we all cooperate. Assemble the greatest powers and kill all the Ancient Slaughterer?” Sky Emperor felt that they should totally cooperate.

At the very least, they could cooperate now.

It would not be too late to decide who should be the final winner after everyone collected a hundred points.

Of course, the enemy must have wanted to cripple the power of Yue Yang and the others from the Soaring Dragon. Obtaining a certain amount of points first would be useful to suppress opponents as well as to escape afterwards. It might even reduce the chances of the number of Ancient Slaughterers from increasing later on.

The problem was, if Yue Yang’s side kills thirty allies, it would be just like having thirty points being minused off. And who would be able to make it out alive from this Death Battlefield?

“You must turn useless people into points for us, this is the very basic condition! If you cannot do so, we will do it ourselves and kill every single one of you! You people do not even have the chance to negotiate with us. We, the representative from each side have been

preparing for this battle for hundreds of years! Every side has at least three Heaven Ranked Rankers, but you people only have one. You are no match for us!” The man covered in flames was keen to kill.

“Weaklings do not have rights!” The liquid metal life form who did not speak until now also nodded in agreement.

“Other than this person, the rest would not be of much use... I suggest we kill them all, in case the number of Ancient Slaughterers increases!” The half skeleton half specter pointed at the Black Hell King in a peculiar manner.

Obviously, only Black Hell King could obtain their recognition, the rest all became the enemies’ sacrificial victim for their point collection.

Black Hell King rejoiced covertly.

He was safe. Perhaps protecting the Sky Emperor, and his two subordinates, War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North would also not be an issue.

As for Elder Nan Gong, Emperor of the Underworld and Yue Yang, it was just nice. He could get rid of all of them now. It was just that the Southern Goblin King was a clever girl, if she died it would be a pity. If she was willing to join him, he might consider saving her. However, it was unlikely. It was the East Goblin Tribe’s nature to be extremely stubborn and firm. Even in face of desperation, they would just accept it. They embrace challenges

and deal with them. It was the style of the entire tribe.

Nevermind, if something did not belong to him, there was no point to force it.

Anyway it was just a woman...

Black Hell King raised his chin arrogantly. He no longer looked at Elder Nan Gong and the Southern Goblin King.

Sky Emperor quickly stood by his side with some affection. He put on this look as if he was terribly heartbroken that his biological brother got injured.

The non-human Innates and human Innates were all in despair. They did not even need to look at Black Hell King's facial expression. This Black Hell King was unreliable. Mister Nan Gong was the only one they could trust but sadly he was not an Innate Elder. He could not be recognised by them and could not protect everyone.

The half skeleton half ghost guy turned his finger of death and eventually pointed at the Southern Goblin King.

The Southern Goblin King's body started to tremble.

Yue Yang stepped out bravely and stood in front of her.

“I wanted to kill the woman first, but this human child seemed to have a different opinion. Let’s kill him first!” The half skeleton half specter guy laughed evilly.

Yue Yang had to tolerate them for quite a while, after hearing this white bone saying that he wanted to kill him, he bursted out in fury: “What the Hell, acting thug just because you don’t look human nor like a ghost? Sun Wu Kong could kill the Bai Gu Jing with three hits. He could take you on, I can too! Just nice, my guard dog back at home has got no more bones to nibble. Me, the young master will dismantle your stinky bones and feed them to my dog!”

“...” Black Hell King and the rest heard him. Everyone were so shocked their chin dropped onto the ground.

Isn’t this brat behaving too arrogantly?

The opponent was at least a Heaven Ranked Level 1 Innate, and with his small body frame, he wanted to fight them?

The Southern Goblin King quickly nudged Yue Yang, signalling him not to be impulsive.

Yue Yang pushed her away,” You people stay away, Heaven Ranked Innates, so what? Me, the young master beats Heaven Ranked Innates!”

The entire square was silent.

Everyone was speechless.

From the opponent's' perspective, if this brat was not stupid he would be crazy. Either way, his brains was not normal. If not he wouldn't have overestimated himself and made such a ridiculous challenge.

The half skeleton half ghost Heaven Ranked Ranker let out a laughter that resembled the cry of ghosts: "I am Weng Jin, from the Bone Clan. I can kill you within seconds with a single finger. I hope you will tell me your name. I am very curious, what the name of this arrogant and conceited youngster, who does not know the immensity of heaven and earth would be called! Hehe, killing a weakling in a second was never thrilling, but you are an exception. Because you, a human child, is too egotistical, you give me the urge to kill..."

"This young man, is our Soaring Dragon's youngest and most talented genius. At the age of twenty, he has already become a self-made genius. He became an Innate, and within a few years time, he reached this state today. He could be said to be the exceptional genius that appears only in a million years!" The Black Hell King helped sincerely to introduce Yue Yang. As if he was afraid that the opponents were not willing to kill him. He picked out the most important and vital pieces of information, "Yue Clan's Third Young Master has battled numerous times, he had never lost before. Not only does he have strong beasts, he even obtained the treasure 'Prison Emperor Divine Seal' which belonged to the Soaring Dragon's first ranker, the Prison Emperor. Within days, once Third Young Master's contract with the Prison Emperor Divine Seal succeeded. He would emerge as the new Prison

Emperor. Merely a Heaven Ranked Level 1, why would the Third Young Master even bother!”

Now, every single enemy stared at Yue Yang with the same look: he must die.

Such a excellent young man, was there any reason for him to stay alive?

Chapter 517 – The Weaklings Have No Rights

Black Hell King was extremely pleased that he managed to stir up the murderous desire in the opponent towards Yue Yang.

He, the Sky Emperor and the rest retreated so that the battle can begin.

This move was indirectly recognized as the decision made by the opposing party to surrender thirty Innates to turn into Innate Ranker points. Although they knew that the Black Hell King wouldn't protect them, the non-human and human Innates were upset when they saw it.

The feeling of being abandoned was extremely unpleasant. They'd rather the team on their side die on the battlefield as a result of not being able to defend against the opposing party.

Black Hell King was a Heaven Ranked Ranker, but he didn't utter a single word...

He couldn't match up to Yue Clan's Third Young Master who took up the challenge.

"Let's defend against the opponent together!" Southern Goblin King bit her lips and decided to work hand in hand with Yue Yang. She couldn't bear to watch him fight alone even if it meant that she'd be killed by the powerful opponents.

“It’s okay, I alone will suffice!” Yue Yang waved his hand to reject the Southern Goblin King’s good will.

Yue Yang knew that he could do better in solo fights.

Southern Goblin King wasn’t like him, if she were to be the prime target of the opponent, her life would be in danger. Although her intentions were good, he would still pay attention to her safety and become unable to show his true power. This would become detrimental in battle. There were six strong enemies in front of them. Even the Black Hell King would take the opportunity to attack. Yue Yang felt that if he didn’t show off his abilities then the enemy would think that they were just pushovers.

Elder Nan Gong wanted to speak initially, but Yue Yang sent a sound transmission to him discreetly.

Elder Nan Gong then nodded before gesturing to Southern Goblin King for her to leave with him.

Southern Goblin King’s eyes were slightly red as she took in a deep breath. She fought hard to suppress her agitation as she spoke in a low voice: “I’ll listen to you this time around, but don’t you dare to go back on your words, you must come back alive...”

Weng Jin from the Bone Clan laughed evilly. “Sorry to interrupt, but let me tell you lovers that no man has ever gotten away alive under my attack. Other than the strongest Huang Quan who is

slightly more powerful than I am, no one else, not even Fen Tian from the Fire Clan Or Yun Xin from the Metal Clan is able to win against me! I'm an undead that can never die. My body is made of God's Bones that can't be hurt in any way and my Goblin Soul causes me to be immuned against any energy based attacks, human tactics will never work on me, hehehe!"

As he was speaking, his body started to morph.

There wasn't any shock wave from the upgrading like human Innates. It seemed that all the energy was sucked into his body.

The bones in Weng Jin's body gradually appeared, forming a strangely unique bone armor

The bone armor and his energy combined perfectly. This was both Weng Jin's armor and his body. The internal part of his armour was empty, it did not even have demon crystal or orbs which served as the source of energy.

Although the Heaven Ranked Weng Jin was very arrogant, he did not underestimate his 'weak' opponents.

Other than his skeleton which became his armor, he also summoned five skulls that floated around him as protection. The skulls were all Holy Equipments, their attributes were dark, poison, fire, water and metal. They rotated freely around Weng Jin's body and they could attack and defend according to his will.

Yue Yang unleashed his power to Innate Level 5 before Weng Jin.

He was now on par to a Level 10 Innate.

Towards a young yet vliant human opponent, a opposite side we're alerted. Even the calmest Huang Quan slightly frowned his brows.

Black Hell King's gaze turned chilly. He didn't expect that Yue Yang could continue unleashing his powers.

The Sky Emperor's heart skipped.

No wonder Ocean Emperor Guan Lan would die in his hand, Yue Yang had actually attained Innate Level 10 long ago. Although Guan Lan was a peak Level 10 Innate, he wouldn't be able to withstand the joint attack of Yue Yang and An Xi... Luckily he was going to die here soon. If he were to escape here alive, forget about him, even the Black Hell King would be killed by Yue Yang! The Sky Emperor was already considered a genius as he trained up to Innate Level 10 after 1000 years of cultivation. How exactly did Yue Yang cultivate?

Could it be that the gap between him and Yue Yang was really so big?

Everyone was moved, not only by the power Yue Yang unleashed but also his level.

Yue Yang only had to unleash his power to Innate Level 5 to be that of Innate level 10 of others, what if he unleashed his power to Innate Level 10? Who can win against him then?

“Heaven’s Fury Fire Lotus...” When Yue Yang unleashed his power, he didn’t give off a terrifying shock wave like other Innates would. This was because that is a representation of the weak. Ever since he leveled up to Innate Level 5 the shock wave became more controllable.

Numerous energy became lotus like fire under Yue Yang’s control.

Its petals filled the sky.

With Yue Yang’s body as the boundary, the left side was a blazing infernal hell, where high temperature fire filled the skies, and the right side was an extremely cold ice hell, where even droplets of water froze. When Yue Yang raised his hands, purple lightning appeared with a crackling noise on his fingers. It moved downwards like a snake, surrounding Yue Yang’s body. After that, it once again converged on Yue Yang’s head becoming a lightning ball. When everybody saw it, they profusely perspired. Forget about how strong the Yue Clan’s Third Yung Master was, his control had already reached an abnormal level.

Fen Tian from Fire Clan was confident about controlling fire, he felt that he wasn’t any weaker than the other party.

But he knew that it was beyond ten times harder to control fire

and ice at the same time. It wasn't something that he could achieve.

Moreover, as a young human being, the Yue Clan's Third Young Master could not only control ice and fire, but even lightning... The level of difficulty stunned Fen Tian the Heaven Ranked Ranker. He was secretly doubting if Yue Yang was even human.

“Ha!” Yue Yang gathered an ultra huge ball of thunder, forming a purple lightning ‘weapon’.

He was actually materializing thunder?

Everyone was speechless.

Even Ancient Titans who were gifted with the talent of controlling electricity from birth would not easily reach this level.

“Very good, it will be satisfactory to kill such a human Innate Rankers!” Without waiting for Yue Yang to hurl the materialized purple lightning towards him, Weng Jin charged towards Yue Yang as his bony hands extended, extending a one meter long bone finger that pierce towards Yue Yang's body.

Yue Yang raised the almost materialized purple lightning, With the support of the Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus and the extremely cold frost flower, he chopped towards the enemy with the first form of the Armageddon Slash.

Earth Splitting Slash!

As if a giant hand was pressing down on the entire crystal plaza, the strength of the Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus reached it's peak. Even the Inante Level 8 War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North, who were 1000 meters away, felt suffocated.

In the sky, a humongous fire ice blade spanning over a few hundred meters was formed from the joint energy of the Yang energy of the Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus and Yin energy of the extremely cold frost flower. Under Yue Yang's wave, it heavily slashed Weng Jin's body. Although Weng Jin was a Heaven Ranked Ranker, he had to retract his bone hand under this might. He gave up on attacking and focussed wholly on defending. The energy on his bony hand returned back to his bone armor. As the bone armor was covered in his energy, he directly defend against Yue Yang's Earth Splitting Slash.

The powerful slash sliced a hundred meters crack on the ground of the crystal plaza, and divided it into two sides.

But the bone hand Weng Jin used in defending didn't move at all."

"Could it be that those are really God's Bones?" Elder Nan Gong sighed dejectedly, not because Yue Yang's attack wasn't powerful enough, but because Weng Jin's body was too abnormal. Even if Weng Jin's skeleton weren't that of a God's, it wasn't far from it. It could never be destroyed.

“Again!” Yue Yang didn’t concede defeat as he launched his second strike after the first.

Yue Yang was slow in his action, the people around thought that Weng Jin had tons of opportunities to attack Yue Yang but the cautious Weng Jin didn’t launch any attacks he focussed on defending. He didn’t even retract his bone hand and directly summoned the five holy ranked skulls to protect his head.

But it was still too late... The materialized purple lightning in Yue Yang’s hand flashed across the sky and slashed Weng Jin’s head.

The five holy ranked skulls that could be controlled with Weng Jin’s will weren’t able to block Yue Yang’s attack.

As a Heaven Ranked Ranker, Weng Jin sunk one meter into the ground from Yue Yang’s slash.

Wng Jin’s skeletal armour actually had signs of becoming looser under the attack of the terrifying purple lightning. Moreover, Weng Jin’s sturdy skull which was rumoured to be made from God’ Bones had white scratches on it... A few Heaven Ranked Rankers’ eyes popped out as they couldn’t believe what was happening. Weng Jin’s skull was famous for being sturdy in the entire Heaven Realm, but now it had been injured by a slash from a human boy who wasn’t even a Heaven Ranked Ranker.

Although Weng Jin was only slightly injured, it was enough to prove that Weng Jin wasn’t undefeatable.

And it also proved that Yue Yang's attacks were effective!

The fight between Innate Level 10 and Heaven-ranked Level 1 was like a child fighting against an adult, who would have thought that the adult was actually the one injured?

"Get lost!" Weng Jin was extremely infuriated, he felt ashamed to be defeated in front of so many familiar faces.

He pressed his hand onto Yue Yang's chest at a breakneck speed.

He unleashed his immensely power Heaven Ranked strength as he intended to kill the goddamn human boy in one blow. In the instant where Weng Jin gave up defending and focussed wholly on attacking, Yue Yang did not retreat and attacked him again. He clasped his hands together and let out the Armageddon Slash's third style: Lord of Rivers and Mountains!

Both parties struck at the same time.

Weng Jin's body shook slightly, it seemed that he wasn't seriously injured.

But fresh blood sprayed out of Yue Yang's mouth but he didn't stop his attacks. He leapt into the air and floated above Weng Jin's head and then borrowed the energy from Weng Jin's attack. Yue Yang grabbed the blood that sprayed out when Weng Jin's strike shook his organs and turned it into a blood dagger before he slashed it onto the white scratches again.

This was the fourth style: Universe Reversal!

The fourth style was ten times more powerful than the third style. Combined with both the Innate Invisible Qi and the attack power of the furious Weng Jin, he once again slashed precisely on the white scratch on Weng Jin's head.

“Goddamn...” Never had Weng Jin dreamt that Yue Yang would be so hard to deal with. Not only could he not kill Yue Yang, he was battered to this point. This made him seething with anger. Weng Jin waved his bone hands wildly as he tried to send Yue Yang flying away. He didn't bother the contempt of his teammates as he took his skull down and held it in one of his bone hands and used the other to heal the tiny crack on the top of his skull.

This was the first time someone cause a crack on his God's Boned body.

Although it wasn't lethal, it was the biggest shame in Weng Jin's life. No one had ever damaged him like this!

“Goddamn person of the Soaring Dragon, I must kill you today!” Weng Jin realised that the crack on his head couldn't be healed. Yue Yang's attack had resulted in a permanent damage. It angered Weng Jin ever more.

He returned his head back onto his neck and pounced towards Yue Yang crazily. Under the stunned gaze of everyone, not only did Yue Yang not retreat, he welcomed Weng Jin's attack.

With his current power, it would be futile for him to fight against Weng Jin with it. He was like a mantis trying to stop a chariot.

No one even knew why Yue Yang's attack was able to damage Wen jing's head and even caused a permanent damage to it.

There were too many unfathomable things that happened. None of the things that happened were normal. Looking at the fight between Weng Jin and Yue Yang, Southern Goblin King who was previously uber anxious started to be at ease. She was now full of anticipation, hoping that Yue Yang could continue to make miracles.

With a ball of destructive energy between in his bone hand, Weng Jin reached for Yue Yang's head.

He was preparing to burst Yue Yang's head to take revenge for himself as Yue Yang injured his skull permanently.

A dash of rainbow flashed across.

A loli lamia appeared behind Yue Yang. She opened her eyes widely as she glared at the bone hand Weng Jin was waving... Everyone saw that Weng Jin's hand that was originally moving rapidly stopped as he became stationary.

Although he regained his ability to move quickly, that one second where he was stunned was enough for Yue Yang to strike over ten

times.

The glow from the runes was shimmering off Yue Yang's hand as the World Exterminating Wheel appeared.

The World Exterminating Wheel chopped down heavily onto the wound on Weng Jin's head. A long halberd formed from Nirvana Flames pierced Weng Jin's eyes, forcibly causing his skull to fly off from his neck. In the sky, Blood Queen Red brandished her Whip of Agony and sent Weng Jin's head to the ground. On the ground, Barbarian cow Shadow Ah Man hit the skull like she was hitting a baseball and sent it flying for over 1000 meters.

On the other hand, Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen waved the sharp dagger formed from the golden beast and slashed at Weng Jin, who lost his skull, with all of her might.

The first response of Weng Jin who escaped from the Binding Inherent Skill was not to attack Yue Yang again, but to run away!

He relinquished one part of his spine as it had already been grabbed by Yue Yang's right hand that was burning with Nirvana Flame.

Weng Jin's entire bone armor split and shot to the sky, and then returned back to his head. He once again restructured to form the original Weng Jin... but everyone was able to clearly see how sorry Weng Jin's state was. His right eye was charred and was twice as large as his left eye. The Nirvana Flame had directly burnt a huge hole on his self-proclaimed, no energy would be able to hurt

him, God's Bone. Luckily Yue Yang didn't have enough time to burn him, if not he would have been history.

There was a small hole on the top of his skull too.

This was caused by the World Exterminating Wheel.

"Goddamn liar, he is the chosen one. He definitely is, if not I won't be in such dire straits!" Weng Jin scolded the other five people. "You guys actually didn't help me when I was being abused so badly, are you still my teammates?"

"Weaklings, have no rights! It's normal for you to get beaten up if you are weaker!" The aloof liquid metal man still said the same thing.

"Damn it!" Weng Jin was furious.

He knew that he was stronger than Yue Yang, if he were to give his all and fight till the end, he guessed that he would still win.

However, if he did this, he would be severely injured would be easily killed by others.

Fighting so hard just to benefit someone else was his least desired outcome.

Weng Jin came here to take away the Divine Equipment, not to

end his life.

Moreover, Yue Yang's Beasts and combat skills were too impressive, and his World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame caused even more headaches. Even though Weng Jin was very furious, he didn't dare to find trouble with Yue Yang.

He was genuinely afraid of Yue Yang the lunatic.

This brat was definitely a lunatic!

"I won't fight with him before the final battle. The World Exterminating Wheel is already scary enough, and he has the Nirvana Flame too. I'd rather be burn for a day by Fen Tian than to let the Nirvana Flame touch me once. It's really no joke." The Three-eyes Tigerman shrugged his shoulders and indicated his respect towards Yue Yang's Nirvana Flame.

"The Nirvana Flames are make me jealous." Fen Tian from the Fire Clan hadn't blinked his eyes ever since the Nirvana Flame appeared. He stomped his foot hatefully, causing the entire crystal plaza to shake: "Although I'm jealous, I won't think of something I can't possess, because it doesn't belong to me."

He knows himself well enough to say this.

Nirvana Flame definitely couldn't be snatched away forcibly. It belonged to the Yue Clan's Third Young Master, so Fen Tian couldn't do anything no matter how jealous he was.

“Say something Huang Quan.” The guy who was a half robot and half human decided to let Huang Quan, who had been closing his eyes, have the final say.

“Leave the matter on whether if he’s the chosen one aside. He has the right to attend the final round of battle. The ancient war allows us to compete against each other where the stronger one’s progress and the weaker ones were eliminated. However, before the final battle, I will not kill any competitors who are beneficial to the battle... Before turning into rivals, we have to be allies first because what we will be facing is the Ancient Slaughterer... The last survivor could be me, it could also be the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master, or anyone here, so before that I have decided to give up my previous request. If we were to continue fighting, none of us will benefit, no one can escape the Ancient Slaughterer’s pursuit!” Huang Quan looked at Yue Yang in the end. “It’s a pity that you haven’t grown, if not you would have been my most formidable opponent. Try to stay alive, I hope that I will be going against you with your World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame in the final battle!”

Yue Yang heaved a sigh of relief. He had a narrow escape.

He used up almost all of his power, and even used the World Exterminating Wheel, Nirvana Flame and Innate Invisible Qi that were always hidden to make Weng Jin retreat temporarily.

In this ancient war, if he doesn’t level up his power fast enough, even if he wasn’t killed by Huang Quan and the rest, he would be killed by the Ancient Slaughterers or the Black Hell King who had

always wanted to kill him. He was really in danger now.

Of course Yue Yang made certain reservations secretly.

If there weren't that many strong opponents, Yue Yang would give his all if he was only facing Weng Jin, even if the Black Hell King was added.

Before the life and death battle on the ancient arena starts, Yue Yang couldn't reveal all of his power...It was due to Yue Yang's reservation that caused Black Hell King decide not to act rashly. Because even for Black Hell King, he couldn't figure out where Yue Yang's limit was, they we're suspecting that Yue Yang had already attained Elder Innate Level and had been pretending to be weak. By seeing him defeat Weng Jin easily just now, they knew that he hadn't shown some of his other powerful stuffs.

"The three of you, join in the battle too!" Huang Quan was speaking to Emperor of the Underworld, Elder Nan Gong and Southern Goblin King.

After Yue Yang's stunning performance, Huang Quan and the rest of the Heaven Ranked Rankers didn't dare to look down on anyone around Yue Yang. To them, although the group appeared weak, they possessed great hidden power that couldn't be easily seen through.

Although not everyone could be as powerful as Yue Yang, Emperor of the Underworld, Elder Nan Gong and Southern Goblin King were recognized by the other party.

Black Hell King was definitely the most disappointed one among all the people.

But he fought hard to suppress it so he didn't expressed his disappointment.

Yue Yang must be killed, but the Black Hell King had not yet found the best opportunity yet...Yue Yang, standing opposite him, thought the same as he decided to get rid of Black Hell King in this death arena... It all depends on who was the faster one in seizing the opportunity to kill the other party!

Chapter 518 – Strategizing

Different from Yue Yang, the Rankers representing north, south and east had abilities that were far superior.

Let alone each of the three sides having three rankers that were Elder Innate Leveled, there were already ten Innate Level 10 rankers who had abilities on par with Elder Nan Gong and the Emperor of the Underworld. No one was weak, even the rest were all Innate Level Nine. In comparison, Yue Yang felt that his side was really shabby. Even Black Hell King, the only one he could even put up a fight was a traitor who pulled dirty tricks. To top it all off the ancient loli was still unconscious.....

Before even fighting, the battle was half lost.

Central plaza.

Without waiting for Yue Yang to wake the huge loli giant up, the ancient war at Death Battlefield has already officially begun.

The extremely tall domed roof cast down ten bright golden light beams.

“All of you are to stay, protect and heal the war goddess at all costs!” Yue Yang was very speechless at how there was no Innate Ranker in his team that was a healer, however this was not a time to be investigating why.

“Yes.” The numerous Innates were all very respectful of Yue Yang.

Other than his ability that called for respect, they shed tears of gratitude at how Yue Yang fought to save this crisis when he bravely stepped forward to fight against Weng Jin from Bone Clan.

If not for Yue Yang, they most likely have become the enemy's points..... Black Hell King had already agreed tacitly of the enemy's superiority. Only Yue Clan's Third Young Master would dare to challenge a Heaven Ranked Level 1 Weng Jin with the ability of an Innate Level 10, and still win by a slight margin to gain the recognition of the enemies. He not only saved their face, but saved the lives of more than twenty teammates.

As for battles, these Innates Rankers knew their abilities well.

With their ability, to challenge the Ancient Slaughterers would definitely be delivering a meal.

There was no issue with staying behind to heal..... The only thing regretful is that no one was a healer, so there was not much efficiency.

Black Hell King, Sky Emperor, War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North have already gotten a head start, while Emperor of the Underworld was waiting for Yue Yang patiently. At this point in time, they would die unless they stayed as a team. Forget that they were already the weakest party, even the eastern, southern and northern rankers put aside their personal grudges to

work together to face the powerful Ancient Slaughterers.

Ten metal-skinned Ancient Slaughterers appeared in the centre of the square.

They were shaped like an ugly Behemoth.

They had ape-like arms and pointed teeth. Their upper body was bigger than their lower body by several times. They also had sharp claws on their forelimbs that were up to 10 meters long.

While these Ancient Slaughterers looked a little crooked, their height was terrifying – each of them were a hundred meters tall. Looking at them was like looking at individual castles that were able to move on their own.

Using Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, Yue Yang realised that they were not Holy Beasts. They were obviously less intelligent than Holy Beast. Each of them were merely Platinum Ranked Level 10. Even the strongest one was merely Diamond Ranked. However, the ability of these Ancient Slaughterer were unimaginably powerful. The team leader among the Ancient Slaughterer was at the peak Heaven Ranked Level 2 which was comparable to Black Hell King's strongest power.

Even the ordinary members were Heaven Ranked Level 1.

If the ability of Heaven Ranked Level 1 could be split into low, medium and high, these ordinary Ancient Slaughterer members

were all medium Heaven Ranked Level 1. Their ability was similar to Weng Jin.

They were a notch superior compared to the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, who had just rose to Innate Elder Realm.

“Fen Tian, Yun Xing, Black Hell King, the three of you come with me. We will join hands to kill the Ancient Slaughterer’s team leader.” Even the strongest Huang Quan was cautious. If the Ancient Slaughterer’s leader were to start a massacre, all rankers beneath Heaven Ranked Level 1 would be killed off in less than 10 minutes. Ancient Slaughterer’s leader was the greatest threat that had to be dealt with immediately.

“Understood.....” the burning man, liquid metal man and Black Hell King all moved forward quickly.

“Roar!” The war gods protecting the eastern, southern and northern areas began to approach the enemy, their footsteps shook the earth.

Guarding Eastern Heaven Realm was an enormous 12-Winged Angel.

It’s wings were silver with a golden body. A light halo was on its head as it blazed as brightly as the sun.

Sky Emperor stared in awe, and was almost about to go on his knees to kowtow.

This 12-Winged Angel was the strongest among the three war gods. Its strength was at peak Heaven Ranked Level 2, he was much stronger than the Ancient Slaughterer team's leader. The only disparity was their height. This 12-Winged Angel was only around fifty meters tall, merely half of the team leader. Most probably in terms of strength, the difference between the two would also be very big..... It was like this, so Huang Quan was unwilling to let him face the Ancient Slaughterer's team leader. This was because if they were to fight, it would be a lose-lose and might even end with the two of them losing their lives.

Guarding Southern Heaven Realm was a huge Tiger-Lion Man. It was eighty meters tall with extremely defined muscles.

While his ability was slightly weaker than 12-Winged Angel, he was still at least medium Heaven Ranked Level 2.

Guarding Northern Heaven Realm was an enormous skeleton cloaked in black armor, wielding a pitch-black giant sword. It was a hundred meters tall and had eyes that emitted a green glow.

Among the three war gods, he was the weakest.

But he was still a low Heaven Ranked Level 2, so he was still much much stronger compared to Weng Jin.

This Skeleton Giant stayed at the back, but his attacks were the fastest. Before the 12-Winged Angel and the Tiger-headed Giant went into battle, he would send out a biting cold shock wave with a

swing of his sword. This shock wave sent an Ancient Slaughterer that had rushed forward many steps back. The Sword Qi that could split heaven and earth broke the crystal ground, yet it only left an almost entirely negligible white mark on the Ancient Slaughterer's body.

Yue Yang's heart shook at the enemy's terrifying defenses.....

It appeared that normal attacks were ineffective against them.

1 Ancient Slaughterer leader and 9 Ancient Slaughterers could still be dealt with, this battle was not a problem.

However, after an hour, when the second wave of Ancient Slaughterers come, would everyone still have the strength to fight them? And then two hours later, when the third wave of Ancient Slaughterer comes, what would be the outcome?

Yue Yang did not think that an hour was enough to deal with 10 Ancient Slaughterers.

If one hour was not enough, two hours would still be not enough. More and more enemies would appear, and the scale of victory would always lean towards the Ancient Slaughterers.

Among the 9 Ancient Slaughterer members, 3 of them were stopped by the war gods. Another 3 were led away by the guy who was a half robot and half human, Bone Clan's Weng Jin and a Heaven Ranked Ranker Golden Corpse Emperor.

There were 3 left.

“Yue Clan lad, we must slaughter these three Ancient Slaughterer within an hour. Otherwise, we will suffer a complete wipeout. No matter what hidden abilities you have, use them now because this is your last chance. Alone by myself, it is impossible to handle more than two Ancient Slaughterer in one go!” Three-eyed Tiger Man looked at Yue Yang, and waved his hand to his comrade, who previously did not participate, signalling them to attack.

“Okay.” Among the three Elder Innates who did not come forward to threaten Yue Yang earlier, other than the Golden Corpse Emperor, there was also a light man whose entire body shone with splendor, and an insect man that was close to human form but had its entire body covered with eyes and body that kept on morphing.

Huang Quan, the tiger man and the light man all belonged to Eastern Heaven Realm camp, and were the strongest three.

The second strongest were the liquid metal man, Yun Xing, the guy who was a half robot and half human and insect man who belonged to Southern Heaven Realm camp.

Ranked third were the burning man, Weng Jin and the Golden Corpse Emperor, from Northern Heaven Realm camp. Their strength was very similar to the Southern Heaven Realm camp, losing only by a slight margin.

At Western Heaven Realm camp where Yue Yang was at, there was no Heaven Ranked Ranker other than Black Hell King. The team was in disunity. Yue Yang, Elder Nan Gong and Southern Goblin King were a team, Black Hell King, the Sky Emperor, War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North were another while the Emperor of the Underworld was neutral. Adding to the fact that the war god, huge loli had been knocked out by Black Hell King, their ability was at the level of them being looked down by the opponent.

Three-eyed Tiger Man, light man and Yue Yang were to join forces to attack an Ancient Slaughterer, hoping to concentrate their firepower to kill the target within half an hour such that they could then help their other companions.

Insect Man pinned down one, and fought under the secret assistance of ten other teammates.

The remaining one would not be a big problem if the huge loli was still here..... But now, the Western Heaven Realm camp was a tragedy.

War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North were completely unable to cause any damage, instead they would be killed in a single hit. Even more terrifying was that once a participant dies, there would be one more Ancient Slaughterer. The situation would become even more helpless.

“I will leave this one to you, no matter what, it has to be killed within an hour!” Three-eyed Tiger Man’s act was already giving the Western Heaven Realm camp the easiest task. But in reality,

for Western Heaven Realm camp to do it was almost impossible. Their only hope was Yue Yang. But if he did not have an explosion of power, this Ancient Slaughterer would sweep out the entire Western Heaven Realm camp.

“Let us draw it to the crystal passage...” Even though central plaza was big, there were too many variables that made it easy to accidentally injure their companions. Southern Goblin King decided to draw the Ancient Slaughterer into the crystal passage first, and then think of how to kill it.

The best scenario would be for the giant loli to awaken and kill the Ancient Slaughterer.

Unfortunately, when she was at the weakest, Black Hell King had attacked her with all his power. After suffering from a concussion, even Yue Yang could not predict when she would completely recover.

Yue Yang had been thinking the entire time.

He was not trying to figure out the enemy's tactics, but rather the strategy of the whole battle.

He had already predicted that his task would be to kill an Ancient Slaughterer.

What Western Heaven Realm camp had to do was to pin it down..... Huang Quan and the others did not actually expect

Western Heaven Realm camp to kill an Ancient Slaughterer, especially within an hour, even tiger man and light man, the two Heaven-Ranked rankers did not dare to guarantee that they could do it.

But one must not let others decide their fate, fate must be controlled in your own hands.

What should be done?

How could they win?

When the war began, rumbles sounded one after another, sending shockwaves throughout the entire battlefield.

Yue Yang finally came to a decision: “You guys attract it, I will kill it. You all do not have to do anything and just think of how to attract this monster’s attention. I will do the rest.....” Yue Yang was confident in killing the Ancient Slaughterer, even if it was Ancient Slaughterer team leader. However, to do it within an hour was unlikely. Yue Yang had to use the ‘Kite-flying’ tactic that was famous among gamers to torture the enemy to death.

To kill it head-on was unlikely given his current ability.

But time was not on his side, Yue Yang had to kill the enemy quickly and within an hour!

After using Heaven Eyes Divine Vision to observe the Ancient

Slaughterer, Yue Yang finally came up with a solution. Even though it might not change things, Yue Yang still decided to try!

One must control one's own fate!

Under Yue Yang's signal, Storm Mermaid sounded the Storm Conch.....

Water battles were the way to fully display Yue Yang's current Guardian Beasts' strengths. In such a large space, water battles did not have much of an impact to the Ancient Slaughterer since it was a hundred meters tall and not chained up like Ancient Titan Wu Su. However, this was still better than nothing. The ancient warriors that were familiar with water battles came to support, controlling the water flow, turning the entire crystal tunnel into a lake.

The water current slowly went over the Ancient Slaughterer's ankle, all the way to its knees.

The movement of the Ancient Slaughterer was affected. It had to occasionally jump while madly attacking the flying Southern Goblin King who was using sound to disturb its mind.

When Southern Goblin King was in a critical moment, Elder Nan Gong would attack the Ancient Slaughterer.

What he needed to do now was to delay things for Yue Yang.

War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North could only attack from a distance, but they were completely unable to cause any damage.

The damage caused was extremely little.

“Kill!” Yue Yang exploded to his strongest power. With the Black Light in one hand, and Heaven’s Fury Fire Lotus in the other, he blocked the Ancient Slaughterer’s vision. He pretended to attack the opponent’s mouth, and in reality, his target was the Ancient Slaughterer’s eyes. As long as the enemy was blind, with such an unintelligent enemy, its ability would decrease largely.

On the surface, Heaven’s Fury Fire Lotus seemed to be going on a rampage.

Behind the decoy, Yue Yang was approaching the enemy. The Black Light in his hand shot at a lightning fast speed towards the Ancient Slaughterer’s right eye.

Chapter 519 – Unparalleled Might!

Pa!

The Ancient Slaughterer responded extremely fast and waved away the black dot in front with his claws.

The human body was as small as a mosquito to it, that possessed a gigantic body. The black dot flew once his hand swept it away. His ten meters long palm was like a moving wall, it was impossible for humans to defend against it.

A black dot flew off more than 1000 meters away and smashed onto the crystal passage.

The passage shattered into a million pieces!

Southern Goblin King and Elder Nan Gong watched in horror. Yue Yang was actually instantly sent flying into the air with just one hit from the Ancient Slaughterer? This outcome was unbelievable, but everyone could see how agile this Ancient Slaughterer was. Although it had a huge body, its response weren't similar to that of other giant beasts. It was more similar to a monkey.

War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North retreated in horror, they were afraid that they would be killed instantly by this monster too.

“Goddamn...” Southern Goblin King was furious.

Her right hand fluttered over her jade pipa. The pipa music turned from annoying to being terrifying.

Every note was like a deadly sharp weapon that shot everywhere.

Although the Ancient Slaughtered had an extremely strong in defense, it took three steps backwards uncontrollably.

Its ears could withstand the smashing of a 5000 kg hammer and also the slashing of sharp swords, but towards this ear-piercing music, it felt a throbbing headache that made it very upset. Its mouth, that was even wider than a city gate, opened up as blazing red flames shot out like a volcano towards the Southern Goblin King.

Elder Nan Gong’s expression changed slightly as he blocked in front of Southern Goblin King.

He drew a circle with his fingers.

A giant circle of light appeared below his feet. Afterwards, numerous golden mirror appeared like war soldiers and spun.

The blazing red flames heavily knocked onto the golden mirrors, causing an abnormally terrifying tremor.

The golden mirrors were almost crushed.

Only three remained after barely reflecting the blazing red flames away.

Elder Nan Gong was shaken back more than a hundred meters away. His face was pale. Although he had the golden mirror army to block against the blazing red flame, the attack was still quite fierce. Luckily, under his defense using the golden mirror, both him and the Southern Goblin King were safe and sound. They could easily escape from the attack range of the Ancient Slaughterer. Storm Mermaid was still summoning as her loud Storm Conch resonated throughout the entire crystal passage.

A storm approached as rain poured down, causing the ground to be flooded with water.

The water gradually rose up to the thighs of the Ancient Slaughterer... The Ancient Slaughterer still chose to give up chasing after Southern Goblin King as it went for the Storm Mermaid.

Although it wasn't intelligent, it realized that things would be bad if it continued like this.

Southern Goblin King and Elder Nan Gong had been attacking it consecutively but the results weren't showing. The Ancient Slaughterer set its heart on killing the Storm Mermaid that could summon storms. In its heart, she was the biggest troublemaker, if it didn't kill her now, things would become more troublesome. So instinctively, it made its decision and charged towards Storm

Mermaid crazily. Of course the Thunder Naga wouldn't let it happen as she sent a bolt of lightning onto the head of the Ancient Slaughterer. However, it was like an itch to it as it paused for a moment before ignoring it and continued to proceed.

“What should we do?” Southern Goblin King and Elder Nan Gong were at out of ideas.

“...” War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North looked at each other. Both of them had intentions of leaving the battle and ending their partnership with Yue Yang and the rest who were destined to fail. They still hoped to work hand in hand with Black Hell King because he was the strongest after all.

“Awwwwwww!” An agonizing cry resonated throughout the crystal passage. It was only until then did Elder Nan Gong and the Southern Goblin King realize that the one that was being swept away was a puppet beast in human form and not Yue Yang. The real Yue Yang had been hiding under the eyelid of the Ancient Slaughterer, he waited until it was distracted before giving it a lethal stab.

The Ancient Slaughterer became blind in the right eye.

It was left with a single eye.

Black light engulfed its pupil, causing it endless agony. Possessing a strong and sturdy body didn't help a single bit at a moment like this.

As Yue Yang attacked its weak spot, its eyes, the sharp black light coupled with his Innate Invisible Qi broke through all of its defenses as it sunk deeply into its pupils.

War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North were shocked.

Because they didn't realize where Yue Yang was hiding at all.

In other words, Yue Yang's camouflage not only managed to fool the Ancient Slaughterer but also even human innates with higher intelligence...

If this guy were to be an assassin, who can avoid his ambush?

It was only until now that War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North gained the sudden realisation why An Xi ,the top assassin in Tong Tian Tower, chose to work with Yue Yang to kill Guan Lan. It was no wonder Guan Lan would be dead in his hands. They didn't know that Yue Yang's original hiding skills were far more inferior to An Xi in the past. He had only learnt from An Xi discreetly during the battle against Guan Lan.

If Yue Yang was still seen through with his hidden skills and his [Counterfeit] Inherent Skill, he wouldn't have bothered doing this.

"Ahh!" The Ancient Slaughterer became extremely crazed. Although it was in pain, its claws still caught Yue Yang who attempted to escape.

It then crushed him into a million pieces.

But it was actually a shadow that Yue Yang used to confuse it.

His real body was under the other eye of the Ancient Slaughterer.

Although he didn't use black light this time, he used the God Killing Dagger that wasn't any weaker than the Black Light... It wasn't very helpful to make his opponent blind in one eye. He could only win this fight if he could completely destroy his opponent's vision.

The air filled with sword qi as the God Killing Dagger combined with the Supreme Sword. In one strike, Yue Yang cut open the Ancient Slaughterer's left eye.

A surprising thing occurred.

Elder Nan Gong was stunned while Southern Goblin King almost fainted.

The Ancient Slaughterer, that was completely blind, stopped howling as it pressed on its left eyes before grabbing Yue Yang together with its eyeball and stuffed them into its mouth. It started chewing. It seemed to realise that its greatest opponent was the little human boy, so it decided to eat him up at all cost.

This crazy act shocked everyone.

War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North felt that their body turned into a jelly as they stood there, at loss.

The Southern Goblin King's shook as she couldn't accept this outcome. What's the use of blinding the Ancient Slaughterer? What meaning was there to win this match? She only hoped for Yue Yang to live, there's no meaning to victory if he were to be killed.

“Howl!” The Ancient Slaughterer beat its chest crazily as it cheered for itself for killing a cunning opponent. Although it became blind in both of its eyes, it finally managed to avenge itself!

The loli lamia Xiao Wen Li shot in front of it in a flash as she glared at it furiously.

She unleashed her Binding Inherent Skill!

The Ancient Slaughterer's cheering action stopped... This was originally the best time to attack but Elder Nan Gong and Southern Goblin King did nothing as they were in a daze, War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North watched like fools, as if they were just onlookers. Only the Emperor of the Underworld, who had been watching the battle, suddenly moved forward and sent War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North flying into the air.

In the next second, the Ancient Slaughterer regained its movements as both of its arms crashed down heavily, targeting the previous locations where War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North were located.

It turned out that its cheering action was actually a cunning disguise. Its motive was to kill its opponents.

Luckily the Emperor of the Underworld was quick enough to help, if not War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North would be history.

Once they were killed, there would be another two Ancient Slaughterers who would enter the battle. If this happened, they would lose for sure.

“Be logical, that little boy isn’t dead yet, his beasts are still fighting!” Elder Nan Gong regained his composure quickly. He was euphoric when he saw that Xiao Wen Lin was still floating in the air.

“You are right!” Southern Goblin King realised it too. If the owner was dead, the Guardian Beast wouldn’t be alive.

Yue Yang definitely wasn’t dead!

But where did he go to?

The Ancient Slaughterer dug its eyes so quickly, did Yue Yang

really manage to escape in such a short period of time? If he really escaped, why didn't anyone see him? Could it be that he was in the stomach of the Ancient Slaughterer? When the Southern Goblin King thought of this, she immediately sweated, but since Yue Yang was alive, her heart calmed down and emotionally played her jade pipa. She attacked the Ancient Slaughterer like a tempest.

Xiao Wen Li moved instantaneously as she held on to the hand of Southern Goblin King and ran away...

Southern Goblin King couldn't understand why initially. But suddenly, an suppressing force appeared.

She felt suffocated as she turned and looked great difficulty. She realized that the bloodied eye sockets of the Ancient Slaughterer had a brilliant light shimmering. It was the glow of the Prison Emperor Divine Seal.

In the next moment, a Nirvana Flame pillar rose in from the left eye socket of the Ancient Slaughterer.

It pierced through its forehead, through its skull.

It then rose from the Ancient Slaughterer and shot up to the crystal roof.

When it rose a thousand meters, it morphed into a humongous Fire Phoenix that reversed its direction. With a boom, the head of the Ancient Slaughterer started to burn.

The strong Ancient Slaughterer lost its might in this moment. It stood there in a daze as it slowly kneeled down under the burning of the Nirvana Flame. Its knees gave out and finally with a boom, it fell into the water heavily, sending crashing waves of up to a thousand meters.

In the sky, Yue Yang rode on the back of the Fire Phoenix.

He was holding a burning black crystal the size of a house on his right hand and the Prison Emperor Divine Seal on his left hand... That kind of might was unparalleled under heaven!

Countless ancient soldier kneeled down and serenaded Yue Yang.

War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North shivered and almost kneeled down.

Sky Emperor was so shocked that his lips twitched uncontrollably. The current Yue Yang reminded him of the Prison Emperor six thousand years ago who almost exterminated the Winged Clan of the Guang Ming Continent. The Yue Clan's Third Young Master was unexpectedly the new prison emperor, and he still possessed the additional World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame that the previous Prison Emperor did not have. He was even more terrifying!

The Black Crystal the size of a house melted rapidly under the Nirvana Flame, and then finally refined to become a fist sized dark gold crystal.

The souls of the Ancient Slaughterer was completely extinguished.

There were 10 Ancient Slaughterers.

The first to kill one of them was Yue Clan's Third Young Master, Yue Yang, from the Western Heaven Realm!

Southern Goblin King was move to tears. This was his power. No matter how impoverished the Western Heaven Realm was, there still the unparalleled Yue Yang that no one could match up to!

Xiao Wen Li flew towards Yue Yang and hugged his neck.

Together with him was the Fire Phoenix formed from Nirvana Flame. It flew straight out into the battlefield.

The battle had not yet ended...

In the central plaza, although the Huang Quan, Fen Tian, Yun Xing and the Black Hell King worked together Ancient Slaughterer was only injured but not defeated. It did not fear their attacks. Relying on its strong body, it continued to retaliate as he was being bashed up. It completely ignored anyone's attack, causing the four strongest Rankers to retreat as no one dared to fight against it directly.

“All of you move away!” Yue Yang shouted in a loud tone, shaking the entire central plaza.

Seeing the Fire Phoenix made from Nirvana Flame, the crazy Ancient Slaughterer turned around and ran off immediately. It was previously arrogant and barbaric, yet it actually didn't dare to fight against Yue Yang now.

It seemed to have inherent fear for this fire that could destroy the world and purify all life forms.

The entire lot was shocked!

Fen Tian was stuttering. “What? Y-y-you really killed that Ancient Slaughterer?”

Huang Quan who was normally mild and calm also complimented Yue Yang: “You live up to your name of being the genius of Soaring Dragon Continent that could only be seen in ten thousand years. This, this is truly amazing. It has only been ten minutes and you killed an Ancient Slaughterer all by yourself... If you can survive in the end, I'm willing to fight against you with all my might to see who deserves the Divine Equipment!”

The gaze, Black Hell King shot at Yue Yang, wasn't filled with surprise, instead it was filled with jealousy and endless hatred.

This was how he looked at the Prison Emperor in the past.

It reappeared after six thousand years!

Chapter 520 – The Crazy Points Stealer, Yue Clan Third Young Master

Naturally, Yue Yang had already sensed the Black Hell King's 'I want to exterminate you' gaze.

But, he pretended that he did not see it.

Since the Black Hell King was his enemy anyways, Yue Yang did not care even if flames of envy would burn the Black Hell King into a widow. It would even be better if he was mad to the point that his seven apertures begin bleeding. In this death arena, even if they were teammates, Yue Yang and the Black Hell King were destined to never coexist. Did the Black Hell King want to escape alive? This decision was not something the Ancient Slaughterer can make but something that should be asked to Yue Yang first.

For every participant from the east, north, and south killed, it would only give one point no matter how strong the enemy was.

Even if the Black Hell King was able to kill everyone, he would not even be able to reach 100 points.

Whenever Yue Yang successfully kills an Ancient Slaughterer alone, he would obtain 2 points for the kill and another 5 points as reward for soloing. At the same time, he obtained a secret information as the chosen one. If he was able to obtain a score greater than 100, he would be able to give a third of his points to any teammate that lacked it.

Regarding this, Yue Yang would absolutely never tell the Black Hell King. With Black Hell King's paranoia, he would never believe anyone's words anyways.

Since the Black Hell King did not know his points, he would definitely go crazy in the end.

As for Yue Yang, who knew all the secret information, he would just do his all to steal other people's points.

Moreover, the three team leader Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing didn't get any points, as they were unaware of its existence... The death arena definitely promotes solo fights as those rewards from solo fights were far more than those for killing only. Under the handsome reward awarded for solo fighting and killing, Yue Yang would only have to kill fifteen Ancient Slaughterers in order to be awarded with hundred and fifty points, which exceeded the point he would require to survive. In other words, Yue Yang was still short of fourteen Ancient Slaughterers, no matter how the final battle would turn out to be, Yue Yang would be able to leave safely.

The reason why Yue Yang chose to reveal part of his true power was because he wanted to get the Ancient Slaughterer team leader and get to know how many points he would be awarded for killing it.

This point system mustn't be made known to Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing.

More importantly, Yue Yang needed the Ancient Slaughterer team leader to level himself up quickly! He guessed that the Black Hell King wouldn't be able to suppress himself for too long and would soon take action against him, so Yue Yang had to rank up or make a breakthrough before that.

At the very least, he had to level up his beasts so that he would have sufficient power to protect himself.

“Yue Clan's Third Young Master, we'll leave the Ancient Slaughterer team leader to you, it doesn't matter if you can't kill it, we can rush to your sides as long as you can restrict it!” Fen Tian and Yun Xing weren't modest either. They knew that it would be hard to get rid of the Ancient Slaughterer team leader, so they were more than happy when Yue Yang was willing to restrict it, even Huang Quan left hurriedly and went to besiege and kill the other Ancient Slaughterers. The entire group bonded together as it adopted the wolf pack tactic. They targeted the weakest one first before thinking of ways to kill the Ancient Slaughterer team leader.

“...” the Black Hell King's expression was unreadable. He wanted to attack Yue Yang very much, but he was worried if he failed to do so, he would be besieged and attacked by Huang Quan and the rest instead.

If he were to stir up troubles in the group now, he would become everyone's enemy.

He gritted his teeth hatefully as he decided to let Yue Yang live for while more before waiting for the opportunity to kill Yue Yang.

Of course, what made the Black Hell King most anxious was that he was afraid that Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing would kill all the Ancient Slaughterer and snatch all the points away. It would then result in him being by the Ancient Code killed due to lack of points.

After careful considerations, Black Hell King quickly chased after Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing.

The three team leaders were attacking an Ancient Slaughterer together with the three-eyed tiger man, the light man and the others. The Ancient Slaughterer whom the five were attacking jointly was the only one that appeared to be injured, the injury of the other seven were negligible. Of course Black Hell King wasn't willing to be at the losing end as he quickly join them in attacking the Ancient Slaughterer while finding for an opportunity to kill Yue Yang... Nobody knew whether the points would be awarded to all those who participated in attacking or only to the one who made the lethal blow. But no matter what, the most urgent thing was to get rid of this Ancient Slaughterer first!

The six who were the most powerful ones took turns to attack.

The unlucky Ancient Slaughterer wouldn't be able to take it no matter how buff it might be. As it got more severely injured, a huge wound opened up on its steel-like skin as fresh blood poured out.

But it wouldn't die from its injuries as it still attacked crazily...

Another ten minutes passed and the Ancient Slaughterer finally collapsed.

Huang Quan, Fen Tian, Yun Xing and the Black Hell King stopped attacking at the same time. The three-eyed tiger man was shocked as he quickly jumped out of the battlefield to prevent himself from being targeted. As for the light man, he looked at Huang Quan, who was in the same camp as him and had always seen him as the leader.

“Because we are not sure of how the points are allocated, I suggest that we should all work together and attack the Ancient Slaughterer.” the burning man Fen Tian came out with the most reasonable solution.

“I agree.” the liquid metal man Yun Xing looked at Huang Quan.

“...” the Black Hell King was secretly unhappy. He who had always been superior had been ignored by the lot. The reason was that he was not the strongest Ranker, the strongest was the silver-haired Huang Quan, who had his eyes closed.

“Okay, let's do that!” Huang Quan muttered for a while before agreeing to it.

The other five people were secretly happy when they heard it.

No matter what, they had finally gotten the point for killing the Ancient Slaughterer. With this speed, they would be able to kill at least four or even more before the second batch of Ancient Slaughterer arrive. It was because many Ancient Slaughterer had started to become injured after the twenty minutes long battle. As long as everyone gave their all, there was high chance for them to kill all the Ancient Slaughterer after forty minutes...

Just when the six men were preparing to deliver the biggest blow to kill this Ancient Slaughterer, who had collapsed, a grievous moan sounded.

A suppressive energy pressed onto the entire ancient battlefield.

This was the power of the Prison Emperor Divine Seal! Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing's expression changed slightly, could it be that Yue Yang wanted to kill the Ancient Slaughterer team leader? They immediately expanded their senses. They sensed that there was Yue Yang's presence in the crystal passage of the Western Heaven Realm instantly rose to the peak. His ferocity was unparalleled and made others tremble.

A wave of cheer then sounded the second time in the crystal passage. The first time was when Yue Yang killed an Ancient Slaughterer.

Could it be that he killed the Ancient Slaughterer team leader?

How could it be possible?

He was only an Innate Level 10. Even with his Nirvana Flame and World Exterminating Wheel, his power wouldn't exceed a Heaven Ranked Level 2 which was required to kill an Ancient Slaughterer team leader, which had the power of a Heaven Ranked Level 2, right? Even the strongest rankers, Huang Quan, Fen Tian, Yun Xing and Black Hell King weren't able to do anything to it when they worked together!

"Impossible! He must have injured it and gained the upper hand!" The three-eyed tiger man waved his hand.

Everyone also felt that it was impossible for Yue Yang to kill the Ancient Slaughterer team leader. It would already be impressive enough for him to injure it heavily.

Who would have thought that within seconds, the presence and soul of the Ancient Slaughterer team leader disappeared without a trace.

Although they didn't see it with their own eyes, their sharp sense wouldn't lie to them.

Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing's expression ashened while the Black Hell King gritted his teeth noisily. He couldn't hold it in any longer as he felt that his chest was about to explode. He was very unhappy about Yue Yang killing the Ancient Slaughterer before! The six experts only managed to severely injure one but had yet to kill any Ancient Slaughterer, and Yue Yang had actually gotten rid of yet another Ancient Slaughterer... If this continued,

he could easily snatch away all the points, how would that do? Most importantly, if he were to continue growing like this, would the Black Hell King even have a place to stand in the future?

“Ahwooo!” the burning man Fen Tian was on the verge of madness as he grabbed onto the Ancient Slaughterer that collapsed and attacked it.

Huang Quan and the rest weren't slow to respond as they attacked it simultaneously.

Only the three-eyed tiger was a tad slower as the Ancient Slaughterer was already dead when he hit it.

After killing the Ancient Slaughterer, the three team leaders Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing got points that were equally distributed among them. Each person got 0.4 points. In other words, only two points were awarded for the trouble of killing the Ancient Slaughterer, and it had to be separated among them.

The most pathetic one was the three-eyed tiger man who wasted his energy for nothing.

Of course Huang Quan and the rest of the team leaders wouldn't tell him so.

“One Ancient Slaughterer for two points, so each of us will have 0.3 points.” Fen Tian was afraid that Huang Quan would reveal the point system to the three-eyed tiger man in discreet, hence he did

it before Huang Quan did.

“When can we gather one hundred points...” The three-eyed tiger man was shocked. This point system was blood sucking.

Black Hell King laughed coldly on the inside.

They would never get one hundred points from killing the Ancient Slaughterer alone. The best way would be to kill people.

He decided to act when the time was ripe and kill off all those participant below heaven-ranked. Once he finished gathering one hundred points, Yue Yang, Huang Quan and this rest would be struggling amidst various other opponents as they die miserably. With his unique Inherent Skills, Black Hell King was confident that he could achieve this. Of course, he wanted to snatch the points the most because with every points he managed to snatch, there would be one less point for others.

Black Hell King looked at Huang Quan. The only guy he was wary of was this silver haired guy who had his eyes closed.

But this guy was all focussed on Yue Yang, and Black Hell King could make use of this and scheme against them.

Three-eyed tiger man and light man rushed to their next target.

Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing rushed to the crystal passage as they wanted to see for themselves how Yue Yang

managed to kill the Ancient Slaughterer team leader.

They saw a huge pool that could almost form a lake from afar. Storm mermaid and some other beasts were still summoning storms while the ancient soldiers were eagerly dissecting the Ancient Slaughterer team leader's corpse that was floating on the lake. Yue Yang wasn't around. Even Elder Nan Gong, Southern Goblin King and Emperor of the Underworld were nowhere to be seen. Only the Sky Emperor was present and didn't look right.

"What exactly happened?" Black Hell King descended before the Sky Emperor.

"That guy has a hidden power, it was terrifying..." Sky Emperor looked at Huang Quan and the rest. He wanted to speak but held back. Recalling what happened before, he shuddered uncontrollably.

"A golden giant appeared on the Third Young Master's body. It was a few hundred meters tall, and it killed the Ancient Slaughterer team leader instantly." War Tiger of the East said with shaking lips.

"That might be a one time skill, and can only last for a short period of time. But the damage it can do is horrifying." Fierce Tooth of the North's face was similarly pale.

"Did the golden giant wring off the head of the Ancient Slaughterer team leader?" Huang Quan asked suddenly.

“I’m not sure because we were suppressed by the golden giant under its feet. We were submerged in water and with its feet covering the sky, we can’t see what happened above.” War Tiger of the East gulped on his saliva as he tried hard to quell his anxiety. “When we could finally raise our head, the Ancient Slaughterer team leader had already been killed and its head fell down... It was very fast, the entire process took only a few seconds.”

“The suppression wasn’t caused by the Prison Emperor Divine Seal, but the golden giant. Was this the Third Young Master’s beast or the real chosen one’s?” Fen Tian’s words made Huang Quan and Yun Xing felt threatened. The one who could open up the ancient battlefield would definitely be the chosen one. Yue Yang wasn’t a team leader, so the real team leader should be lurking somewhere around him. It was highly possible that the person would attack jointly with Yue Yang.

“There’s such a possibility!” Black Hell King felt a chill in his heart. It was no wonder Yue Yang had been so arrogant all along and wasn’t bothered by him. He had such a strong supporter backing him.

Was it Zhi Zun?

Black Hell King wasn’t sure since there weren’t many people in the Tong Tian Tower who could the Ancient Slaughterer team leader in one move.

Other than the most mysterious and strongest Zhi Zun, who else would it be?

But if Zhi Zun was here, would she hide herself? If she was that powerful, why would she let Huang Quan control the direction of the battlefield? Why didn't she step up to lead?

No one could fathom why... They didn't have the luxury of time to think further.

Time was running out fast. Only half an hour was left till the release of the second batch of Ancient Slaughterers, but they had only killed three opponent.

Talking about the points again, if they didn't go all out for the points they would all be snatched away by Yue Yang. With that, everyone would land into a disadvantageous situation. Huang Quan and the rest left immediately as they looked for their next target. They could only confirm that even if only two points were awarded for killing the Ancient Slaughterer team leader, Yue Yang would at least have four points, which was ten times greater than what they had.

Of course, even the three team leaders, Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing weren't aware that there would be five points awarded right away for the solo killing of an Ancient Slaughterer while solo killing the Ancient Slaughterer team leader was as high as ten points.

Yue Yang who had gotten such rewards became insane.

He decided to snatch all the points away!

Most importantly, he had to keep this a secret at all cost. It would be best if he could keep the secret until the last battle in the death arena.

It was very selfish to do this, but Yue Yang had never considered himself to be a saint. Moreover, to be generous to the Black Hell King and the rest would be akin to being cruel to himself. Yue Yang wasn't dumb, so he would definitely not do it.

A bad person, well, Yue Yang was born to be a bad person!

'Don't think that I didn't hide my true power'... Yue Yang decided to tell this to the Black Hell King at the moment when he kills him.

Chapter 521 – Posthaste

Huang Quan and the rest realized that even before they reached the central plaza, the Yue Clan's Third Young Master had already made two Ancient Slaughterers blind.

It remained unknown how he did it.

But this made the everyone overjoyed.

They all knew how hard it was to defeat the Ancient Slaughterers. To be able to make it blind was undoubtedly the best tactic.

Losing their vision was a detrimental injury to the Ancient Slaughterers. Their combat powers would at least be halved.

They did not suspect anything.

They never would have guessed that Yue Yang wasn't doing for everyone to easily kill the Ancient Slaughterer but was just making sure that he could get points for the death of every Ancient Slaughterer. In other words, no one else but him would get the rewards awarded for solo killing an Ancient Slaughterer. This way, Yue Yang would be able to keep the reward for solo killing a secret for longer time and also have a grasp on the most of the points in this death arena. Yue Yang knew very well the difficulty he was facing.... The representatives from the east, south and north were harder to deal with than the Ancient Slaughterers; Also, the Black Hell King who would seize every opportunity to attack him was

undoubtedly a ticking time bomb as well.

If Yue Yang didn't become more proactive, he would be in even graver danger.

Without the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Luo Hua City Mistress, Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wuxia by his sides, he could only fight this battle alone as he was couldn't escape from the death arena.

It could be said that this battle was ten times more life threatening than his quest to the Prison Emperor Divine Palace in the past.

“Third Young Master, use your strength to create more opportunities!” Burning man Fen Tian wasn't willing to expose his entire power, he wished for Yue Yang to launch more strikes. Fen Tian wasn't alone as the strongest Huang Quan and Yun Xing bore this attitude too.

They all knew that the battle wouldn't end after this fight, there would at least be another two waves of Ancient Slaughterers arriving in the next few hours.

After a short three day break, another three waves of Ancient Slaughterers would be released again.

This uphill battle would continue until either all the Ancient Slaughterers or the participants were dead.

Excluding the additional Ancient Slaughterers from the death of participants, there would be ten waves of Ancient Slaughterers being released into the death arena, and their strength would only become stronger towards the end. There was a high possibility that the last wave would be completely made up of Ancient Slaughterer team leaders or even stronger.

If they don't conserve some power, and give their all now, they wouldn't be able to sustain for future fights.

Moreover, there was still the battle between remaining four sides after all the Ancient Slaughterers were dead.

Only that was considered to be the final fight.

Yue Yang's performance was impressive, but this was only the start. Burning man Fen Tian and Huang Quan weren't envious. On the contrary, they were secretly happy as it would diminish his power greatly and reduce the threat he would pose on them.

Compared to Yue Yang who gave his all, the secretive Black Hell King alerted Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing even more.

"..." A chill flashed rapidly across Black Hell King's eyes.

But Yue Yang caught it and smiled coldly in secret.

Pleased? I'll see how long it could last!

Yue Yang knew very well that he couldn't ally with Black Hell King and he would definitely try to kill him, but Yue Yang couldn't act first and kill Black Hell King. There were two reasons to it. First, the current circumstances were too dangerous, killing the Black Hell King would only land them in a more unfavourable situation; second, it was hard to kill Black Hell King who was protected by his Holy Equipments. Coupled with his hidden powers, even the strongest Huang Quan couldn't confidently say that he could kill Black Hell King.

Even if Black Hell King didn't act immediately, that doesn't mean that Yue Yang doesn't have a say.

Once he got all the points, the Black Hell King would be killed by the Ancient Code no matter how powerful he might be.

So what Yue Yang wanted to do was to make use of the battle with the Ancient Slaughterers to level himself up, and use the fastest way to catch up with Black Hell King and surpass him. Only then could he gain the most out of this battle and emerge as the final winner.

In the central crystal plaza, the heated battle was still ongoing.

At the same time at an individual World in Heaven Outside Heaven.

“What's wrong?” The elder sister of the ‘War God Guard’ twins, who gave Yue Yang a mysterious crescent moon ornament in the

past, heroically defeated an Ancient Ape and majestically landed beside Xue Wuxia. She asked confusedly: “Are you feeling unwell?”

“...No, I just felt a very weird sense of unease. I suddenly couldn’t focus on anything...” Xue Wuxia couldn’t fathom why she was feeling like this either.

“Is it because Princess Qian Qian is returning to Soaring Dragon Continent today?” The younger sister of the twins blinked her doe eyes as she asked.

“No, I’m not sure.” Xue Wuxia had suspected the possibility earlier but it was soon excluded by her.

“You have been cultivating and it’s been a long time since you were back, why not go back today!” The older War God Guard sister suggested.

“Our cultivation mission has been completed!” The younger War God Guard sister added on adorably.

“...Hmm, alright then!” Xue Wuxia couldn’t explain the fear she was feeling, but after hearing their suggestion, she decided to return to Soaring Dragon Continent which she had been back separated from for a long time now and visit her lover. She wondered how he had been doing. Although she would often receive his mail, she still missed him a lot, could it really be that it was because Princess Qian Qian returned to the Soaring Dragon Continent and her heart was giving way too?

Carrying her doubts, Xue Wuxia and the War God Guard sisters left the individual world and back to the Soaring Dragon Continent.

Tian Luo Palace.

Princess Qian Qian walked towards the Mirage. She didn't even return to the Da Xia Palace nor did she went back to visit her father. She came directly to see Yue Yang.

With the Prison Emperor Divine Sword on her back, she gave off a majestic vibe that combined faintly with her own.

Princess Qian Qian who had mastered the Divine Sword better was respected by people she met everywhere she went.

She had already levelled up to become a Supreme Ranker.

When Princess Qian Qian just left from the palace gate, two women run furiously towards her from Tian Luo Palace. One of them was clad in a black cloak and wore a coral mask while holding a white whale staff; the other one was the half elf girl who couldn't hide her out of the world beauty even with a cloak and a white cloth covering her face. The guards of the palace only smelled an aromatic scent that caused them to immerse in it.

Only the gold-armored captain could still maintain his composure as he quickly pulled out his sword to block the two women. "You can't barge into Tian Luo Palace like this."

“We have urgent issues and are looking for fourth mother...” The one with the coral mask hastily indicated their intentions.

“There’s no such person in the Tian Luo Palace!” The gold-armored captain rejected her immediately.

Although they were two women, they were so powerful that it alerted him, especially for the one wearing the coral mask. Forget about her hiding her power, the power she showed was already that of a Lesser Innate. There weren’t many in the Soaring Dragon Continent. What made the gold-armored captain confused was that he hadn’t heard of these two women before, what was their motive now that they came suddenly?

Are they friend or foe?

He couldn’t come to a conclusion!

The woman wearing the coral mask spoke anxiously. “Fourth mother is the fourth mother of the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master. If she isn’t around, then we’ll look for the Young Master’s sister, the second daughter of the Yue Clan, Yue Yu. If she isn’t around too, we’ll look for his younger sister, Yue Bing. Or, we can look for his teammates Ye Kong, Hai Dafu, Xue Tanlang, anyone of them, if all of them aren’t around, please report to Tian Luo Emperor or Da Xia Emperor, we have urgent matters to see them... This is an emergency, you have to report immediately!”

The gold-armored captain was confused: “Who are you all

exactly? Where did you all come from? Reveal your identities now!”

The woman wearing coral mask paused for a while. “You have no rights to know my identity, this issue is confidential, report it now, we can’t afford to lose any more time...”

“No, if the two of you don’t reveal your identities, I will never report for you.” the gold-armored captain rejected directly. What if they were assassins from the Black Hell Army? Then he wouldn’t be doing his job. Moreover, those whom she requested to see were the top priorities the country was protecting.

“What a stubborn fool...” The woman wearing coral mask raised her white whale staff. “If I were to be an enemy, I could have killed you instantly. We are allies, and we really have something very urgent!”

“That won’t do too, I will never let people of unknown identities in!” The gold-armored captain became more firm. Did they think that they were very impressive being Lesser Innates? This is the Tian Luo Palace, and he is the leader of the guards, he has to do his job even if they were innates! Moreover, everyone of the Soaring Dragon Continent knew that the guards didn’t have any rights to let any one into the Mirage, so if they didn’t even know this, even if they weren’t enemies, they weren’t allies either. They should go to the Yue Clan Castle if they wanted to look for Ye long, Fatty Hai and Xue Tan Lang, why are they looking for them in the Tian Luo Palace? These two women don’t know anything, were they really allies? The two of them were too suspicious, and should never be let into the palace.

Thinking of this, the gold-armored captain indicated to all the guards to be prepared for a fight.

The woman wearing the coral mask fought hard to suppress her anger. “We are really allies. If you all aren’t willing to pass the message, then we’ll go to the Yue Clan Castle where’s the teleportation circle?”

The gold-armored captain thought how could they be allies if they didn’t even know the teleportation circle of the Tian Luo Palace.

He became more restrictive in his speech.

If not for the huge gaps between his and their power, he would have nabbed these two suspicious woman and reported them to his upper management.

“What happened?” Princess Qian Qian, who had a sensitive sixth sense, felt a weird feedback before she entered the Mirage. Under her super sensitive sixth sense, she suppressed the urge to see Yue Yang as she turned around.

“Divine Equipment?” The woman wearing the coral mask was stunned when she looked at Princess Qian Qian.

“Prison Emperor Divine Sword, she is Princess Qian Qian.” The half elf girl dashed towards Princess Qian Qian immediately.

“Outrageous...” The gold-armored captain became enraged, thinking that they were going to assassinate Princess Qian Qian and snatch away her Divine Equipment. He brandished his sword and chopped.

Princess Qian Qian raised her hand and pointed in the air.

Her qi deflected the gold-armored captain’s giant sword.

In the same instant, the white whale staff moved to protect the head of the half elf girl. She tripped and fell into Princess Qian Qian’s embrace. She was crying hysterically and was too agitated to speak. She seemed to want to speak, but she couldn’t. Princess Qian Qian felt confused. Carrying her on one hand, she used her other hand to ask the gold-armored captain to back off: “She doesn’t have any ill intentions... Who are you all exactly? What happened?”

Her.. [Six Records] Inherent Skill could sense that these two women didn’t have intentions to kill, so they definitely weren’t assassins deployed from the Black Hell Army.

But she couldn’t fathom what they came for.

The woman wearing the coral mask was excited too when she saw Princess Qian Qian. But she immediately suppressed it and payed her respects: “Your Highness, as there are a lot of people here, it isn’t quite convenient for us to reveal our identity, but we have no ill intentions.”

“Princess Qian Qian, I am not a bad guy, master is in danger, go save him quickly...” The half elf girl couldn’t keep things to herself as she revealed everything when she was anxious. Princess Qian Qian shook as she heard it, before quickly covering her mouth. “Understood, we’ll discuss further inside, we can’t say anything here!” She then turned towards the palace gates. “All of you start doing shifts and take turns to guard the palace gates, no one is to leave for whatever reasons.”

“Yes!” Although the gold-armored captain didn’t know what happened, he realized the severity of the issue as he shouted to the guards who felt confused. “All of you listen up, from now on we are on alert level red. All of you immediately come with me to enter the quarantine room, no one is to communicate with people outside. Those who violates this will be seen as spies and will be killed without hesitation!”

Before waiting for the guards to act, Princess Qian Qian had already carried the half elf girl as she brought the woman with the coral mask into the palace.

They ran all the way through the palace and into the Mirage.

Chapter 522 – Xue Wuxia Is Back

Yue Clan Castle.

On martial arts field, a tied-up robber was crying bitterly.

“This is injustice, I really am not a spy. You guys are too unreasonable, would the Black Hell Army want a level 2 [Braveman] like me? I really am just a messenger!” The little robber’s face was covered in tears as he sobbed.

“Maybe he really is wronged.....” Liu Ye was getting a little soft-hearted. This little robber seemed too weak to be a spy, right?

“Look at how hard he is crying. He is too pitiful even if he really is a spy, let him off to turn over a new leaf!” Bao’er’s heart was simply as soft as silk tofu.

“Turning over a new leaf is a waste of time, how about you just die!” Fatty Hai pulled out a dagger and waved it in front of the robber’s body as if thinking where to land the blade. His actions shocked the little robber into screams, almost peeing his pants. Ye Kong, Xue Tanlang and Tian Luo Prince gave each other a look, they all found this strange.

To claim that this little robber was a spy seemed like a stretch when he was so weak.

But to say that he was not a spy was difficult when he was so

suspicious.

Even though the kid claimed to be a messenger, there was no letter even after searching his entire body. He only said that two female Rankers from the sixth floor made him pass the message verbally to Yue Clan's Third Young Master's companions. That is for them to look for Zhi Zun immediately. This was the biggest lie. Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the rest did not feel that they have the right to ask to meet Zhi Zun, even a fake message would not ask them to do that.

Moreover, no one knew the two women the little robber was describing. Even his description was very vague, as if he was making things up.

What cloak covering the entire body, masks made from coral on their faces and hand holding a white whale staff..... doesn't it all sound crazy? Which woman in Soaring Dragon Continent would dress like that?

In conclusion, this little robber was lying. Only after being caught red-handed did he come up with such an extremely stupid lie.

There were 2 other points that were very suspicious.

Firstly, this little robber was from the Zi Jin Kingdom. Why would someone from the Zi Jin Kingdom send a message to the Yue Clan Castle? If a robber from the Zi Jin Kingdom was not a spy, then what else could he be?

Secondly, this little robber claimed that two women from Tong Tian Tower's sixth floor came down to the Soaring Dragon Continent. With this robber's ability, not to mention Tong Tian Tower's sixth floor, even the third or fourth floor would be too unbearable for him, how could he even adapt to the sixth floor's gravity? There was no doubt he was lying and talking nothing but nonsense.

"I really am wronged, do not kill me..... I am only greedy for money and did this for 100 gold. Moreover, I have no grudges with Da Xia and the Yue Clan. Why would I be a spy for Zi Jin Kingdom? Even a fool would know how powerful the Yue Clan's Third Young Master was, just a single breath from him would kill me. How could I even dare to oppose him?" The little robber was still sobbing.

"Nonsense! I have never heard of a quest that is worth 100 gold by just leading the way, do you think I am a fool?" Fatty Hai was furious and kicked the little robber many times.

"This fellow needs to be sorted out. Most likely when we skin a layer of his skin later, only then would he tell the truth." Yan Pojun and Feng Qisha also found it impossible. How could the remuneration for just leading the way be 100 gold? Tong Tian Tower never had such a quest, even if there was, how could this little robber go up to the Tong Tian Tower's sixth floor to receive such a quest. Did he think all of the guards of the Tong Tian Tower's sixth floor were blind?

"What happened to the two women you brought down from

Tong Tian Tower's sixth floor?" Anna asked patiently.

"They had a teleportation scroll and left immediately once they reached Soaring Dragon Continent. They only instructed me to come to the Yue Clan Castle to pass on the message." The little robber swore that he was speaking the truth.

"Impossible. If they had a teleportation scroll, this means that they know people from the Soaring Dragon Continent. Why would they need you to lead the way?" Lin En immediately dismissed his words.

"They said that they knew the Yue Clan's Third Young Master....." The little robber tried to explain himself.

"That is even more unlikely. If they knew the Third Young Master, why they need you to lead the way?" Ye Kong also felt that this little robber was speaking nonsense.

"When they asked you to bring the message to me, was there anything other than asking us to look for Zhi Zun immediately? Is it that Third Young Master was in danger and needed help urgently? Make yourself clear and I promise that they will not harm you. In fact, they will return your 100 gold!" Anna's intuition told her that something was not right. It made no sense for Black Hell Army to use this little robber that was so weak. On the contrary, it would be problematic if this kid was telling a truth.

"I don't know, they only said to ask you all to look for Zhi Zun..... I know nothing, I was only leading the way!" Little robber

tried his best to describe: “There were 2 of them. One of them was very tall, taller than me. She had blonde hair and green eyes. She wore a mask made from coral and held a white whale staff. She was formidable and most likely an Innate. I saw that even the people of sixth floor were very respectful to her. The other was as tall as Princess Bao’er. Even though there was a veil over her face, she still looked pretty. She was unlike the girls of Soaring Dragon Continent and she seemed very weak. Even when she spoke she was very shy, but she sounded so sweet..... They did not allow me to raise my head to look at them, so I do not know for sure. But I swear that all of what I have said is real, not half a sentence is a lie!”

“You are so dishonest. Not half a sentence is a lie, but every sentence is false!” Fatty Hai gave him a kick.

“You are only a Level 2 [Braveman], how did you go to the sixth floor?” Xue Tanlang asked the important question.

“ I have a Silk Smoke Elastic Monster that is able to resist gravity. By protecting my body with it, I am able to go up to the sixth floor. In the past my father was a travelling merchant and would bring me up there often. I have always been completing quests to pass items or letters from the first to the sixth floor. Just today when I was bringing alcohol for a mercenary on sixth floor, I saw Warrior’s Guild had just released a quest to lead the way for 100 gold. Since I was eligible, I gathered my courage and accepted it..... I really am not lying, how could I possibly dare to come here to be a spy. Moreover, Zi Jin Kingdom confiscated all of my father’s assets ten years ago. He almost killed himself because of his depression. I have never like them, why would I even be a spy for them.....” With shaking hands, the little robber summoned a

Bronze Level 2 Silk Smoke Elastic Monster.

“Before we investigate matters thoroughly, you would have to stay here at Yue Clan Castle. If it turns out that you really are just a messenger, we will compensate you with 150 gold coins.” Tian Luo Prince passed the little robber a tranquilizer pill to consume.

“You really think we can believe him? Even fools would know that we can never request to meet Zhi Zun.....” Fatty Hai still did not believe him.

“If they were unfamiliar with Soaring Dragon Continent, or the situation was urgent, only Zhi Zun could solve the problem.” Tian Luo Prince’s analysis made everyone’s heart sank.

If that was true, things were bad.

If Zhi Zun had to interfere, this could not be a small matter. It would definitely have to do with Black Hell King.

Could it be that Black Hell King was attacking Yue Yang? If those two were Yue Yang’s messengers, then why would they not come to the Yue Clan Castle but instead go somewhere else to seek help?

Xue Tanlang and Tian Luo Prince exchanged glances: “You all wait here, we will make a trip to the Tian Luo Palace.”

Everyone fell silent. Could it be that those two women have gone to Tian Luo Palace to look for the Night Empress?

Now everyone instead wished that this little robber was a spy, or that he was lying. They hoped that this was not real..... Ye Kong told Fatty Hai: “Fatty you stay here and take care of things. I will go look for teacher to ask for his advice.” The teacher Ye Kong was referring to was the Old Fox. Seeing how the situation has worsened, it would be impossible to not report to the Old Fox and the others.

“Be careful, this could be the enemy’s scheme!” Fatty Hai was unusually serious.

Two silver stars appeared in the sky.

They sped across the sky.

Before anyone could react, the two silver stars have already flashed in front of them.

Xue Tanlang reacted the fastest . He immediately filled the sky with frost and heavily smashed it towards the opponents. Even if the frost could not repel the enemy, it could still serve as a buffer for his companions.

A jade hand condensed all of the cold frost in the air into a small ice crystal. Xue Tanlang was shocked, before he could retreat, that jade hand had already stopped in front of his face. He was covered in cold sweat. This enemy was extremely powerful that he could not even withstand a single hit. Things were over.

“How could you not even recognise me, you are asking to be hit!” The owner of the melodious voice flicked her fingers and sent Xue Tanlang flying.

“Sister!” Xue Tanlang took some steps back, and quickly stretched out his hands to stop Ye Kong and Fatty Hai. He then rushed towards Xue Wuxia in excitement, shouting: “Sister, why are you back?”

Beside Xue Wuxia were the two war God Guard Sisters, standing on her two sides.

Xue Wuxia’s appearance calmed everyone down.

Now that the gifted Eldest Miss of the Xue Family has returned to take charge of matters, things were now going to be settled.

Everyone started talking about what happened at once, hoping that Xue Wuxia would be able to make the right judgement. Xue Wuxia waved her jade hand gently, indicating for everyone to quiet down. She then said with certainty: “It is true!”

This sentence stopped everyone’s hearts for a moment.

Xue Wuxia pondered for a moment: “When I was returning from training at Tong Tian Tower’s tenth floor, a woman called Hai Yingwu passed a top secret letter to me as I reach Tong Tian Tower’s sixth floor. In the letter, it said that Yue Yang is at a very

special place now and was fighting with the Black Hell King and unknown powerful enemies. She told us to look for Zhi Zun because Yue Yang's message to Hai Yingwu could only show ten characters, the message was not very clear. But we could still deduce that Yue Yang was in a danger zone. When I returned to the sixth floor, Ou Gen from the Warrior's Guild also verified that Yue Yang had been intercepted by the Black Hell King. After that Elder Nan Gong rushed over and for unknown reasons, they all left with the Southern Goblin King to Tong Tian Tower's tenth floor's Heaven outside Heaven."

Fatty Hai started getting anxious: "What do we do now?"

Xue Wuxia indicated for everyone to calm down: "With your abilities, do not even think about Tong Tian Tower's tenth Floor. Even if I went, it would most likely be of little use. What you all have to do is mainly to prevent the Black Hell Army from attacking! I have already sent letters to Zhi Zun, Night Empresses and Sky Law, asking them to decide on the course of action. What we have to do is to wait for Zhi Zun's signal because she is the person who can really help Yue Yang. With Elder Nan Gong there, I think Yue Yang should be okay for now, we must believe in him!"

Her words made everyone feel much better.

She was right, when had Yue Yang ever disappointed them? Even though Black Hell King was very strong, Yue Yang still had Elder Nan Gong with him. He should be able to hold his ground until Zhi Zun arrived to help.

The problem was, where in the world was he now?

The meticulous Anna and Liu Ye both noticed that Xue Wuxia did not mention the location. They immediately realized that even she did not know where he was, and started to panic.

The two girls understood that this was not the time to get to the heart of the matter, otherwise everyone would start worrying. They pushed away their panic and kept quiet

In the distance, a strange light flashed from the center of the teleportation circle.

“Wuxia, come quickly. “ Princess Qian Qian rushed out energetically from the teleportation circle. She pulled Xue Wuxia along with her, and shouted at Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, Xue Tanlang and Tian Luo Prince right before she left via the teleportation: “You all stay behind and not cause any trouble for me! Report to the old guys and then wait here for news quietly. If the Black Hell Army really comes, that is your problem. If you do not settle it properly, when I come back, I will ruthlessly cut you all up!”

“Princess, can elderly me help?” Who knew where Old Cunning Fox heard news, but he rushed over.

“There is nothing you can do, just look over them.....” Before Princess Qian Qian finished talking, she had already left by teleportation with Xue Wuxia and the War God Guard Sisters.

“Woof!” Only Hui Tai Lang rushed over like lightning, and disappeared with the teleportation.

Chapter 523 – Vicious, Black Hell King's Counterattack

Death arena, crystal passage.

Yue Yang felt that things were going way too smooth. Although they survived through two waves of attacks and everyone was exhausted but the mysterious thing was that, other than a small number of Ancient Warriors which were too slow to react and were eliminated by the Ancient Slaughterers; the participants from the north, south, east and west did not suffer any losses. To obtain this kind of results, not just Yue Yang, the others were also surprised. After attacking and killing twenty plus Heaven Ranked Ancient Slaughterers, they could still manage to have zero casualties... Were the representatives all too strong? Or were the Ancient Slaughterers too weak?

Of course, this type of result would be affected by a number of factors.

Firstly, the participants lead by Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing have been preparing for a few hundred years. They had plenty of preparations. The nine Heaven Ranked Rankers' skills were all out of the ordinary.

Secondly, the Ancient War Gods were impressive. Other than the huge loli who was still unconscious due to the cerebral concussion caused by the Black Hell King's attacks, the other three were able to take on two or three Ancient Slaughterers at once. Whether it was the 12-Winged Angel, the Tiger-Lion Man or the Giant Skeleton, they could all handle two or three Ancient Slaughterers

on their own.

With their presences, it was equivalent to having a protector god.

Taking advantage of their ability to restrain the Ancient Slaughterers, the participants from the different regions could quickly besiege and eliminate their enemies.

Thirdly, a special character emerged from the Western Heaven Realm: Yue Yang.

Before that, no one knew that such an abnormal genius existed in the world.

Due to the fact that Yue Yang had to enter the death arena, he was forced to use his full power. If not, no one would have found out about Yue Yang's real strength, even including Elder Nan Gong and the Black Hell King.

Yue Yang fused his Innate Invisible Qi, World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flames to his body, as well as the awakened ancient code power of the card of fate. After Yue Yang found out the Ancient Slaughterers' weakness— their eyes. He, who possessed the God Killing Dagger, Black Light and Prison Emperor Divine Seal, turned the tables and greatly influenced the battle.

In the two waves of battles, his role even surpassed that of Huang Quan, who was the most powerful fighter.

The entire team of Ancient Slaughterers had their eyes destroyed by him. He even rejected assistance.

On his own, he eliminated two Ancient Slaughterer Captains and four Ancient Slaughterers.

This insane accomplishment could not be obtained by anyone else.

After the secretive Black Hell King decided to put his own safety before anything else, on his very own, Yue Yang supported the Soaring Dragon Continent, which was no longer as glorious as its former time. Yue Yang even supported the entire Tong Tian Tower which represented the lower levels of the Western Heaven Realm!

“Abnormal potential and an incredible might.” This was Huang Quan’s opinion of Yue Yang.

Although Huang Quan made reservations in the battle, but when he asked his own heart, even if he fought at full power he may not be able to perform as well as Yue Yang.

To protect himself, and to gain power to level up and break through, Yue Yang fought without holding anything back.

By hook or by crook, Yue Yang eliminated the enemy.

Of course, all of his battles were done alone. He attacked in secret, not working with anyone else.

Thus, Huang Quan, Fen Tian, Yun Xing and the Black Hell King did not have the time to peek at Yue Yang's moves. Even if they did, they wouldn't be able to do anything to him.

Yue Yang possessed the skills that they would not want to provoke. More importantly, they did not know that even if they wanted to kill Yue Yang, the immortal beasts present. Qilin girl and the Phoenix sisters. They had no chance in hurting Yue Yang. As long as the Ancient Code does not kill him, Yue Yang need not be worried about people trying to murder him... the Ancient Code was different. It was too powerful. It made Yue Yang feel insecure.

Whichever the case, he decided to collect enough points.

Elder Nan Gong, the Southern Goblin King and the Emperor of the Underworld were secretly aiding him. They knew that if they wanted to get out this place, Yue Yang was their only hope.

Therefore, the three had been assisting Yue Yang with all their strength.

They did not rush to collect points, but instead, helped to restrict the enemies' movements for him. They let him kill the Ancient Slaughterers on his own and pushed him, one step at a time, to the final victory.

“Thud!” The very last Ancient Slaughterer collapsed.

“Rest five minutes.” The Southern Goblin King was so tired her fingers were trembling non stop. She felt that she had already used up most of her energy, even though she just tried to restrict the enemy’s movements. Afterall, her ability was far weaker than that of the Ancient Slaughterer. If Yue Yang was not so powerful, and if Elder Nan Gong was not protecting her all along, she may have already been killed by the Ancient Slaughterer Captains.

“Everyone gather, let me restore your health...” Elder Nan Gong summoned a rain of light, which allowed the exhausted Yue Yang to relax.

Other than the Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man who never feels tired, even Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen’s face showed a trace of weariness.

Bloody Queen Red impatiently leaned on Yue Yang’s shoulders and was fast asleep.

Xiao Wen Li and Stone Element Medusa guarded the area on high alert.

As long as the Black Hell King was still alive, they could never feel at ease.

Anyway, even if the Black Hell King died, there were also other enemies such as Huang Quan... Compared to them, Yue Yang was still slightly lacking in power. The only drive was that Yue Yang knew the secret to gaining points, and Huang Quan and the rest were still unaware.

Before obtaining the final victory and leaving the death arena, Xiao Wen Li and the others would not let their guard down.

“Something is fishy. The Black Hell King behaves too normally.” Yue Yang’s words were directed to the Emperor of the Underworld. He wanted the Emperor of the Underworld to check on the Black Hell King.

“You should rest well!” The Emperor of the Underworld knew very well, the only one, who still had the strength to move, was him. The handful of non-human Innates and human Innates were too weak. War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North were all on Black Hell King’s side. Even if the Black Hell King and Sky Emperor wore only a single trousers, they could not be trusted. The Emperor of the Underworld quickly left and went to observe the battlefield in the distance. He brought back a piece of news: “They ended the battle too but strange enough, the Black Hell King seemed to be severely injured.”

“...” Yue Yang’s heart leapt.

Impossible!

Other than being covered by Holy Equipments from head to toe, the Black Hell King also had supreme defence. His real ability had also reached Heaven Ranked Level 2. He was right behind Huang Quan in terms of skills, how could he be heavily injured?

Yue Yang was very sure, there was something going on with the

Black Hell King.

However, he was still unable to guess; what was the meaning behind Black Hell King's injury?

The Emperor of the Underworld said he was injured. He definitely would not have misjudged. The Black hell King would not fake in front of Huang Quan and his allies. If he was really heavily injured, the problem would be even more puzzling. What benefits did would the Black Hell King get if he got injured? There were no benefits at all. He would be more likely to be abandoned by Huang Quan.

However, the clever and smart Black Hell King would rather get hurt than to use his hidden powers.

What exactly was on his mind?

"We have to be careful, that guy might make a move soon." Yue Yang felt that something was off. The Black Hell King was gonna cause mischief and he could not even see through his scheme.

"This time, we should not race to attack. Let us observe first." The Southern Goblin King was also very worried. Yue Yang was already exhausted. Even if Elder Nan Gong and the Emperor of the Underworld were to fight the Black Hell King together, they would be no match for him. Moreover, the Black Hell King still had Sky Emperor, War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North to assist him.

“If that is the case, let me deal with him.” The Emperor of the Underworld did not believe that the Black Hell King still dared to hurt people on the same side as him with a strong opponent in front of him. Unless he really did not want to live anymore.

Very quickly, the war started again.

The third wave of Ancient Slaughterers arrived, a new round of battle erupted.

Participants had to continuously battle and kill all the Ancient Slaughterer in order to get only three days of rest.

Even though Huang Quan, Fen Tian and the rest were all exhausted that they were gasping for breath, they still gritted their teeth, and carried on. This was a battle that allowed only victory. No one was an exception.

“Third Young Master, I’ll give you another five minutes to rest.” Huang Quan came specially to remind Yue Yang to rest. It was because Yue Yang was the key to victory. Without him blinding all the Ancient Slaughterers, everyone’s battle time would have been lengthened by more than ten times. Furthermore, there may not even be zero deaths. Even if it was Huang Quan, without the hiding skill and [Counterfeit] Inherent Skill, he had no chance of hiding under the eyelids of the Ancient Slaughterer.

“Eh, oh no...” Just when Yue Yang wanted to reply him saying that he got it, he suddenly felt a sense of doom.

It was Huang Quan's second time coming over.

The first time, he came to express goodwill. He came over to let Yue Yang have a good rest, he even brought a 'Blood God Pellet' which was unique to the Eastern Heaven Realm.

Yue Yang did not want to carelessly eat the Blood God Pellet, but he appreciated Huang Quan's kindness.

Having the Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, Yue Yang could tell that this 'Blood God Pellet' was the highest quality of medicine. It had the ability to revive one from his death. This time Huang Quan came again. He gave Yue Yang another 'God Blood Pellet'. Huang Quan's actions were normal, but Yue Yang thought of something else and jumped up right away, "Oh no, you should not have left, go back quickly!"

Huang Quan was startled but he immediately chose to return.

Even if he might be a formidable opponent in future, Huang Quan was still willing to believe in Yue Yang's words.

Although he could not understand, Huang Quan could still tell that Yue Yang was not joking. He realised the seriousness of the situation instantly and returned in a flash.

At the center of the square.

The Black Hell King who was critically injured, charged head

first to face the enemies.

Perhaps he wanted to prove his power, or perhaps getting injured due to his carelessness infuriated him, the Black Hell King awakened his terrifying Heaven Ranked Level 2 powers. He raced to make a move before anyone else. The Dark Domain rose up. As if it was omnipresent, it covered up half of the center of the square. Fen Tian, who was from the Fire Clan, and Yun Xing, who was from the Gold Clan, all kept their distance away from the Black Hell King, just incase they get affected by this mysterious Dark Domain.

Numerous sword shaped, monster shaped and human shaped shadows emerged. They all gathered by the Black Hell King's side.

As if blinded, the ten Ancient Slaughterers were unable to detect the Black Hell King's presence in the Dark Domain.

They striked carelessly.

Everyone was baffled. Perhaps the Black Hell King wanted the Ancient Slaughterers to destroy each other in the Dark Domain? Perhaps he wanted to defeat the enemies alone just like Yue Clan's Third Young Master?

"Everyone come and attack, I can only freeze them for one minute. Hurry up!" The Black Hell King roared just like thunder.

"Alright!" Fen Tian and Yun Xing were feeling ecstatic.

What did it mean to freeze the enemies by a minute?

The enemies could not retaliate and would be beaten. Even if their defense was high, they would suffer heavy injuries... Not just Fen Tian, Yun Xing, and other Heaven Ranked Rankers. Even Innate Rankers who came to assist flocked over. Using their greatest strength, they attacked the Ancient Slaughterers who stood blankly. At this kind of timing, any kind of strength would be useful.

However, no one thought of this.

If the Black Hell King possessed such a powerful skill, Dark Domain, why didn't he use it before? Why didn't he use it after Yue Yang and Huang Quan arrived?

Yue Yang and Huang Quan were still not there yet.

All of a sudden, things changed.

The Ancient Slaughterers which stood motionless in the Dark Domain all vanished.

Within the Dark Domain, the scene fluctuated. The ten Ancient Slaughterers were not 'held fix'. They hid in the darkness, waiting for the right timing.

Fen Tian and Yun Xing and the other Heaven Ranked Rankers sensed that something was off. They could still escape from the Dark Domain. However the Innate Rankers who charged in to attack but lost their targets were exposed in front of the ten Ancient Slaughterers. What made it worse was that, when they tried to retreat, the 'allies' in the Dark Domain, the shadows, restricted their body.

Almost all of the trapped non-human Innates were instantly killed on the spot by the ten Ancient Slaughterers.

No one dared to charge into the Darkness Domain to rescue their comrades.

The Ancient Slaughterer Captain, leading nine fellow slaughterers, madly massacred all of the non-human Innates. Together, the slaughterers let out an ear-splitting, bloodthirsty snarl!

Fen Tian, Yun Xing and the rest watched helplessly, they did not know what to do. They could only watch as their allies were torn into pieces.

There were only nine non-human Innates still alive. They were all mainly healers...

A single battle, almost a complete wipeout.

What made it more terrifying was that, another more than ten

light pillars appeared on the center of the square all of a sudden. More than ten Ancient Slaughterers were added due to the deaths of participants.

“HAHAHAHAHA!” The Black Hell King laughed madly. He pointed at Yue Yang and Huang Quan who had just arrived,” Merely brats and you want to fight me? You are still young! Do you know what my inherent skill is? Did you guys really think I was afraid? I was just waiting for the right time. All of you go to hell. Not just you guys, in those days, the unmatched Prison Emperor also died under my schemes. Who do you think you guys are?”

Chapter 524 – Let's See Who Will Remain Laughing In The End!

Seeing the Black Hell King finally show his true colors, Yue Yang felt as if a rock had been lifted off his shoulders.

Even though the Black Hell King's revolt would push the battle into a difficult situation. Yue Yang felt that it was better for Black Hell King to make his move earlier. At least now he would not have to always be on the edge, trying to guard against the Black Hell King's plots.

Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing were shocked by Black Hell King's actions. Why would the Black Hell King do this? He was also a participant of the death arena, how could he benefit from this?

“Black Hell King, have you gone mad?” burning man Fen Tian was furious, he would never have thought Black Hell King would be so ruthless.

“Damn it!” three-eyed tigerman and light man also glared at Black Hell King in fury.

“Perhaps Yue Clan's Third Young Master would be clear what kind of person I, Black Hell, am..... I was born a betrayer. Not to mention, six thousand years ago, even the invincible Prison Emperor fell because of my plots. Are you all still delusioned in trying to coerce me? Stop overestimating your abilities!” Black Hell King sneered in disdain: “I have seen many young geniuses. But no matter how talented, how strong, no one can match up to

me! This is because I have a unique and unmatched Innate Skill in the entire world – [Betrayal]. The stronger you are, the worse of a death you will suffer!”

“Do not forget, you are also a participant. Once we fail, you will also be wiped out by the Ancient Code!” Weng Jin was shaking from anger.

“Is that so?” Black Hell King retorted in icy arrogance.

He pressed his hands together.

Two short dwarf servants appeared by his sides.

Once the two dwarf servants appeared, they kneeled respectfully at Black Hell King’s feet. Under everyone’s stares, the two dwarf servants pulled out daggers and cut their throats without a single second of hesitation.

They did not die immediately.

Before they died, they struggled in great pain, staring at the Black Hell King.

Without any emotion, Black Hell King raised his legs and stepped on the two loyal dwarf servants, turning their bodies into minced meat.

He stepped on them again and again.

Fresh blood splattered everyone!

“The loyalty of servants is something I, Black Hell, do not need.” When the Black Hell King finished speaking, the black light on his Holy Armor darkened by several shades. When he pressed his hands together again, a beautiful young woman holding a newborn appeared. That beautiful young mother was quivering. She begged Black Hell King with tears streaming down her face: “King, what you need is just the blood of relatives. Let I, your concubine, take the place of the young prince, I beg you!”

“The tears of a lover.....” Black Hell King reached his hand out to gently wipe away the tears of the beautiful maiden. In one swift move, he broke the neck of the beautiful maiden before raising the newborn high up in the air and throwing him on the floor. The newborn was smashed into a mess of flesh. “And the tears of my relatives, I, Black Hell, do not need any of it!”

Everyone was stunned.

Including Yue Yang, no one would have thought Black Hell King would do such things.

Was this still a person?

He was less than a beast!

Huang Quan, who had originally kept his eyes tightly shut was now staring with his eyes wide. His gold eyes were filled with astonishment!

After killing his servants, concubine and son, Black Hell King was emitting black light so concentrated it almost seemed to materialize. He looked extremely evil. A frightening energy accompanied the Dark Domain, shrouding the entire arena.

When Black Hell King raised his hand for the third time, everyone was already scared of this seriously abnormal guy. All of them could not help but move several meters back.

Weng Jin's teeth were chattering in fear.

He knew that he was not a good person, but no matter what, he could not be as heartless as the Black Hell King!

“The protection of a Guardian Beast and the alliance of a team..... These boring things, I, Black Hell, do not need any of it!” Black Hell King pulled out the Dark Sacred Sword and cut across his throat. In that instant, black blood rushed out from his neck. However, Black Hell King's life was not threatened. Instead, it was ‘Heaven Engulfing Demon Tiger’, which was healing at the east side of the crystal arena, that howled out. Its body quickly distorted and swelled.

As swift as a sudden clap of thunder, it exploded.

Boom!

A loud boom blasted the nine Innates who were healing it into minced meat before they even understood what was going on at the central plaza.

Everyone now understood why Black Hell King injured himself so seriously without a second thought.

It was to find an excuse to make the Heaven Engulfing Demon Tiger self-destruct!

More black light emitted from the Black Hell King's body, spilling around him like ink. The black light then started to form an exact replica of the Black Hell King. When the replica was fully formed, Black Hell King sprayed blood on its face, mumbling while doing so. A single strike of gold lightning shot from the extremely high dome, easily annihilating the replica into thin air.

What was freakish was that this lighting that possessed the power of the Ancient Code only wiped out the replica, leaving the Black Hell King unscathed despite how close he was.

The Black Hell King was completely unharmed.

A thought surfaced in Yue Yang's mind: Your teammate has betrayed your squad..... Among the participants of death arena, over 50 have died. An additional four Ancient Slaughterer Commander, and an Ancient Slaughterer Beast King will be added

to the arena as penalty.

Under the observation of Yue Yang's Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, he realised that Black Hell King's presence was already the same as the Ancient Slaughterers.

Maybe there was still a slight difference.

But there was no doubt, that Black Hell King was no longer on the same side as Soaring Dragon Continent. Instead, he had betrayed them to side with of the Ancient Slaughterers. He had made use of [Betrayal] Innate Skill and that strange black blood substitute. He not only escaped the punishment of the Ancient Code, but also changed sides to ally with the Ancient Slaughterers. If he got his way, he would become the final victor of this death match and would likely obtain the Divine-ranked weapon!

“Oh my god!” Southern Goblin King finally understood why the Prison Emperor died under Black Hell King's schemes, it was because this [Betrayal] Innate Skill was really too malicious.

“Huang Quan, what do we do.....” Fen Tian was extremely worried, pinning his hopes on Huang Quan to make a decision.

Another fourteen light pillars shot down from the sky.

Among them were 5 especially huge pillars, obviously they were the Ancient Slaughterer Commander and the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King.

Even now, Yue Yang still did not know how many people there were in Black Hell King's grimoire. He estimated that all of the people Black Hell King brought in his Grimoire also counted as participants. This was because the loyal servant, concubine and son, including that black blood substitute the Black Hell King had killed were all included as the participants of death arena. If there were still people in Black Hell King's grimoire, as he killed, the number of Ancient Slaughterers would continue to increase because of the death penalty. In fact, they would be even more powerful..... Ancient Slaughterers were Heaven Ranked Level 1 while the Ancient Slaughterer Captain was Heaven Ranked Level 2; if so, what were the levels of the Ancient Slaughterer Commander and the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King?

All of the Ancient Slaughterers bowed down in respect to welcome the arrival of Ancient Slaughterer Beast King .

Even the four Ancient Slaughterer Commanders also bowed down.

Among the four commanders, one had a dark green body covered with countless strange streaks, while another's skin glowed blue and had extremely long claws. As for the other two, one had blood red eyes burning with raging flames and the other had a sculpted body with clearly defined muscles.

Their ability was Heaven Ranked Level 3.

They did not pale in comparison at all to the strongest Huang

Quan.

As for the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King that was larger than the normal Ancient Slaughterers by two times and had shining gold hair and skin, his ability was a terrifying Heaven Ranked Level 5.

Even forgetting the rest, just him alone was enough to kill all of the participants in the blink of an eye.

This Ancient Slaughterer Beast King was an invincible existence, his strength was enough to make one depressed..... Once he appeared, even the calmest Huang Quan's face paled. He shouted at burning man Fen Tian and Yun Xing : "Bring the Ancient Guardian Beasts away immediately, we need to flee for now." He flashed to appear before 12-Winged Angel and brought this fifty-meter tall Ancient Guardian Beast into his grimoire to save it from the fate of being killed by Ancient Slaughterer Beast King.

Burning man Fen Tian and Yun Xing rushed to the Tiger-Lion Man and the Giant Skeleton .

But with a cold sneer, Black Hell King slashed the Dark Sacred Sword towards the burning man, stopping him in his tracks.

Yun Xing risked the allied attack of the four Ancient Slaughterers Commanders and was just in time to save the Tiger-Lion Man by putting it into his grimoire.

The Giant Skeleton was not so lucky.

Even though three-eyed tiger man and Weng Jin reacted quickly, their speed was still much behind Ancient Slaughterers Beast King. Giant Skeleton was unable to defend himself and was brought to the floor instantly by the Ancient Slaughterers Beast King. With just one heavy strike, the Giant Skeleton's body, that was supposed to be able to withstand any attack, was immediately fractured. The skeleton broke and his breastbone fell to the floor in one huge chunk. Under the Ancient Slaughterers Beast King's heavy attack, the Giant Skeleton's body was as weak as a strawman.

A biting cold shockwave immediately threw away the three-eyed tiger man and Weng Jin, who had rushed forward to help.....

“Go, everyone go to the east side of the crystal arena into my grimoire to discuss the situation.” Huang Quan turned to face the Black Hell King to let three-eyed tiger man and Weng Jin who were in danger escape. Huang Quan then remembered something and warned Yue Yang: “Third Young Master, quickly return to save people. I will go look for you later!”

“Sure!” Yue Yang rode a Fire Pheonix formed from Nirvana Flames, forcing back the Ancient Slaughterers that have begun to surround him. He pulled Southern Goblin King up and retreated quickly.

Since the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King had arrived. This battle could not be fought in the same way as before.

If Black Hell King did not create trouble, things would be easier. But the Black Hell King just had to change sides to ally with the enemy. Now, no matter what strategy they come up with, Black Hell King would be able to see through it. Before he could come up with a plan to kill Black Hell King, Yue Yang would not fight him head-on. However, Black Hell King hated Yue Yang the most. He delightedly chased after Yue Yang, waving the Heavenfall Thunder Hammer and the Dark Sacred Sword: “Third Young Master, why are you escaping like a stray dog? Didn’t you want to avenge the Prison Emperor? Here is a chance for you now!”

Yue Yang despised him. If not for the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King, would you dare chase after me?

In reality, even if Black Hell King chased him, he did not dare to get too close. He only dared to disturb him from afar with sword qi and lightning.

He was terrified of the Fire Phoenix formed from Nirvana Flames.

He had an armor so he was not afraid of Yue Yang’s attacks, but this Nirvana Flame that could cleanse the world..... was his nemesis!

“Scram, Scram you bastard!” When Yue Yang saw that the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King was still breaking Giant Skeleton’s bones while the four Ancient Slaughterers Commanders were chasing after Huang Quan, he began to relax a little. Fortunately, it turned out that these guys were a little scared of his Nirvana Flames. The Fire Phoenix formed from Nirvana Flames could also

force the Black Hell King back. Along the way, he recalled the Bloody Queen Red, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man, Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen Duo Duo and the others back into the grimoire. With Xiao Wen Li beside him, Black Hell King did not dare to face Yue Yang for now by himself. He was afraid of suffering under Xiao Wen Li's [Binding] Innate Skill and only attacked with his sword qi from afar. This sort of attack had little effect on Yue Yang.

“Let us gather the ancient warriors.....” When Elder Nan Gong saw the situation of the battle fall apart, he invited the Innate Rankers into the Grimoire and quickly gathered up the ancient warriors with the Emperor of the Underworld.

“Damn it!” Sky Emperor originally wanted to rely on the Black Hell King, but he was afraid of getting killed by the Ancient Code since Black Hell King was no longer on the same side as them.

After exchanging glances with War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North, they escaped back into their respective grimoires pitifully.

Seeing the dozen female ancient guards still healing the huge loli, Yue Yang quickly invited them back into his grimoire too. Xiao Wen Li was also recalling the Stone Element Medusa and the other girls to avoid a head-on confrontation with Black Hell King.

Without their control, the sea of cold water that was like a vast ocean in the crystal passage immediately fell apart.

The water flowed in all directions.

Different from Yue Yang's situation with Black Hell King, Huang Quan and Fen Tian's side had turned into a bloody slaughterhouse.

Let alone the companions beneath Heaven Rank, even those ancient guards had been killed by the tens of Ancient Slaughterers. Only a few were saved by Huang Quan.

Central plaza.

The Ancient Slaughterer Beast King was still torturing the Giant Skeleton to death.

It tore the Giant Skeleton's bones and raised its long backbone, smashing it on the ground. It then ripped away its legs and arms, before throwing the hardest part of Giant Skeleton's body, its skull on the floor..... the Giant Skeleton's eyes quickly dimmed. Death was imminent.

The four Ancient Slaughterers Commanders brought with it a dozens of henchmen to chase after Huang Quan and Fen Tian.

There were also a few Ancient Slaughterers Captains who have started to help the Black Hell King, who was being pushed around by the Fire Pheonix formed from Nirvana Flames.

But, their plan was simple unachievable.

Even without Yue Yang's control, the Fire Phoenix had a conscience to automatically chase enemies away..... After all, the Fire Phoenix was a gift from the Phoenix Sisters to Yue Yang for his protection. Even though it was not alive, it still had their will. Because there were many enemies, Yue Yang was only using the Fire Phoenix to chase the enemies away from the crystal passage, preventing them from chasing after him. Only until he forcefully brought the huge loli into his grimoire was he able to heave a sigh of relief. He had no time at all to meet up with Elder Nan Gong and the Emperor of the Underworld. Yue Yang immediately rode Fire Phoenix and rushed towards the central plaza.

Elder Nan Gong and Emperor of the Underworld immediately returned to their own grimoires, retreating for now.

The Ancient Slaughterer Beast King was furious at Yue Yang's arrival.

It roared at Yue Yang, trying to deter this tiny human boy away with his deafening howl!

“Roar you sister, what are you roaring for. If you can, come and play with fire!” Under the converging attack from Black Hell King and Ancient Slaughterer Beast King, Yue Yang forcefully landed. He also snatched the Giant Skeleton Skull that had been smashed and stored it in his storage ring, before calmly flying away. This move made Ancient Slaughterer Beast King almost implode with anger. It began to blow flames from its mouth. However, this was completely ineffective towards Yue Yang who was riding the Fire Phoenix. The speed was much too different!

“Third Young Master, you will not be smug for long.....” Seeing Yue Yang’s actions, Black Hell King was grinding his teeth in hate. Yet he still could not do anything about this lad.

However, the Black Hell King was still extremely confident.

No matter how cocky he was, Yue Yang did not have [Betrayal] Innate Skill. Before the time limit of the death arena was up, it was impossible for him to defeat the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King and the four Commanders. As for Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing? The six Ancient Slaughterers captains and 54 Ancient Slaughterers would be able to turn them into minced meat! What set the Black Hell King at ease was that with every three days that pass, there would be three Ancient Slaughterers leaders and twenty seven Ancient Slaughterers joining in. They would only get stronger and stronger. With that, the possibility of success for Yue Yang and Huang Quan would become smaller and smaller.

No matter how much of a genius they were, they can only die in despair!

Black Hell King smiled very sinisterly.

He smiled, extremely pleased with himself.

Yue Yang was very unhappy. He pointed his middle finger at Black Hell King: “Do not fool yourself, the only one laughing at the end is the victor. Let’s see who will remain laughing in the end!”

Chapter 525 – Sky Law, The Power Of Judgement!

Just when Yue Yang was preparing to return to the Grimoire World, a mysterious message appeared again. ‘Addition of new team members...’

Yue Yang was shocked. What was happening?

A golden pillar shot down from the center of the crystal plaza. As if realizing something, Black Hell King raised his Dark Sacred Sword and Heavenfall Thunder Hammer. With an earth-shattering force, he charged towards the slender figure that appeared from the light pillar. Of course, Yue Yang wouldn’t let Black Hell King succeed as he rode on the Fire Phoenix at a breakneck speed and overtook Black Hell King’s sword qi before embracing the slender figure directly, bringing her out from the attacked zone.

“It’s you? Sky Law, what are you here for? It’s dangerous here!” Yue Yang knew who it was when he hugged the figure. He was both happy and apprehensive.

He was happy as he did not have to continue his solo fight now that Sky Law was here.

But he was worried as the situation was getting bleak now, and they might not be able to turn the tables even with her around.

But no matter what, it was a good thing for the Phoenix Fairy

Beauty to come.

Her arrival meant that Zhi Zun would come too. If Night Empress and Zhi Zun also came here, with the joint force of the three powerful women, forget about Black Hell King, they could even get rid of the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King.

The only problem was that Xue Wuxia and Princess Qian Qian might come as well. And if they were to run out of points... Yue Yang shuddered. He wanted to send message to Hai Yingwu via the Three Colors Map, but it a day had not passed yet, so he could only wait anxiously. Upon seeing that there weren't any further light pillar appearing, Yue Yang was at ease as he knew that only Phoenix Fairy Beauty came.

"I heard that you were kidnapped by the Black Hell King, so I had rushed over, I don't want to become a widow." Phoenix Fairy Beauty said with a smile, as she hugged Yue Yang and kissed him on the cheeks with her soft lips to indicate that she missed him. She then looked around curiously. "Where is this?"

"Death arena!" Yue Yang did not have time to be intimate with her as he quickly controlled his Fire Phoenix to fly higher.

"Sounds scary..." Phoenix Fairy Beauty looked indifferent.

"Do you see those giant monsters? I'll have to kill at least fifteen of those by myself in order not to run out of points. If not, I'll be killed by the Ancient Code." Yue Yang tried to keep his explanations simple. It was only then did the Phoenix Fairy Beauty

realized the presence of the Ancient Slaughterers. She shouted in shock. “They are all Elder Innate Level 1? No, they don’t seem to have any intelligence, so they aren’t Holy Beasts. This is so weird, why did these monsters come from?”

“They were released from the Heaven Realm. They call it Heaven Ranked Level 1. These monsters are super powerful, but they aren’t smart, and do not personify, so they aren’t Holy Beasts and can’t even fly. But due to their thick skin, it makes killing them difficult.” Yue Yang was secretly relieved that the Ancient Slaughterers couldn’t fly, if not the chances of him winning would be even slimmer.

What puzzled Yue Yang the most was that these Ancient Slaughterers couldn’t actually fly.

For human beings, a Level 6 [Elder] could already do short distance flight.

For those who were lesser Innates, they could do it easily and for longer distance.

Innate Rankers who were above Innate Level 3 could fly in the air as if they were breathing. Their flying skills could even be used during combats.

Innate Rankers above Innate Level 8 could fly in the air for a long time or suspend and rest in the air. They were even more adapted to the sky than the birds. They could live in the sky without touching the ground and do anything they wish without any

restraints. So, the Ancient Slaughterer's situation puzzled Yue Yang. They were Heaven Ranked creatures yet they couldn't fly...

But fortunately, the situation was like this. If not Huang Quan, Fen Tian, Yun Xing and Weng Jin would have had an extremely hard time.

Upon seeing the captain of the Ancient Slaughterers, Phoenix Fairy Beauty frowned her brows. "There's even a Level 2 Heaven Ranked monster leader?"

"Girl, it is considered to be weak already. It is merely a captain, there are still four Heaven Ranked Level 3 Commanders and a Heaven Ranked Level 5 Beast King ahead of us." Yue Yang rode his Fire Phoenix and flew to the highest point. He decided to stop messing with Black Hell King and returned back to the Grimoire World to discuss this issue with Sky Law.

"This has become a little tricky." Phoenix Fairy Beauty's expression became heavy when she heard it. Fighting against creatures of Heaven Ranked Level 5 was beyond her limits.

"So, it's Sky Law..." Black Hell King recognized the Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

He did not look good too.

If she were to be the Phoenix Fairy Beauty of the past, Black Hell King wouldn't have bothered.

Sky Law was only an Level 9 Innate in the past, even if she was at the peak of Innate Level 9, he would have gotten rid of her easily. But now, Sky Law's power exceeded Black Hell King's prediction. Although she had hidden more than half of her power, the powerful might she emitted when she tried to hold back her anger could be felt by Black Hell King who was also a Heaven Ranked Ranker.

That's right, she was also a Heaven Ranked Ranker.

Although she was slightly weaker than the Black Hell King, he couldn't afford to be complacent.

Compared to Sky Law, Black Hell King was more willing to fight against Weng Jin and the three-eyed tiger man who were also Heaven Ranked Rankers. Black Hell King didn't want to become enemies with Sky Law.

Although Black Hell King hadn't fought against Sky Execution, Sky Wrath and Sky Law yet, he was wary of the existence of the Demonic Palace, he suspected that they obtained certain ancient books or treasures from the God's Ruins. If not, Sky Execution wouldn't be so powerful.

According to credible sources, Sky Execution had looked down on the Sky Emperor in a conflict during a treasure hunt and knocked back the haughty Sky Emperor within one move. Sky Execution was hiding his power and identity so he did not strike a second time, but if he did, Sky Emperor would have faced an embarrassing

defeat. After getting to know this information, Black Hell King suspected that Sky Execution had surpassed the three emperors and was closely behind the Dragon Emperor and human Zhi Zun. He could even be Heaven Ranked now.

This was especially so after seeing Sky Law who was ranked just below Sky Execution. It was only then did Black Hell King realize that he had underestimated the Demonic Palace.

Luckily Sky Execution and Zhi Zun weren't here, if not the situation would have been entirely different.

“What's the matter with this guy?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty was surprised when she realized that the Black Hell King was on the Ancient Slaughterers' side.

“[Betrayal] Inherent Skill.” With Yue Yang's words, Phoenix Fairy Beauty immediately understood.

“It won't do with just the [Betrayal] Inherent Skill, you also need the [Resurrection] Inherent Skill!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty smiled as she gave off a murderous vibe. She believed that her power, together with Yue Yang's, would allow them to kill the Black Hell King under a constricted environment like this.

“Let's return to the Grimoire World!” Yue Yang didn't think that the Black Hell King was a believer of [Chun Ge](#) Cult, that he would immediately resurrect on the bloodied ground after dying. However, killing him would be no easy feat with his cunning nature and his teammates being made up of more than ten Ancient

Slaughterers. It would be hard to get rid of him without a good plan. Yue Yang's words were also a form of inquiry, so the Phoenix Fairy Beauty would definitely hint to him if there was anyone else coming. If it was only her, then she should agree to his suggestion.

“Wait, there are still a few more coming, they are arriving soon, let's play around with this traitor first.” A tinge of smile appeared on Phoenix Fairy Beauty's enchanting face.

“Hmph!”

A chill rose inside the Black Hell King.

He would never allow them to gang up on him, be it Zhi Zun, Night empress or Sky Execution. He wasn't one who could be trifled with.

With just two Heaven Ranked Rankers working together to attack him coupled with Yue Yang's deadly World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame, he would already be in extreme danger. Hearing that there were still people on the way, he dashed back to the crowd of Ancient Slaughterers. He didn't care about pride. All he wanted was the final victory and the Divine Equipment as a reward!

Phoenix Fairy Beauty raised both of her hands and gathered a giant thunder ball.

She didn't compress the thunder ball like what other Heaven

Ranked Rankers would, nor did she hurl it to her opponent.

She used a very special tactic where she forcibly tore open the thunder ball such that it could be released to the sky and form flashes of lightning....

“Eh?” Black Hell King’s pupil constricted several times when he saw it.

The lightning from the torn thunder ball did not disappear. Instead, under the willpower of the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, it became a ‘lightning storm’ that had the power of judgement. It expanded by tens, hundreds of times forming a lightning tornado that engulfed the entire crystal plaza. Tens of thousands of lightnings were twisted to form spirals under the control of the Phoenix Fairy Beauty. They entwined to form a giant lightning tornado.

Forget about the lighting tornado, even the flashes of lightning that weren’t part of it were capable of killing Innate Rankers under Innate Level 9.

Black Hell King felt that this lightning that carried the power of judgement was the same as the Nirvana Flame and World Exterminating Wheel. They were all his nemesis!

If he was struck, the consequence would be dire!

Run!

Black Hell King did not even pause to think or stop for a moment.

He teleported away instantly, away from the protection circle of the Ancient Slaughterers.

At the same time, the blood-thirsty and warlike Ancient Slaughterers ran off one after the other. They also didn't dare to take on Phoenix Fairy Beauty's, Sky Law, directly.

But it was all too late.

If they had run off when the Phoenix Fairy Beauty was gathering the thunder ball, they might have been able to escape the attack.

But now, under the control of Phoenix Fairy Beauty's thoughts, no Ancient Slaughterer could escape the judgement power of Sky Law! Different from Yue Yang's Card of Fate, Sky Law's Judgement Power did not take the form of a man. It was in the form of thunder and lightning. It could be said that it was a spirit hurricane released by Phoenix Fairy Beauty. It carried the power of the Cards of Fate but was released in the form of lightning.

The booming thunder and lightning attack began...

The duration between the first strike of lightning and the final judgement was five minutes.

All the Ancient Slaughterers laid on the ground as charred bodies. None of them managed to avoid the attack.

However, they were still Heaven Ranked Level 1 creatures with buff bodies after all, so their extremely strong vitality allowed them to survive the judgement of Sky Law.

There were only two heavily injured Ancient Slaughterers lying on the ground, on the brink of death as they could no longer get up... One strike from the Phoenix Fairy Beauty managed to get rid of more than ten Ancient Slaughterers. Not only the Black Hell King almost received a heart attack from this result, even Yue Yang was tongue tied.

Yue Yang could confirm that the Phoenix Fairy Beauty had improved again. And it was a tremendous one that exceeded Yue Yang's expectations.

The power of the previous Sky Law was definitely not this strong!

Could it be that the Night Empress or Zhi Zun had given her certain advice to make her fully comprehend the power of Sky Law?

Just when Yue Yang was puzzled, a big question came up at the same time. If it was Zhi Zun who guided the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, then what was Zhi Zun's realm at now? If it was just a casual guidance that made her little sister make such a huge improvement, then the improvement her little sister would make

if Zhi Zun were to go all out in grooming her would be unimaginable.

Sky Law made such tremendous improvements after a little guidance, what about Xue Wuxia then?

Yue Yang suddenly started to anticipate for the arrival of Zhi Zun. This girl was just too mysterious!

“You are strong!” Yue Yang stuck up his thumb to Phoenix Fairy Beauty generously. Even the strongest Huang Quan would blush in shame if he were to see that the Phoenix Fairy Beauty managed to defeat the Ancient Slaughterers within one move and even killing two instantly!

“No big deal...” Phoenix Fairy Beauty smiled at Yue Yang sweetly.

She went into Yue Yang’s arms willingly as she kissed Yue Yang with her tender lips, completely ignoring the presence of the Black Hell King. When the Charm Demon Queen appeared, all the Ancient Slaughterers that just got up started to kill each other crazily under her power. If not for the thundering shout of the Black Hell King that woke them up, they would have all died under the Charm Demon Queen’s Mesmerizing.

More than ten Ancient Slaughterers roared furiously at Charm Demon Queen.

They left unwillingly under the lead of their captain.

The smart Charm Demon Queen did not follow after them as she stared at the two Ancient Slaughterers on the verge of death... Within one minute, the more heavily injured one on the left died from its brains exploding as its giant eyes and brain fluid burst under the mental power of the Charm Demon Queen.

Black Hell King watched as his hands shivered slightly. It was only until then did he realize the kind of opponent he was going up against.

But he still remained arrogant and not discouraged by it.

Because he was the Black Hell King!

The man who successfully killed the mighty Prison Emperor 6000 years ago!

He turned around and left. It seemed that he had a new scheme to retaliate against the joint forces of Yue Yang and the Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

Chapter 526 – Beauties Are Like A Tigers, Two Tigers Can't Stay In The Same Mountain

Seeing that the Charm Demon Queen killing the two Ancient Slaughterers that were on the brink of death, the points for the solo killing these two Ancient Slaughterers went to Phoenix Fairy Beauty. Yue Yang then used his God Killing Dagger to dig out the black crystals in their skulls before using Nirvana Flames to refine them into fist sized dark gold crystals.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty slightly knit her eyebrows: “These monsters indeed have thick skins, I thought I could kill five or six of them, turns out that I can only get rid of two of them, and they weren't even dead.” When she used her will to control her Sky Law energy to perform a large scale attack, she realised that it wasn't powerful enough to kill all the Ancient Slaughterers so she switched to targeted attack and focussed on two of the most heavily injured ones.

In the end, she still needed the Charm Demon Queen to make the final blow.

This made Phoenix Fairy Beauty secretly worried.

But Yue Yang felt that this was impressive enough.

Yue Yang had deeply understood the level of difficulty in killing the Ancient Slaughterers. Even Huang Quan, Fen Tian and six

other Heaven Ranked Rankers had to work together for a good ten minutes before they could win against a single one. It wasn't hard to imagine how buff the Ancient Slaughterers were.

The Phoenix Fairy Beauty, solely relying on her Sky Law energy, could only barely kill two of the Ancient Slaughterers.

Yue Yang was overjoyed for the Sky Law energy to reach such a high realm. Moreover, Phoenix Fairy Beauty also made tremendous improvement that she could now use her spirit manipulation freely without restrictions, greatly improved compared to before. If not for Sky Law's dominant appearance, how would the Black Hell King be scared away so easily? Yue Yang kept the dark gold crystals and glanced around the crystal plaza. "Girl, there's no one else coming right?"

"Hehe, if I can't fool a naughty boy like you, how would I be able to fool Black Hell King that cunning dog!" Phoenix Fairy Beauty shot Yue Yang a beautiful smile.

"Phew, thank God!" What Yue Yang was really happy about was not for the fact that Black Hell King ran off, but because there lesser the people, who enter the death arena, the better.

"Sky Law had already advanced into Elder Innate Realm?"

Light flashed as Emperor of the Underworld and Elder Nan Gong came out from the Grimoire World.

They were shocked when they saw Phoenix Fairy Beauty's level. Previously, she was still weaker than them, but now, she was far ahead than both of them. They could not believe their eyes.

Among the duo, Elder Nan Gong realized that there was something intimate going on between Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty, as they acted like couples. He immediately guessed that it was Yue Yang who helped Phoenix Fairy Beauty to advance into Elder Innate Realm and became even more shocked. The Emperor of the Underworld wasn't slow to respond too as he greeted Phoenix Fairy Beauty and deeply sighed: "Congratulations to Sky Law who finally reached Elder Innate Realm. Your long time wish had finally been granted! In retrospect, I feel ashamed for being in the same place for a hundred years..."

Sky Law greeted him back and smiled. "Emperor of the Underworld, there is only a fine line left before you advance to the Innate Elder Realm. You will surely level up after this battle, why bother being envious of me!"

Emperor of the Underworld looked at Yue Yang, as if desiring his affirmation.

Yue Yang was overjoyed.

It looked like reaching Elder Innate Realm was indeed the dream of all warriors. Even the powerful Emperor of the Underworld wasn't an exception.

Yue Yang nodded his head and affirmed the Emperor of the

Underworld. “Emperor of the Underworld, if there is a good opportunity, you should try killing an Ancient Slaughterers on your own, I believe you will reach Elder Innate Realm soon after.” Yue Yang tossed a piece of refined dark gold crystal to the Emperor of the Underworld: “Forget about everything else, we will definitely win this fight. I will use this as an early gift to congratulate you on reaching Elder Innate Realm!”

“For real? Thank you Third Young Master!” Of course the Emperor of the Underworld knew that Yue Yang was trying to pull him on his sides with this. But this made Emperor of the Underworld even more assured.

With the betrayal of Black Hell King, they were facing numerous strong opponents. They were now in a life threatening situation.

Forget about Yue Yang fighting all by himself, he showed his sincerity by assuring everyone and even gifted him such a priceless dark gold crystal to help him reach Elder Innate Realm. Emperor of the Underworld would be a fool if he still didn’t understand what Yue Yang meant!

The Third Young Master’s future was limitless.

He would definitely be the New Prison Emperor of the Tong Tian Tower.

Emperor of the Underworld looked at his Inherent Skill, potential, character and other factors, he figured that he was lacking a lot if he wanted to dominate the Tong Tian Tower. He

was no genius so he would skip the part of being a useless competitor and would rather focus on becoming allies instead. Now that Yue Yang showed his sincerity in forming an alliance and gifted him the energy crystal of the Ancient Slaughterers, the Emperor of the Underworld was definitely overjoyed as he decided to support Yue Yang fully. Of course, Emperor of the Underworld also felt that he was lucky. If he was not in a feud with Ba Yi, the Sky Emperor, and allowed the Sky Emperor and the Black Hell King to gang up against Yue Yang previously, Yue Yang wouldn't have treated him as an ally nor would he have given him the precious energy crystal of the Ancient Slaughterers.

Emperor of the Underworld couldn't predict what would happen next, but he was willing to follow Yue Yang.

Miracles. How many miracles had the Yue Clan's Third Young Master created already?

Now that Sky Law was here to help, coupled with the possibility of Night Empress and Zhi Zun coming, they might be able to turn the tables in the fight against Black Hell King and the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King!

"Congratulations Emperor of the Underworld. This object is of no use to me, please leave it for yourself Third Young Master!" Elder Nan Gong had a different response as he didn't accept Yue Yang's gift like the Emperor of the Underworld did but he handed it back to Yue Yang. Elder Nan Gong wasn't stubborn on attaining Elder Inante Realm and preferred to let nature take its course so he felt that rather than wasting the dark gold crystals on him, he'd rather Yue Yang use it to level himself up. It would be the best way

to utilize them.

“You don’t have to worry about the ancient soldiers. We should meet everyday...” Emperor of the Underworld summoned an invisible spirit and let it float high in the air, keeping surveillance everything outside.

Elder Nan gong also summoned a firefly.

They all have ways of knowing what was happening outside even if they returned back to the Grimoire World.

After agreeing to meet up daily for further discussions, Yue Yang went back to the Grimoire World with Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

Although the Phoenix Fairy Beauty looked as if she won effortlessly, she actually exhausted a large amount of energy.

If not for her Charm Demon Queen, who used mesmerization to make the Ancient Slaughterers lose their mind and attack each other, causing them to run off and leave behind their two dying teammates in a haste, they wouldn’t have been able to kill the two Ancient Slaughterers. Considering their strong recovery ability, if they weren’t killed on the spot, they would revert back to normal after two resting days. Luckily the Phoenix Fairy Beauty managed to scare away the Black Hell King when she appeared, if not he would have caused disturbances in their fight and they wouldn’t have won so easily.

The Black Hell King was no fool. If he had regained composure and came back to fight, it wouldn't have been easy for them to win.

The power of Sky Law was energy draining.

The Phoenix Fairy Beauty couldn't use the Sky Law energy for the rest of the day, she had to recuperate... Yue Yang also felt that he had to take this chance to think of a good way to successfully kill all the Ancient Slaughterers.

With regards to monsters like the Ancient Slaughterers, killing one of them was better than injuring ten.

Inside the Grimoire world.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty and Southern Goblin King looked at each other as sparks flew everywhere.

It was unavoidable. Beauties would always be rivals of each other!

As the saying goes, beauties are like tigers, two tigers can't stay in the same mountain.

These two women had known each other since a long time ago.

They had competed with each other on numerous occasions. Although they weren't considered to be mortal enemies, they

didn't have good feelings towards each other.

“Oh yeah, why are you here by yourself?” Yue Yang quickly changed the topic. Phoenix Fairy Beauty glanced at the Southern Goblin King as she hugged Yue Yang as if no one else was there and replied intimately: “I heard that the Black Hell King had captured, so I quickly came over. I met with three men from the Eastern Goblin Tribe on the way and got to know that you were hunting for treasures here, that's why I came...”

“Was it Mountain Shaking Bear who told you the way? They are my men!” Southern Goblin King emphasized to Yue Yang that it was her men who led the way, so she made the first contribution in the fight.

“I would have found the way without the three idiots too, they confused me even more and almost made me take the long way.” Phoenix Fairy Beauty indicated that she was born smart and it was a piece of cake for her to find her lover Yue Yang. She didn't need anyone to guide her.

“Hmph!” Southern Goblin King hated Phoenix Fairy Beauty so much that she gritted her teeth.

She liked Yue Yang a little, but she doesn't love him.

She only felt that he was one of a kind and wanted to know more about this young human male.

After entering the Grimoire World, the Southern Goblin King thought that she would be able to be alone with Yue Yang and have a good conversation. She could never have imagined that Sky Law would come. The thing that the Southern Goblin King couldn't endure was that Sky Law had suddenly stepped on the Elder Innate Realm. In the past their strength were about the same, now the distance had actually widened. This was not the biggest blow, what made the Southern Goblin King truly jealous was Sky Law's relationship with Yue Yang and guessed that they must already be lovers.

The Southern Goblin King felt that the treasure that she had targeted was stolen by someone else. She felt extremely sour inside.

Moreover, she was completely unable to denounce them.

This was because Yue Yang was not her lover and they were only friends. She was barely qualified as Yue Yang's combat teammate.....

"How did you enter?" Yue Yang was a bit curious. Was it possible to casually enter the death arena?

"There is a huge teleportation gate outside. At the start, I could not enter at all, but in the end, it somehow changed and I was able to smoothly enter." When Phoenix Fairy Beauty said this, Yue Yang immediately guessed that the death arena had a limit on the number of people inside. If the Black Hell King did not craftily kill that many people, Sky Law wouldn't have been able to enter the death arena.

The Black Hell King made use of the Ancient Slaughturers to kill more than 10 foreign Innates.

With the death penalty adding more Ancient Slaughterers and even Ancient Slaughterer Commanders and Beast King, the death arena wouldn't simply all the participants die in despair. It probably opened up its doors to let more people enter and assist.

The problem was that with more people entering, the casualty rate would rise and the situation would become more chaotic.

Yue Yang couldn't say for sure what would be the final outcome.

He could only wait for Night Empress and Zhi Zun to arrive and see how strong they were... If they were powerful enough, then it would be to his benefit, if not, he would have to think of another way.

Yue Yang suddenly yearned to see the Sword Spirit Goddess. She should have ways to deal with the current situation!

If Yue Yang was able to deal with the situation, then he hoped that Night Empress and Zhi Zun would not come.

"Naughty boy, I'm dead beat, let's go back and rest!" Phoenix Fairy Beauty hugged and kissed Yue Yang in front of Southern Goblin King, then she pulled his hand and placed it onto her big boobs. Although they weren't husband and wife officially, they

had done everything a married couple would have done so she wouldn't be bothered by his touchy hands. Especially in front of the other beauties, it was a silent declaration telling them that this man was hers.

“...” Southern Goblin King felt as if she had gulped down three big bowls of vinegar.

Yue Yang pretended not to see it.

He didn't have time to tease the Southern Goblin King as his current main goal currently was to take down the girl Sky Law. They hadn't seen each other for a long time after all, and he missed her dearly too.

He carried Phoenix Fairy Beauty and walked back to his room. Southern Goblin King stomped her foot furiously as she cursed him 'pervert' in a low voice. Incensed, she was planning to return to her own Grimoire World, but on second thought, she turned her beautiful eyes and stayed behind, looking as though she wasn't willing to concede defeat just like this.

The giant loli was still asleep and was snoring adorably.

More than ten female ancient soldiers leaned on her wearily. Occasionally, they would take turns to heal the giant loli...

Chapter 527 – The Black Gui Cang And The White Shuang Hua

Without knowing whether it was because the Southern Goblin King was here or because it had been a long time since they had met, the Phoenix Fairy Beauty begun to take the initiative.

She serviced her lover with all of her effort. All kinds of difficult movements, all kinds of arousing position, she tried all of them with him, making love to their heart's content. After she became exhausted, she returned the dominant position to Yue Yang and comfortably enjoyed her naughty lover's embrace, bringing her extreme happiness and pleasure.....

They made love for a long time.

These heart-racing, ear-reddening sounds, from the very start, continuously came out from Phoenix Fairy Beauty's mouth, making the eavesdropping Southern Goblin King extremely mad. She was suspecting that Sky Law was intentionally increasing her voice to provoke her. She wanted to run over there, kick the door open and roar at her: 'Enough, don't be too excessive!'

Naturally, this was only her imagination.

It was impossible for the Southern Goblin King to run over, kick the door and tell Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty to stop their lust filled war.

Whatever she says would only be a front. Towards those kinds of battles, other than longing for it and being shy about it, she was also slightly afraid, so much that she was worried that Yue Yang would be provoked if she kicked opened the door and disturb them. Then, if he was in a bad mood, he would catch her and make her helpless. In the past, if Yue Yang dared to push her down, it wouldn't be weird for her to use her Jade Pipa and send him flying. However, after listening to Phoenix Fairy Beauty's extremely joyous moans, her entire body weakened. She did not dare say that she could defend against Yue Yang if he pushed her down right now.....

“Aren't you people done yet? Aren't you people tired from doing it this long? Isn't this kid's stamina too high! Are doing those kinds of things that pleasurable?” She thought.

Southern Goblin King tossed and turned.

She could not sleep at all.

No matter how she shut off her senses or recite her pipa's score 'Silent and Serene Heart', she still couldn't help but feel something disturbing her mind.

She could have returned to her Grimoire World to sleep but doing this was equivalent to losing against Sky Law.

With Southern Goblin King's pride, she would absolutely not allow herself to be outdone by her opponent.

However, if this continues on, she doubted whether she could endure under Sky Law's intensely alluring moans and gasp for breath or not. Naturally she knew of Sky Law's [Charm] Inherent Skill, but she would not yield to her opponent. This was because they both use mental type attacks, but she never imagined that Sky Law's [Charm] Inherent Skill would create these kinds of results as she moaned and gasped for breath. If her mental defense was not this strong, she would have been like other women and joined in the battle.

"I will absolutely not lose....." Southern Goblin King clenched her teeth and bitterly endured the hurried beating of her heart.

She could not endure anymore and extended her small hands downwards.

She shut her lips tight.

She held back her voice and stealthily moved, not letting a single sound come out.

When Phoenix Fairy Beauty let out a loud scream during her orgasm, the Southern Goblin King would use this moment to hurriedly gasp for breath. His image flashed in her mind, remembering his heroic look when he had killed the Ancient Slaughterer before, remembering his confident look as he rode on the Fire Phoenix, remembering how he protected her when the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King appeared.

The feeling of his hand pulling her small hand was still there.

Very quickly, a tide begun to rise from inside, quickly accumulating more and more, waiting to erupt like a volcano.

The Southern Goblin King seemed as if she could not endure it anymore, but she still held it back. Although Sky Law and Yue Yang were in a fierce battle, their hearing ability could definitely still hear the sounds from next door. That loathsome Sky Law could even be eavesdropping to her movements. The Southern Goblin King absolutely cannot let her discover what she was doing.

After a long while, the Phoenix Fairy Beauty once again screamed with pleasure.

Taking this opportunity, the Southern Goblin King released a bit of repressed feelings.

She groaned with an extremely extremely low voice.

Although this was not enough to satisfy her, she was still able to successfully let it out. This made the Southern Goblin King felt upset yet comfortable. Her rigid body also trembled in waves and gradually relaxed.....

Using this method, the Southern Goblin King repeatedly released the pressure on her.

In the end, she had truly successfully defended against Phoenix Fairy Beauty's [Charm] Inherent Skill included in her extremely

alluring moans. She tiredly fell into a deep sleep.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty was also exhausted.

However, she still did her best to fulfill the mission of a young wife and serve her lover, so much that when her body could not endure anymore, she let the Charm Demon Queen substitute her in battle, until her lover comfortably released all of his feelings. After the heated passion cooled down, Yue Yang carried the Phoenix Fairy Beauty to wash her sweat and let her body carefreely and comfortably sleep. At the same time, he also fell asleep in the midst of the Charm Demon Queen's massage.

In his Dream Realm, the big loli was waiting for him.

She seemed to be attempting a new sword skill.

When Yue Yang saw this sword skill, he felt a sense of familiarity and a sense of strangeness. This was clearly the Innate Invisible Sword Qi yet why was it so different?

Could it be the Innate Invisible Sword Qi that he had learned was fake? Impossible, the Sword Spirit Goddess would never have taught him a fake sword art. Moreover, a fake sword art would not possess that kind of might.

There was another possibility, the Innate Invisible Sword Qi that he had learned before was only the foundation.

The real Innate Invisible Sword Qi was much deeper and much more profound.

His distance towards the deepest comprehension was probably quite far.

Yue Yang decided to learn this new sword skill with the big loli. However, the big loli unexpectedly stopped, indicating that Yue Yang could not learn by following her.

“What’s wrong?” Yue Yang was a bit curious. Why didn’t she let him learn it?

“.....” The big loli did not speak and only shook her head.

Perhaps due to looking at Yue Yang’s puzzled appearance, she gestured seeming to say that what she learned was wrong and telling Yue Yang not to copy from her. If Yue Yang did not learn with the little girl, could it be that the Sword Spirit Goddess would personally come out to teach him?

Yue Yang thought that this was impossible.

Unexpectedly, a miracle really appeared.

The Sword Spirit Goddess, who was usually hidden, floated down in front of Yue Yang with shining colorful lights as if a fairy descending into the human world.

She also did not say anything and only gestured, indicating that Yue Yang and the big loli should look.

Because she was personally going to teach them, Yue Yang's heart beat quickened and became excited..... He was unable to take his eyes off and stared at her flawless snow white hands.

He could only see that sword qi was being collected in her palms and then ever so slowly change. With an incredibly profound method that was hard to explain, the sword qi gradually and gradually condensed, combined and arranged itself, forming a two meter wide, ten meter long black greatsword. On it, bright lights sparkled as countless runes, that Yue yang could not recognize, were inscribed on it to form a wonderful rune circle.

The only things that Yue Yang recognized were two ancient chinese characters: [Gui Cang](#).

This Gui Cang must be the sword's name.

The black greatsword name Gui Cang!

Yue Yang's eyes widened, could this be condensing qi and turning it into a sword?

He wondered what kind of realm must he reach to actually be able to do this.

Under the silent permission of the Sword Spirit Goddess, Yue Yang and the big loli placed their hands on the sword, sensing its existence.

When Yue Yang's hand touched the black sword Gui Cang, he immediately shuddered. The sword's supreme power made him feel incredibly small. Moreover, it had completely materialized and was even harder than metals by 10000 times. When Yue Yang had used his finger to touch it, it actually used a supreme will to closely examine him, appearing to have judge that he still did not have enough power to wield itself..... a greatsword with its own will, additionally it was created by condensing pure energy. Even in his dreams, Yue Yang never imagined that if the Innate Invisible Sword Qi was trained to its apex, it would actually reach this kind of supreme realm.

With this sword, Gui Cang, Yue Yang felt that he didn't even need to fear the Black Hell King nor would he need to fear the Ancient Slaughterers.

Additionally, he would be able to cleanly kill them just like cutting vegetables!

Right now, the only question was if he could wield Gui Cang. The sword had its own will and was extremely similar to Divine Equipments, would it recognize him as its owner?

The Sword Spirit Goddess's white hands slightly moved and Gui Cang immediately disappeared.

In a flash, she once again condensed sword qi and did it repeatedly.

“Wait a minute, I was not able to see it clearly!” Yue Yang hurriedly shouted.

As if wanting to let Yue Yang see clearly, the Sword Spirit Goddess was extremely patient and did it three times, condensing Gui Cang with an extremely slow speed.

Before Yue Yang was able to finish digesting this magnificent enlightenment, the Sword Spirit Goddess used her other hand to condense a long white sword. The sword was long and slender yet flexible as a rainbow. The sword blade was crystal clear, with a wave, myriads of brilliance shone dazzlingly. This white longsword was even thinner and longer than the black greatsword. Two beautiful characters were inscribed on the blade: [Shuang Hua](#).

Black Gui Cang and White Shuang Hua.

One black and one white sword, both were not Divine Equipment but superior to Divine Equipments.

If the Sword Spirit Goddess did not condense these swords, Yue Yang would not dare believe that there was such a mystical sword qi in the world.....

After teaching about Gui Cang and Shuang Hua to Yue Yang, the Sword Spirit Goddess suddenly floated up, fluttering into the void.

Countless beautiful divine swords condensed and rotated on her hands, the sight was indescribably wonderful. Other than the black Gui Cang and the White Shuang Hua, there were also red, orange, yellow, green, cyan, blue and purple divine swords that were much more powerful. They slowly rotated around the Sword Spirit Goddess and as every single blade rotated, their power was even able to cut the void and annihilate the world. In front of these divine swords, Yue Yang felt as if a door to a new world had been opened in front of him. He felt that he was only moving around the door until today, when he was finally able to take a peek of the true way of the sword.

The way of the sword was boundless!

Yue Yang comprehended that Gui Cang and Shuang Hua these two swords that he thirsted for were not treasures.

This was the direction of his future cultivation.....

The moment he possesses Gui Cang and Shuang Hua would be the moment when he truly mastered the Innate Invisible Sword Qi! Only then would he be considered to have started in the path of the sword, thus stepping forward the endless way of the sword, rising to the supreme realm where the Sword Spirit Goddess stood!

The Innate Invisible Sword Qi, other than having Innate Sword Qi, also had the power to cut anything. This was Yue Yang's current realm.

He needed to reach the point where he can switch between

corporeal and incorporeal forms.

And then he needed to combine to reach 'qi to sword', 'sword with a will', 'sword with a name' and then divide into Gui Cang and Shuang Hua. Only then would he have stepped on the path of the sword.

Yue Yang excitedly flew up and shouted toward the Sword Spirit Goddess: "I understand now. Treasures only serve as a support. In order to truly become strong, I could only rely on my cultivation! I will definitely possess my own Gui Cang and Shuang Hua!"

The Sword Spirit Goddess disappeared without a trace. Before she disappeared, her expressionless face looked back as if smiling.....

(Last: Gui means to gather, to belong or to return; Cang means to conceal or hide – read as tsang.)

(Last: Shuang means frost and Hua means magnificent or splendid.)

Chapter 528 - Who Is Peeking Through The Door?

When Yue Yang woke up and opened his eyes, he realized that he had immersed in the joy of his enlightenment in the path of the sword for a long time.

That kind of joy wasn't the kind of joy that would make one jump and cheer, nor was it a self-absorbed roar.

It was in the form of silent reflection.

It was an internal silence in which its power wasn't any weaker than a volcanic eruption. It lasted a long time. Yue Yang felt that his thoughts entered a state between reality and dream. He knew that he was lying on his bed with the Phoenix Fairy Beauty lying on him, asleep. But it was as if his thoughts left his body as he rode on a divine sword, up into the sky, and out into outer space...

The shock Yue Yang received from seeing the pitch black Gui Cang and pure white Shuang Hua wasn't any lesser than the time when he saw the Prison Emperor Divine Sword for the first time.

The Prison Emperor Divine Sword was a Divine Equipment with its own will and power.

It was the same for Gui Cang and Shuang Hua.

The only difference was that the Prison Emperor Divine Equipment possessed a fixed shape and its presence could be seen by anyone. Also, its power and will were already fixed, so no matter how strong they were, they wouldn't be able to surpass their fixed value. On the contrary, Gui Cang and Shuang Hua were formless existences. They would only take shape when their masters need them. In other words, there would be a limit to the Prison Emperor Divine Sword's power no matter how strong it might be; but Gui Cang and Shuang Hua weren't limited by anything, they could power up limitlessly.

If Yue Yang used them while in the Innate Realm, the power that they could unleash would be relatively weaker.

Once Yue Yang reached the Elder Innate Realm, their power would grow exponentially. They would become completely different with every level up. At the same time, they wouldn't be restricted by any form.

If Yue Yang could move pass Elder Innate Realm and reach even higher realms, they would also grow correspondingly.

They could grow limitlessly!

At the current state of Yue Yang's understanding and utilization of Gui Cang and Shuang Hua, their power definitely wouldn't be able to match up to the Prison Emperor Divine Sword. But when they were in the hands of the Sword Spirit Goddess, the two swords, Gui Cang and Shuang Hua, could easily destroy the world and everything that existed even the void..... Yue Yang was unable to imagine the Sword Spirit Goddess but understood that once she

attacks no one would be able to block it.

The Scarlet Emperor who owns the Divine Equipment, Guardian Divine Shield?

Xu Kong and Jiu Xiao who escaped from the Prison Emperor Divine Palace and returned to the Heaven Realm?

No, although these people were far more powerful than the current Yue Yang, they wouldn't be able to survive a single slash from the Sword Spirit Goddess's two swords, Gui Cang and Shuang Hua.

Yue Yang could completely imagine the true power of Xu Kong and Jiu Xiao.

But he couldn't imagine where the limit of the two swords, Gui Cang and Shuang Hua, was... After Gui Cang and Shuang Hua, there were still seven other even more powerful divine swords, Yue Yang couldn't imagine where the end of the path of the sword was. All he could sense was that the Sword Spirit Goddess was still teaching him the basics of the way of the sword. In order to understand the way of the sword deeper, he needed to rely on himself and level up to higher realms.

Based on Yue Yang's current realm, he was just like a junior high student.

So, he couldn't understand the notes from university lectures.

Compared to Yue Yang, Innate warriors were like primary school students while those Elder Innates were just senior high students...

Although Yue Yang was still a junior high student, his abnormal understanding skills and timely opportunities allowed him to understand senior high materials completely. It was just that he wasn't in senior high yet and had already started to study university level materials.

For example, a higher level of Innate Invisible Sword Qi, black Gui Cang and white Shuang Hua!

“What is this?”

The Phoenix Fairy Beauty was terrified by the Sword Qi which caused her to be jolted awake. She realized that numerous innate qi rushed like a flood into Yue Yang's palm. A tiny black sword appeared out of nowhere. It was initially smaller than a pair of chopsticks and its blade was blurred with faintly discernible runes on it. Phoenix Fairy Beauty was entirely shocked. This was a supreme ancient sword qi that was completely materialized... Phoenix Fairy Beauty felt a sense of unimaginable power from the tiny sword as she became genuinely fearful of it even if she had reached Elder Innate Realm.

Charm Demon Queen hid behind Phoenix Fairy Beauty for the first time.

She wasn't afraid that Yue Yang would hurt her. It was an

inherent instinct of revering divine swords.

Yue Yang felt as if all the energy in him was being sucked away but he still wasn't able to smoothly condense the black Gui Cang... It was already so difficult to make a such a tiny one, how much innate qi would it take to make the giant Gui Cang that were in the hands of the spirit sword goddess? How high was the level of control needed?

Southern Goblin King next door, who was similarly awoken by the sword qi, dashed in.

She ignored Yue Yang who was lying on the bed naked as she watched unbelieving at the condensing Gui Cang he was struggling to maintain.

“This is a Divine Equipment?” She was unable to believe it. How could sword qi gather to form a real divine sword?

“Pa!”

Southern Goblin King gasped uncontrollably, disturbing Yue Yang who was already at his limit. His focus was shaken and he lost control of the tiny Gui Cang, and then it disappeared into thin air. It reverted back to pure qi and returned back to Yue Yang's body.

Yue Yang's perspiration flooded as his breathing quickened. This was even more tiring than his battle against the Scarlet Emperor.

“Are you okay?” Southern Goblin King knew that it was her who interrupted him. She was secretly guilty as she went forward and asked if he was alright.

“I’m fine.” Yue Yang panted heavily as he almost couldn’t reply her.

“Ah, why aren’t you wearing any clothes?” Southern Goblin King realized that Yue Yang wasn’t wearing anything. Of course, it wasn’t solely him. The Phoenix Fairy Beauty and Charm Demon Queen were similarly completely naked. After all, they had sex and cuddled each other to sleep. When Yue Yang woke up, he wanted to try to gather the Gui Cang but he didn’t expect it to alert the Southern Goblin King and that she would barge in and see him naked.

“Someone who barges in is also wearing her sleeping gown...” The Phoenix Fairy Beauty wasn’t as awkward as Yue Yang so she reminded Southern Goblin King not to go into other people’s room in their sleeping gown.

“Oh!” Southern Goblin King looked down and saw that she was wearing her sleeping gown. As it was made of silk and was a little translucent, her figure was entirely exposed.

She was utterly embarrassed as she ran out of Yue Yang’s room.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty laughed in discreet.

She reached out her fair hands and massaged Yue Yang. She used Body Fusion to channel some of her energy to him in order to reduce his exhaustion.

Before the enlightenment disappears, Yue Yang decided to try again.

He had already condensed the Gui Cang, he just lacked more control. It shouldn't be of a problem if he practices further.

But he still hadn't condensed the Shuang Hua.

He had to complete it no matter what. He couldn't afford to lose this hard to gain enlightenment..... Without resting, Yue Yang tried to condense the second type. This was completely different from Gui Cang. It was a white Shuang Hua!

Gui Cang was large and pitch black, big and crude, completely natural and had no tip. The entire sword let out a powerful oppressive force on all living things, making everyone believe that it was indestructible.

Shuang Hua was the opposite. It was outstandingly magnificent, had a brilliance that dazzled the eyes, as smooth and clean as ice. Yue Yang felt that it had the ability of killing demons and exorcising ghosts. But this was not all, unlike the Gui Cang, which had destructive properties, Yue Yang felt that Shuang Hua also possessed a unique ability to cure all kinds of harmful things. This ability was an extension and also a qualitative change in using

innate qi.

Towards opponents, Shuang Hua was used to kill the demons; Towards Yue Yang or his teammates, it was a treasure that could purify and heal.

With this Shuang Hua, not only would Yue Yang's combat power rise, it would also be beneficial to the entire fight.

Compared to the black Gui Cang, Shuang Hua was harder to condense.

It required even more innate qi.

Yue Yang tried his best to condense a two meters tall and slender, tiny Shuang Hua. This was completed only thanks to the help of body fusion with Phoenix Fairy Beauty. When the Shuang Hua appeared, the entire room lit up as a faintly wonderful scent filled the space, Yue Yang's previously tired body quickly recovered... Finally, the Shuang Hua that help to lift Yue Yang out of his negative stage became as thin as a fine line, but it was still powerful.

Although Southern Goblin King was shy and ran out of the room, she unable to suppress her curiosity when Shuang Hua appeared. Suppressing her shame, she hid behind the door and witnessed the birth of the Shuang Hua.

Bloody Queen Red, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man and even the

ancient female soldiers all gathered outside the window as they held their breath and watched the Shuang Hua moving swiftly in Yue Yang's hand as if it was alive...

Under the help of the Elder Innate Leveled Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Yue Yang finally managed to gather the Shuang Hua successfully. Although it was as thin as a fine thread, Yue Yang could see with his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision that the words 'Shuang Hua' was carved on it. Compared to the Gui Cang gathered by Yue Yang alone, the Shuang Hua gathered by Yue Yang on the second try was way better. The sword was more solid and its shape was clearer, even its name was visible.

"I did it, I did it!" Yue Yang gradually returned Shuang Hua into his body. Compared to Gui Cang which previously dissipated, Yue Yang was now able to truly put away and bring out the swords with ease. Although he spent a long time and did it with the help of the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, it was no easy feat.

"Congratulations! With these two divine weapons, the Black Hell King will be dead soon." Phoenix Fairy Beauty hugged Yue Yang as she kissed him passionately.

Although Yue Yang still couldn't use Gui Cang and Shuang Hua to deal with Black Hell King right now, as long as Yue Yang continues to level up and master the two swords better the Black Hell King's luck was going to run out soon.

Could the Black Hell King still rely on his Dark Sacred Armor to defend against Yue Yang's attack?

The Nirvana Flame and World Exterminating Wheel were also weapons that could kill people instantly, but their targets were too obvious so the opponents would often end up escaping; Gui Cang and Shuang Hua were different. If Yue Yang were to control them and make them act instantaneously, or condense them early and launch a sneak attack on the Black Hell King, the Black Hell King would suffer a lot. Nirvana Flame and World Exterminating Wheel could only weaken the sly Black Hell King but it would be hard for them to kill him instantly... They were more suited to be used in dealing with those Ancient Slaughterers with only low intelligence and buff bodies.

Yue Yang had more than enough time to kill the Ancient Slaughterers who couldn't fly or teleport.

Even if they were to run off after seeing the Nirvana Flame, Yue Yang would be able to catch up with them, but this wouldn't work on the Black Hell King.

Yue Yang had to kill the Black Hell King within one move in order to prevent him from escaping.

Gui Cang and Shuang Hua would be able to achieve this. The only problem was that Yue Yang had to master these two swords quickly, and the faster he could condense the swords the better.

Under the disguise of his [Counterfeit] Inherent Skill and his camouflage skills, Yue Yang decided to find a good opportunity to make Black Hell King taste what it would be like to have his heart

pierced through by a sword!

“Scumbag...” Southern Goblin King, who was hiding behind the door, realized that Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty started to make love again amidst their cuddling and kissing. She watched dumbstruck as Phoenix Fairy Beauty unleashed her breasts and tongue on Yue Yang. Southern Goblin King completely forgot that she was peeking at them as she doubtfully muttered ‘that also works?’. It was only until she saw that the Phoenix Fairy Beauty sat on Yue Yang and sitting riding on him passionately that she regained her senses. Her cheeks instantly burned red and her body begun to burn up as she ran back to her room. She covered her blanket over her head as she couldn’t think straight for a long while. The steamy scene kept flashing across her head.

As Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty were still busy making love, the Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying, who was still in a hibernating with a muddled state, suddenly started to become better.

She started to wake up from her muddled state. It was unknown whether if it was due to the Shuang Hua gathered by Yue Yang that made her recover or due to the affair going on between him and the Phoenix Fairy Beauty that awakened her senses.

No matter what, the fact that she finally woke up was a good news.

Chapter 529 – Ancient Titan, Giant Loli

Just went Phoenix Fairy Beauty was tired and contented from the fighting and was about to withdraw from Yue Yang to let Charm Demon Queen take over, a great brilliance flashed.

An entirely silver Hornless Dragon flew out from the golden grimoire.

It shot straight upwards to an extremely high place within the sky dome before quickly shooting down, only stopping to hover around at 100 meters. The Hornless Dragon turned into human-form. Spilling hot tears, she flew into the house and threw herself into Yue Yang's arms. She bawled just like a little kid who had just seen her parents after being away from home for a very long time. Phoenix Fairy Beauty was stunned at first, but after seeing Yue Yang comforting her with a bewildered expression, she sniggered. She gathered her clothes and exited the room with Charm Demon Queen, leaving Yue Yang and Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying to spend alone time in the small space.

“Do not cry, be good, Jiang Ying. Do not cry!” Yue Yang quickly comforted her, while covering the Hornless Dragon who had not a single stitch of clothing on her.

“I was so afraid, muddled in the darkness. I missed you so much, but I was unable to come out. I thought that it would be the way forever! Boohoo!” Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying was reduced to sobs. Her wish had come true, under Yue Yang's help, she successfully levelled up to become a Divine Beast.

But, while fulfilling her dream, she had become muddled because she had rushed to level up too quickly.

In her consciousness, there was still a stream of clear-headedness.

She was just unable to control her body.

Her mind was in an entire state of muddle, and she was unable to use her consciousness to awaken her slumbering soul.

As one of the Guardian Beasts, she was aware that Yue Yang had met with all sorts of danger during his battle. Even though she desperately wanted to help Yue Yang, she could not do anything. Even though she grew up lonely and stubborn throughout the years, she had never experienced being unable to control her body. Of course, she had also developed a fear towards the future.

Only now, was she finally able to leave the chaos.

She was able to sense all of Yue Yang's actions. Her consciousness began to clear up and she began to slowly regain control over her body.

After awakening,

Jiang Ying could not wait to immediately leave her Bronze Grimoire when her freedom returned.

Ignoring that Yue Yang was still enjoying himself with Phoenix Fairy Beauty, she could not wait to jump into his arms to tell him about what she had been through.....

Even though Southern Goblin King did not know who Jiang Ying was, but upon seeing Jiang Ying's true form as a female Hornless Dragon, she knew that she also belonged to Eastern Goblin Tribe. Southern Goblin King did not have any hostility towards Jiang Ying's sudden appearance, in fact she felt a faint familiarity towards a person from the same clan. When Southern Goblin King opened the door to see the naked Phoenix Fairy Beauty walking out from Yue Yang's room holding her clothes, she could not help but snort.

“There is no need look, mine is bigger than yours!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty walked past Southern Goblin King arrogantly, waving her huge breasts extremely seductively.

“The damned dairy cattle.....” Southern Goblin King cursed silently. Even though she did not find hers small, it could not be compared to Phoenix Fairy Beauty's at all.

In the room, only after Yue Yang's comforting for half a day did Jiang Ying finally calm down.

When she saw Yue Yang's naked body, her jade face burned red. A surge of bashfulness rushed into her heart, yet she could not bear to let go of him and leave. She simply buried herself in his arms to let him hold on to her. She basked in this blissfulness of being

pampered by him.

If she had not been stuck in the state of muddleness and was hibernating, she would most likely have done that thing with him!

Jiang Ying's heartbeat quickened. She was not unfamiliar with Yue Yang's body.

She had already seen his body after doing [Body Fusion] with him to level up to Divine Beast.

If she did not have to worry that Phoenix Fairy Beauty would return, she would have already kissed him to relieve the yearning within her.

After Yue Yang's comforting, the grievance and fear in Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying's heart were already all chased away by this blissfulness. It was as if she saw a ray of light in the darkness, her spirits were now lifted. When she heard noise coming from outside, she actually started to worry about Yue Yang. She hurriedly got up and donned her clothes, and indicated for Yue Yang to bring her out: "Who was that big sister? She seemed to have been an Elder Innate?"

"She is Sky Law of the Demonic Palace." Yue Yang led Jiang Ying out the door. He realized that Giant Loli had also awoken and was seated upright, looking around the Grimoire World in a daze.

"Oh my, who is that? An Ancient Titan?" Upon seeing the Giant

Loli that was nearly 100 meters tall seated upright, Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying was shocked.

“She is really huge.....” Southern Goblin King could not understand how did the Giant Loli grow to such a size.

“At Heaven Tier Level 3, this could possibly be the strongest Loli in this world.” In fact, Phoenix Fairy Beauty felt that Heaven tier Level 3 was not her peak yet, she still had power that she had not displayed yet.

“Where is this place? Why am I here?” The most confused person was still the Giant Loli. Her question sounded like thunder rolling through the clouds.

First, she had suffered a concussion from Black Hell King’s all-out attack and lost part of her memory on the spot.

Then, she was saved and awakened by Yue Yang.

After changing into Titan Armor to prepare for battle, she fainted.

When she woke up again, she realised she was not in the familiar crystal palace, but instead in a comparatively smaller world.

With so many changes, not to mention a Giant Loli that lost her memory after a head concussion, even a normal person would be completely confused.

“Ahem, things are actually like this.” Yue Yang explained the entire situation, hoping that it would help the Giant Loli recall. The Ancient female warriors also supplemented the story. Among them, a beauty from dog clan wagged her tail, cutely affirming Yue Yang’s words: “Woof, he is right. You are the Imperial Guardian of Western Heaven Realm. We are all descendants of a sealed clan. Even though we have not participated in ancient wars before, we will still try our best to not let our father’s generation down.”

“You all are descendants of a sealed clan? What is a sealed clan?” Yue Yang was curious, where did these ancient warriors come from?

“Woof woof.” The dog clan beauty wagged her tail. She was the youngest among all the ancient warriors, and the cutest among all. Looking at her, she looked younger than even Yue Yang’s younger sister Yue Bing: “a sealed clan means our father or ancestor’s generation, had all done something wrong to receive the punishment of being sealed. They have to support Guardian War Gods to defeat the enemy and emerge victorious in order to regain freedom..... Looking at the situation now, it looks helpless.”

Until here, dog clan beauty was a little dejected.

Her cute little ears drooped down.

Yue Yang quickly comforted her gently: “That is not true, even though this battle is hard, victory will be ours. You will all regain your freedom!”

Hearing this, the dog clan beauty's spirits lifted. She believed in Yue Yang: "Really? That is great!"

Other than her, the other ancient female warriors were not as optimistic. They did not dare believe in what Yue Yang was saying entirely. Because of Black Hell King's betrayal, the situation was terrible. Of course, they did not dare expose Yue Yang's words. After all, a little kid still had to be coaxed. They could not ruin a kid's innocence with too much of the cruel reality.

"Am I really the Guardian War God of the Western Heaven Realm?" The Giant Loli was confused, she stood up, increasing her height to more than 200 meters.

Everyone was nervous seeing her scratching her head, confused.

Yue Yang quickly lied: "It does not matter if you cannot remember. First, you can be sure of one thing. You are very safe now, we are all your friends."

Hearing this, Giant Loli clapped her hands together in delight: "Do I really have so many friends? I am so happy!" She started to dance happily, shaking the entire Grimoire World. Her shaking was scarier than an earthquake. Suddenly, this Giant Loli stopped. She leaned down, using her finger that was a dozen meters long and gently prodded at Yue Yang: "But, I do not know who you are?"

With just a gentle prod, Yue Yang almost flew a hundred meters

away. This was even more ridiculous than that time he suffered a hit from Shun Tian's Five Transformation Fists.

He supported himself with all his might.

Even with that he could not help but take many steps back.

Of course, on his face hung a smile that was as bright as the sun: "If you ask me for my name, you will know who I am!"

Giant Loli clapped her hands cutely, generating crazy winds, almost blowing Yue Yang, Jiang Ying and the others away: "You are right, then what is your name?"

Yue Yang was very nervous knowing that this Giant Loli had such a destructive power without her even realizing it.

After a tough period of communication.

The two of them became friends. Even though the Giant Loli still could not remember what she was called, but after she made a promise with Yue Yang, she recognised Yue Yang as her friend. On the other hand, Black Hell King who had injured her was automatically added to the blacklist.

"Brother Yue Yang, you are so small. If only you were also an Ancient Titan, that would be good. Then we would be able to defeat that baddie you are talking about, and also those monsters." Using just her index finger, Giant Loli could hold up Yue Yang. In

fact, it would not be difficult for Jiang Ying, Southern Goblin King, Phoenix Fairy Beauty and all of the ancient female warriors to all be seated on it with much space to spare.

“I am human, different from your species. For a human being to grow to my height is already considered tall.” Yue Yang laughed upon hearing her words.

“Hehe!” Jiang Ying and the rest laughed.

“You really cannot become bigger? Looking at you is so tiring!” Compared to the Giant Loli, Yue Yang was like the size of an ant to a human Loli.

“Ah, it is not really possible for me to become bigger. I do not have the ability to do it..... But, it could still be possible for you to become smaller temporarily.” Yue Yang recalled Qilin Girl Bing Yin had an interesting technique that could turn the target into a ‘mini shrunk’ version. Maybe that would be effective when used on the Giant Loli. To turn the Giant Loli into the same size as a human Loli might still be difficult, but with Qilin Girl Bing Yin’s current ability, it would still be possible to shrink her into a 10 meter giant.

“Really?” Giant Loli was unsure: “My Titan Armor is immune to all mental attacks. Any skill that would affect my body are all ineffective!”

“Forget that I ever said anything.....” Yue Yang sweated profusely.

“Who says that shrinking is impossible. Forget an Ancient Titan, even those Golden Hercules that can move mountains could be shrunk by me!” At some point in time, Qilin Girl Bing Yin had ran out to defend her ability. She viewed all life in Heaven Realm or Tong Tian Tower lower level the same – with contempt. This was because she felt that she was the highest rank of life. Other than the Phoenix sisters, she also reluctantly viewed Xiao Wen Li as her equal.

As for the others, even if it was Hui Tai Lang, who was the World Destroying Demon Wolf; or Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, who had evolved extremely quickly, she did not care about them.

The bloodline of Immortal Beasts can be said to turn up their nose at everything else.

Qilin Girl Bing Yin reached out her small hands. Countless rainbow colored energy blossomed out from her jade palm.

Everyone’s jaw dropped to the ground. Something inconceivable was happening before them, Giant Loli was shrinking very quickly.....

Chapter 530 – Phoenix Fairy Beauty's Brilliant Scheme

The Giant Loli quickly shrank from the height of a skyscraper until she was about 15 metres tall.

“Impossible!” Even the Giant Loli could not believe this was happening to her, not to mention the others who could not believe their eyes. Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying, Southern Goblin King, Phoenix Fairy Beauty were all stunned. Only Xiao Wen Li and Bloody Queen, who have seen Qilin Girl Bing Yin perform this magic at the Golden Barrier in the past, knew how powerful Qilin Girl Bing Yin was.

“There is no weakening in ability even after shrinking.....” Yue Yang was slightly regretful. If the target could be weakened after shrinking, then it did not matter how many Ancient Slaughterers there were. After shrinking all of them, his team could rush up to give them a beating. As for Black Hell King that would then be shrunk to only the size of a bean, he would just kill him with a single step.

“There also exist the magic that can weaken the opponent while shrinking them, but that would have to be performed with specific treasures.” Qilin Girl Bing Yin was very pleased with herself, it appeared that she had an even more powerful trump card up her sleeve.

“Really?” Upon hearing this, Yue Yang's eyes lit up.

“Yawn, I am so tired. I am going back to sleep!” Seeing that Yue Yang was about to make her work hard, Qilin Girl Bing Yin escaped quickly.

“When will I be able to return to my original form?” the Giant Loli asked urgently. But before she was able to open her mouth, Qilin Girl Bing Yin had already slipped back to the Divine Grimoire to sleep. Looking at her hands, and then the crowd on the ground, the Giant Loli was suddenly very happy: “I am a little unused to being small, but this feeling is quite nice..... I am hungry. Is there anything tasty, quickly bring it out..... demon crystal? I do not eat demon crystals. I am not a beast, I am an ancient titan. I eat meat, I want to eat delicious roast meat!”

“Roast meat?” This was difficult for Yue Yang. With the Giant Loli’s stomach, even a horse would not be enough for her to pick her teeth with. It would be very difficult to make her full!

“Do you eat Ancient Slaughterers?” Bloody Queen Red welcomed the guest for her owner warmly.

Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man started moving an Ancient Slaughterer’s body over.

Boom.

She threw it on the ground.

Everyone almost fell on the ground. Could this thing even be

eaten?

That cute dog clan beauty wagged her tail, asking with her eyes wide: “Brother Yue Yang, wouldn’t eating that cause diarrhea?”

Bloody Queen replied with assurance for Yue Yang: “No, Duo Duo ate one just now. After digesting it, she then prepared to eat another..... Even though I do not know what it tastes like, but at least it is edible!”

Yue Yang was about to faint.

Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen’s Thorny Flower Sea could even digest metal, there was nothing she could not eat. Using her as an example was completely inappropriate.

However, the Giant Loli was very gullible. Hearing that it was edible, she started to prod at Yue Yang with her finger, forcing him back several steps to almost fall back: “Brother Yue Yang, roast it quickly, I am hungry.....”

“I really am not good at roasting meat!” In the past, Yue Yang heard that ‘barbequing’ was one of the eight skills a male protagonist, that passed through dimensions, needed to have. As one who went into another world, one can be useless at everything and just had to be good at roasting meat. Coming to this world and not knowing how to roast meat, was as shameful as time-travelling to Ancient China and not knowing how to prepare gunpower, prepare newspaper, farming, making cement or generating electricity. If he did not know how to roast meat, it was a straight

waste of this spot. How can this be endured by the giant dragons in the other world anxiously waiting and salivating for roast meat!

Usually, as long as roast meat is brought out, any giant dragon would fight to recognise the main character as its owner.

This was because they had never eaten such delicious roast meat.

And from then on, for delicious food, they decide to follow the main character!

Yue Yang just started, but would him roasting meat create the same result? Could it be possible that this the Giant Loli would be happy from eating roast meat, and for the sake of her stomach decide to follow him? And from there on become his powerful ally?

However, expectation and reality was always different. The response Yue Yang received was.....

“This roast meat really tastes horrible. The meat is too tough, I cannot even bite through it! My teeth are going to fall out!” This was the coquetish cries of the dog clan beauty.

“I seemes there is no salt on it!” Upon trying it, Southern Goblin King gave heartless feedback.

“And it is not cooked through.” Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying nodded while secretly laughing.

“..... Good thing I did not try it.....” Phoenix Fairy Beauty was rejoicing in other’s misfortune. While Charm Demon Queen reluctantly ate a piece. However, she immediately frowned. She was most likely sorry to criticise him.

“Hey hey, this has nothing to do with how well I can roast meat. It is the fault of the damned Ancient Slaughterer. Its meat is tough like metal, it is already impressive that I can even cut it to roast it! Who says that I did not put any salt, I added so many spices. But do you think that adding spices to metal will give it any taste?” Yue Yang was going crazy. It was impossible to roast Ancient Slaughterer meat with just ordinary fire, it had to be his Heaven’s Fury Fire Lotus. He also had to use Hui Jin Magic Blade and Crescent Blade, and after a whole lot of hard work was he able to cut a few pieces to roast. If not for him, it was impossible to even dream of eating Ancient Slaughterer meat!

“It is really bad. But whatever, as long as it is filling.” the Giant Loli did not have high standards for taste as long as she could get full.

“Forget about today, what do we do tomorrow?” Southern Goblin King realised that it was not easy to feed a the Giant Loli. First, she really ate a lot. Second, they were stuck in the Grimoire World and did not know when they could get out. As the days pass, how could they survive? They only killed 4 Ancient Slaughterer, and Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen already ate one. Now that they roasted another, they are only left with two.

“Fool, just one drop of God Dew could get her through one day.

Yue Yang has a lot of God Dew, how could this be a problem!" Phoenix Fairy Beauty did not think this was a problem. The real problem was how could they hunt more enemies when the enemies not only increased in numbers, but also increased in strength.

"You have God Dew?" Upon hearing that Yue Yang had God Dew. Southern Goblin King delightedly passed him a jade bottle: "I only have this small bottle....."

"This is not mineral water, moreover you are not in a rush to use it." Yue Yang rejected her.

Such a big jade bottle, if he gave her just one bottle, he would still be unwilling.

While calling Yue Yang a miser, Southern Goblin King continued to bug him. As for God Dew, even in her dreams she wanted to obtain it.

Any amount is good.

Unfortunately, Yue Yang also thought the same.....

If she asked directly, Yue Yang would not give it for sure. If someone needed God Dew to save lives or recover, that could be discussed. He threw out the excuse of going to cultivate, and escaped. Even though the Southern Goblin King wanted to follow, she was stopped by Phoenix Fairy Beauty: "Let us introduce ourselves. I am Sky Law. I am Yue Yang that baddie's unmarried

wife. What about you guys?”

Once she said that, she completely gained the upperhand.

Southern Goblin King opened and closed her mouth, but she could not utter a single word.

Jiang Ying on the other hand, this hornless female dragon looked to the floor, her face faintly blushing. She twisted her pale fingers and bashfully said: “I, I am Jiang Ying, Yue Yang and I have not known each other for very long. At first I wanted him to help me level up to a Divine Beast, but later we made a contract, and I have followed him since then.....”

As for this Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying, Phoenix Fairy Beauty did not have any objection towards her at all. Jiang Ying was Yue Yang’s guardian beast. She would never betray him, so Phoenix Fairy Beauty was very much at ease. As for Southern Goblin King, she was an outstanding beauty. Her birth was a mystery and her aura was noble. She had her own method of doing things. Combined with this attitude of someone who was used to occupying the highest position, she was definitely not an ordinary girl. Phoenix Fairy Beauty felt that this Southern Goblin King was her love rival.

What is a love rival?

This was a love rival!

“Jiang Ying, you are also from the Eastern Goblin Tribe right? How could you make a contract with Yue Yang?” Southern Goblin King was still a little unclear of the situation, in fact, she was a little jealous.

“I am different from ordinary Eastern Goblin Tribe members. Even though my paternal grandfather was a hornless dragon from the Eastern Goblin Tribe, my paternal grandmother was a Gold Dragon Empress. My maternal grandfather was a Silver Dragon Lord while my maternal grandmother was a Spider Empress. A part of my bloodline belong to beasts, which is why I can make contracts too.” Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying was actually a little ashamed of her bloodline. It was because she was mixed-blood, she had no choice but contract a grimoire in order to become a Divine Beast. While being mixed-blood brought her enormous power, it also brought her a difficult problem of unable to contract a grimoire. Thankfully, Yue Yang appeared and she was able to contract a grimoire with his help. Otherwise, that would be a regret she would have for life.

“Actually, even for Eastern Goblin Tribe members, it is not easy to contract a Grimoire. It is only slightly easier for royalty. For someone ordinary from Eastern Goblin Tribe, it is almost impossible.” Southern Goblin King told her a secret.

“What do we do now?” Jiang Ying had just woke up and really wanted to help Yue Yang. However, she was still unclear on the situation.

“If you all agree to cooperate, I have an idea.....” Phoenix Fairy Beauty was determined to regain the leadership position. If

Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wuxia were here, she would not fight for the power. But in front of Southern Goblin King, there was no way she would let Southern Goblin King gain the upperhand.

“Speak!” Even though Southern Goblin King was very unwilling, but due to her status and ability, she could only listen to Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

A day later.

While using Dark Domain to absorb the scattered energy from the Innates who have died, Black Hell King felt that something was amiss. His intuition told him something was wrong.

There had been no battle the entire day.....

Huang Quan and Yue Yang were at opposite sides, the east and the west, and had no interaction at all.

What was the problem?

Simply based on a warrior's intuition, Black Hell King felt that things were not right. Yet, he could not figure out what was the problem.

After observing and pondering for 2 hours, Black Hell King counted the number of Ancient Slaughterers. He was shocked to realize that the Ancient Slaughterer patrolling Huang Quan's side did not unchanged but Yue Yang's side had 6 missing Ancient

Slaughterer, and 1 Ancient Slaughterer Captain was also missing..... This was to say, Yue Yang that guy was able to kill 6 Ancient Slaughterer and 1 Ancient Slaughterer Captain without him even realizing it.

How did he do it?

There was no possible way that he could kill as many as 7 Ancient Slaughterer without a single sound!

Moreover, there were as many as 10 Ancient Slaughterer patrolling each time. There was no reason for them not to retaliate if they saw their companion being killed. Even if they did not attack, there should have been a commotion.

No matter how powerful Sky Law's Thunder, World-Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flames were, it was still impossible to kill 7 Ancient Slaughterer in an instant..... Black Hell King rushed to crystal plaza, yet he could not find any clues. It was as if those 7 Ancient Slaughterers disappeared like smoke. After thinking for very long, Black Hell King suddenly understood. His chest was about to explode from anger, yet there was nothing he could do.....

He knew what happened.

It was Sky Law's doing! Sky Law's Charm Demon Queen was good at 'Mesmerizing'!

She had hypnotised the Ancient Slaughterers into her Grimoire, and Yue Yang later killed them. This method was relatively ineffective towards intelligent beings, but to those Ancient Slaughterers of almost no intelligence, it was brilliant.

“Fine, we will see who laughs to the end!” Black Hell King spat out these words and returned to the central plaza.

When he returned, Black Hell King used some strange method, and after that no Ancient Slaughterer came to Yue Yang’s side to patrol anymore. They all stayed at the central plaza, quietly waiting for time to be up.

Black Hell King was going to compete with Yue Yang on endurance.

The more time passes, the more beneficial it was for him.

In the Grimoire World, Phoenix Fairy Beauty sighed: “Black Hell King is really not simple. I thought he would take 2 more days to realize something was amiss.”

Yue Yang comforted her: “Even though it was a good idea to hypnotize the Ancient Slaughterers into the Grimoire World, it is not a long term plan. Everyone do not panic, I can come up with another plan..... With 10 dark gold demon crystal from the Ancient Slaughterer, maybe I can come up with a better plan.....”

The mysterious way he said it was completely confused the

Phoenix Fairy Beauty and the others.

Only Xiao Wen Li knew that Yue Yang was preparing to enter the black space to visit his mother.

Chapter 531 – 500 Billion? What A Frightening Bounty!

Black Hole Sealed Space.

“Death arena?” After Empress Fei Wen Li listened to Yue Yang’s account of what had happened, she smiled sweetly: “No need to keep guessing, I am sure someone is causing mischief in the dark. Someone used your blood to start the ancient war, making you the team leader of the death arena and forced you to join this battle..... Actually, strictly speaking, this is not only a ruthless battle, it is also a desperate battle. In ancient times, Heaven Realm and the world of mortals were linked. Even the Rankers from Heaven Realm often participated in the battle at death arena..... As for the Supreme Innates, accumulating 100 points was not a difficult thing to do. The harder part was how they could hunt the enemy, or even to escape from the hands of a powerful enemy!”

“Someone used my blood to start the ancient war?” Upon hearing this, Yue Yang frowned.

“If up till now, no one from Tong Tian Tower has reached Heaven Realm, then the person who began this ancient war is definitely your enemy such as those who escaped from Prison Emperor Divine Palace.

Yue Yang estimated that if it wasn’t Xu Kong, it would have been the mysterious Jiu Xiao.

During the fierce battle at the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, they

must have collected his blood.

And then, they used his blood to begin this ancient war.

This also explained why he was the leader instead of the stronger Black Hell King. Also, it was practically impossible for him to begin the ancient war since he had never been to Heaven Realm. This must have been because of either Xu Kong or Jiu Xiao.

The problem was, if it really was them creating mischief, things would be even more complicated.

How would the enemy only set a single trap?

Obviously Xu Kong and Jiu Xiao were not the kind to let Yue Yang off easily when he had such immense potential. Their scheme will definitely develop over time.

“After Black Hell King betrayed us, the situation has become very dire. I wish to understand the weakness of the Ancient Slaughterers, or the different rules of ancient arena.” At this critical point, Yue Yang was going to skip all the formalities and ask the main questions.

“It is very easy to kill Ancient Slaughterers. Such creatures of low intelligence are not to be feared. Even the Ancient Slaughterer Commanders and Beast King are not much of a threat to you. On the other hand, you have to be careful of the betrayer Black Hell King. I feel that if he was not very certain, he would not have

betrayed. He must have something else up his sleeve.” Empress Fei Wen Li muttered to herself quietly, and said: “Actually, what you really have to worry about is not the Ancient Slaughterers Beast King nor the Black Hell King. You should worry about the Heaven Realm Innates that come down from Heaven Realm.....”

“What?” Yue Yang was shocked. Even Heaven Realm would send their Innates?

“Heaven Realm Innates could appear as the sixth party. They are not allies of any of the four parties, but they are also not the hunters. However, they can enter when there is an imbalance. They are the interferers.” Empress Fei Wen Li nodded her head.

“What the, right now we cannot even win. Now that they will come in to interfere, are they trying to kill everyone?” Yue Yang was sweating profusely.

“In the past, humans were very strong. Under Tong Tian Tower, the humans of Soaring Dragon Continent, the demon clan from Demon Abyss and the Shan Ze Fairies of the Heaven Stairway were the three strongest clans. Any warrior from these clans were able to disturb the balance between the many Ancient Slaughterers and the warriors from north, south and east. So, Heaven Realm had to send down Heaven realm Innates to interfere with the war to ensure north, south and east were not too much on the losing end.” Empress Fei Wen Li’s words made Yue Yang ashamed. Now that Soaring Dragon Continent was destroyed, if the humans did not have Night Empress and Zhi Zun, they could not even compare to north, south and east.

“In the north, south and east, are there still 3 other Tong Tian Towers?” Yue Yang asked.

“No.” Empress Fei Wen Li waved her hand, denying it: “There is only one Tong Tian Tower. It is the ‘special bridge’ between Soaring Dragon Continent and Heaven Realm. There is no such Tong Tian Tower elsewhere. The north, south and east are considered the lower levels of the Heaven realm.

“What about Heaven’s Stairway?” Yue Yang asked again.

“Heaven’s Stairway was the original world where the Shan Ze Fairies resided. It was a world that was linked to Tong Tian Tower’s first to tenth floor. It has a similar relation that Tong Tian Tower had with Soaring Dragon Continent and Demon Abyss. It formed a stable three-sided world. In the middle was God’s Ruins. Later, after the great war between Ancient Rankers, Heaven’s Stairway suffered great damage and the Shan Ze Fairies clan was almost entirely wiped out. This was why they broke off all contact with Tong Tian Tower..... As for what the situation currently is, I am not aware of it either. But I know that ten thousand years ago, the Shan Ze Fairies were extremely endangered, there were only an extremely small number of them left.” Talking about the past made Empress Fei Wen Li sigh.

“Your majesty, what level is your ability at now?” Yue Yang was very curious, just how strong was Empress Fei Wen Li?

Using Heaven Eyes Divine Vision now, he still could not see through her power even though she was at a weakened state.

From this, he knew that Empress Fei Wen Li's ability was at a level that Yue Yang could not even imagine!

Empress Fei Wen Li smiled at Yue Yang's question. She tactfully replied: "The me back then, strictly speaking, was the Rebel Empress that led many clans against human warriors. In Heaven Realm, I think one of the bounties amounting to 500 billion belongs to me."

500 billion?

And a Heaven Realm bounty at that?

Hearing this, Yue Yang was close to fainting.

Tong Tian Tower's highest bounty of 10 million was Yue Yang's record!

This 10 million bounty was only awarded by Empress Jellyfish after Yue Yang killed the Ocean Emperor Guan Lan, and a dozen Sea Clan Innates, including royalty such as Sea Dragon Crown Prince, Sea Anemone Crown Princess to almost split apart the entire Sea Clan.

Old Man An Xi who also killed the Ocean Emperor, and millions of warriors only received a bounty of 5 million.

Receiving bounties was different from doing business. It was not difficult to earn 5 million or 10 million from doing business. But bounties had to be agreed by the elders of Tong Tian Tower Warrior's Guild and the Innate Alliance, after they took into account of the target's ability. It was definitely not a case of just putting any amount of bounty onto a person, there was also an extremely strict criterion. Not just millions, even a bounty of 10 thousand was impressive, even if they were not Innates they would be extremely vile and despicable lesser Innates. For example, Fatty Hai and Ye Kong they still had to prove that they had enough ability to reach a bounty of 10 thousand.

As for Zi Jin Kingdom and Black Hell Army's bounty for them, Xue Tan Lang's was the highest at 9500.

Tian Luo Prince, Fatty Hai and Ye Kong were all 8000.

As for Feng Qi Sha and Yan Po Jun, whose cultivations were lacking by far, they were all below 3000.....

Within Tong Tian Tower, since much of the bounty was covered by treasures, or at least treasures with gold coins, the bounty of gold coins would not be very high. But nonetheless, to have a bounty of millions would have to be those like the Great Emperor of Zi Wei, Shun Tian, the Black Prince, Thousand Goblins Sect Leader such levels of Supreme Innates.

A bounty of 3 million would have belonged to the Sky Emperor, Emperor of the Underworld, Ocean Emperor, An Xi, and other people with the ability of Peak Level 10 Innate.

A bounty of 5 million would be the stronger Dragon Emperor.

10 million would undoubtedly be the Black Hell King.

Only Black Hell King the betrayer of 5000 years and Yue Yang the upcoming Prison Emperor, were worth 10 million.

Deducing from here, with a bounty of 500 billion..... what was the true ability of Empress Fei Wen Li?

Not to mention whether anyone would take up this kind of assassination, just this quote was enough to scare people away. It was enough to make people tremble.

“There are too many people who want to kill me, so I think this sum is a little exaggerated. Actually I think 300 billion is more suitable.” Empress Fei Wen Li snickered. It would have been better for her to not say it, now that she said it, Yue Yang was sweating profusely. Was 300 billion not money? Moreover this 300 billion was definitely not just in cash, there were definitely treasures included. It was impossible to calculate the total sum.

“Fine, then what about the person who sealed you in this Black Space, how much bounty was he worth?” Yue Yang tried to test the waters.

“I think at least 900 billion!” Hearing Empress Fei Wen Li say this, Yue Yang really fainted this time.

“Such a monster, was he really human?” Yue Yang could not imagine how could a Soaring Dragon Continent human train to such a terrifying level. In comparison, he was really weak.

“How old are you even? In comparison, the speed of your growth is unprecedented in history. If I had to give you an honest estimate, your current power could reach a bounty of 100 million. As for your potential ability that you are unable to use for now, I estimate it to not less than a billion. That is to say, your current ability is only a tenth of what you can really do. As for your future potential, it exceeds a trillion. You are stronger than the one who sealed me for sure. Forget all this, continue to train. For now, you are still a sapling. Even though you already are standing tall and straight, you are still a long way from becoming a tall tree!” Empress Fei Wen Li caressed Yue Yang’s face and smiled: “Looking at you like this, even I am jealous!”

“Do not be jealous of me. Right now I am worrying over Black Hell King and the Heaven Realm Innates..... “ Yue Yang felt ashamed.

He knew that he was still unable to use all of his power.

When he was in an extreme state, his ability would burst out to 10 times.

Even Xu Kong, Jiu Xiao and the Scarlet Emperor could be fought with that state.

Why could he not use his full power when he was clear-headed? Yue Yang was still perplexed after thinking over it for so long. Perhaps, it was because he still did not understand himself enough! For now, Yue Yang did not have time to drop everything to slowly think through it. He just wanted to keep tapping into his potential and quickly obtain more things. Only when he had tapped into his potential to a certain extent, he would then slowly think through the situation.

Moreover, the answer would not come to him in an instant. It would have to be absorbed through repeated enlightenment during the process of cultivation.

“Going by your current situation, Heaven Realm Innates may not actually descend. Even if they descend, their highest strength would at most be Heaven Ranked Level 3. Their ability would not exceed the hunters, unless they deliberately wanted to kill you. Otherwise, among the sixth party interferers, the strongest would be Heaven Ranked Level 3. If you see a Heaven Ranked Level 4, 5 or even stronger Heaven Realm Innate descend, quickly retreat. Going by your current ability, if you do not have a strong support, your possibility of winning against them is very small. Also, they definitely intend to kill you!” Empress Fei Wen Li reminded Yue Yang to be wary of his enemies. No matter what the situation, he must not be tricked.

“I got it.....” There was only one question left in Yue Yang’s heart. How strong were Zhi Zun and Night Empress exactly?

If they were very strong, then he could choose to lose himself under Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s [Charm] to get rid of Black Hell King.

Conversely, he would have to come up with ways to accumulate points.

Retreat safely first, and then get his revenge.

Zhi Zun should be close by now, what level was she at? Was she Elder Innate Level 2? Level 3? Or Level 4?

Chapter 532 – A New Team Members Has Arrived, Who Is It?

Empress Fei Wen Li was sealed within the Black Hole Space and Yue Yang couldn't think of a good way to bring her out temporarily.

But she had been in deep sleep for 10 thousand years, so she didn't mind waiting for a while more.

Yue Yang returned back to the Grimoire World after leaving the Black Hole Space.

Although Phoenix Fair Beauty and Jiang Ying felt that Yue Yang's actions were strange, they pretended not to know anything when Yue Yang didn't tell them anything. They didn't try to probe further. After learning various information about the death arena, Yue Yang didn't wait further as he decided to attack. He continuously harassed the Ancient Slaughterer in the central plaza. With his power, he couldn't kill the Ancient Slaughterer in front of the the Black Hell King and the Beast King... But due to his harassment, all the Ancient Slaughterer hated Yue Yang to the bones, so they would roar crazily when they see him. They were almost hysterical. If not for the beast king, who suppressed them, they would have chased after Yue Yang at all cost.

“What does this guy have up his sleeves?” the Black Hell King knew that there would be certain motives behind Yue Yang's actions. He would never have done it out of boredom.

But the Black Hell King couldn't fathom what Yue Yang's intention was.

He didn't have any good plans to stop Yue Yang's harassment towards the Ancient Slaughterers.

The Black Hell King didn't even wish to hinder Yue Yang.

Because he was afraid that Yue Yang's true intention was to trick him and subsequently kill him, he wouldn't land himself in danger no matter what happens.

An hour passed.

Although Yue Yang's attacks only caused very slight injuries, the Ancient Slaughterers lost control and became restless under Yue Yang's harassment.

They, who lacked intelligence, didn't know that it was a scheme as they hated Yue Yang the human being who beat them and immediately escape whenever he was near them. Their eyes would even shoot fire when they see Yue Yang. In fact, no one could match up to Yue Yang's harassment skills. Yue Yang would condense Nirvana Flame arrows and shoot towards the Ancient Slaughterers, lightly injuring them every time. Yue Yang would never pick a fight with them. This made the Ancient Slaughterer felt their pride were hurt.

Under the harassment, even the Beast King couldn't sit still.

The Ancient Slaughterers that couldn't fly could only chase after him with futile effort.

Sometimes, Yue Yang would recklessly fly within them as he skillfully dodged their humongous body, causing them to be agitated and knock onto each other, and therefore further incensing them.

Now the Black Hell King finally understood.

Yue Yang wanted to make the Ancient Slaughterers agitated and lose their cool. He wanted them to attack each other, and use them to reduce the number of Ancient Slaughterers. The Black Hell King also suspected that while Yue Yang was trying to weaken the Ancient Slaughterers, he was also looking for an opportunity to kill him...

But what can he do even if he found about about Yue Yang's scheme?

The Black Hell King simply could not think of an idea to deal with Yue Yang.

His harassment tactic was just too shameless, the Black Hell King could follow his footsteps, but one problem was that Sky Law was still around, waiting for the Black Hell King to fall into their trap.

“Good idea!”

Huang Quan and the rest realized that Yue Yang had successfully harassed the Ancient Slaughterers. They suddenly realized this and praised Yue Yang tremendously.

They also followed Yue Yang's lead and did the same thing.

After injuring a few Ancient Slaughterers together, Huang Quan and the rest were more proactive as they protected each other and took turn to fight against the Ancient Slaughterer consecutively, leaving no gaps at all. This incensed the Ancient Slaughterers. Without possessing any intelligence, they would attack anyone who appeared before them with bloodied eyes. They would chase after the opponents and none of them were willing to stay put in the central plaza anymore. the Black Hell King was secretly apprehensive, but what he could only do was to follow Yue Yang around in the dark, and try as much as possible to prevent Yue Yang from luring them into his Grimoire World.

Apart from Yue Yang, the Black Hell King believed that no one else would use this method to kill the Ancient Slaughterer.

Yue Yang was even more threatening than Huang Quan now.

The Black Hell King would rather ignore Huang Quan and the rest and follow Yue Yang around. He didn't dare to be complacent... This guy would jump at every opportunity to cause trouble, so he could turn the tables anytime, how could the Black Hell King be lax about it?

One day passed by unknowingly.

After the deadline on the third day, ten more Ancient Slaughterers descended from the sky. And Yue Yang who had been harassing the Ancient Slaughterers for three days only managed to find a chance to kill one of the Ancient Slaughterer who ran the furthest. Yue Yang succeeded in his plans, but he wasn't efficient enough. He only killed one while ten more Ancient Slaughterers arrived at the same time. The Black Hell King felt that he would be the last one smiling.

“We have to get rid of the the Black Hell King, with him around, the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King will calm down and sober up, and as long as the beast king is around, all the Ancient Slaughterer will still listen to it. Third Young Master has a good plan, but we can't afford to wait any longer, we have to act quickly. Does anyone have any good ideas? As long as the Black Hell King is dead, I believe that this battle would be able to progress more smoothly.” Fen Tian and the rest found Yue Yang and gathered to discuss. They felt that the best way was to kill the Black Hell King. Only when the Black Hell King is dead would their harassment tactic work and make their opponent lose their mind.

“Hard.” Yun Xing was concise as usual. He directly pointed out that his idea wasn't feasible.

“Would you like to share your thoughts with us Third Young Master?” Huang Quan knew that Yue Yang had reasons for doing it, since he would not shoot without aim.

“The Ancient Slaughterers aren't very scary. The Black Hell King

is the same, he could only grit his teeth in the dark as we gather together... My only concern is the interferer sent down from the Heaven Realm. I guess they will be around Heaven Ranked Level Three.” Yue Yang revealed the secret deliberately.

“Interferer” Huang Quan and the rest’s responses made Yue Yang realised that they didn’t know about the existence of the interferer from the Heaven Realm.

“I heard it goes like this...” Yue Yang told them what he heard from Empress Fei Wen Li with a little alteration. He had portrayed the interferer from the Heaven Realm as evil bastard. Taking advantage of the fact that no one knew who they were, Yue Yang continued to bluff them.

“Ah!” Huang Quan and the rest gasped when they heard Yue Yang.

Due to the pressure from the oncoming interferer, Huang Quan and the rest started to get scared as they decided to attack the Black Hell King with all their might. They planned to kill the Black Hell King before the interferer arrived.

They had to corporate with Yue Yang to kill a few more Ancient Slaughterer at the very least.

If not they would all be dead meat when the the interferer descends.

Huang Quan and the rest gave their all in attacking the Black Hell King without reserving any of their power. The Black Hell King couldn't withstand it as he went to hide beside the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King temporarily. After realizing that Yue Yang and Huang Quan attempted to kill him numerous times, the Black Hell King returned back to his Grimoire World and decided not to fight against them at all. In the instant where he left the central plaza and entered his Grimoire World, Phoenix Fairy Beauty and Charm Demon Queen took the opportunity to appear and lured all the twenty crazed Ancient Slaughterers into her Grimoire world.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty had already shifted all her valuables from her Grimoire World into Yue Yang's, so even if the Ancient Slaughterer were to wreck everything crazily, Phoenix Fairy Beauty would not feel any heartache.

"Goddamn..." the Black Hell King realised that one third of the Ancient Slaughterers were gone when he was away for ten minutes.

"You are the one who's damned!" Huang Quan unleashed all of his power to Innate Level 3 to attack the the Black Hell King. The four Ancient Slaughterers who were initially the the Black Hell King's bodyguards were lured away by the three eyes tiger man. Huang Quan, Fen Tian, Yun Xing and Yue Yang worked together and attacked the the Black Hell King. They aimed to defeat him before the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King arrives.

"Awwwoooo!" The Ancient Slaughterer Beast King was lured away by the Phoenix Fairy Beauty too.

Charm Demon Queen continued to lure the opponent into her master's Grimoire World.

The Black Hell King was super anxious but he didn't dare to fight with them easily.

As compared to the Ancient Slaughterers, his life mattered more.

Moreover, the Black Hell King still had confidence. Because even if all the Ancient Slaughterers were killed there would still be three Heaven Ranked Level 3 Ancient Slaughterer Commanders and a Heaven Ranked Level 5 Ancient Slaughterer Beast King... No matter how powerful Yue Yang's Nirvana Flame and World Exterminating Wheel might be, he wouldn't be able to kill the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King as the gap in power between the two was too huge.

"You guys are working for the benefit of the Third Young Master, he has already killed so many Ancient Slaughterers and has gained enough points, but what about you guys? Congratulations for becoming the stepping stones in his path to obtaining the Divine Equipment!" The the Black Hell King didn't forget to sow discords before he returned back to his Grimoire World.

"Blabbering bastard!" Yue Yang awarded the Black Hell King with a painful whip but the six thousand years old traitor wasn't hurt by this at all.

"Third Young Master, what do we do now?" the three-eyed tiger man realized that the Ancient Slaughterers felt threatened as they

let out resonant roars when the Charm Demon Queen used her mesmerization to lure them into the Grimoire world. They were calling for their commander and six captains that couldn't be lured.

They were very bonded and left Yue Yang no opportunity to lure them again.

They would take turns to shoot out burning flame whenever Yue Yang flew near them. They would also dodge together, splitting up and sticking together again. Yue Yang and Huang Quan weren't able to kill them when they bonded together with each of them possessing strong powers. Additionally, with the occasional observation of the Black Hell King, the tired Huang Quan suggested for everyone to return back to the Grimoire World and fight again after resting for a day.

Just when everyone thought that their plan had succeeded and they could turn the tables, five rays shot down from the sky.

The light pillar in the center was as exaggerated as the time the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King arrived. It was even more ridiculous in fact.

The golden rays lit up the entire central plaza as all creatures in it looked as if they had seen a golden lining on them. Although the person in the middle who descended was clad in a purple glamorous cloak and didn't show his face, his underlying power shocked everyone.

Another Heaven Ranked Level 5 existence... And he wasn't of low intelligence like the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King.

He definitely possessed intelligence.

And only intelligent creatures could use words to quell the worries from both sides: "Don't worry everyone, I will not interfere your fight in any way, I'm only here as a arbiter to make this game fairer."

Huang Quan and the rest were euphoric when they heard it.

Luckily, the person who came from the Heaven Realm wasn't a new opponent but an arbiter!

They couldn't completely believe that the person who came was an arbiter. But before the situation gets worse, they'd rather believe that this person who came from the Heaven Realm was one!

Yue Yang wasted no time as he hid Phoenix Fairy Beauty and Charm Demon Queen into his Grimoire World. Empress Fei Wen Li's words were ringing beside his ears: "If you see a Heaven Ranked Level 4, 5 or even stronger Heaven Realm Innate descend, quickly retreat. Going by your current ability, if you do not have a strong support, your possibility of winning against them is very small. Also, they definitely intend to kill you!"

The interferer From Heaven Realm had already arrived, and they

definitely were coming for him....

Luckily, he managed to convince Huang Quan and the rest to previously lead thirty Ancient Slaughterer into Phoenix Fairy Beauty's Grimoire World. So, even if he couldn't finish killing all of the Ancient Slaughterers, he wouldn't risk being killed by the Ancient Code.

The interferer from Heaven Realm was here.

The situation had become more serious now, why weren't Night Empress and Zhi Zun here yet?

Just when Yue Yang decided to return back to his Grimoire World and never come out again, a mysterious information filled his mind. "New team members have joined...

Yue Yang was excited. An indescribable sense of sanguinity overcame him. Night Empress and Zhi Zun finally came, they didn't ignore his pleads for help!

Chapter 533 – Small Invisibility Tricks

Even though Huang Quan and the others did not receive any news that Yue Yang had new team mates, they could still sense from their presence that Soaring Dragon Continent had sent reinforcement.

In comparison, Huang Quan and the others looked to be alone in battle.

After losing their teammates, there had been no new reinforcement from north, south and east.

It was not that there were no more experts, but that none of them wanted to participate in this ancient war's death arena given how cruel the Ancient Code was. The reason why Huang Quan and the others participated was because of the desire to obtain the Divine Equipment and increase their power.

Going by their abilities, could they be said to be the strongest rankers to represent north, south and east?

Definitely not!

“I will give you guys 10 minutes..... Gather all your teammates! What I hope to see is a truly fair match. I do not want to see too many outstanding juniors die in this meaningless battle! The purpose of this ancient arena was not to wipe out the rankers in the lower levels, but to produce more elites through such battles. You all have mistaken death arena's purpose..... You all are the

most outstanding existences. I hope that you will all strengthen yourselves during the battle, instead of wrongly fighting each other.” The mysterious man cloaked in an amethyst cloak spoke with a tone that seemed to bemoan the state of everyone on the battlefield. When he raised his hands, he calmed all of the violent Ancient Slaughterer Captains, Commnades and even the Beast King. A soft light spread out from his hand like moonlight. All of the irritable Ancient Slaughterers sat down quietly, obedient like small dogs.

After this mysterious man stretched out his hand, Huang Quan and the others were all convinced.

They could not help it.

The Ancient Slaughterer Beast King was a strong Heaven Ranked level 5 beast that could ignore everything and just attack everything.

But, when this man just stretched out his hand, it was pacified, without even any resistance, what did this prove?

If this mysterious man attacked everyone, no one, not even the strongest Huang Quan could withstand a single hit.

Around the mysterious man, there were 4 Heaven Ranked Level 3 rankers. In the east, was a 12-winged angel. He was shorter than the Ancient War God and was only around 3 meters tall. He held a Golden Sacred Sword, with a majestic presence that was pure and holy. In the west, was a general donned in silver armor who was

slightly taller than a human. He looked extremely human and his imposing manner was like a war god that controlled tens of thousands of soldiers, with incomparable might. In the south, was a huge tiger man whose bare upper body was extremely built like a white horse. He was five meters tall with defined muscles. His body was covered with extremely unique battle scars. In the north stood a Lich, whose entire body glowed with an eerie light. He held a White Bone Staff, and his eyes glowed with a blinding red light.

With only the ability of these 4 interferers, they are likely able to wipe out everyone in the entire death arena.

“Forgive Huang Quan’s boldness, but are you, are you the Senior Shi Feng from the Central Palace?” Huang Quan suddenly bowed towards the amethyst cloaked mysterious man.

“Is Shi Feng the only one famous among everyone from the Central Palace?” The mysterious man denied his identity.

“Then you must be Senior Cang Yan.....?”

Fen Tian begun excitedly salute: “I am from the North Heaven Realm’s Fire Clan, Burning Sun City Master’s Third Disciple Fen Tian, pays my respects to seniors!”

The mysterious man nodded his head slightly in response.

With his acknowledgement, other that Yue Yang and Black Hell King, those such as Huang Quan, Yun Xing were all in shock. What

did Central palace was to Heaven Realm, they who have trained in Heaven Realm where very clear. The Central Palace did not belong to any sect, but all of its members were picked from the the most elite rankers from each sect in Heaven realm. To be a member of Central Palace was the greatest honour for any ranker.

The Central Palace was also a unique organization that any disciple from all sects could join without leaving their original sect.

There were so many powerful people, that it was extremely mysterious.

This was the more accurate description of Central palace.

Not to mention outsiders, even the members of Central Palace did not know how many people were part of the it.....

When Huang Quan and the others all heard Cang Yan's name, they were all in shock. Weng Jin and that Gold Rigid Emperor were also strangely agitated. This was because even though this mysterious man 'Cang Yan' was a Ranker of the Central Palace, he was the pride of North Heaven Realm since he was been born there.

Strictly speaking, to Fen Tian and Weng Jin, Cang Yan was their senior!

Huang Quan and Yun Xing secretly exchanged looks. It was not good that a senior from Fen Tian's North Heaven Realm was here

as the arbiter.

Now, they could not even hope to obtain the Divine Equipment.

They could only hope to leave safely.

Towards all that was happening before him, Yue Yang was unmoved.

What he was concerned with was his new teammates..... Once his new teammates entered the crystal plaza, they followed the agreement Yue Yang sent to Hai Yingwu in his message to quietly enter their Grimoire World and wait for Yue Yang there.

Yue Yang now understood.

Those that have come were all on his side, and not reinforcements for Black Hell King or the Sky Emperor.

As for whether it was Night empress and Zhi Zun who had come, Yue Yang was still not 100% sure. This was because with the effect of the Heaven Realm interferer's presence and how they had quickly entered their Grimoire World, Yue Yang was almost unable to sense his new teammates' presence at all. But still, there was one thing Yue Yang was sure of. Princess Qian Qian was here. This was because Yue Yang had strong telepathy with the Prison Emperor Divine Sword she was carrying.

Even though it was Princess Qian Qian who was using the Prison

Emperor Divine Sword, this Divine Sword actually recognizes Yue Yang as its owner.

It was only because of the last wish of Prison Emperor's remaining soul, that caused it to be wrongly passed to Princess Qian Qian.

“It does not matter where the arbiter comes from, he will be fair to all parties. You all bring all of your teammates here, those that do not have enough ability to join the battle can be under our protection for now. This will prevent elimination by the Ancient Code due to not having enough points. After the Divine Equipment chooses its owner, everyone will be brought away from the death areana by the arbiters. Only those with sufficient ability to participate, no matter which party, the arbiter would fairly supervise without any form of bias.” Mysterious man ‘Cang Yan’ put forth a professional front, and generously guaranteed to get rid of everyone’s problem of being eliminated by the Ancient Code from the lack of points.

“.....” Huang Quan and Yun Xing were skeptical.

They felt that things went uphill too quickly, too smoothly.

In fact, they seemed different from the interferers Yue Yang mentioned earlier. Who should they believe? They could not decide!

“Thank you Senior Cang yan!” Fen Tian, Weng Jin and Gold Rigid Emperor chose to believe without a single doubt, and bowed

gratefully.

They were now brimming with confidence.

Even though this was supposed to be a fair battle, but since the arbiter came from the same home town, it was still better than him coming from elsewhere. At least the Northern Heaven Realm did not have to worry about being unfairly treated.

Huang Quan actually wanted to say something to Yue Yang, but Yue Yang pretended not to hear anything.

He communicated silently.

Leave.

Of course, Yue Yang knew that all this speak of fair supervision were all bullshit! It did not matter if this mysterious man was Cang yan from Central Palace, even if he was, he was here not to save them, but to kill them. Were they really so great? That they would actually come to the death arena from Heaven Realm just to save people? Impossible! Even if he had not went into the Black Hole Space to ask Empress Fei Wen Li, Yue Yang would never believe that Cang Yan and the others were arbiters. Not to mention, Yue Yang already knew the true identity of these arbiters.

To Huang Quan and his party, Yue Yang could openly warn them.

However, his warning might not be effective. Huang Quan and his party might not believe him.

By doing so, Yue Yang was inviting trouble for himself.

He would become everyone's target.

As they say, save oneself first!

Before Yue Yang could ensure his safety by 100%, he would never open his mouth to expose the tricks of 'Cang Yan'.

Cang Yan definitely was not here with well intentions. Before they could communicate with Black Hell King that betrayer and set him as their target, he had to slip back safely for now to meet up with Night empress and Zhi Zun. As for how the battle will go later, Yue Yang needed to rethink his strategy because these Heaven Realm interferers had arrived earlier than he thought.

Seeing Yue Yang teleport away as fast as he could, Black Hell King's eyes shone.

He appeared to have come to a decision.

He chased after Yue Yang quickly.

"Ba Yi, Tiger and Feng Shi, all of you come out!" Black Hell King did not attack Yue Yang, but only followed him at a distance while

he called out to the Sky Emperor and his two subordinates.

Yue Yang did not care that Black Hell King sent his friends and subordinate to die. But if War Tiger of the East, Fierce Tooth of the North and Sky Emperor believed the Black Hell King, they deserved to die! Yue Yang used both hands to draw a unique rune circle made from Heaven Runes and sent it to the top of the dome.

After receiving this agreed-upon signal, a splendor shone in the sky.

Princess Qian Qian that was carrying Prison Emperor Divine Sword and Xue Wu Xia who was holding on to Gold-ranked ancient book appeared before Yue Yang.

Seeing the two women arrive, Yue Yang was both surprised and delighted: “Why are you guys here? Didn’t I forbid you two from coming?”

Even though he appeared to be blaming them, his arms pulled them into a tight embrace.

It had been a long time.

Yue Yang really missed them so much.....

He originally wanted to ask ‘where were Night Empress and Zhi Zun’ before he noticed Xue Wu Xia waving her hands drawing a secret signal, and so he did not ask.

He suppressed the mad delight in his heart.

Night Empress and Zhi Zun had already came.

It was just that they had a certain plan, and did not want to reveal themselves to the enemy just yet!

When she saw Yue Yang, Princess Qian Qian put down any front she had for him and threw herself into his arms. She was completely unwilling to let go of Yue Yang, as if that if she let go, Yue Yang would disappear. Her eyes were slightly red, her lips were trembling slightly, words stopping at the tip of her tongue. Yue Yang held her little face, wanting to see whether this tigress had changed in any way after not seeing her for so long. She suddenly bent her head to bite on Yue Yang's shoulder hardly with her silver teeth: "Fool, why did you come here? We were all worried sick!"

Xue Wu Xia was calmer. Seeing that Black Hell King was approaching them with ill-intentions, she quickly reminded: "Let us talk after we go back to the Grimoire World!"

Under the guidance of Xiao Wen Li, Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia entered the Grimoire World.

The Silver Armor General that represented the Western Heaven Realm arbiter flew here at a high speed.

“Wait a minute.....”

Without waiting for his voice to even reach their ears, Yue Yang and the two ladies have returned to the Grimoire World.

No matter what flowery words the enemy had, don't think that Yue Yang would even believe a single word. To believe the enemy's words was the same as digging one's own grave!

Black Hell King almost completely disregarded Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia's strength. But as for Princess Qian Qian's Prison Emperor Divine Sword, he could not help but shudder at the sight of it. He knew better than anyone else how terrifying this Divine Sword was! Now that Yue Yang had the Prison Emperor Divine Sword, and with the arrival of the Heaven Realm arbiters, Black Hell King was having a huge headache!

Back in the Grimoire World, Yue Yang could wait no longer and asked Xue Wu Xia: “Where are Night Empress and Zhi Zun?”

“We have always been behind you!” Suddenly, Night Empress's voice came from behind Yue Yang: “To avoid being detected by that ‘Cang Yan’, we used some small tricks to hide ourselves.”

Chapter 534 – Yue Yang's Breakthrough

Night Empress' words shocked Yue Yang.

When did she come in?

How could he not have sensed anything? Even if it was Tong Tian Tower's Ultimate Killer An Xi was invisible, Yue Yang could still sense him.

Now, even after Night Empress entered his Grimoire World that was entirely under his control, he was unable to sense her presence at all..... What did the mysterious Night Empress look like, Yue Yang was extremely curious. He quickly turned around to take a look at Night Empress.

Who would have thought, there was no one behind him.

“Even though your eyesight and perception seem to be quite refined, you cannot see us.” Night Empress' words made Yue Yang sweat profusely.

It turned out that other than Night Empress, Zhi Zun was also here.

In fact, Zhi Zun was also invisible.

Even Yue Yang's Heaven Eyes Divine Vision could not see

them..... What level were they really? What sort of invisibility trick was this? Did they borrow the power of Divine Equipment, or was this their innate skill?

Yue Yang could not get an explanation no matter how hard he tried. He only knew that both Zhi Zun and Night Empress were in front of him.

Whatever, instead of trying to figure out how the mysterious Zhi Zun and Night Empress can became invisible, he should be thinking of what strategy he could use to deal with the enemy. Yue Yang quickly pushed aside the matter of invisibility and greeted the space respectfully in front of him like an obedient kid. Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia also respectfully bowed after Yue Yang.

“There is no need for formalities, go straight into updating us all on the situation!” Zhi Zun’s voice rang out. It sounded clear as a river stream, extremely unique.

In front of Zhi Zun, even the fearless Phoenix Fairy Beauty did not dare to make a sound.

She could only hold her breath.

Southern Goblin King was very excited, you must know, Zhi Zun was her idol.

Yue Yang quickly explained the current situation of death arena. He also shared the information he got from Empress Fei Wen Li

and his own speculations: “The arrival of the interferers is not a good thing for sure. Their target could very likely be us. If Jiu Xiao and Xu Kong did not escape from Prison Emperor Divine Palace, the people in Heaven Realm might not know that rankers from Tong Tian Tower have already fallen to such a disastrous state..... I suspect that it was either Jiu Xiao or Xu Kong who used my blood to begin this ancient war. It could also be Scarlet Emperor since he might have also escaped to Heaven Realm.”

“Scarlet Emperor should still be in the Soaring Dragon Continent. Compared to going to Heaven Realm, he might as well think of how to obtain the secret treasure in God’s Ruins.” After Night Empress said so, Yue Yang suddenly understood why Night Empress and Zhi Zun were so ‘late’. The reason was because Scarlet Emperor was still in Soaring Dragon Continent, with their departure, there would be no one left to guard Soaring Dragon Continent.

“Actually we have enough points already.....” Yue Yang suddenly felt that it was better for Night Empress and Zhi Zun to not come. With them gone, problems might easily arise in Soaring Dragon Continent.

“Let us not think about the Scarlet Emperor for now.” Zhi Zun urged Yue Yang to forget his concerns: “Since things have come to this, let us put our all into the fight! You have trained well, your wit and innate skills are completely unmatched. You are just too calm, and too much of a perfectionist. You are too concerned about the wins and losses. This does not mean that being resourceful is not good. It is just that a tyrant should turn his nose up at the whole world, the heavens and the ground. He should look down at the strongest in the world as blades of grass, and see tens of

thousands of enemies as nothing but air, to become the Zhi Zun of this world!”

Zhi Zun’s words shook Yue Yang’s heart.

Just like a strike of lightning, it lit up Yue Yang’s heart.

To be the Zhi Zun of the world.

Yue Yang had just been caught in a bottleneck, and her words completely shook Yue Yang, enlightening him.

It was as if a heavy door in his heart had been open.

Zhi Zun had easily and directly pushed open the door.

Yue Yang closed his eyes. Zhi Zun’s words aroused a completely new insight in him, his body was burning with excitement: She is right. If he was strong enough, why did he have to worry about any arrangements or any plans? When facing the ultimate power, no matter how good, how clever a plan, it was all useless! His concerns all arose because he was not strong enough. The one who was really powerful was not just strong physically, he was also strong mentally!

It was not that he was not strong.....

It was just that he did not have the same powerful mindset as Zhi

Zun.

This sort of mindset was not arrogance. Rather, it was a clear understanding of one's own power. It can be said to be the real awareness of oneself.

Maybe Zhi Zun saw that he was still in the dark about his true self, and so intentionally said those words to enlighten him!

In an instant, after receiving Zhi Zun's enlightenment, Yue Yang's mentally upgraded in an indescribable way.

His previous mentality broke through immediately, and levelled up to a whole new level.

Yue Yang's qi had been suppressed.

It was like a sleeping dragon.

When everyone was at a loss, Yue Yang's qi completely exploded like a volcano.

Countless rays of splendor shone from Yue Yang's hands, body and face. A portion of those rays naturally formed Flame Lotuses, another portion formed Frost Snowflakes. The lightning that was originally dissociated outside Yue Yang's body suddenly shone in Yue Yang's eyes, interweaving with each other, turning his irises a peculiar purple. His Star Explosion Domain rapidly expanded from a extremely small area into the size of a nebula, turning into

constellations like an entire galaxy.

Runes started to appear on the surface of his skin,

Forming many different patterns.

As for his gift from the Phoenix Sisters, the Nirvana Flame Phoenix, it raised its head and flew towards the skies and dived down to fuse with him. It turned into Nirvana Flame Armor and Nirvana Flame Wings that were covered with a stunning phoenix motif.

This Nirvana Flame Armor and Nirvana Flame Wings were more beautiful and powerful than last time.

Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian and Phoenix Fairy Beauty who had practiced [Body Fusion] with Yue Yang before could not help but float up and dance around him like heavenly maidens. They automatically entered the realm of complete synchronisation with Yue Yang. With his enlightenment, they also upgraded at the same time. Even though they did not level up as fast as Yue Yang, it was also significant fast.

Only after a long time, did Yue Yang recover from his enlightenment.

His entire aura had completely changed.

Even Princess Qian Qian and the others who have been there the

whole time felt that he had completely changed. Even Yue Yang himself felt like he had become a powerful ranker.

With each movement, he could feel that he was moving with the heaven and the earth. The mysterious feeling he received when he had an enlightenment in the past was also now completely within the control. Yue Yang could not even fathom how much he had improved. What can be determined today, was that Yue Yang's power had increased by another large step.

Now, be it the domain power or the power of the Cards of Fate, or the Innate Invisible Sword Qi, the control of the two swords 'Gui Zang' and 'Shuang Hua', Yue Yang had gained a deeper understanding in all of it. Yue Yang raised his hands, he almost could not believe the power he had now. Only now did he realise that what Empress Fei Wen Li said was all true. He was very powerful, he had only used a small fraction of that power.

Even though Yue Yang was not able to use all of his power yet, he was already completely different from a mere 10 minutes ago.

His power had greatly increased!

"Even though you might not be the most hardworking when it comes to training, but when it comes to wit and innate skill, you are definitely the best. No one can compare to you." Night Empress was surprised by Yue Yang's improvement. She had never seen anyone who was able to suddenly breakthrough and level up like this.

“Even though you are not yet at the level of an Elder Innate, you can still pull through with other qualities.” Zhi Zun was also pleased with Yue Yang’s speed of growth.

Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian were embracing each other in rejoice.

Even though Phoenix Fairy Beauty appeared calm and collected, her heart was bursting with joy.

Forget the results of her battle with her sister in the past, at least with Yue Yang, she had won over her sister.

In the past, she had made up her mind to snatch Yue Yang over out of jealousy of her sister. She had planned to make him fall and become evil. But after spending a lot of time with him, not only did she fail to make him evil, she had unwittingly become attracted to him. Afterwards, she trained with him and even whet through a battle of life and death with him..... And today, they were already husband and wife. Even though that fight was pointless now, she was still in the lead.

This was the only time in her entire life that she was better than her sister.

Of course Phoenix Fairy Beauty only thought of this in her heart, she would never dare to say it out loud.

“You guys have just met after a long period of separation, I

believe you guys have a lot to talk about. For now, everyone take a rest for an hour before we go out to meet the guests from Heaven Realm!” Night Empress grinned, giving Yue Yang an hour break.

Up till the end, she and Zhi Zun did not reveal themselves and only left without a sound.

Ten minutes ago, Yue Yang was completely unable to sense Night Empress and Zhi Zun.

After the breakthrough, even though Yue Yang still couldn’t see them, but he could roughly feel that not far from him, there was someone likely to be the Night Empress. As for Zhi Zun, Yue Yang realised that he still could not sense her presence. Maybe he needed to level up another time, he needed to become stronger.

What level were they?

For now, Yue Yang did not dare make any presumptions.

This was because the power Night Empress and Zhi Zun displayed had greatly exceeded Yue Yang’s imagination.

Crystal plaza.

While Yue Yang, Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian were deep in embrace to relieve the pain of separation, Elder Nan Gong, Emperor of the Underworld and the Sky Emperor were arguing in front of the Silver Armor General.

They all held different opinions, no one could convince the other.

“The Ancient Code will not change easily. I hope everyone will not choose to side with the arbiter. After all, we are still the representatives of the West Heaven Realm.” Elder Nan Gong did not trust Sky Emperor, War Tiger and Fierce Tooth. He hope that the 20 Innates would stay behind, and not leave the team easily.

“How can you say that?” the Sky Emperor criticised him with delight and anger: “No one is strong enough. Isn’t it better to side with the arbiter for now? By leaving the team we can prevent being wiped out by the Ancient Code! Furthermore we entered this ancient arena by accident, we did not want to do this!”

“Siding with them? I refuse.” Emperor of the Underworld was the first to disappear back to his Grimoire World.

Other than Yue Yang, he would not trust anyone else.

If Yue Clan’s Third Young Master was the one suggesting it, Emperor of the Underworld might consider it for a while. But this was good news brought to them by Black Hell King, Emperor of the Underworld would not even consider it.

What kind of person was the Black Hell King? Someone who would sell him, and make him count the cash, the kind of person who was ruthless, vicious and greedy – that was the kind of person Black Hell King was! Furthermore, Black Hell King had betrayed

the team and was their enemy now. How could the words of the enemy be trusted?

Emperor of the Underworld would never believe him.....

But unlike Elder Nan Gong, he would never persuade his companions to stay behind. Every person had their own opinion, this sort of things could not be forced!

Just as the Emperor of the Underworld thought, when Silver Armor General promised that this was only a temporary alliance that could help them escape from the Ancient Code, all of the Innate Rankers were tempted. They bowed to Elder Nan Gong who had been protecting them the whole time: “Elder Nan Gong, we are very sorry. As you know, we are all weak and can not be of much help to the team. Rather than burdening the team, it would be better for us to leave early.”

The Sky Emperor also hit his chest and promised: “Everyone should not worry, even though I do not have the same reputation as Elder Nan Gong, I am also not a ruthless tyrant. If you are all willing to side with the arbiters, I will take care of everyone as the temporarily appointed team leader. I promise to forget all of the resentment from the past. We will work together and leave death arena together.”

Even though they did not say anything explicitly, all of the 20 Innates have already gone to stand behind the Sky Emperor.

In the face of death, they were willing to believe the words of the

arbiters.

They chose to leave their team, and submit to someone else's subordination.....

What else could Elder Nan Gong say?

“Good luck to all of you!” Elder Nan Gong sighed. He knew that Yue Yang would not help them anymore, regardless of whether they could or could not escape from the Ancient Code.

Because this was also a form of betrayal.

If not for Yue Yang, all of these people would most likely be dead by now.

Even though it was smart for them to leave now, and could even be considered as wisely submitting to the circumstances, this was the worst betrayal for Yue Yang, who had persisted to fight. Elder Nan Gong knew that Yue Yang would never forgive them..... Even though he knew what Yue Yang was like, and what would the outcome be, Elder Nan Gong could still not make them change their minds. Even those human Innates that he looked out for specially, they still chose betrayal.

“I am sorry!” One of the human Innates bowed to Elder Nan Gong apologetically.

“It is okay. Actually, by this age I am already use to parting. It is

regretful that we are choosing different paths. From here, you all have to take care of yourselves.” Elder Nan Gong also rejected Silver Armor General’s suggestion and returned to the Grimoire World.

Black Hell King already knew that he would not be able to pull Elder Nan Gong over.

In fact, he also knew that when Elder Nan Gong shared the news of siding with the arbiters to those Innates, it was to test their loyalty.

The results of the test was obvious, everyone failed.

A glint of mockery flashed in Black Hell King’s eyes. It disappeared quickly before the Sky Emperor and the Innates even noticed. He looked at the direction Yue Yang disappeared in and muttered: “Yue Clan’s Third Young Master will be back very soon. Everyone should leave quickly!”

By the time the Sky Emperor followed the Silver Armor General to the central plaza, there was already a crowd there. They were all the relatives and friends of Fen Tian and Weng Jin who lived in the Grimoire World. There were also many Ancient Warriors, the Ancient War Gods were especially striking. When the Sky Emperor saw that Huang Quan, Yun Xing and the Three-Eyed Tiger Man we’re all here, especially the two Ancient War Gods, he was completely relieved.....

It seems that this was not a trap!

Even though it was a little embarrassing to submit to the arbiters, it was better than being dead.

Moreover, this was only temporary.

“Other than the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master, Emperor of the Underworld and Elder Nan Gong from the West Heaven Realm are not here, everyone else is present.” Silver Armor General reported to the mysterious man ‘Cang Yan’.

“In that case, let us go through with the submission!” mysterious man Cang Yan waved his hand, he sounded as if he was a savior who have come to save all of them.

Sky Emperor Ba Yi was about to step forward to bow to the 12-winged Angel.

Suddenly, the 12-winged Angel, Tiger Man, Lich and even the Silver Armor General, who was standing in front of him, suddenly began a massacre. The Human Innates walking beside Sky Emperor did not react at all, and were killed by Silver Armor General’s sword in a split instant. Before the word ‘escape’ even flashed into his mind, the Sky Emperor could only see the Silver Armor General’s right hand magnifying rapidly right in front of his eyes, landing onto his face.....

Chapter 535 – Surrender On Your Knees?

The death of a teammate triggered the death penalty. The hunters would receive a greater advantage.

Yue Yang hadn't even sat down to chat with Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian before what seemed to be the consciousness of the creator of the Ancient Code flashed in his mind again. It notified him, as the team leader, a reasonable yet unexpected piece of news. Yue Yang understood in his heart that with the blatant enticement of the interferers, there would be some Innates who would switch sides... But he just never expected it to be so fast!

Could it be that these guys didn't even use their brains to think about reality?

Did the threat of death rendered them brainless?

What was even stranger was why would the enemy attack so fast? They had not even tried to entice him before they began to kill people?

"What's wrong?" Princess Qian Qian suddenly noticed Yue Yang's abnormal expression.

"I have to go outside to look around." Yue Yang had no idea how many people had died out there.

"Be careful." Xue Wu Xia knew Yue Yang the best.

When Yue Yang left the Grimoire World, he found Elder Nan Gong and Emperor of the Underworld outside as well, sensing the events that was happening in the central plaza with violent emotions.

Yue Yang felt his heart lightened up upon seeing his strongest ally, Elder Nan Gong, unhurt.

As for Emperor of the Underworld, Yue Yang was also happy that he was not fooled.

This proved that Emperor of the Underworld valued teamwork and would be true to his word in addition to being smart. He was a trustworthy teammate. In front of the threat of death, in front of such a wonderful enticement, it wasn't easy but the Emperor of the Underworld had managed to withstand temptation and stand firm.

“Little Yue Yang, I'm sorry I couldn't convince them.” Elder Nan Gong looked down and shook his head disheartenedly.

“We are the only few left.” Emperor of the Underworld hinted that a massacre was happening at the central plaza and the chance of survival for those who were lured in were low.

“Those who could leave but did not leave would also leave in the end. You two rest first, I will check out the situation. Don't worry, I'll be fine.” Yue Yang nodded at Elder Nan Gong and Emperor of the Underworld. With the breakthrough of his mental state as well as being secretly accompanied by Zhi Zun and Night Empress, Yue

Yang left for the central plaza calmly.

Central plaza.

By this time, it had already become the site of a slaughter.

The families and friends of Fen Tian and Weng Jin were all killed. What had been left of the Ancient Warriors were also killed in this huge massacre.

The Ancient War God guarding the Eastern Heaven Realm, the 50 meter tall 12-Winged Angel and the Western Heaven Realm's 80 meter tall Tiger-lion Man were both knocked down on the floor. The Ancient Slaughterer Beast King had brought 4 commanders and 6 captains as they ganged up to beat the War Gods until they were heavily injured and breathing to their last. Huang Quan, Yun Xing and Fen Tian desperately tried to stop the assault, hoping to save their comrades but to no avail as the arbiters had flanked them continued to attack.

The mysterious man Cang Yan emitted a special domain which enveloped the entire central plaza.

Within his domain, the weakest insect man was knocked down and heavily injured to the point of dying.

The Golden Rigid Emperor was chopped into 8 pieces.

He was the first Heaven Realm Innate to die in battle... Soaked in

blood, Fen Tian fought bravely. Despite putting his life aside to intercept the attack, not only could he not save his comrade but he also placed himself in imminent danger.

“Kill me too, you god-damn liar!” Fen Tian was different from Huang Quan and Yun Xing. Turns out he had trusted Cang Yan unreservedly. However, he only received cruel deceit in exchange. He had wanted to share with his beloved wife the joy of success, but he only brought her nightmarish deceit and even her death!

“Damn it!” Although none of their loved ones were killed, Huang Quan and Yun Xing, who had chosen to trust their enemy in the end, were just as furious.

It was because of the disparity in skills and the success of the enemy’s conspiracy.

Huang Quan knew.

This was a battle that cannot be won.

All they could do was to do their best to kill the enemy, to make every effort to avenge their extreme shame and humiliation.

“Black Hell, save me!” Sky Emperor Ba Yi was still alive. His power would never have been able to keep him alive until now, but he was not the main target of the massacre. Taking a fatal hit head on from the Sliver Armored General, his face shattered, teeth fell out and stained his beautiful face with blood.

“I’m sorry, but, I can’t help you.” Confronted with the pleading of his good friend, Black Hell King turned his head away and shook his head slowly in refusal.

“I’m willing to switch to your side. Would you please, give me a chance...” Sky Emperor could not return to the Grimoire World. Under the strange domain deployed by the mysterious man Cang Yan, nobody was able to leave that easily.

“Is that so?” the mysterious man Cang Yan dismissed the plea with a wave of his hand and then, in the tone of a savior, he said: “Get on your knees and beg me.”

As a chief officer of the Guang Ming Continent and as one of the Five Emperors of the Tong Tian Tower, the Sky Emperor had never knelt in front of anyone before ever since the moment he was born.

Was it really possible to exchange his life with his humiliation and surrender?

Sky Emperor had no idea but he also had no choice... Under the stunned gaze of War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North, he knelt down, the sound of his knees hitting the cold floor of the central plaza rang out.

Humiliation filled his heart but his face remained indifferent. His tears mixed with his blood and dripped onto the floor as he bent his head and kowtowed.

To save his life, he had abandoned his honor as an Innate.

Yue Yang arrived just in time to see this scene.

Stunned.

Although this had nothing to do with him and the Sky Emperor was also not someone good, they were still teammates.

As one of the Five Emperors of Tong Tian Tower, it was the greatest disgrace for Sky Emperor to humiliatingly beg for his life like this. If past generation of Innates from the Soaring Dragon Continent ever find out, they would probably curse this later generation for losing their face! A warrior can be killed but not humiliated. Yue Yang did not know why Sky Emperor did it, but he knew that even if the Sky Emperor did this, Cang Yan would never let him off that easily!

Weaklings had no human rights!

No matter what the Sky Emperor did, he would never be pitied nor pardoned.

Cang Yan wanted to humiliate the Sky Emperor before killing him, to gain more satisfaction from abusing the weak.

“Sky Emperor, Sky Emperor Ba Yi, what you are doing is

useless...” Yue Yang sighed sadly. Compared to the Ocean Emperor Guan Lan, the Sky Emperor’s skills were not all that bad. However, when it comes to an Innate’s pride and honor, the Sky Emperor was still far away. The Ocean Emperor chose to fight to the death even when he knew he had lost, he was unwilling to surrender. Even if he died, he would be heroic and hold his head high, to repay the grudges he owed An Xi many years back.

The Ocean Emperor Guan Lan had died valiantly.

Although Yue Yang carried out Elder An Xi’s wishes to the end and killed the Ocean Emperor, he personally deeply respected this man who had the courage to face up to his misdeeds instead of judging the man by success or failure.

Sky Emperor, was also a part of the Five Emperors of Tong Tian Tower. But he had, at the final moment, knelt to beg for forgiveness from his enemy.

This action filled Yue Yang’s heart with disappointment...

This also made Yue Yang realize that what defines a powerful Innate was not their skills but their mentality. A lamb that possessed the strength of a lion was still nothing but a lamb! Sky Emperor may be considered a was still quite strong in terms of power. Although he was not the strongest, he still had the ability to protect himself. However, instead of fighting for his life, he began begging on his knees. The Sky Emperor’s mentality had fallen to that of a weakling.

“Leave me alone. Since you can’t help me, then leave me alone!” Sky Emperor trembled abnormally in extreme pain.

Having always been at the top, he would obviously be endlessly humiliated.

Yet, when faced with an enemy he could never defeat.

What choice did he have?

Sky Emperor did not want to die here. He wanted to be alive like the Black Hell King.

“Good job, I like smart people. Now, the benevolent me will offer each and everyone of you a choice to be like him, kneel and beg!” draped in his amethyst cloak, Cang Yan spread his hands in an act of mercy, showing his willingness to accept them.

“Pooh! You god-damn liar, I want to drink your blood and skin you!” Fen Tian, who had the utmost respect for Cang Yan, could only see red as his eyes were shooting flames.

“This is a bloody battle that we will fight to the death.” Huang Quan was as firm as a boulder.

“Ah Hu, Feng Shi, come over!” Black Hell King called out for his two loyal subordinates.

War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North looked at each other.

Suddenly, both of them knelt down.

Their knees on the floor...

Comparing the representatives from the East, South, West, North Heaven realm, Yue Yang was slightly speechless. Did West Heaven Realm specialise in producing people with no backbone? So be it with Sky Emperor but even War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North knelt for forgiveness? However, it was really no surprise that they knelt since their master was originally Black Hell King. Now that Black Hell King was on the enemy camp, it was only reasonable and expected for them to switch sides. This was not completely outside of Yue Yang's expectation.

“Hell King, Hu Tou and Feng Shi have followed you for years. We have always been loyal and never went against your wishes.” War Tiger of the East kowtowed.

“Good, now get up and come here!” Black Hell King also hated to part with his two able subordinates. It was easy to find capable people but not as easy to find loyal ones.

“We are not yet finished... Hell King, we were once your servants, everything we have had been bestowed by you. If this incident today had not occurred, we would have followed you forever and not let you down after your kindness towards us. But, we are on different sides in this battle today, so forgive us for our

disloyalty. We are unable to follow you any longer, our skills and favor, we shall return them to you now... Feng Shi bids you farewell here!" Fierce Tooth of the North kowtowed and in a flash, grabbed his dagger and plunged it into his heart.

Twisting it with Sword Qi, he reached into his body and dug out his heart.

He crushed his heart to smithereens in front of Black Hell King's confused gaze.

War Tiger of the East closed his eyes...

He increased his power explosively to his limit. He flew towards the nearest Ancient Slaughterer Captain, self-detonated and died.

Even if War Tiger of the East knew self-detonation was useless, he still choose to die in battle, instead of surrendering docilely!

They were willing to kneel to repay the favor but would never beg for their lives!

Chapter 536 – Zhi Zun's Impressive Appearance

Yue Yang felt very surprised at the actions of War Tiger and Fierce Tooth.

At the same time, he felt a surge of respect for them.

Despite that they were the enemy.

Still, no matter who they were, as long as they were faithfully loyal, they would earn the respect of other people. This world would never lack of geniuses nor the mighty. What it truly lacked were subordinates like War Tiger and Fierce Tooth, who had remained loyal to their death. It's not easy to be subservient and even harder to remain loyal to both sides. War Tiger and Fierce Tooth had chosen death instead of betrayal when they were unable to approve of Black Hell King's beliefs.

Pain flashed in Black Hell King's eyes. He could have prevented the deaths of War Tiger and Fierce Tooth.

But without a doubt, no matter what he did , the ending would be the same.

He did not want War Tiger and Fierce Tooth to kill themselves, but he also did not have the power to keep these two unmovingly loyal subordinates alive.

Firstly, the factions had changed but War Tiger and Fierce Tooth had refused to abandon their pride as Innates and change sides to be with the Heaven Realm arbiters; secondly, with his strength, Black Hell King had no say in matters over on this side.

“Black Hell King, you’re such a failure!” Yue Yang could not hold back his rage at the silence of this traitor of 6000 years ago and sneered at Black Hell King.

“...” Black Hell King only maintained his silence as pain momentarily shined in his eyes before it instantly disappeared.

“I am truly sincere about pledging myself to this side, please accept me.” Sky Emperor Ba Yi no longer had any care for everyone’s derision. He had already knelt down so it did not matter to him if he begged Cang Yan.

“Very well, for those who are sincere in switching allegiance, I will definitely not reject.” mysterious man Cang Yan waved his hands: “You are 2km away from the crystal passage. If you can prove your abilities by reaching the crystal passage within 10 seconds, then I’ll take you in. Not only you, everyone has to know that I will never accept useless subordinates.”

“Yes.” Sky Emperor Ba Yi had enough confidence with his speed and believed that 10 seconds was sufficient.

“You fool...” Yue Yang was speechless.

“Shut up, leave me alone, I’m sincerely in pledging loyalty to Lord Cang Yan. Don’t drag me down, I don’t want to die together with all of you, I want to live well. I will not die here for nothing! Your human behaviors are meaningless to me. I only want to live nicely and not die a heroic death!” Sky Emperor Ba Yi angrily roared at Yue Yang. He knew that Yue Yang despised him and in truth he also despised himself. However, he had no choice. Reality was harsh. If he did not surrender, he would die. War Tiger and Fierce Tooth had died in front of him, so he was absolutely unwilling to reach this kind of end. He wanted to live and continue doing big things!

Yue Yang kept silent and Black Hell King only wanted to save himself.

Sky Emperor could only depend on himself now.

He summoned his Guardian Beasts with some other beasts and increased his power to the limit.

He levelled up without reservations to the peak of Innate Level 10, just to take a chance at his life... At the wave of the mysterious man Cang Yan’s hand, Sky Emperor shot out like an arrow.

The force had split the air. becoming a sonic boom.

Sky Emperor’s body streaked across the sky like a shooting star as he travelled at an extremely fast speed.

Having went all out, Sky Emperor reached the crystal passage before his 10 seconds were up. He even had time to return to his original position in 10 seconds. He sneaked a peek at Cang Yan and when he saw the admiration on Cang Yan's face, he knelt down immediately and bowed to Cang Yan, hoping to gain favour.

“Very well, pretty good speed. I announce that you are my subordinate from now on.” Cang Yan's words moved Sky Emperor to tears.

“I swear my loyalty to Lord Cang Yan, faithful until death!” Sky Emperor pledged his loyalty hurriedly as he raised his hand.

“Since you're one of my men, you belong to me in entirety, including your life... now, die for me!” Suddenly, the mysterious man Cang Yan raised his right hand and clenched his fist. A giant hand appeared around Sky Emperor inside the strange domain Cang Yan created. The hand tightened around the Sky Emperor like he was just a wooden puppet and with a blood-curling scream, the Sky Emperor's body was crushed like a wooden puppet in the hands of a giant. All his muscles and bones were crushed to mush and his body fell to the ground.

Before he could beg for mercy, Sky Emperor's body exploded with a 'boom'.

Blood, bones and flesh splattered across the sky.

The Silver Armor General and the other arbiters burst out in laughter like they had just seen the funniest fool in the world.

Black Hell King's expression changed slightly but he still remained silent.

On the other hand, Fen Tian, Yun Xing and the others were burning with rage.

Even Huang Quan, who was the most cool-headed of them, widened his eyes in anger, he could not restrain himself: "Cang Yan, you're too much. Even if you are from a higher Heaven Realm, you shouldn't toy and humiliate us like that!"

"You ant-like creatures, don't be too naive." Cang Yan mocked. "Besides death, the only treatment you can get is humiliation. Because eternal humiliation is best matched with weaklings. Huang Quan, I've heard of you. You want to challenge me with your mediocre Heaven Ranked Level 3 skills? You're overrating your abilities... When you all started the ancient war of the death arena joyously, you were doomed to this fate! To think that you still believed that we were the arbiters from Heaven Realm. I will tell you one truth before you all die! We are actually Ancient Slaughterers. The real arbiters died millions of years ago!"

"Third Young Master, we shouldn't have doubted your words." Huang Quan apologized to Yue Yang in remorse.

"The real death arena had already changed for the worse. Moreover, this isn't entirely your fault." Yue Yang knew Cang Yan and other people were messing with them and secretly controlling the ancient war. Even he himself was forced to enter this place.

“Continue your pleas like weaklings, you all don’t have much time left.” Cang Yan taunted arrogantly.

He elevated to the top of the dome and casted 10 light pillars.

Including Sky Emperor, the dead participants from the four sides triggered the Ancient Code’s penalty again. A dozen Ancient Slaughterers appeared.

Huang Quan berated a despondent Fen Tian’s suicide attempt and looked to the calm Yue Yang: “Third Young Master, do you have any plans?”

Even Black Hell King looked curious.

He also felt that Yue Yang’s expression did not seem like a loser in despair.

The Silver Armored General roared with laughter: “Is that so? Then I’m really a little curious. You’re the successor of the Prison Emperor aren’t you? You little immature human bean sprout, hurry up and use your brain to think of a solution. Don’t you people from Soaring Dragon Continent always claimed yourselves to be smart?”

“I have no solution but I do have a pretty awesome master...” Yue Yang smiled: “If the disciples were to be bullied, the master would lose face.”

“Who was it that bullied you?” Zhi Zun’s voice rang clear across the skies.

At the sound of her voice, the Silver Armored General, who was laughing hysterically, actually fell silent like he had been slapped. His mouth gaped open but no sound came from it. He was furious, he had never been suppressed by a sound and stared angrily behind Yue Yang. He thought that Zhi Zun would appear behind Yue Yang.

Standing beside the Silver Armored General were his comrades Lich and Tiger Man.

Both shouted for him to be careful!

The Silver Armored General turned around at the warning and found a beautiful strangely-dressed human female floating behind him.

He could not see through this beauty’s ability. From her appearance, she did not feel like an Innate, but weak normal human.

Other than having a tiny six-winged angel by her side, she was no different from an ordinary human female. The Silver Armored General felt that the blast waves from one of his sneezes would be enough to kill her. What could such a puny existence do? He really wanted to extend his hand and just squeeze her to death...

At last, out of caution, he looked at Yue Yang uncertainly, as if trying to seek confirmation that this human female was the master he mentioned.

Could this woman who came to die be a sacrificial blood trap?

Would her life be exchanged for some special power?

The Silver Armored General could not figure it out.

“Is he the one who bullied you?” There was no aura of a Ranker from Zhi Zun’s physical form, she was just like a normal human. She had quickly advanced just like her last meeting with Yue Yang. Now, she had returned to her natural realm. Yue Yang could not even see the level of her abilities with his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, much less the general.

“I have embarrassed you.” Yue Yang faked a miserably bullied look.

“Okay then, let’s kill him!” Zhi Zun declared.

“Ah... Does the Soaring Dragon Continent only produce funny clowns?” The Silver Armored General was startled at first but immediately burst into a laughing fit, almost rolling on the floor.

The Heaven Realm Level 3 Silver Armored General aside, even

Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing were doubtful of Zhi Zun.

Even if she possessed abilities equal or higher than that of the enemy, before their large numbers, how could she kill him? Cang Yan would definitely not stand by and watch. Moreover, the enemy was not a push over thatn could be instantly killed, after all the general was still a Heaven Ranked Level 3 Ranker!

Zhi Zun slowly raised her hand.

Her slender fingers drew a strange hexagram chart.

No one could figure out her intentions and they could not see how the design was formidable other than Yue Yang who had his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision.

Yue Yang could see that where Zhi Zun's fingers had drawn across the skies, the skies had already split open. It was not an illusion and actual cracks had actually appeared in the skies. In other words, she easily shattered the void. Yue Yang needed to reach the level of being able to summon Gui Cang and Shuang Hua to be able to do this, yet she did it with just her fingers, without condensing her powers nor with the help of any weapons.

Such ability had surpassed Yue Yang's original mental estimation.

As Zhi Zun held the hexagram chart lightly in her hand, it instantly shattered...

Tens of millions of shards were grasped in Zhi Zun's hands.

Cang Yan expression changed red-hot as he felt the threat from Zhi Zun's hand.

The holy sword slashed through air, the biting cold sword qi cut through the sky.

However, Zhi Zun had already disappeared.

She appeared gracefully behind the Silver Armored General as she held a black granule on her soft palm. It was formed when the shattered void was condensed... The general quickly turned around with lightning speed but his movements were like a snail's pace in front of Zhi Zun. With a flick of her fingers, the frightening black seed shot towards the general's forehead.

The holy armor of the Silver Armored General was penetrated like it was thin paper.

The black seed pierced through his brain.

It burst out from the back of his head.

A tiny hole appeared in the Silver Armored General head. The hole seemed natural, like the general had been born with it in his head... He seemed like he had more to say but he swayed, then fell

helplessly, kneeling on the ground. His entire body soon slumped onto the ground, the holy armor clanged sonorously at the impact with the ground.

Instant kill!

This outcome was unexpected even by Yue Yang.

The Heaven Realm Level 3 Silver Armored General actually died to an instant kill in front of Zhi Zun. Such a performance resulted in awkward silence from the crowd. Everyone who witnessed the scene were dumbfounded!

Chapter 537 – Ray, World Exterminating Ray

Zhi Zun killed the Silver Armored General instantly when she struck. With this, she shattered everyone's doubts on her as she made everyone awe at her power.

All except the mysterious man Cang Yan who still held on to his haughty attitude.

The rest of the hunters all had their expressions ashened and were intimidated by Zhi Zun.

She could even kill a Heaven Ranked Level 3 instantly?

Doesn't this mean that all other hunters, except the Heaven Ranked Level 5 Cang Yan, wouldn't be able to defend against her and would suffer the same fate as the Silver Armored General? How powerful was this woman? Her strength is simply too unfathomable. Facing the danger of death coming from Zhi Zun, Lich, Tiger Man and the 12-Winged Angel from the hunters camp were extremely vigilant. They immediately struck together as they besieged Zhi Zun with the triangular offense tactic. They decided to use their joint power to get rid of this strong opponent!

They would definitely not be able to win by fighting against her individually.

But they were still quite confident towards flanking and killing

Zhi Zun.

They wouldn't deny that the strong opponent before them could kill them instantly if she were to strike.

But they were extremely astute... While they were shocked, they immediately judged that the achilles' heel of this female Innate was that she was slow to strike. If the Silver Armored General didn't underestimate her just now, he wouldn't have waited her to finish drawing her hexagram chart, nor let her condense the terrifying black bullet made from shards of the shattered void and be insta-killed by her.

The terrifying black bullet was immensely powerful and couldn't be defended against.

But it wasn't hard to avoid it.

The black bullet wouldn't be successfully condensed if they were to interrupt her.

The process required her to be fully focussed, she wouldn't be able to completely condense it under the state of being distracted.

As the 12-Winged Angel, Lich and Tiger Man went up to her, the Ancient Slaughterers also charged towards Zhi Zun under the lead of their Beast King.

“Night Empress, don't be modest with tackling the opponent

now, go help out quickly!” Yue Yang deeply wanted to dash forward to help, but he was worried that he was not powerful enough and would become Zhi Zun’s burden instead, so he chose to request for Night Empress’ help.

“Actually I’m not a combat type... I’m not specialised at fighting, and my level isn’t high. I have just ranked up to Elder Innate Level 2 not too long ago, you think everyone improves as fast as you and Zhi Zun? Don’t worry, Zhi Zun will have a way, although I have never fought against her, I know that Zhi Zun is the direct opposite of me and similar to you. She is a combat type warrior, so she will become stronger when she meets with stronger opponents!” Night Empress didn’t reveal her power as she continued to maintain the air of mystery around her.

Her words made Yue Yang perspire profusely.

Night Empress was only Elder Innate Level 2?

His Heaven Eyes Divine Vision couldn’t see through her even though she was only Elder Innate Level 2. He couldn’t even see her when she was hidden. Compared to the Black Hell King, wasn’t she superior by miles? Not even the Heaven Ranked Level 3 Hunag Quan, Lich, Tiger Man, Angel, and Silver Armored General could escape Yue Yang’s Heaven Eyes Divine Vision... Night Empress could keep her air of mystery so well even though her level wasn’t high, could it be due to the way she cultivates? Or could it be that she possessed certain Divine Equipment that could help to hide her status?

Yue Yang couldn’t arrive at anything and was very puzzled.

Although they conversed quite softly, Huang Quan and the rest could still hear it.

They were all upset and were so ahsamed that they wanted to bang their heads onto the wall and die...

They had just realised that there was another Ranker behind Yue Yang's back. If they hadn't spoken to each other, everyone would still be kept in the dark.

If this person were to be their opponent, would they still be able to survive?

“Roaaar!” The Ancient Slaughterer Beast King roared furiously at Zhi Zun. Even though she was small, she actually made it feel extremely threatened. This made it surprised and angry at the same time. It couldn't suppress its anger any longer as it led all the Ancient Slaughterer towards Zhi Zun instinctively, indicating that it wanted to get rid this threatening opponent ahead of them.

“Go up together, kill her!” Lich, Tiger man and Angel from the hunter camp were secretly alarmed when they realised that Zhi Zun wasn't bothered at all.

Could it be that she still had other trump cards which allowed her to be fearless towards all attacks?

But they couldn't chicken out now, they could only brace

themselves and continue the fight.

If they were to back off, they would be killed instantly once Zhi Zun managed to successfully gather the black bullet.

Nobody wished for this outcome! So other than Lich, Tiger Man and Angel, even the Black Hell King and the mysterious man Cang Yan were secretly taking precautions against Zhi Zun's sudden attack. The battle between the two parties could start at any moment. Just as Hunag Quan, Fen Tian and the rest were thinking of retreating, they realised that they couldn't move as a foreign feeling of losing control over their bodies emerged.

They turned pale with fright. They initially thought that it was Cang Yan activated his strange domain but it was actually caused by the Night Empress.

Night Empress' soothing voice echoed. "Zhi Zun is going to strike soon, and it isn't something you people can defend against, come hide in my Starry Sky Domain!"

Stars twinkled one after another.

They were brilliant like the Milky Way.

They suspended in the space a few hundred meters around Yue Yang. Although it wasn't as vast as Cang Yan's strange domain, it was extremely powerful as it drove his strange domain out of the starry sky easily. The mysterious man Cang Yan sensed it too as his

expression changed immediately. Never had he thought that an opponent far weaker than him could actually drive out his domain... The level of shock he felt was akin to the time when the Silver Armored General was instantly killed. Everyone knew that a domain was a direct representation of its master's power. The stronger the master was, the more powerful the domain would be.

A Heaven Ranked Level 2 woman could actually drive out his domain with her own domain?

This was simply too absurd!

This was even more ridiculous than an ant turning over an elephant! Their power differed by at least three levels but her domain could actually win against his. This was too inconceivable!

“Hmph!” Cang Yan snorted as he emitted a large amount of dark qi from his body. It shrouded the entirety of his strange domain. He shook slightly as a shock wave was instantly unleashed from Cang Yan's body, and then it started to expand, engulfing everything like a hurricane.

The Starry Sky Domain, that was 100 meters in radius, immediately got struck head on.

It started to shrink continuously as Cang Yan's strange domain shrouded it.

Under the dark hurricane-like shock wave, the weakest Ancient

Slaughterers at Heaven Ranked Level 1 couldn't even stand up straight as they wobbled around. The immense power of the shock wave could be seen from this. However, Yue Yang, who was in front of the blow, did not feel the slightest amount of pressure. The Starry Sky Domain had already shrunk to eighty meters but it was as steady as Mt. Tai. The domain did not shake up anymore no matter how much shock wave was unleashed from Cang Yan's domain.

“Be born Big Dipper....” Night Empress's voice was soft like water.

In the dark, her fair finger seemed to point at the empty void.

She appeared like a goddess, using her supreme power to create a star in the dark.

The brilliance of the star burned brightly.

A star that was exceptionally bright was born. It was located in the northern sky of the Starry Sky Domain.

An undescrivable energy was channeled into the Starry Sky Domain when the star was born. The Starry Sky Domain that was initially suppressed by the other party expanded and reverted back to original.

The stars that were initially dulled in the few hundred metres of the domain once again shined with renewed vigor.

The previously strong shock wave was engulfed and was rendered useless.

This retaliation made Cang Yan's expression ashened.

Huang Quan, Fen Tian, Yun Xin and Weng Jin in the Starry Sky Domain were all flabbergasted. Without showing herself, Night Empress, who claimed to be Heaven Ranked Level 2, could actually drive back the Heaven Ranked Level 5 Cang Yan's domain attack directly? Could it be that everyone from the Soaring Dragon Continent were all abnormally strong freaks? How could this be possible? Forget about her managing to defend herself, she could actually retaliate and emerge victorious, this amazing performance of winning as the less powerful party made the higher levelled Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing want to smash their head onto a piece of tofu and die!

This made them too inferior!

How could they raise their head in pride again?

Yue Yang was similarly stunned. Although Night Empress claimed that she wasn't a combat type warrior, she could drive back Cang Yan with just her domain, if the Night Empress were to use all of her power, then...

Nevermind, Night Empress was one of them.

The stronger she was, the better. The best result would be that she could fight hand in hand with Zhi Zun and get rid of the extremely arrogant Cang Yan!

On this side of the battlefield, it was a fight between domains.

On the other side, the battle had also started. The Lich, Tiger Man, Angel and the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King along side with his followed attacked Zhi Zun together.

The Ancient Slaughterer Beast King led four of his commanders, eight captains and more than ten Ancient Slaughterers. They were all ready as they opened up their mouths widely, shooting out waterfall-like fire pillars. It resulted in overwhelming flames filling up the atmosphere and towards Zhi Zun, who was floating in the air. The Lich waved its White Bone Staff to form a giant skull as it early bit towards Zhi Zun; The Tiger Man on the other hand hurled its tiger-shaped shock wave, while The Angel used its Golden Great Sword and sent a heaven splitting sword wave, flanking Zhi Zun.

None of these attacks were defendable by a human being.

Huang Quan and the lot watched anxiously.

They definitely wouldn't be able to defend against these attacks. And they wouldn't be able to escape from this battle that left them little chance to run away.

Most importantly, Zhi Zun was still in Cang Yan's strange domain, so she couldn't even use her own domain to protect herself. In other words, Cang Yan could control his domain of power anytime and even use it to attack her...

Although Huang Quan and the lot felt that the situation was unsalvageable, it didn't mean that Zhi Zun had no more moves.

Even Yue Yang felt that death wasn't guaranteed for Zhi Zun.

Yue Yang knew that Zhi Zun would definitely retaliate.

He was anticipating it. Zhi Zun would definitely give the most impressive counterattack. He wondered how would she react to their attacks.

"Insignificant tricks!" Zhi Zun rose 100 meters higher. When the attacks were extremely closeby, she extended both of her arms in a series of beautiful actions.

The domain Cang Yan used to restrict her shattered like the shattered void in an instant.

A burning glow that was tens of thousand times brighter than the sun was given off from her.

A giant golden light wheel appeared with her body in the center of it.

Millions and millions of rays with world exterminating power radiated out densely like light arrows and spears. It obliterated all forms of life it touched. Everyone was instantly blinded as they couldn't see anything before them. Forget the Ancient Slaughterers that were in the center of the battlefield, even the visions of Huang Quan, Fen Tian and the lot who were hiding in the Starry Sky Domain were stolen from the brightness of the rays of light. They landed in a state of confusion.

Their minds were in a daze.

They stood in the Starry Sky Domain blindly like zombies who had lost their souls.

If not for the protection provided by the Starry Sky Domain, they would have been obliterated into thin air under the direct exposure to this world exterminating ray!

“Orochi's ‘Divine Light’? Crap!” Yue Yang was stunned as if a computer system that had just crashed. Damn, he knew that Zhi Zun's comeback would be impressive, but he never expected it to be so impressive!

Chapter 538 – Get Out Of The Way, Let Me Do It

Although Yue Yang possessed the Heaven Eyes Divine Vision and he did not have to see directly using his eyes, he was still blinded despite being under the protection of Night Empress' Starry Sky Domain.

His eyes were stinging.

The destructive ray still had the power to steal one's sight even under the protection of Starry Sky Domain.

To quickly restore his eyesight, Yue Yang hurriedly dropped two drops of Water of Life into his eyes.

Using Water of Life and Innate Qi to heal, his eyes finally felt better.

In his blurry line of sight, Yue Yang saw a scene which he would never be able to forget in his entire life: A dozen Ancient Slaughterers which were exposed to the destructive light beams all lost their lives. A second ago, they were ferocious and tenacious, just like cockroaches. Their eyes still showed signs of pure fear when they saw the strong light. They would be frozen in fear forever as their souls are destroyed straight away under the powerful light beam.

Collapsing one by one onto the ground with a loud thud, they

were all like huge trees that were being chopped down,!

The Ancient Slaughterer Captains which were far more powerful than the normal Ancient Slaughterers rolled on the ground painfully with their hands hugging their head.

Although they did not die, these eight Ancient Slaughterer Captains were close to death. They no longer had the ability to fight. The four commanders which were stronger than the Ancient Slaughterer Captains all became blind. All eight eyes were ruined as fresh blood steamed out of their eye sockets... Other than the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King, all other Ancient Slaughterers had most of their skin burnt and scalded. The attack had penetrative properties. The Ancient Slaughterers which had already fainted on the ground were scorched. Some were even covered in fire, and it seemed as if it would not stop burning.

This was the power of Zhi Zun's attack.

The Ancient Slaughterer Beast King was a Heaven Ranked Level 5 beast. Its physical body was formidable, thus the injuries it suffered in this destructive light were the least.

However, although that was the case.

One of its eyes went blind due to the destructive light beam.

When the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King covered its two eyes as reflex response, one of its fingers was slower by a beat. There was a

narrow slit left uncovered. The light ray blinded its eye, turning it into a one eyed monster. A large amount of blood gushed out of its injured eye. The Beast King tried very hard to tolerate the pain. It yelped in pain, and fled quickly.

It was also the only enemy that could escape from the battlefield after the destructive light beam attacked everyone.

“AGHH...” The Tigerman fell face first from the sky.

Two rows of blood gushed out from his eyes.

Struggling, he wanted to get back up, but due to his dizziness, he could not stand. His body reacted negatively due to the exposure to strong ray. It made him vomit uncontrollably. He rolled in his own vomit but could not get rid of the terrifying negative effects.

The Lich was more miserable than the Tigerman. Perhaps due to its dark nature, it suffered much greater damage from the light.

Unlike the Tigerman, the Lich did not get blinded nor did he throw up, but half of his body was instantly burned to ashes.

By standing sideways, he used one side of his body to block the light, causing it to disappear without a trace.

The Angel who was exposed to the light the most due to his size, did not have it any better.

Upon seeing such things, Yue Yang broke out in sweat.

Isn't this destructive light way too OP?

Just now the Tigerman, Lich and Angel were so cool, with a blink of an eye all three of them became like African natives...

Of course, these three were not the important points that Yue Yang wanted to see. The one Yue Yang wanted to see most was Cang Yan. Was he also battered and tattered?

On the surface Cang Yan seemed okay. First, it was because he was far away. Second, Cang Yan had a cloak over him and it was a Holy Equipment of high quality. Its high defence was impressive. Third, Cang Yan's powers were the strongest in the entire battlefield and he was prepared way before hand. Therefore, he looked okay. On the surface alone, Cang Yan was the only one in the entire field who seemed indifferent. The destructive light seemed to have no effect on him. He still had his hands behind his back, and stood calmly on the exact same spot. His two eyes were not blinded, and were sparkling. He seemed to be confident and at ease. What was left now was for his toned body to let out a fart to shock the entire field.

What Yue Yang did not know was that, when he was blinded and dizzy, Cang Yan suffered from a headache that was so painful he almost fainted.

After all, Cang Yan was a Heaven Ranked Level 5 Ranker, his

ability to heal was fast.

In addition, the strange domain also offset most of the light rays' power. If not, even if Cang Yan wanted to act cool, he might not be able to do so.

Even before his vision restored, Cang Yan has already started glaring. He put on an 'I was not affected at all' look. In reality he was getting panicky. He was afraid that Zhi Zun would attack with 'Divine Light' once again.

If that was the case, it would not be fake blindness but real blindness!

Even if he were to be beaten to death, Cang Yan refuses to believe that the opponent could release two of such powerful attacks continuously. Moreover, the overpowering attack was able to instantly wipe out a group of people. So, he forcefully braced himself and pretended that he was fine. This really made him hit the jackpot, he made a smart move. Zhi Zun did not release another wave of destructive light. Instead, she stopped and slowly healed. Cang Yan really wanted to charge forward and attack, because if he waited for the human female to restore completely, he would receive headaches later... The problem was that he just got attacked by the destructive light, his vision had not completely restored. Furthermore, the opponent might be luring him into killing her. After he approaches, she might release the 'black bullets' and kill him instantly.

That was no joke.

Cang Yan gave up on doing a surprise attack on Zhi Zun when she was still healing. Moreover, there was still a hidden human Innate who had the power to use the Starry Sky Domain.

Dangerous...

He did not need to consider whether it was a trap or not. Cang Yan would never attack, he absolutely did not want to get fooled!

The only one that was not injured on this battlefield was the Black Hell King.

The Black Hell King was not stronger than Cang Yan, but he could flee much faster. Even before Zhi Zun launched her attack, he escaped back into the Grimoire World. It was as if he knew he would be instantly killed if he remained. What made Yue Yang wonder was that Cang Yan did not even use his domain to stop Black Hell King from escaping. On the contrary, he even allowed him to do so secretly. Could it be that the Black Hell King was actually the key to turning the tables of the fight?

Such a thought flashed through Yue Yang's mind!

"Save me!" The Angel flew up in terrible pain. He flapped his bald wings, and flew in a staggering manner towards Cang Yan. He wanted to plead Cang Yan to save his life.

"..." Cang Yan wanted to save him too but when he saw that Zhi

Zun still had another card up her sleeve, he decided to continue standing indifferently, not minding other people's business.

Just now Zhi Zun did not heal. She was quietly storing up her power.

If Cang Yan made a surprise attack just now, he might replace the escaping Angel and get slashed instead.

A huge light wheel.

It was blazing just like the sun.

It gathered and accumulated in Zhi Zun's delicate hand and quickly grew larger. Along its circumference, was a loop of Heaven Runes. They emitted numerous light rays. The center was just like the World Exterminating Wheel, it also had two Ancient Runes but it did not have a hidden Immemorial Rune. This light wheel that blazed as bright as the burning sun was much larger than Yue Yang's World Exterminating Wheel, and much more powerful.

This Sunlight Wheel seemed to exhibit its full power in the hands of Zhi Zun.

When Yue Yang saw this light wheel, he immediately realized.

Turns out one could also charge up like this...

Compared to this light wheel, the World Exterminating Wheel that was made up purely of Runes as well as an Immemorial Rune, had much greater potential and power.

However, with Yue Yang's current state and strength, the power he could unleash was limited. Of course, before that Yue Yang had no one to help him and he relied solely on himself to understand everything. His improvements were actually all made at flying speed. Now, seeing such a profound technique to charge up Runes and manipulate them, Yue Yang quickly studied it so that he could use it. He secretly learned from her... Perhaps Zhi Zun was intentionally teaching Yue Yang before the fight, because she did not need to use such a powerful move on the Angel who was already like an African chicken.

“Waaaa!” When the Angel was about a hundred meters away in front of Cang Yan, he was sliced into half by the Sunlight Wheel.

Cang Yan's foot, shifted only a tiny bit.

He did not take on the Sunlight Wheel, instead, he avoided the Sunlight Wheel while acting cool. He let it brush past him.

The Lich that had half of his body destroyed, fled in the other direction.

Zhi Zun did not even bother to look. She slowly lifted up her left hand and dozens light rays emerged in her palms. Severing space, they formed a dozen arc shaped Dimension Slash.

The Dimension Slash, cut across the sky.

Instantly, splitting the Lich into ten pieces...

“Wait, Master Zhi Zun, please descend and rest. Leave the rest to me, I would do the cleaning up.” Seeing that Zhi Zun still wanted to attack, Yue Yang quickly leaped out to stop her. He could not just stand there applauding and let her finish everything. After all, he was still the captain representing the West Heaven Realm. He had to grab some small credits. Moreover, the enemies were not dead but injured, it was the best time to take advantage!

“Then I’ll let you practice a little!” Zhi Zun spoke lightly, her tone was just like a billionaire, who took out a cheque worth a million to a starving person to ‘buy some bun as he wishes to fill his stomach’. If it was not Yue Yang, no one would else would be able to change her mind.

“You should be careful...” On the contrary, the Night Empress was worried for him.

Not to mention, the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King was still alive and kicking, there was also Cang Yan who was watching covetously. The enemy being afraid of Zhi Zun did not mean that Yue Yang should take advantage of the situation. A rabbit will bite back if cornered! Huang Quan, Fen Tian, Yun Xing who were all slowly restoring their sight were all concerned for Yue Yang. At the same time they all felt ashamed. Out of loyalty and dignity, the three of them followed Yue Yang to fight together. Weng Jin and the rest were all withering due to the Divine Light, they were left with little combat power. However, even if they went out, they

would probably just get in his way. They might not be of much help.

Thus, they tactfully stayed in the Starry Sky Domain.

The Tigerman which was left alive was still vomiting. Although he was throwing up a lot, his combat power was slowly recovering.

After all, he was a Heaven Ranked Level 3, he would not die so easily.

The Heaven Ranked Level 3 Innates, that Zhi Zun could instantly kill, were actually not easy targets to be messed with. Huang Quan, Fen Tian, Yun Xing were all bombarding the Tigerman with attacks one after the other. However, the injured Tigerman was able to take on their attacks and sustain no further injuries.

The Tigerman roared, numerous blood colored light illuminated from his body. Even after Huang Quan and the rest backed down, the Tigerman's body was still gradually changing. A horn grew out from the top of his head. His sinister face became more and more terrifying. His fangs extended out from his mouth just like the saber-toothed tiger. Thorns grew out from his tail and begun burning, while a fin bone, just like that of the stegosaurus, grew out from his back.

After rolling on the ground, the Tigerman became an extremely unsightly and ugly horned, thorny tailed monster. He no longer had any trace of human form to him.

The power of the Tigerman who became a monster swelled, reaching the peak of Heaven Ranked Level 3.

His strength, speed and physical defence all reached the maximum.

Huang Quan, who was also Heaven Ranked Level 3, was sent flying a few hundred meters into the air after getting hit. He spat out blood on the spot. Fen Tian and Yun Xing had it even worse. They were not even able to catch up with the opponent's movements.

“Get out of the way, let me do it!” Yue Yang followed Zhi Zun's technique to store up power for his World Exterminating Wheel. Although it was far behind than the Sunlight Wheel in terms of power, but compared to before, there was an obvious improvement. The power that was exhibited even slightly affected Cang Yan, who was watching in a distance. The power of this World Exterminating Wheel as well as Yue Yang's extraordinary comprehension threatened him... If not for Zhi Zun's presence, he would definitely dispose of Yue Yang.

Due to overcharging, the World Exterminating Wheel in Yue Yang's hands went out of control all of a sudden.

It came off and flew out.

Fen Tian and Yun Xing were terrified as they quickly dodged.

Although the Tigerman became a monster, his intelligence still remained. It also avoided it by leaping out of the way. It quickly jumped back to attack Yue Yang. Its speed was extremely fast, faster than lightening by a hundred times.

“You think my ability is only this much?” Yue Yang smirked, the Gui Cang Sword in his hand flashed. Compared to the World Exterminating Wheel, wouldn’t this Gui Cang Sword be a better finishing blow?

Once Gui Cang was out, its pressure acted on all living things.

The figure of the Tigerman who became a monster became sluggish.

The fear of death flashed through the Tigerman’s heart.

He suddenly had an unimaginable bewilderment. Perhaps him, who was Heaven Ranked level 3 would die in the hands of this brat?

Chapter 539 – Trap Domain? It Is Nothing Much!

Cang Yan's presence changed slightly, great waves rose in the grey domain.

Tigerman who was suppressed by Gui Cang Sword in midair was thrown high into the sky. Huang Quan, Fen Tian, Yun Xing felt incredibly embarrassed. They could not even defeat the Heaven Ranked Level 3 Tigerman, while Yue Yang, who had not yet stepped into the Heaven Ranked, actually pushed him to the point that he needed Heaven Ranked Level 5 Cang Yan to assist him.

Yue Yang's eyes flashed, taunting his enemy. He concealed the condensed Gui Cang in his hands.

He raised his hand and hit Tigerman's neck with Whip of Agony formed from Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus. Even though the damage was not huge, it was enough to slow Tigerman down.

Huang Quan did not really understand, why does Yue Yang want to fight with Tigerman in close proximity?

In terms of realm, ability and body, Yue Yang was far from Tigerman's level. Why must he fight with Tigerman in close combat?

“Howl!” Tigerman who turned into a monster roared at the skies. The soundwave exploded outwards, shattering the whip that Yue

Yang was hitting him with. Even though Yue Yang had the Nirvana Flame armor and Innate Invisible Qi, he was hit with dizziness and his body was swaying. Even so, Tigerman did not dare attack Yue Yang. He only opened his mouth to puff out a thick black smoke. In the dense smoke, a tiger shaped monster that was hidden behind the smokescreen pounced at Yue Yang, waving its claws.

“Spears of Light!” Huang Quan opened his eyes wide, and shot out almost 100 spears of light from his pupils. At almost light speed, it shot through the tiger-shaped monster behind the smoke screen.

Light and dark were extremely incompatible.

Huang Quan was confident that his Spears of Light was able to instantly kill that ‘ghost tiger’ that was hidden behind the smoke screen.

However, something strange happened..... It was as if those spears of light did not touch anything and directly passed through the body of the ghost tiger. There was no damage at all. That ghost tiger continued to pounce at Yue Yang, the sharp claws that clawed out from the smokescreen was even able to cut through air as the wind gave a terrifying hiss.

Not only was Huang Quan stunned, even Fen Tian and Yun Xing were shocked.

It was obviously a ghost tiger, why was his Spears of Light

ineffective?

Time did not permit them to mull over it. When the ghost tiger was about to finish Yue Yang who was still in a daze, a blazing ball of fire rose from Yue Yang's body. This was not Nirvana Flames. It was a beast that possessed elements like burning flames, smoke, storm, lightning, ghost and spiritual attributes. She was one of Yue Yang's Guardian Beasts, the Spirit of Earth Fire!

While the Spears of Light could not even touch the ghost tiger, once the Spirit of Earth Fire appeared, she flung the ghost tiger away.

Only she was the same kind of beast like ghost tiger was.

Even though the ghost tiger was much stronger than the Spirit of Earth Fire, the Spirit of Earth Fire was not afraid and was not injured. She was not very intelligent, instead, she mostly fought based on her instinct.

The ghost tiger was easily able to tear her body into a million pieces, but Spirit of Earth Fire's body was able to recover in a split second. As long as Nirvana Flame that was her source of life was still burning, she would never disappear. As long as her owner Yue Yang did not die, she would never really die. What ghost tiger was destroying was just her elemental form. This sort of attack had the same effect Spears of Light had on ghost tiger just now, it was completely ineffective..... The only way ghost tiger could cause damage to Spirit of Earth Fire was by engulfing this enemy that would never die.

Spirit of Earth Fire was doing this exact thing.

She did not care that the ghost tiger was stronger than her by a hundred times, she was making use of Nirvana Flames to suck up her opponent's energy bit by bit.

Even if ghost tiger did not retaliate, if she wanted to completely engulf the opponent, she would most likely need three days and three nights.

The ghost tiger was furious.....

It flew around wildly, clawing at the air with its sharp claws. The flames from its mouth burned the entire sky.

No matter what property it was, it was completely ineffective towards Spirit of Earth Fire. Struggling was futile.

If it was any other beast, the ghost tiger would have swallowed it in one mouth. The problem was the origin of Spirit of Earth Fire was Nirvana Flames. No one would be able to swallow such a lethal thing.

Under such circumstances of being unable to swallow its opponent, the ghost tiger was fleeing in depression. It hoped to escape from this fight with Spirit of Earth Fire and return to its owner's side. But in front of a delicacy, the Spirit of Earth Fire did not care about anything else. It only wanted to unleash its appetite

and enjoy the meal. As for protecting its owner, Spirit of Earth Fire never even considered this problem. This was because Yue Yang had too many Guardian Beasts.

Other than the ghost tiger, Tigerman who turned into a monster also summoned another very powerful Devil-toothed Beast.

This was a strange beast that could only be found in Heaven Realm. Once it was born, it was already Gold Ranked Level 10. From then on, it would never change ranks or upgrade. It could only keep increasing in size and its ability would keep accumulating.

Their distinctive characteristic was that they could forcefully swallow and digest anything.

After turning into a monster, Tigerman's intelligence was still the same. He summoned out the Devil-toothed Beast that was the size of a small mountain to probe Yue Yang. For a beast like the Devil-toothed Beast that had no brain and was just like a ball of meat that was able to heal in an instant, it could hold up against any attacks from a human. If Tigerman was not scared of Zhi Zun, he would not be testing Yue Yang so carefully. He would have rushed up to finish Yue Yang off immediately..... Now, Tigerman hoped to force Yue Yang away and return to Cang Yan's side. He did not care about anything other than avoiding a confrontation with that human Zhi Zun!

“Is this all you've got?” A cold ray flashed across Yue Yang's eyes. If Cang Yan had not used the power of his domain to rescue Tigerman, it would be hard to say if he could survive Gui Cang

Sword's attack. Now he still dared to summon beasts?

Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen flew out with a yawn. She was still resting, but had rushed out to face Devil-toothed Beast.

There was no one better than her to face off against the Devil-toothed Beast.

When he condensed energy in his right hand, countless runes flashed.

World Exterminating Wheel?

Tigerman and Cang Yan were both alarmed. Thankfully, even though this boy's World Exterminating Wheel was quite powerful, there was only one way to attack with it.

Cang Yan's presence slightly rose. Tigerman felt a stream of energy enter his body and his battle power increase by multiple times. He was delighted and his confidence elevated. Even though he did not dare enter close combat and defend against the World Exterminating Wheel's chops, Tigerman waved his sharp claws and tail to send tens of Invisible Air Blades, that could cleave metals and crush rocks, at Yue Yang to disturb the process of his condensing.

Heng!

Cang Yan was suspicious of how Yue Yang did not even try to

avoid the attack. Could it be that the attack of Gui Cang Sword was a fake? And, its true purpose was just to test them?

The extremely experienced Cang Yan suddenly had such a thought. Just now, Yue Yang was only trying to test the enemy's limit and the control of his own domain. The real attack was going to come.....

“Come back!” Cang Yan shouted to summon Tigerman back, but it was too late.

A giant rune wheel was condensed from Yue Yang's hand. It was extremely similar to but still different from the World Exterminating Wheel.

When this giant rune wheel appeared, just like Night Empress' Starry Sky Domain, the entire room came under Yue Yang's control. All of Cang Yan's domain power was stripped off. Within ten metres of this giant rune wheel, there was nothing that could affect it. Different from Starry Sky Domain, other than possessing Yue Yang's will, this giant rune wheel possess a special power and will. It could not be negated by anything or any power.

Its existence was just like the birth of an entire universe.

It had existed since the beginning of everything.

When Cang Yan saw that the World Exterminating Wheel had changed, he cried out in shock with he saw this the giant rune

wheel: “Eternal Wheel? Oh no!”

With Yue Yang as the center, countless runes quietly floated around him. After they formed the Eternal Wheel, they kept their original form. It was as if they have been like so since ancient times, and would still continue to exist like that even in the distant future forever..... This was the might of the Eternal Wheel. There were no external power in this world that could affect it.

It was the exact opposite of World Exterminating Wheel. One could exterminate everything, the other would remain eternally.

Yue Yang had long inherited the World Exterminating Wheel and the Eternal Wheel. He was just more familiar with using the World Exterminating Wheel, and felt that World Exterminating Wheel caused greater damage. He did not have much time to practice using the Eternal Wheel until the Scarlet Emperor escaped from his seal.

Scarlet Emperor's extreme speed and protection from his Divine Equipment made it impossible for Yue Yang to even hit him.

Later, Yue Yang thought of using the Eternal Wheel.

It was then did he understand, the 2 wheels had to be used together. No matter which one, there was no way to use them to their maximum if used alone.

Tigerman realised that he was at the edge of the Eternal Wheel.

He could not move an inch. Frightened out of his wits, he could only watch as Yue Yang raised the black Gui Cang Sword and flew over.

Not to mention escaping, it was even impossible to call for help.

Cang Yan sent out a black gas, but he did not help Tigerman. As for the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King that only had one eye left, it did not have any intention to fight Yue Yang that was protected by Nirvana Flames. It could only feel fear instinctively. Compared to the Eternal Wheel and the World-Exterminating Wheel, it was more afraid of Nirvana Flames. Nirvana Flames was the bane of its existence.

“Watch out! They say that Cang Yan had an ability that can explode someone’s corpse!” Huang Quan suddenly remember this, and quickly reminded Yue Yang.

“Even so, I must kill.” Even though the Gui Cang Sword was not much larger than chopsticks, it was extremely powerful. The first time the black Gui Cang was used, it bore through Tigerman’s forehead. Not only did it bore through the brain, even Tigerman’s hardest horn was cut off.

“Interesting.” Zhi Zun did not show any surprise at Yue Yang’s World Exterminating Wheel and Eternal Wheel, but instead showed interest in Gui Cang.

Gui Cang Sword could also bore through the head in one go.

Even though it was not as powerful as the black bullet, she could see the potential of this Divine Sword.

Just at his current realm, Yue Yang was able to use Gui Cang Sword to almost the same power as her black bullets. If he levelled up to Elder Innate, what power would Gui Cang Sword possess? The answer was obvious!

At the same time Yue Yang killed Tigerman, a terrifying shock wave that was 100 times stronger than a volcanic eruption burst from beneath Tigerman's feet..... In almost the same instant, Zhi Zun looked through Cang Yan's domain and deeply muttered: "So it was only just small tricks to deceive people. It was just the [Trap Domain] that needed something from the outside as a trigger!"

Not to mention Zhi Zun, even Night Empress' voice held a tinge of delight: "How fortunate, it needs something to trigger it. It had frightened me for a minute there but it seems that it's not much!"

The ghost tiger that was connected to Tigerman howled in pain.

At the same time, a glacier-like snow exploded from its body, sealing ghost tiger and Spirit of Earth Fire together in ice.

The only thing it could not seal was Spirit of Earth Fire's source, Nirvana Flames.....

At the moment when Tigerman's body was struck, the Devil-toothed Beast's body exploded. What it shot out was millions of

golden lightning snakes in Cang Yan's [Trap Domain]. Not to mention Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen that was within the range of the explosion, even Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing were also completely numb from the electricity.

“Chain Explosion!” Cang Yan slowly raised his right hand and pointed at the dozen Ancient Slaughter corpses on the ground.

“What?” Weng Jin and the others were stunned. If these dozens of Ancient Slaughter corpses exploded, how could anyone still survive? Cang Yan's [Trap Domain] built upon each trigger. After three explosions, the power of the lightning was already stronger than the initial volcanic eruption by 10 times. If dozens of Ancient Slaughter corpses exploded one after another, who else could stand it other than the most powerful human Zhi Zun?

Even Yue Yang who was protected by Eternal Wheel and Night Empress who had [Starry Sky Domain] most likely cannot withstand the explosion with a power that was a thousand, a million times multiplied.

As expected, the Heaven Ranked Level 5 Cang Yan was terrifying.

If he did not attack, it was still alright. Once he attacked, he wanted to wipe out everyone immediately.....

Zhi Zun remained indifferent, as if she did not see that Cang Yan was about to start a chain explosion.

Rather, the concealed Night Empress opened her mouth: “Be born, the power of the 12 zodiacs, Aries, Starry Sky Gravity!”

Chapter 540 – Three Realm Compass

Stars were born one after another, forming the stars of Aries.

Starry Sky Domain expanded.

An indescribable vast power of stars momentarily produced a boundless attractive force within Cang Yan's Trap Domain. Under the effect of Starry Sky Gravity, the bodies of Ancient Slaughterers that were about to explode gently floated in the air. They seemed even more graceful than Yue Yang who was stepping on Eternal Wheel, their huge bodies looked as if they were as light as feathers.

With his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, Yue Yang could see the secret of that amazing power. This Starry Sky Domain was not amazing because of how it was able to largely disperse Cang Yan's Trap Domain, but because of its powers of isolation.

All of the Ancient Slaughterer corpses were wrapped up in a faint star power.

Even though the Trap Domain's trigger had astonishing power, but after being isolated by the star power, it could no longer be triggered. Trap Domain had essentially been rendered almost useless. As for Cang Yan's chain explosions, Night Empress was able to nullify it easily.

Without a trigger, even if he wanted, Cang Yan's Trap Domain could not cause anything to explode. No matter how powerful it was, it instantly became useless.

Trigger was the weakest point of Trap Domain!

“So much food.....” The Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, who had just been blown to pieces due to the explosion of the Devil-toothed Beast’s corpse caused by the Trap Domain’s trigger, appeared again. That shadow that was blown apart earlier was not her true form. A stalk of Thorny Flower sprouted from the ground. It bloomed, blooming into a flower bed of indescribable beauty. Atop of that flower bed, was the true Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen who was still yawning. She waved her jade hands, and countless thorny flowers appeared within Starry Sky Domain. Those Thorny Flowers helped Night Empress’ star power attack Cang Yan’s Trap Domain, sweeping away the floating Ancient Slaughterer corpses.

Unable to completely devour the meal, those huge thorny flowers wrapped up together in the thousands and forcefully dragged those Ancient Slaughterer bodies away.

Ancient Slaughterer Beast King was furious.

But because of his fear of Yue Yang, who had Nirvana Flames, the Beast King did not dare to stop what was happening.

In the distance, it spat fire, burning the thorny flowers. Countless thorny flowers burned to ashes from the heat of the fire. But even more thorny flowers grew, turning into an entire sea of flowers. Disregarding the Beast King, they still forcefully dragged the Ancient Slaughterer bodies away.

Cang Yan's eyes were like ice.

He only looked on coldly, and did not interfere.

The Four Ancient Slaughterer Commanders, whose eyesight have not fully recovered, were stubbornly struggling in the sea of flowers. Even though they were injured by Zhi Zun's destructive ray, they did not die. In fact, they still have very powerful fighting power. It was almost impossible to hold them with Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen's Thorny Flower Sea. With the help of Trap Domain, the four Ancient Slaughterer Commanders broke free from the thorny flowers brutally and escaped to Cang Yan's side.....

With their Heaven Ranked Level 3 strength, the current Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen was still unable to contain them even though they were heavily injured.

Yue Yang did not attack them.

But as for those Ancient Slaughterer Captains on the brink of death, Yue Yang would not have mercy.

Yue Yang intended to use them to train his team as they struggled in the flower sea. Bloody Queen Red, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man, Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying and Xiao Wen Li came forth in succession.

Cang Yan did not care what Guardian Beasts Yue Yang summoned. He also ignored Xue Wu Xia who was holding onto an Ancient Book. He only glanced at Princess Qian Qian who was carrying Prison Emperor Divine Sword.

He was not looking at Princess Qian Qian. He was looking at Prison Emperor Divine Sword.

Other than Zhi Zun and Night Empress, Cang Yan did not care about anyone else.

Even rankers like Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing at Heaven Ranked Level 3 and Level 2, were like ants in Cang Yan's eyes. He did not care about them.

“There is no need for me to attack you guys who do not have enough points. You all will be ruthlessly wiped out by the Ancient Code.” Cang Yan sneered and looked at Zhi Zun. He knew that only Zhi Zun had enough points to escape the punishment of the Ancient Code. The others had no chance of surviving at all. Because of this, Cang Yan decided not to attack. Firstly, it was because he was not 100% sure he could defeat the mysterious Human Zhi Zun in Starry Sky Domain. Secondly, his biggest reason for descending was to injure the elites who were going to advance to Heaven Realm, and not waste his time on the ordinary ones.

“.....” Huang Quan and the others looked sick.

Previously, when they were under the constant threat of death,

they did not have time to even worry over their points.

Now, after Cang Yan said it out loud, they felt their scalp go numb. When Human Zhi Zun attacked and killed majority of the Ancient Slaughterer in one go, even though she saved everyone's life, they could not avoid the Ancient Code because they don't have enough points.

What should they do?

Even Huang Quan who was usually the calmest was frantic. Raging waves raised in his heart.

"Yue Clan's Third Young Master, what good ideas do you have?" Huang Quan suppressed his fear forcefully. He could instinctively sense a chance of survival, and that was to believe in Yue Yang. This Yue Clan's Third Young Master will definitely not wait for death to come, he definitely was not that kind of person. He was unwilling to die, and so he would think of a good plan to escape the punishment of the Ancient Code for sure. This time, no matter what, they had to trust him.

"Idea? I do have one, but it might not be very good....." Of course Yue Yang would not wait for death. When he saw the pleading eyes of Huang Quan and the others, he was delighted. He deliberately acted humble.

"I, we, we trust you!" Fen Tian thought that if even at this point of time anyone did not trust Yue Yang, that person was an idiot.

“You all will never escape the punishment of the Ancient Code, because I will return to Heaven Realm. No Ancient Slaughterer will come again. You all will never accumulate enough points, just kill each other in desperation here!” Cang Yan waved his hands and the far away Ancient Slaughterer Beast King and the 4 Ancient Slaughterer Commanders around him.

A platinum staff suddenly appeared in Cang Yan’s hands.

The Staff of Return.

The Platinum-ranked Staff of Return was a treasure exclusive to Heaven Realm.

Even though there are as many as 10 of them, they could only be found in Heaven Realm. Or rather, it was an item that belonged solely to Heaven Realm’s Central Palace, no one else could own them.

A extremely dazzling white ray shot to the sky, countless currents spread inside the Trap Domain. When the white light reached the highest point in the sky, it exploded like a firework. Six white rays curved down, landing on Cang Yan, Ancient Slaughterer Beast King and the 4 Ancient Slaughterer Commanders.

Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing were unable to resist the powerful shockwave from Cang Yan’s Trap Domain and were thrown kilometers away.

Bringing with him the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King and Ancient Slaughterer Commanders, Cang Yan teleported away, disappearing from Central Plaza.

They returned to Heaven Realm.

The entire process was very strange, because no one received punishment from the Ancient Code..... From this, it is obvious that death arena was under the control of someone. They must have made use of a loophole within the Ancient Code to turn this Ancient Battlefield into their 'slaughterhouse' of those in the lower Heaven Realm.

If Zhi Zun did not come, Cang Yan would most likely not have to abandon Black Hell King and escape back to Heaven Realm in such a rush.

But even with the powerful support from Zhi Zun and Night Empress, it was of no use.

The enemy had long set a trap.

To wait for the rankers from the lower world and ensnare all of them.

“Now we are really all dead meat!” Fen Tian fell onto the ground in helplessness. Now that Cang Yan escaped back to Heaven Realm and no other killers were going to come, they were all going to die without enough points.

“What other choice do we have now. We should have combined forces together just now and fought to keep Cang Yan here at all costs.” Weng Jin sighed. If only Zhi Zun and Night Empress had been willing to step forward to stop Cang Yan from escaping. Even if Cang Yan wanted to leave, it was not that easy! Weng Jin did not understand why didn’t Zhi Zun and Night Empress stop Cang Yan just now. It was not good for them to let Cang Yan off either, why did they do it?

“Let us all think of another solution, no point in complaining.” Yun Xing waved his hand dismissively. He felt that Zhi Zun and Night Empress have already done what they could. They could not possible defeat Cang Yan. If not for what they have already done to scare Cang Yan away, they would all have died in Cang Yan’s Trap Domain.

“Third Young Master, what do you think.....” Huang Quan looked at Yue Yang with hope.

“We could not have stopped Cang Yan from escaping if he wanted to. Moreover, I did not even intend to stop him”! Yue Yang said. Suddenly, a gold compass that was more dazzling than the Staff of Return by a hundred times appeared.

This was the ‘Three Realm Compass’ that Empress Fei Wen Li lent to Yue Yang.

A special Divine Equipment.

The Staff of Return was quite an impressive treasure already since it was able to teleport to Heaven Realm directly from death arena. However, compared to Three Realm Compass, the Staff of Return was like a child's toy. As long as you set target on any location or item, the Three Realm Compass could teleport anyone at will. Not only Tong Tian Tower's Mortal Realm and Heaven Realm, even if it was the God's Realm from legends, it was possible to teleport there. Any obstruction in this world, other than Ancient Code, Divine Grimoire Space and the unbreakable Eternal Seal, or rather those black hole seals that are called 'Nirvana Seal', no other space would be able to block teleportation using Three Realm Compass.

Three Realm Compass was also a Divine Equipment that could be successfully used even if the owner was not super powerful.

It was a highest quality special Divine Equipment.

Even though this was her Majesty's Divine Equipment, but because she and Yue Yang had a Spirit Blood Contract, as long as she designated it, Yue Yang would be able to borrow it.

At that time, when Yue Yang went to seek for Empress Fei Wen Li's help, she took out this Three Realm Compass immediately after understanding the situation. She later said something to Yue Yang that shocked him greatly: "The best way to break the manipulation of the Ancient Battlefield is to attack Heaven Realm."

To let Cang Yan escape back to Heaven Realm was part of Yue Yang, Zhi Zun and Night Empress' plans.

Otherwise, Zhi Zun would not have let him off.

Of course, if Zhi Zun and Night Empress did not come, Yue Yang would have been helpless even if he had the Three Realm Compass. This was because Cang Yan was not someone he could handle. The enemy from Heaven Realm could not be messed with. After hearing Yue Yang's plan, Zhi Zun and Night Empress agreed to it without a second thought. Attacking Heaven Realm was such an impressive move, that even if it failed, it would shock the entire Tong Tian Tower..... Moreover, Yue Yang was directly by Empress Fei Wen Li herself. Even if they could not attack Heaven Realm, Yue Yang still had a way to return safely.

“Huang Quan, Fen Tian, Yun Xing, you three can stay behind. I will not force you all. Our plan is to attack Heaven Realm. There is no way we can let Cang Yan escape! I have already marked the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King and can immediately teleport to where it is. Decide for yourselves whether to follow me and kill Cang Yan, or to stay here!” As Yue Yang invited Huang Quan and the two, he also transmitted his Innate Qi into the Three Realm Compass.

Different from the Staff of Return, from the splendor of Three Realm Compass, a tiny smiling spirit flew out. This was the spirit of the Divine Equipment, it was a fairy around the size of one's palm.

The spirit of the Divine Equipment had a pair of wings like rainbows, and a gorgeous fishtail.

It looked like a mini version of Xiao Wen Li.

Even though not exactly identical, it was still extremely adorable.

The spirit waved its small hands, and all life 10 metres within Yue Yang were marked with a golden Ancient Rune.

Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing exchanged looks and quickly rushed over. Of course, they wanted to join in on this ‘Crazy Plan’ to attack Heaven Realm. Even though they did not know how many enemies there will be, an extremely slim chance of survival was better than staring at the death arena.

Staying here would definitely mean death!

Not to mention those that were near, even Elder Nan Gong and Emperor of the Underworld, who were observing from a distance also rushed over. They were all determined to join the counterattack on Heaven Realm even if they might never return!

To be able to attack Heaven Realm was the long-cherished wish of any ranker.

Even if they died in battle, it was still worth it!

Before teleporting to Heaven Realm, Yue Yang shouted towards the empty spae: “Black Hell King, you gutless turtle, are you waiting to die here?”

“The Ancient Code cannot killed me, Third Young Master. You will never understand what a true betrayer really is!” After Yue Yang and the others disappeared, Black Hell King quietly appeared, floating in the sky. He slowly raised his hand, removing the sacred armor on his body and kept his Dark Sacred Sword. He kept everything in his Grimoire, leaving him standing there in the sky. Lastly, he mumbled to himself: “A true betrayer can even betray himself..... The last betrayal, is not just things like the loyalty of servants, the tears of a lover, the protection of guardian beasts and the alliance between team mates, even my own life..... I, Black Hell, do not need it!”

The punishment of the Ancient Code turned into a destructive strike of lighting, turning Black Hell King into ashes instantly.

Suddenly, a white ray appeared from nowhere.

It shot up to the sky.

A shadow the shape of the Black Hell King flashed within the white light, disappearing.....

Chapter 541 – Illiterate, Go Back To The Countryside And Collect Dung!

Heaven Realm, Ancient Battlefield Ruins.

This was a desolate, uninhabited and lifeless place. Within the radius of a thousand miles, there was absolutely no living creature.

Although it had been 10,000 years, the dimensional fracture caused by the legendary gods in the ancient times was still unable to recover. It was a shock to the eye. The sky was split into half by an unimaginable power. There were two types of power from the Ancient Code which were entirely different. In the deafening silence, they resist each other continuously. From time to time, a whip of purplish blue lightning would be released, piercing through the sky, and eventually explode onto the ground.

The surface of the earth was covered entirely by solidified lava which formed creepy shapes. Since the ancient times until this very day, there were no plants that could survive here.

Most of the areas here were plains. There weren't any volcano craters at all. The reason, why the surface of the earth melted, was entirely due to the violent burning of the flames.

Other than the legendary gods, no one else could cause thousands of miles of land to burn and form liquid lava.

Gazing into the distance, one could see deep pits which seemed to

be formed from the collisions of meteor.

These huge pits were the result of the clashes between the powers of the gods.

The only miracle within the Ancient Battlefield Ruins was the 'Ancient God Statues' which stood at the center of the ruins.

There stood a huge headless statue, which was two hundred meters tall. It was enormous, sitting right in the middle of other statues. At present, no one knew which god this statue represented. However, based on the fact that it was right at the center, it was obvious that his status was high. Perhaps he was the legendary King of Gods. Beside this headless statue, there stood about a dozens of smaller statues with and without limbs. They were similar to the headless statue. Although they stood upright, all of the statues were damaged. There seemed to be no means to restore them.

The dozens of god statues were split into two big groups.

Faintly, they seemed to show hostility towards the other group.

Even the most knowledgeable person wouldn't be able to identify these god statues. However the entire Heaven Realm seemed to be able to recognise one of the gods. It was the God of Arbitration.

No one was sure if the God of Arbitration was real, even including the disciples from the Central Palace, who worshipped

the God of Arbitration. They only vaguely heard that the God of Arbitration was a formidable god that determined the lives and deaths of the living beings in Heaven Realm. During that time, he suggested the idea of having the four lower worlds to compete in the ancient war in the death arena until this very day.

On the left group, standing at the third position in line was a blind folded God. His left hand was damaged, while, in his right hand he held a huge golden scale.

He was the God of Arbitration.

Under his foot, was the 'Four-sided Divine Stele' which initiated the ancient wars.

“Whoosh!”

A beam of light rose from the War Altar in front of the Four-sided Holy Stele, soaring into the sky. After reaching the highest point, it fell downwards just like fireworks.

Falling onto the ground, Cang Yan, the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King and the four Ancient Slaughterer Commanders appeared. Due to the fact that the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King and the four Ancient Slaughterer Commanders were too huge in size, they could not react quickly enough. They knocked over a few hundred Ancient Slaughterers which were standing on the War Altar waiting to enter the death arena, and sent them flying. This caused a disturbance.

Upon seeing the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King's return, all the Ancient Slaughterers roared with excitement.

Thinking that they won, they all cheered for the Beast King's return.

“Were there no talents in the Soaring Dragon Continent? Cang Yan, it must have been a disappointing trip!” A middle aged man whose surroundings sparkled with azure ripples appeared in front of the War Altar. He also had a purple cloak over his body. His light green skin was abnormal but his elegant appearance was just like that of a human. He has a pair of special eyes. His golden pupils could enlarge just like cats, and it exuded a trace of ruthlessness. With great confidence, this middle aged man with golden pupil mocked Cang Yan, “The Soaring Dragon Continent has already fallen. Six thousands years ago the Prison Emperor fell into our trap and fought with the Three Great Leaders of the Western Heaven Realm. Numerous of his subordinates died. The ancient inheritance was practically completely lost, there is no way that there could be another elite! Merely just seeing that in this six thousand years, no one from the Soaring Dragon Continent could set foot in Heaven Realm, there was no need to initiate the ancient war...”

“Hei Hu, take a look at the number of people that returned!” A man who was like an invisible man, who also had with a purple gold cloak, snorted: “Arrogance, is sometimes the synonym of foolishness.”

“What happened?” The man with light green skin and golden pupils furrowed his eyebrows.

“There is an Elder Innate Ranker from the Soaring Dragon Continent, she might have used Divine Equipment to raise her powers. She killed more than a dozen Ancient Slaughterers. However, other than her, the rest would definitely die. Including the young boy who claims to be the new Prison Emperor!” Cang Yan sounded irritated. He really did not want his companion to see his embarrassing state after his failure.

“Even you could not kill her?” Hu Hei was really surprised.

“...” Cang Yan refused to answer this question.

“The outer palace initiated the ancient war without approval, and even forcefully meddled with the battle between the four sides of the lower world, as a result a hundred plus Ancient Slaughterers died. I would report these things to His Majesty Sheng Dian.” The invisible man did not wait for Cang Yan to explain, he lightly brushed his cloak using his hand. There was a light breeze, and in that split second, the person was gone. His high speed and mysterious techniques were something even Cang Yan, who was on the same level, and Hei Hu could not see through.

“...” Cang Yan still remained silent.

“The Inner Palace has already declined!” The golden pupil man, Hei Hu snorted with anger, “The Central Palace is made up of Wind, Fire, Water, Earth, the four Great Palaces. Us Outer Palace members have occupied the three other palaces excluding the Wind Palace. We, the Eight Great Elders, are ranked 6th among the

Outer Palace, we totally have the overwhelming power. If it was not because of His Majesty Sheng Dian, always favouring and helping the Inner Palace, then all those useless wastrels would have been kicked out from the Inner Palace!”

“Shi Feng is quite powerful, if not he would not dare to be so arrogant.” Cang Yan spoke with the intention to sow dissension: “Hei Hu, perhaps we can cooperate during some occasion.”

“To cooperate with you? Clever Cang Yan, I need to consider that.” Hei Hu remained cautious.

“One day you will look for me...” Cang Yan seemed to be confident. Unhurriedly, he flew and landed in front of the Four-sided God Stele, he wanted to pick up the Star of Arbitration which represented the Central Palace.

The golden-bright and dazzling Star of Arbitration was taken down from the golden scale from the statue of the God of Arbitration.

There were two in total.

Normally, the Central Palace takes away one of them, letting the golden scale to tilt to its right.

When the ancient wars start, the Central Palace would place the Star of Arbitration back to the Four-sided God Stele. When this Divine Equipment was placed on the Four-sided God Stele, it would

open the War Altar in front. This allows the Heaven Realm fighters to enter the death arena as the sixth side, the arbiters. Once the Star of Arbitration is picked up, it would mean that the passage to the death arena would be closed. The Heaven Realm fighters could not open it within the next thousand years...

“Eh?”

Cang Yan softly prayed, then slowly drew out the Heaven Runes symbolizing the arbiter.

However, the Star of Arbitration did not move. It was not willing to fly out like how it obeyed the arbitrator before.

Hei Hu was preparing to leave, he turned his head. Seeing what happened he furrowed his eyebrows,” Cang Yan, you cannot even move the Star of Arbitration? Such pretentious look, could it be that you plan to embezzle the Star of Arbitration after I take my leave? I do not want to warn you once again, Cang Yan, the Divine Equipment, Star of Arbitration cannot be messed with. If the Three Palace Owners knew, they would not mind having a new Elder...If His Majesty Sheng Dian found out, even your body will gets torn and bones crushed, you would be unable to avoid the severe punishment!”

Cang Yan did not answer. He prayed once again and drew out the Heaven Runes once again.

The Star of Arbitration did not move an inch. It was embedded onto the Four-sided God Stele, as if it was an integral whole with

the Four-sided God Stele.

Hei Hu saw that Cang Yan did not seemed to be joking with him. He quickly stepped forward and stretched out his two hands. Being exceptionally serious, he prayed together with Cang Yan, and then drew out the Heaven Runes together. He was prepared to receive the Star of Arbitration.

However, the Star of Arbitration did not respond at all.

Now, Cang Yan and Hei Hu both realized that something went wrong. Sweat appeared on their forehead, they were both not sure what the issue was.

“What is happening? The Arbitration is over, the Star of Arbitration should return. This is impossible!” Hei Hu glared at Cang Yan, “What happened in the death arena? What exactly have you done?”

“We did not do anything...” Cang Yan was feeling extremely gloomy, he really did not do anything. Why wasn’t the Star of Arbitration responding to the summon?

“Why don’t you guys ask me? Illiterates should honestly admit, do not pretend you know when you don’t!” All of a sudden, Yue Yang appeared in front of the Four-sided God Stele. It was unknown where he came out from. Yue Yang acted as if he was taking things very seriously. He pointed at the inscriptions on the Four-sided God Stele, with a font as if he was a worthy teacher. He said: “You guys should have seen the Ancient Rune here, do you

know what is written? It said that if the Ancient War was not officially over, the arbitrator could not abscond. Looking at your expressions, did I make it sound too deep? Then you illiterates should listen well. Although you guys escaped from the death arena, the real war is still on. We were still pursuing and attacking. We did not give up yet. The Ancient Code decided that this ancient war is still on. You guys want to be ostriches, it is not a problem but at least you should ask us if we agreed. Now do you understand?”

“It was you?” Cang Yan looked at Yue Yang, his eyes popping. It was just like how ordinary people react when they witness a ghost.

“Who is this little ant? A participant from the Soaring Dragon Continent?” Hei Hu looked at Yue Yang. He was also stunned.

“I, this young master, is the new Prison Emperor, just as what Cang Yan had said earlier. Of course, I have not reached the Prison Emperor’s standard yet. If not, I would have already swat you two flies with my palm! I thought you people were capable, but in reality you do not even understand Ancient Runes. Stopping living in the Heaven Realm, go back to the countryside and collect dung! Those who collect dung from my hometown are more educated than you!” Yue Yang picked his ears, looking at the two Heaven Realm Rankers who could not even read Ancient Runes, he felt that his ego wasn’t bad.

In fact, the Ancient Runes was not something common.

Cang Yan and Hei Hu could not read, this meant that only a few people from the Heaven Realm could understand. This was

definitely not something any random person could read and understand!

Yue Yang was not so free, if not he would use Ancient Runes to write a letter to take liberties on 'Ming Yue Guang' and see if she understood Ancient Runes. Now, seeing Cang Yan and Hei Hu's pale complexion, Yue Yang felt that it was just like the tragic expression an illiterate person would make when he or she was caught taking newspapers.

It was a really great feeling.

"How did you chase me to the Heaven Realm?" Cang Yan quickly calmed down his mind. If this Yue Clan's Third Young Master chased after him alone, then he should just kill him. Of course, even if he ate a moronic pill he would not think this way. If the opponent was not sure, he would not have gave chase. As for Yue Yang, Cang Yan did not feel there was a problem. His only concern was the human Zhi Zun who could kill once she moves her hand.

"So the Heaven Realm was just nothing but this, this is so disappointing." Zhi Zun's cold and conceited voice, rang just like ice pearls cracking.

Cang Yan's heart sank, he cried out in alarm to warn his companion, "Be careful..."

But it was too late.

Zhi Zun appeared in the sky, above the War Altar. Her two hands have already opened, she was going to release another beam of destructive ray... With the special assistance from Starry Night Domain and the extra support from the War Altar, the power Zhi Zun unleashed this time, was ten times stronger than what she unleashed previously.

Instantly, the entire Ancient Battlefield Ruins had been flooded by an ocean of light!

Chapter 542 – Your Mom Is Calling For You To Eat Dinner!

After a long time, the wave of light finally gradually receded.

Cang Yan was in an extremely sorry state.

Although he was prepared, his underestimation towards the new power of the destructive ray caused him greatly suffer.

Before that, Zhi Zun had already released the destructive ray once. Although she managed to kill more than ten Ancient Slaughterer instantly, Cang Yan wasn't alarmed as he realised that the seemingly terrifying ray couldn't hurt him. It had never occurred to him that it was Zhi Zun's tactic to hide her true power previously.

This time round, Zhi Zun did not reserve any of her power.

She was ten times stronger than the previous round!

Under the help of Night Empress' Starry Sky Domain, coupled with Zhi Zun going all out, the power of the destructive ray was expected to boost up to eight times. But what surprised even Zhi Zun herself was that the strength of her destructive ray had been boosted by another level by the War Altar! This natural aid boosted the power of the destructive ray to ten times and beyond... So Cang Yan and Hei Hu turned into a sorry state!

Being so close to the destructive ray, the cloak, that was a Holy Equipment, was thoroughly destroyed turning into ashes in the air.

Cang Yan's previously beautiful curly golden hair were charred even under the protection of his Holy Equipment and his Domain.

The purple gown that was a Holy Equipment was already torn and tattered.

It was like a beggar outfit. Coupled with Cang Yan's charred appearance, he looked extremely tragic. It was a huge contrast to his previously cool appearance!

But he was strong enough, hence he wasn't injured fatally. But those who knew Cang Yan would be shocked since no one had made him look so sorry for thousands of years already.

As compared to Cang Yan, Hei Hu was more severely injured.

Hei Hu who wasn't aware that Zhi Zun could unleash such a powerful blow was directly exposed to the ray, and as a result, his golden pupil was burnt.

Even if he could recover, it would take many years, or even longer... The appearance of Hei Hu who lost his vision and turned blind was even more sorry than Cang Yan. There were bloodied wounds everywhere on his body. Most of them were charred, giving off a barbecued meat smell.

If it weren't because he was at the same level as Cang Yan, he would have collapsed from the blow.

The Ancient Slaughterer beast King had already collapsed!

Both of its eyeballs exploded and as its eye sockets became two bloodied holes... As it was nearest the region Zhi Zun attacked in, its head and face were charred and disfigured as fresh blood oozed out from its nose and mouth. Other than the external wounds, it suffered internal injuries. Zhi Zun was aware that she couldn't kill the cunning Cang Yan and Hei Hu, so she focussed on attacking the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King the most. Although the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King wasn't as shrewd as Cang Yan, it was the ruler of the Ancient Slaughterers after all, so he had a large number of followers.

As long as it was still alive, it would be a huge threat to the entire situation.

If she couldn't kill Cang Yan, she chose to kill the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King instead.

It would be better to break one finger than to injure ten fingers.

This was a plan initiated by Yue Yang.

The Ancient Slaughterer Beast King was an important key. Cang Yan would run away, so she couldn't let him take Ancient

Slaughterer Beast King away. It was superior to all other people apart from Zhi Zun, Night Empress and Yue Yang. It was a deadly threat even to the Heaven Ranked Level 3 Huang Quan.

If they could get rid of the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King, Huang Quan and the rest would be able to help them. Yue Yang, Night Empress and Zhi Zun could then be more focussed on attacking Cang Yan.

But it wasn't dead.

It possessed such a strong body that even when it was blind, it was full of life. Being heavily injured temporarily meant nothing to it.

The four Ancient Slaughterer Commanders also didn't die... They laid on the ground on the brink of death. The previous destructive ray almost killed them. Now with an even more powerful destructive ray, the reason why they weren't killed instantly was because of their strong body. They wouldn't be able to recover in the short term, so everything was going well according to Yue Yang's plan. The only thing Yue Yang did not expect was that there were almost one hundred Ancient Slaughterers in the War Altar. Most of them collapsed under the destructive ray.

Instant kill!

Even with the shelter of their teammates, not many of them manage to survive the blow.

A few Ancient Slaughterer captain were still alive albeit already on the verge of death. But they were at their limits already.

Even if everyone ignored them with them, they wouldn't be able to survive...

“Goddamn it, this is too annoying! I hate people from the Soaring Dragon Continent the most! Die, all of you shall die!” Hei Hu, who was blind, roared crazily as he reached his hands to summon his Platinum Grimoire. Numerous beasts instantly appeared. A multi-eyed monster that looked like an octopus with numerous tentacles fused into Hei Hu's body. With its help, numerous pairs of eyes grew on Hei Hu's skin. There were more than ten pairs of them in various sizes, causing Hei Hu to look very eerie.

Two monsters with cow heads, lizard bodies and snake tail glided towards Zhi Zun, waving weird long blades in their hands.

They were all Heaven Ranked Level Two.

They were on par to the Ancient Slaughterer Captains.

Through the waves of energy generated from them waving the weird blades, it could be judged that they had intelligence. They weren't like the Ancient Slaughterer who lacked cognitive development..

Yue Yang also saw two dwarves with lower jaws that had whale

feelers. They were carrying huge baggages on their bags. They quickly assembled their weapons in their baggages, forming a holy-ranked double edge sword spanning over ten metres. They then brought out armors out of their huge baggages and assembled them orderly, covering Hei Hu in the armour within ten seconds. This wasn't the end. The two dwarfs then sprinkled golden blood around, as the blood condensed in front of Hei Hu, forming a Heaven Rune. Their efficient actions boosted the armor's power by more than ten times.

“Interesting.” Although Yue Yang looking down on the opposite party's foolish behavior, he did not mind learning the tricks of using Heaven Runes from them secretly.

“Okay, you have provoked me entirely!” Cang Yan also summoned a tall Fire Giant.

As compared to Hei Hu, he was much more meticulous.

He first set up his Trap Domain before slowly fusing with the Heaven Ranked Level Two Fire Giant.

Yue Yang was sure that Cang Yan definitely had other stronger beast which he hadn't summoned yet. They were probably Cang Yan's most important secrets and Cang Yan would only reveal them at the last moment. As for Hei Hu, Yue Yang felt that he wasn't a fool either. Although he mightn't be as cunning as Cang Yan, he would definitely be one who looked coarse on the outside but meticulous on the inside.

His arrogant attitude might be a form of disguise.

Zhi Zun did not retreat when she saw the opponents. Instead, she went forwards, undaunted by the strong enemies.

The two cow-headed monsters were shook more than hundred meters away when she reached out her hand. She only snorted coldly towards Cang Yan's rapid sneak attack as a golden light shield rose like a grimoire barrier, repelling Cang Yan away.

Hei Hu, who went right after Cang Yan, couldn't believe it. Cang Yan was an Elder at Heaven Ranked Level 5 of the Fire Palace. He never expected that he would be shook away even before he struck.

Could it be that this woman from the Soaring Dragon Continent was really that powerful?

He waved his double edge sword unbelievably.

He slashed it down heavily.

But it only made his double edge sword shake more violently as it almost flew away... Hei Hu who was one of the Eight Elders from the Central palace was dumbstruck, even the four Palace Lord won't be able to achieve this right? Could it be that this woman from the Soaring Dragon Continent was more powerful than the four Palace Lords?

“This could be the skills of her beast or a skill she learnt herself!”

With ashen expression, Cang Yan continued, “Close combats are useless, we have to use our energies to kill her! Her body isn’t strong enough, so she’ll surely die if she were to be struck! Hei Hu, go deal with those ants, I’ll do this fight. We can settle her together later when you are done!”

“Sleep talking before your death?” Zhi Zun used her fair hands to shatter the void before gathering her destructive black bullet.

She raised her hand and struck it towards one of the cow-headed monster.

Cang Yan couldn’t even warn it as he kicked it away directly to dodge the attack of the black bullet... However, Zhi Zun moved her finger, causing the black bullet to turn and shoot right through the cow-headed monster that was kicked away. It was killed instantly!

Hei Hu angrily let out a strange cry.

But he did not dare to take the blow of the destructive black bullet directly.

Waving his double edge sword, he was preparing to vent his anger by killing Yue Yang. But numerous stars appeared before Yue Yang, slashing away Hei Hu’s energy wave.

Night Empress’ pleasant voice sounded. She did not sound angry at all. “Heaven Ranked Ranker, please don’t be anxious. If you don’t mind, I can be your opponent. Although I can’t be like Zhi

Zun, who could shock you instantly, I hope that you can remember me as an opponent.”

The remaining cow-headed monster avoided the Starry Sky Domain.

It was preparing to launch a sneak attack on Yue Yang who was continuously copying down the inscriptions on the four-sided stele.

Yue Yang saw that the Four-sided Divine Stele wasn't damaged at all under the destructive ray. The reason was that every time the destructive ray shone on it, numerous Heaven Runes and Ancient Runes would form a thin veil. All the God statues were unharmed under the veil. It remained unknown how they were chipped.

From this, Yue Yang was instantly interested in those Runes that hadn't disappear.

Although he wasn't entirely sure of their uses, he copied them down quickly to avoid future regrets.

Yue Yang wasn't bothered by the cow-headed monster's attacks at all.

Night Empress' pleasant voice sounded softly. She didn't sound like she was fighting. Instead, she sounded as if she was singing. “Starfall, Meteor Shower!”

Stars turned into meteorites one after another in the Starry Sky Domain. They sliced across the space and crashed onto the cow-headed monster that was about to attack Yue Yang... Without waiting for it to get up, the meteor shower smashed it into a mash of meat. Although it wasn't as stunning as Zhi Zun's black bullet, it was also one which could kill people instantly. It was terrifying.

“Huang Quan, what are you waiting for? There are so many monsters who aren't dead lying around, you want to wait for them to recover before fighting?” Yue Yang saw that Huang Quan, Fen Tian and the rest were still watching the fight between Zhi Zun and Cang Yan and, Night Empress and Hei Hu bewilderedly. He was baffled. They had to know when to watch on the sidelines and when not to. The situation now was extremely urgent, yet they are still watching?

“Kill that guy, he is the mastermind behind everything!” Cang Yan hoped that Hei Hu could kill Yue Yang quickly. Night Empress was definitely not a combat type ranker, so Hei Hu would be wasting his energy if he were to continue fighting with her.

“Exchange opponents!” Hei Hu was extremely incensed. Night Empress wasn't an easy opponent, she hadn't even appeared in her Starry Sky Domain, how could they continue the fight?

“Two dwarf kiddos, your mom is calling for you to eat dinner!!” Yue Yang suddenly appeared behind the back of the two dwarves. He first patted them on their shoulders and then used his God Killing Dagger to slice across their short neck quickly while they were startled. Black blood splattered...

Chapter 543 – Surround And Kill, With All Your Might

Hei Hu seethed with anger when he saw Yue Yang attack and kill two of his Blood Slaves.

Although the two Blood Slaves were extremely weak, they were very important.

Especially since, they were irreplaceable for boosting the Golden Runes.

Hei Hu could have his powers increased by at least 50% after their special boost. For them to be killed in a single stroke by Yue Yang pained Hei Hu's heart. Hei Hu couldn't care less about the two Abyss Manatees that died since they were elite imperial bodyguards offered by the Abyss Vassal Clan every few hundred years. Let alone the Central Palace, there were over a few dozen of them in Hei Hu's Grimoire World so the loss of two of them could not be felt.

Contrarily, the weak Blood Slaves were not bred naturally and required large amount of manpower and resources to raise.

It took an extremely slow process.

Hei Hu had spent thousand of years with great difficulty before he had managed to breed these two Whale-feeler Dwarves proficient in the Heaven Runes to become Blood Slaves. He did not

expect them to be killed by the enemy in one stroke.

What blew Hei Hu's top was that the Whale-feeler Dwarves had a special type of tapeworm, a parasitic Beast within their bodies which could regenerate their bodies no matter the extent of damage as long as the body was not destroyed. However, the goddamned Yue Yang used his legendary Nirvana Flames to refine the orb of the dwarves right after he killed them.

Like this, these two Blood Slaves would be dead forever.

They could never be resurrected.

“Damn you!” Hei Hu cursed Cang Yan under his breath. If Cang Yan had not interfered with the ancient war of the death arena, then none of the subsequent problems would have arose. Regardless of the woman who emitted the destructive rays or the woman who possessed the Starry Sky Domain, they were both not to be trifled with. Now, when he saw that this human boy possessed Nirvana Flames, he knew that he was also also not easy to deal with... he had the Nirvana Flames, purifying flames which the Fire Palace Lord did not even possess. If the flames were to fall into his hands, there might not be anyone who could survive from his wrath.

“God Rune Boundary...” Yue Yang learnt from others quickly. When Hei Hu rushed towards him, he already combined the technique of the Blood Slaves together with his own comprehension of the secret of the Runes and drew the rune of the Four-sided Divine Stele.

Sure enough, the form was as Yue Yang expected.

The rune that guarded the Four-sided Divine Stele was a super defensive runic war circle.

It was unbelievably thin and seemed to be unable to withstand Hei Hu's attack as he punched. It was like a shirt caught in a violent tornado, at the risk of tearing and shattering. However, as Hei Hu landed his fist, it only dented a little, dissipating the scary strength of the punch.

The power which Hei Hu attacked with disappeared completely.

Not only for Hei Hu, but such an effect was unexpected by Yue Yang as well.

“Awesome!” Yue Yang celebrated quietly.

The rune formation he just drew was only learnt just moments ago and had not sunk in completely yet. What would the defensive power be like if he could fully grasp the meaning of the rune circle? Yue Yang didn't dare imagine. Of course this 'God Rune Boundary' had its weakness. After drawing it, the user was unable to move nor counterattack, he could only defend.

A purely defensive shield was not that useful for Yue Yang.

Still, Yue Yang could use it somewhere else.

For example on armors, Battle Dolls, buildings and also teleportation circles. If this 'God Rune Boundary' could be used to provide long lasting protection, these things would be able to work perfectly.

“Huh...”

Hei Hu was a little taken aback.

He had thought that he could instantly kill Yue Yang with one punch or at least injure him tremendously. Who would've thought that Yue Yang did not only blocked the blow but also had the free time to perfect the techniques he copied from the Blood Slaves. This lad actually dared to steal the secret of the runes from his Blood Slaves right before the battle. When this sank in, Hei Hu became even more furious and a murderous look appeared on his face.

In his other hand, he waved a double edged blade. It spun like a wheel and flew out of his hand like lightning as it sliced through the air and towards Yue Yang with thunder and lightning.

“Your opponent is me!” Night Empress's voice sounded through the skies.

The Starry Sky Domain shifted and all the stars that floated in the sky began to whirl. A galaxy with six gigantic spiral arms was

created. Its formed like the Milky Way, it had an immensely strong gravitational field which pulled the spinning blade Hei Hu tossed away from its intended target.

Hei Hu reacted immediately.

He waved his hand and drew back the double edged blade to which he had a connection to.

This Holy Treasure nearly fell into Night Empress hands... The extraordinary powers of Night Empress' Starry Sky Domain made the Heaven Ranked Level 5 water-type Elder of the Central Palace Hall wary about making moves. Even though he had the advantage in skills, he could not deal with an enemy that he cannot see. Before he figured out a way to unravel the extraordinary powers of the domain, Hei Hu thought it best if he did not waste his energy fighting the domain, to save him from being ridiculed. As for Yue Yang, Hei Hu naturally would not let such a hateful human off. His hand brushed over the Platinum Grimoire and he summoned 8 Abyss Manatees.

“Kill him, no, capture him, I want him as my Blood Slave!” Hei Hu had a change of heart. He felt that, with Yue Yang's gift in runes, it would allow him to reach even higher levels if he had Yue Yang as his Blood Slave.

“Third Young Master, we're here!” Huang Quan felt anxious when he realized he could not kill the Ancient Slaughterers.

The few dying Ancient Slaughterers were no big deal.

Even if they were not attacked, they would have died since their death was only a matter of time.

Yet, the Ancient Slaughterer Commanders were extremely difficult to kill. They would not die anytime soon and Huang Quan, Fen Tian and the others decided that they should be left to Yue Yang. Yue Yang would be more efficient at killing others since he possessed the World Exterminating Wheel and the Nirvana Flames. Moreover, there was still the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King. Huang Quan and the rest would not have been able to kill this fella without battling for a few hours if it wasn't for the help of Yue Yang...

Huang Quan and the rest rushed to where Yue Yang was and intercepted the Abyss Manatees.

Although the Abyss Manatees were pretty skilled, they were unable to match up to the Ancient Slaughterers in terms of physical build, strength, vitality and so on. Huang Quan and gang were confident that they could defeat these 8 enemies.

“Grunt, grunt!” The 8 Abyss Manatees were creatures of intelligence. Even though they could not contract a grimoire, they had summoning crystals. All 8 of them fished out a purplish blue summoning crystal and muttered a string of words. Blue light poured out and countless Amphibious Fish Demons were summoned. Despite that these ugly Amphibious Fish Demons were only Innate Level 6, which Huang Quan and the rest did not even care to kill, together, they could release a special power: Fishing Net Capture.

“What the hell...” Bone Clan’s Weng Jin and the three-eyed tiggerman were both trapped by the Amphibious Fish Demons’ fishnet. Only Huang Quan, with the power of his light ray eye and lightman, with his ability to become light rays escaped.

As for the Fire Clan’s Fen Tian and Liquid-form Gold Man Yun Xing, they evaded capture since they lagged behind.

The part man part robot was the most pitiful.

He was much slower so the Amphibious Fish Demons did not target him but he was then surrounded and beaten up by a few Abyss Manatees.

That happened since he was the most heavily injured among everyone and thus, the weakest. He practically became the pushover everyone took advantage of.

Cang Yan and Zhi Zun were still engaged in battle. Cang Yan did not dare allow Zhi Zun to have the chance to make a move on the others. Because other than Hei Hu and himself, nobody else would be able to survive fighting against Zhi Zun. He must keep this terrifying enemy occupied and slowly deplete her energy. He had realized that her weakness was that she was limited by her body. Being limited to being in a female body, she was not strong enough and was seemingly less skilled in close combat. If it was not for her shield, her weak body would not have been able to withstand his blows.

This woman must be killed.

If she ever matured, she would definitely be a powerful enemy on par with the Four Great Palace Lords.

She must be killed in this Ancient Battlefield Ruins before she managed to overcome the natural weakness of her body.

No, not only her but the invisible Night Empress as well as Yue Yang, who possessed the World Exterminating Wheel, Eternal Wheel and the Nirvana Flames, must not live. If not, the incident with the Prison Emperor 6000 years ago will happen again.

“Hei Hu, what are you waiting for, hurry up and kill that Yue Clan’s Third Young Master!” Cang Yan panicked when he discovered Hei Hu was fighting against Night Empress.

“Shut up, Cang Yan. I know what I’m doing...” Hei Hu was super annoyed. It wasn’t that he did not want to kill Yue Yang. If only he could get out, he personally wanted to seize that human boy and make him his Blood Slave.. However, Hei Hu only realised Night Empress’ scariness after being trapped in her Starry Sky Domain. She was totally capable of killing without leaving any traces. If he took such a powerful enemy lightly, he would probably meet a tragic end.

“Don’t question anything now, don’t speak, listen to me and just kill everyone who is not our own!” Yue Yang lead the Emperor of the Underworld, Elder Nan Gong, Southern Goblin King and Phoenix Fairy Beauty out from the Grimoire World.

Hei Hu could not care less when he saw that they were tiny ants he could kill in under a second.

However, when he saw the appearance of the over 200 metres tall Ancient Titan Loli, he jumped in shock: “Hadn’t the Western War Goddess died?”

The Ancient Titan Loli had lost her memory after being sent into concussion by the Black Hell King and now obeyed Yue Yang.

When Yue Yang waved his hand, she followed, thumping.

“Let’s chop up that many-eyed freak!” Yue Yang pointed at Hei Hu and the Titan Armored giant loli very obediently lunged at Hei Hu, almost smashing him under her feet. Luckily, Hei Hu still had the reaction speed of a Heaven Ranked Level 5.

“Scram!” Hei Hu lifted his right hand and a blast of destructive shock waves shot out towards the giant Lolita.

“It hurts, it hurts...” the giant loli braved through the shockwaves unscathed and almost flattened a stunned Hei Hu with a punch.

Hei Hu avoided the attack but an Abyss Manatee nearby wasn’t as lucky.

The giant loli stepped on it accidentally when she ran.

One giant step.

The bones in its body shattered immediately and it died tragically.

Without the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King to block her, the presence of the giant loli was like computer bug. The towering body, gigantic strength combined with that unmatched defensive Titan Armor made her an invincible annihilating war goddess on the battlefield. Especially, with the extra help from Night Empress' Starry Domain and the War Altar, the might of the giant loli soared multiple times.

Hei Hu broke out in cold sweat but remained arrogant: "Just Heaven Ranked Level 3? What a dumb and clumsy fool!"

Lastly, Yue Yang lead Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian out.

Both stood on the Eternal Wheel.

Their heart and mind were one with Yue Yang's and they silently awaited him to perform the Body Fusion skill.

With both women, Yue Yang could be more formidable than the giant loli with the Starry Domain and War Altar.

Hei Hu swept his eyes over Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia, disapproving... He completely disregarded those below Heaven Rank. Even a Heaven Ranked Level 1 posed no threat to his Heaven Ranked Level 5 skills.

“Chop!” Princess Qian Qian leapt through the sky. An image of a white tiger flashed in the sky as the Prison Emperor Divine Sword chopped down with earth-shattering might.

“Too slow.” Hei Hu sneered. How could a human woman cut him, a Heaven Ranked Level 5, so easily? He raised his right hand and prepared to kill her.

“What about with addition to me?” Yue Yang appeared behind Princess Qian Qian. He leaned over, grabbed Princess Qian Qian’s delicate foot and threw her out like a human sword. His Innate Qi passed through Princess Qian Qian into the Prison Emperor Divine Sword.

The Sword Qi soared.

Hei Hu realized in shock that he could not move.

Besides the control by the gravity of the Starry Skt Domain, there was also a lamia loli staring at him. At the same time, the woman on Yue Yang’s other hand, clutched an ancient book. The woman holding the book with a Divine Seal quickly approached him and used the immense will of the seal to suppress him.

Tricked...

Hei Hu suddenly realized the two weak women were in fact crucial helpers of Yue Yang. He was fooled.

However, it was too late for regrets.

Not only Yue Yang and Night Empress, but even Zhi Zun, who was fighting Cang Yan had appeared behind him unknowingly.

Chapter 544 – Either You Die Or I Die

The Prison Emperor Divine Sword, cut right through Hei Hu's Holy-ranked helmet, striking him right on the top of his head.

While, the Prison Emperor Divine Seal, smashed right onto his heart.

Hei Hu just broke free from Xiao Wen Li's [Binding Chains] Inherent Skill. He unleashed his energy instantly, sending Yue Yang, Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian into the air. Night Empress suddenly appeared. Her beautiful image flashed and she appeared right behind Yue Yang. She waved her delicate hands, causing the stars in Starry Sky Domain to stream right behind her, forming numerous shooting stars. They produced an endless Starry Sky Gravity, absorbing all of Hei Hu's energy. They even started dragging Hei Hu's physical body, which was being flanked by the Prison Emperor Divine Sword and the Prison Emperor Divine Seal. Hei Hu lost all control. His Holy-ranked armor also begun to slowly crumble under the power of the two Divine Equipment and the suppression of the boundless Star Power.

Hei Hu's muscles ruptured, even his bones were rattling...

Yue Yang once experienced Xu Kong's Hundredfold Gravity, however, comparing it to the Night Empress' Starry Sky Domain 'Star Force Pull', the terrifying Hundredfold Gravity was somewhat inferior.

Of course, at the time, Xu Kong had just broken free from the

Prison Emperor's seal, so he was still weak and had not recovered his true ability. If not, Yue Yang may not have faced Hundredfold Gravity, but two hundred times, three hundred times or perhaps even stronger gravity.

Regardless, Night Empress' Star Force Pull created enough impact on Hei Hu, who was also being flanked by the two Divine Equipment.

The Night Empress' intention, was not to kill Hei Hu.

What she really wanted to achieve, was to create an opportunity.

Zhi Zun, was actually the last Grim Reaper.

A Rune Circle with six dazzling stars appeared on Hei Hu's back. Space gradually fragmented. Everything, including his helmet, skin, blood, flesh as well as energy, were all absorbed by the black bullets. The black bullets condensed to form smaller granules and was shot out from Zhi Zun's palms as she released them.

Hei Hu could only watch, a terrifying black bullet, penetrating his chest...

“Ahh!”

The fear of death flooded his heart.

At this moment he did not bother to strike back, the only move Hei Hu wanted to make was to flee.

He had already fallen into the enemy's trap, if he did not escape quickly, he would definitely die on the spot. Hei Hu did not consider why the enemy decided to surround and target him first, nor did he consider why Cang Yan did not come and rescue him. He also did not consider why the Yue Clan's Third Young Master had two Divine Equipment that he himself was unable to obtain. He did not even think about his own injuries...

He did not have time to think. Relying purely on instincts, Hei Hu dropped onto the ground with all his might.

He forcefully drilled into the hard earth.

He tried with all his might to get rid of the Prison Emperor Divine Sword and the Prison Emperor Divine Seal. Hei Hu did not know what exactly these two Divine Equipments were but he knew very well that if any of them were to release their powers, it would be fatal.

In a thousandth second's time, the ground replaced Hei Hu's body and became the new target for Star Force Pull.

While, Hei Hu kept crazily digging deeper underground.

Hei Hu had never thought the he would try to escape like a mole...However, as long as he could escape, it did not matter how

ugly he appeared now. This was the best choice already! Right, drilling underground was ugly as compared to flying coolly in the air. Flee by flying? Drilling was actually the best technique for one to survive.

This was because, other than the Prison Emperor Divine Sword waiting to attack him, there was also the terrifying destructive ray and the Star Force Pull from the Starry Sky Domain.

No matter how idiotic Hei Hu was, he would not escape into the sky where he would get attacked more easily.

“Stomp you to death!” The giant loli did not react fast enough a moment ago, but now she finally caught up. She saw the ground shaking and stomped hard with one foot.

“Ouch!” Hei Hu felt as if his entire body was stepped over by 10,000 huge mammoths. His bones were yelping in pain.

“Stomp, Stomp, Stomp Stomp Stomp Stomp...” The giant loli stomped on the ground crazily as if she was stepping on groundhogs. She attacked Hei Hu, who was hidden underground. Her mad and violent stomping shook the entire Ancient Battlefield Ruins, it was as if there was a magnitude 10 earthquake. The Amphibious Fish Demons and the Abyss Manatees that were the weakest lost their balance although they were fighting in the distance.

Yue Yang did not have the time to turn and look at the Night Empress. In one hand, he held Princess Qian Qian’s hand, in the

other, he held Xue Wu Xia's.

The Prison Emperor Divine Sword's Qi criss-crossed on the ground, causing the earth to tear, forming fractures.

While, Xue Wu Xia supported the Prison Emperor Divine Seal using the ancient book.

After getting hit just now, she has slowly restored back to her calm state. She waited for the next opportunity to attack.

The Prison Emperor Divine Seal was not like the Prison Emperor Divine Sword, it was unable to attack at anytime. However, it was more powerful. Every strike from it would be fatal.

The Night Empress hid herself once again, and vanished.

It was as if she had never appeared at all.

Zhi Zun shot a cold glance at Cang Yan, who was watching the fight from a distance. She slowly flew towards this cunning enemy.

Cang Yan did not show much emotions, as if he did not see his companion being beaten. However, deep down in his heart there were in fact torrents of emotions. It was not that he did not want to rescue him, but he guessed that if he did, he would fall into the enemy's trap and replace Hei Hu as the enemy's striking target.

That Zhi Zun and Night Empress did not give their all to kill Hei Hu... What did this mean?

Their real target was definitely him.

It was only because he did not get duped so they changed to attack Hei Hu!

Cang Yan shivered, and secretly exclaimed to himself that he was lucky. If he was unable to think calmly just now and rushed in to save Hei Hu, he would have been in deep trouble!

“You people, don’t be so proud of yourselves for too long.” Cang Yan suddenly took out the Staff of Return. A beam of light shot through the sky. As the Central Palace’s Fire Palace elder, he actually left his teammate and escaped from the Ancient Battlefield Ruins alone. This action stunned Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing. It was not because there were no army deserter from Heaven Realm but a powerful Heaven Ranked Level 5 deserter was something none of them had seen before.

It can be said that fleeing from the death arena back to Heaven Realm was considered as a tactic to borrow the Code’s powers to defeat the enemy.

Then now, fleeing when one still had the advantage, right before the situation gets worse, was totally a selfish act!

“Quickly kill Hei Hu, that guy is going to call for

reinforcements!” Yue Yang knew that Cang Yan was a vile character who would definitely take revenge. Yue Yang knew that Hei Hu would not admit defeat so easily. He quickly warned everyone,” Those who are below Heaven Ranked, stay away. Be careful of Hei Hu’s final struggle.”

“Understood!” Not just the Emperor of the Underworldside, even Huang Quan and his allies listened to Yue Yang’s words at this moment.

The giant loli stopped trampling as she stared at the ground carefully.

Her cute expression was just like a little girl who was observing where the cockroach went.

A flood of blue liquid started seeping out from the ground that was riddled with scars caused by the Prison Emperor Divine Sword . It was not spring water nor was it sea water... It was the water source from the Ancient Battlefield Ruins. It must be Hei Hu’s doing.

More and more blue liquid started to seep out. At first it was just like a spring when there was not much, but after sometime more and more accumulated on the surface of the ground. In the end, the indented regions on the ground were filled with blue liquid. It was just like a deep blue lake. The Amphibious Fish Demons and Abyss Manatees receive a boost in their combat powers thanks to the blue liquid.

Zhi Zun furrowed her eyebrows slightly, and remained silent.

Instead, the Night Empress' heaven like voice rang softly," This is a domain power. A type of domain that could transform physical matter."

Yue Yang unleashed his Hui Jin Magic Blade, a bunch of Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus filled the sky. Like fiery meteors, they struck the center of the blue lake.

The lifeless dark colored lake spouted out a huge geyser that was ten meters tall, stopping the attacks from the Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus.

Water and Fire, collided in the air.

There were strange sounds echoing.

Numerous blue coloured gases steamed out, filling the entire battlefield.

The fearless Spirit of Earth Fire left the blue lake area in disgust. She used her storm to blow the blue coloured gases away and refused to get any of it onto her body.

Hei Hu's body rose from the deep blue lake.

He was tattered and battered.

Fresh blood gushed out from the top of his head. There was a big hole on his chest. One could clearly see the front and rear of the hole. His organs disappeared.

Although deeply wounded, Hei Hu was still not dead... He did not rage, instead directed some words at Zhi Zun:” If I do not die today, then I would swear to eliminate all living things on the Soaring Dragon Continent.” He then faced towards the direction of the Starry Sky Domain and said:” I have remembered your name, Night Empress. You are an opponent who is worth my vigilance for a lifetime. Anyone who belittles you is an idiot, just like me previously! Today, it’s either your death or mine!”

Yue Yang listened for quite a while. Seeing that he did not mention him at all, he decided to remind him,”Oi Oi, uncle, I am the most talented one, please praise me too!”

“No problem, after I kill you, I would compliment you in front of your grave every year!” Hei Hu nodded and replied: “There had never been a human, who had not even reached Heaven Ranked, capable of pushing me to the edge like this. That person was right, you are probably the new Prison Emperor. No matter what, I cannot let you live!”

“Who is that person?” Yue Yang furrowed his eyebrows and asked.

“I would answer you after you die.” Hei Hu stood at the center of the deep blue lake, slowly raising his power. He kept his head

down. The injured golden pupil that lost sight just now was sparkling once again. While, the injuries caused by the Prison Emperor Divine Sword as well as the bloodied hole on his chest were quickly being repaired and healed. “You people are all talented opponents, however, let me tell you people a piece of bad news. That is, the gap in level. Absolute gap in power. It is not something you can face with tactics and numbers!”

A powerful wave of energy rushed up into the air, bringing along the flood of blue liquid into the air. A liquid giant with a height greater than two meters appeared.

This blue giant stood in the center of the lake.

Its attack power rose all the way to Heaven Ranked Level 5.

Even if Emperor of the Underworld, Elder Nan Gong and the rest backed away by a few thousand kilometers, they still felt the suffocating pressure and had difficulties to breath.

Huang Quan and his allies also retreated quickly. They were unable to directly combat against such a powerful aura.

The giant loli still wanted to remain. The blue giant extended its arm. Just like water serpents, numerous arms formed and wrapped around the giant loli’s arm, forcefully dragging her away from the ground and flung her out by a few thousand kilometers. This result not just stunned the spectators, but also the giant loli who was dizzy from the fall. None of them believed that the giant loli lost so easily to the opponent in terms of strength.

As the Ancient Titan, who also had the Titan War Armor to protect herself, how was it possible for her to lose to some guy made of water?

“Ha!” The giant loli charged, wanting to fight with him once again.

“Do not be impulsive. He is leveraging on your power.” Yue Yang could tell, although the blue giant in the black lake was tough, but it would definitely not be as strong as the giant loli, who was an Ancient Titan. It was just that the giant was composed of liquid and could eliminate the opponent’s power and use it against them. Physically striking this liquid giant, was just like punching the ocean, there were actions that work to no avail.

“...” Zhi Zun was silent.

“I have no good solution at the moment, little Yue Yang, I’ll leave it to you!” The Night Empress did not seem to want to waste energy to deal with the blue giant which was in the black lake.

“Okay, afterall I am the captain!” In fact, Yue Yang was an expert at water conflicts.

Of course, this personal strength was only known to a few. Everyone thought Yue Yang, who possessed the Nirvana Flames was the best at fire attacks.

He waved his hands.

Not just Xiao Wen Li, Stone Element Medusa, Storm Mermaid and the others appeared. Xue Wu Xia, who has been quietly waiting, could also unleash her greatest combat power! She had already flipped open the platinum ancient book that was leveled up from gold and had already summoned her Guardian Spirit Beast ‘Blizzard Lady’, who had become one with the ancient book. Under Yue Yang’s Yin energy’s help, the entire Ancient Battlefield Ruins became a world of ice and snow!

The wind howled.

Snow filled the sky.

Chapter 545 – Devour Until Your Full

Although the blizzard continued to fill the skies, it was not an easy feat to freeze the blue giant standing where Hei Hu was.

The Amphibious Fish Demons and Abyss Manatees all hid in the lake.

The blue liquid did not freeze at all.

With Hei Hu's control, they were able to defend against the frost very well.

Blizzard Lady was currently using the cold air to engulf the entire Ancient Battlefield Ruins. She had fused with the ancient book and ranked up to Diamond Ranked Level 1 and after an arduous cultivation with her master in the 10th Floor of Tong Tian Tower, she was already Diamond Ranked Level 2. Although it wasn't a high rank, it was very powerful. She, who was over forty meters, controlled lightning on one hand and cold stream on the other hand. She summoned forth a blizzard under the help of Yue Yang and Xue Wu Xia's Body Fusion and turned the Ancient Battlefield Ruins into a bitterly cold place.

The ground froze and became hard.

A few Ancient Slaughterer Captains, who weren't dead before, died as a layer of frost formed on their eyeballs.

Taking advantage of the coldness, Charm Demon Queen used her mesmerising ability. Under the consecutive attacks of the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, the blind Ancient Slaughterer Beast King fell for the Charm Demon Queen as she deceitfully lead it into Phoenix Fairy Beauty's Grimoire World.

Not only it, twenty other Ancient Slaughterers that weren't injured were also trapped inside.

Yue Yang did not have time now. He would save them to kill for later when he got the time.

If it were to be other Guardian Beasts, they wouldn't be able to achieve this.

Kidnapping people was actually the main expertise of the Charm Demon Queen who was apt at mental mesmerisation and a Divine Beast... The remaining Ancient Slaughterer Commanders finally fell under the crazed attacks of Huang Quan and the rest. But of course the main cause of their deaths were due to the furious attacks by the giant loli.

As giant loli was upset from the fight against the blue giant, she vented all her anger on the Ancient Slaughterer Commanders.

Hei Hu who was in the blue giant was focussed on his own recovery.

He was unbothered towards anything happening outside.

On the other hand, Yue Yang was setting down the Prison Emperor's Seven Stars Pillar as he was circled around the blue giant.

He drew God Rune Boundaries one after another at the same time as he attempted to trap Hei Hu within the deep blue lake.

“Would it really work out for him to go against the Heaven Ranked Level 5 Hei Hu alone?” Huang Quan and the rest were baffled, surely Night Empress and Zhi Zun wouldn't let him fight alone right? Why were they doing this? Wasn't it better for the three of them to fight together? Of course they understood that Yue Yang, Night Empress and Zhi Zun, who were warriors from the Soaring Dragon Continent, weren't idiots. On the contrary, they were very smart, so they would definitely adopt the best strategy. By looking at them, they might be trying to confuse the enemy and making Hei Hu lower his guard. Their well-coordinated joint attack against Hei Hu served as the best example.

Elder Nan Gong stood before the god statues and drew down everything that was useful.

He wished to bring all of these back for the benefit of the warriors in the Innate Alliance in Tong Tian Tower. The Tong Tian Tower had already sunk into depravity a long time ago, it was urgently in need of knowledge from the Heaven Realm to fill up the void in its history.

Emperor of the Underworld was still fighting. He used his unique

Twilight Domain to catch an Abyss Manatee.

He wasn't a match for the Heaven Ranked Level 2 Abyss Manatee, but he was greatly encouraged by Yue Yang, Night Empress and Zhi Zun's impressive combat power.

Who would still dare to say that those of lower than Heaven Ranked are nothing?

Who could still say that those from the lower levels of the Western Heaven Realm are weak?

The Yue Clan's Third Young Master wasn't Heaven Ranked, yet he killed those who were of this rank one after another. Killing them off was like slicing melons and cutting vegetables, Yue Yang even had the power to go against the Heaven Ranked Level 5 Hei Hu... Emperor of the Underworld indeed couldn't kill the Abyss Manatee, but he had the confidence that the Abyss Manatee wouldn't be able to escape his Twilight Domain as long as there wasn't anyone coming to its aid.

"Waste your life away in the Twilight Domain forever!" Emperor of the Underworld's Twilight Domain was a grey area spanning over a hundred meters. Any image seen by the Abyss Manatee would be due to a flash caused by the Emperor of the Underworld. As long as it was inside the hundred meters, it would keep on moving forward under the mis guidance of the Emperor of the Underworld.

It would never know that all of its movement were circular and

repetitive.. As it repeats over and over again.

No matter where it went and how it might change its direction of movement, it would never escape Emperor of the Underworld's control.

It would exhaust a hundred times its greater energy for every meter it moved in the Twilight Domain. If it were to remain stationary, the Heaven Ranked Level 2 Abyss Manatee might be able to conserve its energy. However, under its rapid continuous movement, the energy within Abyss Manatee would be exhausted rapidly.

This was what the Emperor of the Underworld wanted to see the most and it was caused by his deliberate manipulation.

The Abyss Manatee who wasn't considered dumb was like a monkey under the manipulation of Emperor of the Underworld.

Huang Quan and the rest were speechless when they saw it.

They had never placed the Emperor of the Underworld's power in their eyes at all.

At the start, even Black Hell King's power wasn't held in high regard. But after this fight, Huang Quan and the rest gained a profound realization.

Forget about Yue Yang as anyone would die if they were to go up

against him! The Black Hell King was terrifying too as he was extremely shrewd, even the Heaven Ranked Level 3 Huang Quan couldn't guarantee that he could win against the Black Hell King. Now, the Emperor of the Underworld was using his Twilight Domain to kill the Heaven Ranked Level 2 Abyss Manatee sadistically and slowly. The Abyss Manatee, which was considered to be an elite from the Abyss Family of the Heaven Realm, couldn't retaliate at all as it went around in circles like a fool. Huang Quan and the rest shuddered uncontrollably.

Huang Quan possessed a vision that made him unaffected by any form of mesmerization. So he was the only one who had a guarantee to escape out of the Twilight Domain. But it remained an uncertainty for Weng Jin from the Bone Clan and the Three-eyed Tiger Man who were Heaven Ranked Level 1.

Even the light man, who was made purely out of light, wasn't able to see through the greyish Twilight Domain,

Although the Emperor of the Underworld wasn't as abnormal as the Yue Clan's Third Young Master, anyone who underestimated him would suffer the consequences.

"I'm done warming up, let us end this game!" Hei Hu floated out from the blue giant, which was made out of blue liquid. More than half of the wounds on him were healed. Apart from the ghastly-looking wound on his chest caused by the black bullet, even the crack caused by the Prison Emperor Divine Sword on his skull and the shattered heart caused by the Prison Emperor Divine Seal were healed too.

“Forcefully increasing your strength? You are drinking poison in hopes of quenching your thirst. You are digging your grave.” Zhi Zun snorted lightly as she was totally unbothered by the recovered Hei Hu.

“The blue giant can’t leave his body...” Night Empress gave Yue Yang an important clue.

“Understood.” Yue Yang who possessed the Heaven Eyes Divine Vision wasn’t able to see through the Heaven Ranked Level 5 Hei Hu, but after a long time of observation, he could see some secrets, if not he wouldn’t have been so calm.

“Insignificant ants like you will soon understand that your strength is nothing in face of absolute power! No matter how many helpers or beasts you get yourself, you won’t be able to take an all out blow from me.” Hei Hu slowly fused his body with the blue giant. He threw a punch inside. The blue giant formed purely out of liquid was exactly the same as it threw a punch toward Yue Yang.

The punch carried the will of Hei Hu and Heaven Ranked Level 5 power.

Any creatures that were below Heaven Ranked Level 5 would be killed instantly.

As the punch carrying the stored energy chopped down, all warriors apart from Night Empress and Zhi Zun felt a sense of suffocation, as if a giant hand had grabbed them by the neck,

causing them agony as if they weren't able to breathe.

The impact was already so huge for these warriors more than thousand meters away, what about Yue Yang who was facing it directly? What kind of pressure did he experience?

“Nice one!” Yue Yang laughed coldly.

The giant loli dashed forward unstoppably as her fort-like body blocked in front of Yue Yang.

As if he had already expected this, Hei Hu divided the blue giant's arm into more than ten arms.

Some attacked the giant loli whereas others went past her and continued towards Yue Yang who was behind her.

However, Yue Yang had already disappeared from where he previously was. He appeared in front of the blue giant as he raised rune circles on both of his hands. He held the Eternal Wheel on his left hand and the World Exterminating Wheel on his right.

The blue giant paused its movement in that instant.

The bodies that were more than ten meters away from the Eternal Wheel were still capable of moving but those who attempted to go near it were stopped by an undefiable force. The body of the blue giant deformed as its body was forced forward, causing it to become an ugly monster. Since it was made out of

liquid, its deformation did not have any effect on it. At the same time, Hei Hu quickly responded as he manipulated the blue giant to lean backwards with the intention of leaving the region controlled by the Eternal Wheel.

The World Exterminating Wheel rotated and flew out.

It wasn't quite possible for Yue Yang to hit Hei Hu with it, but it was very easy for him to use it to cut the head of the blue giant.

His target was really too huge. Hei Hu's willpower wasn't able to resist the might of World Exterminating Wheel. So Hei Hu could only watch as it cut a hole in the giant. What was even more horrifying was that when the hole that was no longer controlled by Hei Hu appeared, a Fire Phoenix formed out of Nirvana Flames appeared from Yue Yang's body and flew forward. It spread its wings that was over a hundred meters long as it sliced a thin red line across the neck of the blue giant.

Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus was rendered useless on the blue giant, but it was different for the Nirvana Flames.

Hei Hu did not even think as he rose up with the head of the blue giant. He gave up on the body of the blue giant completely.

These liquid were the actual form of his domain and could be recovered when he touches it. He wouldn't let the Fire Phoenix burn it just for him to continue controlling the body. Although his body did not touch the Fire Phoenix, it was able to burn everything, including Hei Hu's will and soul, so Hei Hu did not

want to take any risk.

Its body below its head reverted back into blue liquid after Hei Hu lost control of it.

The blue liquid came crashing down.

Blizzard Lady puffed out a cold air that she had been holding in for a long time.

Without Hei Hu's control, the blue liquid froze, miraculously forming a frozen blue waterfall that covered half of the sky.

An Iron Back Demonic Wolf, that had never appeared before, suddenly jumped out ... It was an extremely weak Bronze Rank Level 3 Iron Back Demon Wolf, Huang Quan and the rest wouldn't even spare it a glance if it hadn't jumped out from beside Yue Yang.

If it was in Heaven Realm, it wasn't even fit to be a child's pet.

Moreover, it looked furtive and lazy, it wouldn't even pass as a guard dog. It wasn't a presentable or useful pet.

The Yue Clan's Third Young Master actually summoned for a useless dog in such a key moment like this, what were his intentions? This abnormal summon shocked even Hei Hu, who was preparing to retaliate... Could it be that he summoned the wrong beast? And this useless guard dog jumped out itself without

Yue Yang summoning for it... Could it be that his pet who lacked intelligence was too stressed and rebelled?

“Meow meow!” The wretched-looking Iron Back Demonic Wolf called out to Yue Yang in a fawning manner as it attempted to run over to Yue Yang’s side and rub its head against his leg.

“Get lost, I have no time for you now!” Yue Yang kicked it away.

Everyone was speechless.

Just when everyone thought that Yue Yang made a mistake and had embarrassed himself, the Iron Back Demonic Wolf that was kicked away turned into a world Exterminating Demon Wolf that spanned over hundred meters. It opened up its huge mouth as the power of the Ancient Code appeared from its body and surrounded the entire space.

This power from the Ancient Code that contained the power of destruction appeared and stunned everyone.

Ancient Code power?

Hei Hu, who was Heaven Ranked Level 5, was scared witless. He knew what the power of the Ancient Code meant. It was something he could not go against.

Hei Hu wanted to run away but it was too late. That ridiculous yet terrifying Demon Wolf swallowed the head of the blue giant in

one mouthful. It gulped down Hei Hu together with it. When it landed on the ground again, it let out an unsightly burp. It seemed that it was suffering from indigestion issues.

Everyone was stunned.

Huang Quan and the rest almsot fainted.

Where did this wolf come from? How could it swallow even the Heaven Ranked Level 5 Hei Hu? Was this real? Were they dreaming?

Chapter 546 – Hei Hu's Death

Huang Quan and the others stood still as if they were dreaming.

A Bronze Rank Level 3 Iron Back Demon Wolf was able to eat up the Heaven Ranked Level 5 Hei Hu in just a single bite. This was even more shocking than a small ant eating a huge dragon.

They all stood there like idiots and didn't know how to respond at all..... Hui Tai Lang, who had opened his mouth to devour Hei Hu, quickly shrunk down. The power of the Ancient Code had gradually disappeared. When his body had shrunk down to about ten meters, vomit suddenly sprayed out from his mouth. Half of Hei Hu's body appeared from Hui Tai Lang's mouth. It appeared that Hei Hu had not yet died and kept struggling.

What made everyone perspire to death was that, Hui Tai Lan raised his neck and once again swallowed down the struggling Hei Hu.

“Slow down, don't rush it.....” Yue Yang flew over.

“Vomit!” Hui Tai Lang, who had shrunk a bit more, had dispersed the power of the Ancient Code from his body. Hei Hu, who had been struggling in his stomach, was once again vomitted out. This time, before Hui Tai Lang had the chance to swallow him back, Hei Hu madly struggled and fell on the ground. When Yue Yang caught up, Hei Hu escaped high up, staying away from Hui Tai Lang, who had shrunk back to his original size.

“You idiot. Who told you to quickly digest him. I wanted you to hold him in your mouth and wait for me to kill him. Could you even digest a living Heaven Ranked Level 5 in an instant?” Yue Yang was angry. He begun beating up Hui Tai Lang, who had his head lowered in apology.

Previously, Hui Tai Lang’s surprise attack was within Yue Yang’s plans.

As Yue Yang possessed the Ancient Code power from the Cards of Fate, he could make Hui Tai Lang morph into its real form, a World Exterminating Demon Wolf that could devour everything instantly.

Because Hui Tai Lang wasn’t strong enough, the amount of time Yue Yang could control the Ancient Code power on Hui Tai Lang was limited. Coupled with the lack of experience and knowledge on the exact time limit, Yue Yang’s original plan was to make Hui Tai Lang bite down Hei Hu as everyone besiege him and beat him up and injuring him severely before Hui Tai Lang would devour him. However, who would have expected that once Hui Tai Lang reverted back into his real form, he swallowed Hei Hu instinctively.

With the body of a World Exterminating Demon Wolf coupled and the power of the Ancient Code, the best choice would undoubtedly be to digest the opponent.

But it was a pity that time was limited, if not Hei Hu would be dead meat for sure!

“Okay, don’t blame him anymore, Hui Tai Lang knows that he’s at fault already.” Phoenix Fairy Beauty went forward to comfort the furious Yue Yang. She felt that Hui Tai Lang’s performance was impressive enough, and with this experience, he would definitely perform better next time.

“Woof, woof woof!” Hui Tai Lang quickly nodded his head. He quickly acted like he was an obedient and loyal mercenary as it wiggled its tail.

“...” Everyone was left speechless.

Was it really a wolf? It’s too smart to be one!

They looked at Hei Hu in the sky and shuddered uncontrollably.

Hei Hu looked extremely sorry in the air. With the joint strength of the real form of the World Exterminating Demon Wolf and the power of the Ancient Code, the power created was unfathomable. He wouldn’t be able to withstand it even as a HeavenRanked Level 5 Ranker. If it weren’t that the duration was too short, Hei Hu would definitely be Hui Tai Lang’s poop in the Heaven Realm. He had already lost his left arm and right leg. His skin was blood red as if corroded by strong acid. White bones crept out from certain areas on his face, scalp and certain parts of his body due to the corrosion... He couldn’t even maintain his power at Heaven Ranked Level 5, as he downgraded to Heaven Ranked Level 5.

Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing guessed that as long as Hui

Tai Lang could turn into a World Exterminating Demon Wolf and engulf Hei Hu once again, he would surely be dead.

But the problem was if it could devour Hei Hu again?

“Go and redeem yourself now!” Yue Yang kicked Hui Tai Lang into the air.

“Awooooo!” Just as Hui Tai Lang was kicked away, a pair of wings spread out from his back as his body expanded quickly. Hui Tai Lang reverted back to his real form as the World Exterminating Demon Wolf. Huang Quan and the rest finally understood that Yue Yang wasn’t really beating Hui Tai Lang up when he kicked him. He was channeling a certain form of energy into his body in order to make Hui Tai Lang unleash his potential.

It could also be said that Hui Tai Lang could turn into the World Exterminating Demon Wolf anytime with Yue Yang around.

The really scary one wasn’t the wolf but the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master.

Hei Hu was scared witless, this wolf that was capable of engulfing everything was already unfair enough, it could still fly? Taking the chance when the power of the Ancient Code surrounded him, he spurted out a mouthful of black blood which morphed into a clone. The real him escaped instantly. He descended rapidly and into the deep blue lake.

Hui Tai Lang, in the sky, suddenly summoned forth a Silver Grimoire.

His clone flew out and devoured Hei Hu's clone.

Hui Tai Lang's real form descended similarly and went after Hei Hu.

Just before Hei Hu fell into the lake, Hui Tai Lang reached out his sharp claws, as if trying to fish Hei Hu out from the lake.

Who would have known that Hui Tai Lang would fish out an Abyss Manatee that wasn't fast enough to react. The real Hei Hu was already gone as he went back to his materialized domain. Hui Tai Lang was so incensed that he gulped down the Abyss Manatee in one mouthful before fishing for sea creatures in a crazed fashion. He fished out various Abyss Manatee and Amphibious Fish Demons, causing them to fly all over the place.

Everyone realized that something was wrong.

There shouldn't be so many Amphibious Fish Demons in the lake. Could it be that they were opening a teleportation gate at the bottom of the lake to summon for their comrades?

Huang Quan and the rest were the most anxious ones. Hei Hu was running away when it was the best opportunity to kill him. If he were to escape, it wouldn't be so easy to kill him next time!

The giant loli dived into the lake and fished for sea creatures just like Hui Tai Lang.

As a result, all the monster in the lake dispersed as if on a hot pot. They went ashore and it was then did everyone realize that there were close to 1000 monsters present. Luckily, they weren't high ranked. Not many were Heaven Ranked as most were below that. There weren't even many Abyss Manatees. It seemed that the Abyss Manatees were rare.

All these abyss monsters must have appeared to become a sacrificial offering.

Only so would they be able to summon for king leveled monsters over for help...

With Hui Tai Lang and the giant loli's actions, their sacrificial offering was ruined. If not Hei Hu would have been able to call for a stronger helper.

"Hei Hu wants to run off, he wants to escape!" Fen Tian yelled as he regret that he couldn't help out.

"Want to escape? Not so easy." Yue Yang didn't think that Hei Hu would be able to escape under the Prison Emperor's Seven Stars Pillar. Ming Yue Guang who was one of the Three Great Leaders of the Western Heaven Realm was trapped for six thousand years under the Prison Emperor Divine Sword and Prison Emperor's Seven Stars Pillar. So Hei Hu wants to go whenever he likes?

Fat hope!

A white ray rose up the sky.

In a blink, the Prison Emeprror's Seven Stars Pillar's will distorted and turned into a ring.

The white ray shattered as Hei Hu, who tried to teleport forcibly, fell under the Prison Emperor's Seven Stars Pillar in agony.

In front of him stood Yue Yang, who looked peace loving. Huang Quan and the rest weren't surprised at the result. But they felt a tinge of chill as fighting against Yue Yang proved to be too tragic. Hei Hu couldn't even escape when he couldn't win against Yue Yang. Luckily they hadn't fought with Yue Yang in the past, if not the consequence would be dire... Hei Hu didn't think too much. As he saw that Hui Tai lang and the giant loli were fighting to charge towards him, he grit his teeth, flew up to the sky with his sole leg and charged towards Yue Yang.

If he could take down this guy, any other powerful beasts would be rendered useless!

He would fight with all his might!

Hei Hu exhausted his life again as he erupted to Heaven Ranked Level 5. He used the fastest speed to charge towards Yue Yang as he attempted to catch him.

Yue Yang didn't back off but instead, he stepped forward.

The Eternal Wheel that was gathered from who knows when appeared below his feet.

When Hei Hu saw the Eternal Wheel, Hei Hu used his greatest might to stop himself from moving forward as he switched to using his sole arm to gather an energy shock wave to bombard Yue Yang. This skill of instantly changing his moves was something only he, who had the power of the Wave Domain and an elder of the Water Palace, was capable of doing. If it were others, they would have been heavily injured to the point of vomiting blood from the recoil.

Xiao Wen Li appeared behind Hei Hu's back unknowingly.

With wide opened eyes, she unleashed her Binding Inherent Skill.

In the a tenth of a second when Hei Hu was bound, Princess Qian Qian, who was holding the Prison Emperor Divine Sword, had already slashed Hei Hu's sole remaining arm.

When the sword fell, his arm was cut off.

When Hei Hu regained his freedom, he didn't retaliate as he turned and tried to run off.

He, who was at peak strength, wasn't able to run off. Now with

both arms and one leg lost, how could he even escape?

The giant loli wasn't as fast as Hui Tai Lang, so she pulled up a Prison Emperor's Seven Stars Pillar on the ground and threw it onto Hei Hu's body. The energy of the throw was world shaking. Hei Hu used his Wave Domain as a wave of blue crashed around him. He used it to off set the energy of the throw. The giant loli became even more incensed as she pulled up another one and hurled it towards Hei Hu with all her might. It went straight for Hei Hu's back... This time, at the same time when the Prison Emperor's Seven Stars Pillar hit Hei Hu, Xue Wu Xia's guardian beast, Blizzard Lady puffed out a mouthful of cold air which turned Hei Hu's blue waves into blue ice.

“Boom!”

Hei Hu was hit squarely by the Prison Emperor's Seven Stars Pillar as blood shot out from his mouth like a waterfall.

Even though he was Heaven Ranked Level 5, his ligaments were torn and his bones were broken.

Hui Tai Lang wanted to devour Hei Hu, but it catch up. Hei Hu bore with the pain as he tried to dodge such that Hui Tai Lang couldn't get him. Time was running out as the power of the Ancient Code was disappearing fast and Hui Tai Lang was shrinking quickly.

The furious Hui Tai Lang seized the chance when the power of the Ancient Code was still around as it elongated its claws rapidly

and tore a huge bloodied wound on Hei Hu's back.

Hei Hu was still trying to escape.

He knew that he had been bitterly defeated.

It would already be a great victory to him if he could escape.

Stone Element Medusa shot her golden arrow and with a piercing sound, it went into his shoulders. Greyish cement-like skin slowly expanded from the area that was hit. In the sky, a golden lightning accurately struck Hei Hu's head. And at the same time, the Dual Icicle Blades appeared and slashed Hei Hu's only remaining leg. The edge of the blades sent blood splattering everywhere.

They had all hit Hei Hu successfully. But due to the difference in ranks and strength, their attacks did not achieve the most optimal effect.

But of course, any attacks would be able to make matters even more unbearable and worse for Hei Hu.

Hei Hu who was severely injured could still run off. He used his sole legs to reach the sky as he attempted to escape.

He jumped out of his enemies' besiege instantly.

A goddess-like shadow descended from the overcast sky. Her fair

hand held onto the shiny golden Prison Emperor Divine Seal, as she landed like a fairy.

The Prison Emperor Divine Seal flew out from her hand and hit Hei Hu right in the face uncannily... Although the strongest sealing power of the Prison Emperor Divine Seal couldn't be unleashed yet, the already powerful Prison Emperor Divine Seal was sufficient to make the bones on his face shatter as he fainted.

“Ahhhhhhhh!” Hei Hu instinctively chose the deep blue lake in his daze as his landing area. He hoped that the lake that was his materialized domain could be his safe zone.

“Boom... “

It was unknown when a thick layer of ice formed on the surface of the deep blue lake.

Hei Hu's fall shook the entire ground. The whole blue frozen lake cracked, but he was still unable to return to his lake which was his materialized domain. It had already been covered by the liquid summoned by the Storm Mermaid. Although both were in liquid state, the liquid summoned by the Storm Mermaid weren't under Hei Hu's control. Instead, it became frozen ice that was even more sturdy than metals.

Hei Hu whose face was deformed and his skull caving in was still struggling to get up, but a huge feet pushed him back into the ice cruelly.

In the last moment of his life, Hei Hu heard a name vaguely—Shuang Hua.

He didn't know if it was the name of a person or that of a beast.

When the ray got to him, his soul which had become incapable of thinking was slowly annihilated under the ray. As he died, he felt a never-before experienced sensed of freedom that became eternal.

Chapter 547 – I Won't Compensate You Even If I Scared You To Death

Hei Hu died just like that?

Huang Quan, Fen Tian and Yun Xing were stunned. Although they had personally seen the entire process, they still felt as if they were in a dream.

The Yue Clan's Third Young Master, who was not yet a Heaven Ranked Ranker, had actually killed Hei Hu, who was at Heaven Ranked Level 5..... Who would even believe this! But this was actually the truth! Even though Hei Hu only died after receiving attacks from Zhi Zun, Night Empress, the World Exterminating Demon Wolf and the Western Heaven Realm's War Goddess, and even attacked by Yue Yang's Divine Equipment, Huang Quan and the others still could not believe this.

For them, Cang Yan, Hei Hu and people at that level were simply too high to reach.

What kind of figures were the Fire Palace Elder and the Water Palace Elder in the Central Palace? They were ranked among the highest in the entire Heaven Realm, yet Hei Hu died just like that?

“What are you people staring blankly for? Your points are not yet enough, yet you are just standing around like that? Quickly kill them! Cang Yan that bastard will quickly return with a large number of reinforcements.....” When Yue Yang looked at Huang Quan and the others, who were still watching with a stupid

expression, he couldn't help but perspire. These people didn't even have a sense of crisis.

“Ahh!” Huang Quan and the others were instantly startled as if they had woken up from their dream.

Not only them, even Elder Nan Gong and the Emperor of the Underworld begun to attack the weakest Amphibious Fish Demons. No matter what, they must first fill up their points so that they wouldn't get killed by the Ancient Code.

The Ancient Code of the death arena did not care about the course of events.

As long as their points were not enough, then they would definitely die.

The Emperor of the Underworld had given up on the Abyss Manatee. It wasn't something he could kill in just one or two days. But, being able to perfectly abuse a Heaven Realm life form was enough to make him proud. The Heaven Realm had many strong life forms. However, being able to fight the strong as the weak proved that reaching Heaven Rank may not be unreachable. It was only because he had not yet found the best opportunity to do so.

The most important thing was that, after this great battle, he wouldn't be bewildered when he attempts to climb up the Innate Elder Realm again. This time, he understood that it was just around the corner.

In the future, he would definitely come back here!

The Abyss Manatees ran away in all directions.

Since their master, Hei Hu, had died, they had lost their greatest support. Since their huge power had left them and the situation was hopeless, their capacity as guards were naturally abandoned. As Heaven Ranked Level 2 monsters, no one blocked them. As for those Innate Ranked Level 6 or Earth Ranked Level 6 Amphibious Fish Demons, they had met with great misfortune. They were different from the Innates in the lower realm. They didn't have grimoire nor did they have intelligence. Once their owner died, their entire group became chaotic and everyone of them began to panic..... With Huang Quan, Fen Tian, Yun Xing and the others beginning to kill them, their entire group became completely tragic.

“Spread out the net!” The three-eyed tiger man rotated like the wind. His claws tore his opponents apart whenever he hit them.

“Charge Canon!” the half human half robot already had half of his body broken as many parts fell down. However, killing a few Amphibious Fish Demons and weak Abyss Manatees was still an easy task.

With one shot of the energy cannon, more than 10 enemies were utterly defeated.

The one who killed the slowest was Weng Jin.

After he finally killed up to 100 points, everyone congregated beside Yue Yang and prepared to bid farewell.

Cang Yan could return anytime. Moreover, he would definitely bring the Supreme Rankers from the Central Palace. The situation was that critical so they didn't try to be modest. After waiting for Weng Jin to arrive, Huang Quan nodded his head towards Yue Yang: "We are prepared to leave. Third Young Master, when you climb up the Heaven Realm in the future, just give me a call. No matter when, I, Huang Quan, will rush over and go through water and thread on fire to arrive.

"The entire Fire Clan will welcome warriors from the Soaring Dragon Continent as important guest. Especially the Third Young Master, we will definitely treat you like a relative!" Fen Tian was extremely grateful.

"An exchange of blows may lead to friendship. In the future, we are brothers." Yun Xing nodded his head.

"Cough. This Wen Jin had lost to you before. You have won over me so I hope we can put aside past grievances. The Bone Clan will treat you as a friend." Weng Jin quickly expressed good will towards Yue Yang. In reality, if Yue Yang was not this impressive, they would have all died in the death arena and absolutely not live to this day. The Yue Clan's Third Young Master did not only try hard to save the desperate crisis, he had also win against the powerful Hei Hu to create a chance for everyone to live on. In short, if Yue Yang was not there, the three lower Heaven Realms would have been finished.

“I, San Yan, will not say too much. Next time something like this happens, count me in! It is too exciting!” The three-eyed tiger man laughed loudly.

“.....”

The last person, light man, did not speak. However, he cordially bowed towards Yue Yang.

Huang Quan and the others used different teleportation scrolls to leave, declaring the the battle has ended.

The Ancient Code approved and did not give out any penalties.

Huang Quan and the others safely left.

The others also quickly came over. The Emperor of the Underworld, Elder Nan Gong, Southern Goblin King, Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Princess Qian Qian, Xue Wu Xia and the others, not only obtained enough points, they have also caught a lot of Amphibious Fish Demons.

Actually, most of the Amphibious Fish Demons had surrendered. One they saw that the situation was bad, they cleverly lied prostrated on the ground.

Since it was just a change of owners, the stronger they are the better.

They were after all a vassal clan.

Although they had followed Hei Hu for a long time, their loyalty was not that high. Hei Hu's relationship with them was also not that good.

“Shooting Star.” The Night Empress' voice sounded.

A fantastic change happened to the Starry Sky Domain as countless stars soared upwards.

Those enemies that had run away for their live to more than 10 kilometers away were suddenly shocked as they saw this scene. In the sky, countless shooting stars fell like rain. Compared to Zhi Zun's destructive ray, the power of the rain of shooting stars naturally fell short. However, its attack range was further compared to it..... Moreover, no matter how far the target was the power of the shooting stars did not decrease at all.

The shooting stars carried the Night Empress' will. No matter how the enemy evaded these shooting stars, they have already locked on to them so none of them could escape with their lives.

Yue Yang was also flabbergasted when he saw Night Empress' move.

Wasn't the Night Empress' control too strong?

The distance was more than 10 kilometers and not just a few meters!

“Wu Xia, Qian Qian, stand closer to the Starry Sky Domain. Senior Nan Gong and Emperor of the Underworld should also stand closer! Yue Yang, go kill all of those cow monsters.” Zhi Zun faced towards the southeast and loftily raised her white hands: “You people hiding your heads but showing your tails, do you want me to personally drag you out?”

“Although I couldn’t understand why the Soaring Dragon Continent could give birth to strong rankers..... However, you are indeed very strong. This was truly unexpected.” A giant, whose entire body was covered in flames and whose face cannot be seen, appeared from the empty space in the southeast direction. Only when he appeared did Yue Yang’s Heaven Eyes Divine Vision discover the flame giant coming closer. From this, it can be seen that the flame giant’s strength had far surpassed Yue Yang’s range.

“How about the other one? Is he not prepared to come out?” Zhi Zun then turned her head to the south west.

“Not bad. Cang Yan had told me that a few interesting rankers from the Soaring Dragon Continent have arrived. I did not dare believe him but it was actually true. Haha. It seems that I can play properly. By all means, don’t die too early. I have already lived for thousands of years and never met anyone that could match me!”

In the southwest direction, an extremely human-like blue man, who was releasing a high temperature, appeared.

Once he appeared, Yue Yang and the others felt as if their entire bodies were being roasted.

Although he was in midair, the surroundings melted into magma.

On the contrary this did not happen on the flame giant's side.

As if explaining to Yue Yang and the others, the Night Empress' soft voice sounded: "Although we don't know whether these two are from the Central Palace, their levels are already at Heaven Ranked Level 6. They should be to ranked people in the Heaven Realm. In addition, Cang Yan is also here. This battle will be difficult!

The flaming man waved his hand and spoke with absolute certainty: "No, this will not be difficult. You people will quickly be free from worries."

Elder Nan Gong and the Emperor of the Underworld did not speak as they silently entered Yue Yang's Grimoire World.

Southern Goblin King still wanted to speak to Yue Yang but Phoenix Fairy Beauty quickly pulled her.

With a bit of reluctance, the Southern Goblin King returned to Yue Yang's Grimoire World guided by Xiao Wen Li. Originally, she had wanted to tell him to be careful but she was afraid of

disturbing his concentration.

Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian hugged Yue Yang and quickly returned to the Grimoire World. They knew that the real enemies had arrived. They were not something the girls were capable of handling. Other than Zhi Zun and the Night Empress, Yue Yang also needed to pay extremely close attention. With just one mistake, he could be instantly killed by his opponent. Xue Wu Xia wanted to call for the Qilin Girl to protect Yue Yang, but unfortunately, the Qilin Girl was an Immortal Beast. She would normally have a noninterference policy unless he was truly in danger. Bloody Queen Red, Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen Duo Duo, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man, Hornless Dragon Jiang Yin and the other girls, who were currently cleaning up, retreated one after the other.

Other than Xiao Wen Li beside Yue Yang, Hui Tai Lang also remained.

The giant loli, who was at Heaven Ranked Level 3, wanted to remain. Yue Yang glared at her and scolded: “Stop making trouble. If you don’t return, see how big brother will hit your butt until they are swollen!”

“Meanie brother!” The giant loli was startled and quickly covered her butt. With a rumble, she quickly retreated and even pulled a face as she disappeared.

“.....” Towards her actions, everyone, even Zhi Zun, was speechless.

She understood the brat's charm.

Towards royalty, this was still tolerable and not that exaggerated. However, towards pure loli's his existence was unrivalled! Not a single loli had ever disliked him before. This could also be counted as one of his characteristics! Other than him, who else could exercise control over an Ancient Titan Loli?

Cang Yan appeared.

He had now recovered his calm appearance as if he had obtained the best cure.

His curly golden hair gracefully laid on his shoulders. His arrogant face once again appeared and no longer as tragic as when he was burned by the destructive ray.

Cang Yan, who left and returned, frowned and sized up the battle ground. With a bit of doubt, he asked: "Where's Hei Hu?"

Cang Yan felt that Hei Hu definitely used his domain and escaped using the teleportation circle at the bottom of the lake. But before that, he must have been beaten into an extremely tragic appearance. Seeing that Zhi Zun and the Night Empress did not have any wounds, he guessed that Hei Hu must have suffered a lot. Moreover, the opponent still had energy left over. Without two strong people coming to help, Cang Yan would not have returned. This was because, whether it was Zhi Zun, who had a terrifying attack, or the mysterious Night Empress, he could not provoke

them..... Naturally, Cang Yan did not forget about Yue Yang, whose destructive power simply left people stunned. He could not forget about the Nirvana Flame that was unrivalled in the world.

“What a waste of words.” Yue Yang simply did not put Cang Yan in his eyes. He raised the God Killing Dagger as he killed the few Abyss Manatees that were not instantly killed by the shooting stars.

“That brat is the new Prison Emperor?” The scorching blue man asked.

“Senior Yan Zong and Yan Zun, the scariest one is that woman. Other than being bad at close combat, her other abilities are very strong. Moreover, she possesses an extremely unusual ability. She could easily shatter the void and condense it into a particle.” Cang Yan looked at Yue Yang. He could not understand why he was still killing cows when death was at hand.

“Are Tian Lun, Qia Ye and Wu Se still well?” The flame giant suddenly opened his mouth and asked three unknown names.

“.....” Zhi Zun did not answer.

“Could it be that the strongest rankers from the Soaring Dragon Continent, Heaven’s Stairway and Demon Abyss have all died?” The scorching blue man voiced with surprise.

“Tian Lun, Qian Ye and Wu Se are not much. My other master is

Empress Fei Wen Li.” Yue Yang shouted as he flew back. When he said this, Cang Yan, flame giant and the scorching blue man couldn’t help but be startled. Cang Yan even wanted to run away on impulse. Only after seeing that the flame giant and the scorching blue man didn’t move, did he suppressed his fear and continue to stay.

Yue Yang gave a cold sneer and mischievously laughed. He wanted to scare them to death.

Chapter 548 – Demon Suppressing Pagoda, Dark Cloud Sky Flames

When they heard Empress Fei Wen Li's name, they were stunned.

Although they pretended to be calm, even a blind man could see the fear and shock in their eyes.

After hearing what Yue Yang said, flame giant, scorching blue man, and even Cang Yan completely believed him. After all, only a strong person like Empress Fei Wen Li would be able to have such a disciple like Yue Yang. This was the only logical reason that could explain the peculiar history of the Yue Clan's Third Young Master. On the other side, even after hearing it, Zhi Zun and Night Empress remained indifferent. This was because Empress Fei Wen Li's name had long been lost in history. She was a supreme from 10,000 years ago, other than within Heaven Realm, her existence was not recorded anywhere.

Even if someone mentioned Tian Lun, Qian Ye and Wu Se these 3 seniors, Zhi Zun and Night Empress were not familiar with them. They only knew of their existence from some historical records.

A history of 6,000 years was enough to burn out the splendour of many.

These people were definitely Human Supremes that had a time of fame in the Heaven Realm. It was just that with the passing of time, all matters within Tong Tian Tower were matters of the past.

“Cang Yan, go finish that boy off.” flame giant gave Cang Yan a mission to kill Yue Yang.

“Great Yan Zong, Cang Yan will do as you say.” Even though Cang Yan looked abiding, he was silently cursing in his heart. If Yue Yang this boy really was Empress Fei Wen Li’s disciple and Cang Yan really killed him, when Empress Fei Wen Li hears this news, she would definitely attack Heaven Realm. Against the Abyssal Empress who used to wield so much power in Heaven Realm, would the Central Palace even protect him this lowly FirePalace Elder and offend her?

Impossible!

Even though he was well-known as a Fire Palace Elder, he was still worthless.

In Central Palace, there were as many as six clans that were fire-type clans.

Among them, the strongest Fire God Sect and Divine Flame Sect were even enemies with a 10,000 year grudge. 3000 years ago, if the Sky Flame Palace did not rise to form the current balance of the 3 forces, and Fire God Sect and Divine Flame Sect had not given in, he would never have become Central Palace’s Outer Palace Fire Palace Elder! If he were to fall, the disciples of Fire God Sect and Divine Flame Sect would all celebrate in joy.

Even though Empress Fei Wen Li had been inactive for 10,000

years, her fame had not diminished in the slightest.

At any time, as long as this Lamia Empress returns to Heaven Realm, there would be many old comrades and followers who would follow her.....

If she was to attack Heaven Realm after hearing the news, Central Palace would most likely send his head to her immediately to appease this Ultimate Supreme. Compared to a supreme like Empress Fei Wen Li, he was like an ant, extremely insignificant.

Cang Yan's heart shook.

He made up his mind to follow Yan Zong and Yan Zun. If they were able to kill Zhi Zun and Night Empress, then he would also kill Yue Clan's Third Young Master.

As long as everyone here dies, Empress Fei Wen Li would naturally not know that he was the one who did it.

This way, he could kill 2 birds with one stone. Not only could he get rid of Yue Yang this nuisance, he would also please Yan Zong and Yan Zun who were very powerful in Sky Flame Palace, second only to the Sky Flame Empress. However, if they did not attack, he himself must definitely not make rash moves.

Otherwise, he would be the one who dies in the worst way.

No matter what, he must not offend Supreme Rankers like

Empress Fei Wen Li that he could never defeat.

“.....” The more Cang Yan looked at Yue Yang, the more he felt that the reason why he was Empress Fei Wen Li’s disciple was simple. If not for someone like Empress Fei Wen Li who was protecting this boy, would he dare be so arrogant? Back then when he was still Heaven Ranked Level 3, he was still living on his toes. He did not even dare to fart. Only when he reached Heaven Ranked Level 5 and ascended as Central Palace’s Outer Palace Fire Palace Elder, did he barely dare raise his head.

“.....” flame giant Yan Zong also felt that Yue Yang was not simple. His ability was not even Heaven Ranked, yet he still dared to attack Heaven Realm?

What a joke, did he think Heaven Realm was a hotel that he could come and go as he please?

Without the protection of Empress Fei Wen Li, even if he had guts the size of a water tank, he would not dare to come here!

As for the scorching Yan Zun, when he saw Yue Yang heavily injure the Abyss Manatees with his World Exterminating Wheel, he was also troubled. It shouldn’t be difficult to kill this boy, but if he was Empress Fei Wen Li’s disciple, things were more complicated.

Whatever, he will just pretend that he didn’t see him!

All three of them pretended not to see Yue Yang. Anyway one less matter is better than an extra problem. If they could avoid bothering Empress Fei Wen Li, then they would avoid looking for death!

Offending a Supreme Ranker like Empress Fei Wen Li will not end with simply a few people dying.

The entire Sky Flame Palace could be wiped out.....

“We have made enough progress today, let us come back to tidy up later. We should go back.” Zhi Zun seemed as if she still wanted to fight, but after contemplating she decided to let matters rest.

“Whew!” Yan Zong, Yan Zun and Cang Yan breathed a sigh of relief. Thank god the opponent relented. If they decide to fight to the end, things would be troublesome.

“Give me a moment.” Yue Yang slowly used Nirvana Flames to purify an Abyss Manatee’s core, scaring the two Abyss Manatees who were still alive. Forcing them to surrender immediately even if Yan Zong was still there.

Above Yue Yang, Fire Phoenix had already flew up onto the sky.

What did its appearance symbolize?

The two Abyss Manatees knew with certainty. Unless they surrender, they would die!

When they saw Yue Yang use Nirvana Flames to form the Fire Phoenix, Yan Zong and Yan Zun were green with envy.

In all of Heaven Realm, the Nirvana Flames that all fire-type rankers longed day and night but could not obtain was with this human boy. This, how could this be endured by all the fire-type rankers from Fire God Sect, Divine Flame Sect and Sky Flame Palace, who have sought Nirvana for thousands and ten thousands of years! Back then, his teacher taught him that as long as one relentlessly pursued Nirvana, one would receive the recognition of Nirvana Flames..... In the end, all they have been after were flowers in a mirror and the moon reflected in the lake, unrealistic!

Yan Zong and Yan Zun felt their hearts shatter.

If no one was looking, they would most likely be bawling. After spending thousands of years trying to achieve Nirvana, chasing after the ultimate flame, it was all a dream. Only now, did they wake up from their dream.....

The appearance of Nirvana Flames left the two Fire-type Rankers Yan Zong and Yan Zun ashamed.

Especially in front of Cang Yan, they could not raise their head as his senior.

Cang Yan did not mention Yue Yang's Nirvana Flames before. He only described how powerful Zhi Zun was. If he had mentioned Nirvana Flames, they would never have come here. A ranker who

owned Nirvana Flames, who had the body of Nirvana, could not possibly be killed easily. Even if they killed him, Nirvana Flames would reform its owner's body. If they could not completely destroy his soul, every move they make was useless.

No wonder Empress Fei Wen Li let this boy do whatever he wanted and attack Heaven Realm, there was almost no one who could kill him.....

“Since you are here, if we do not invite the VIP from Soaring Dragon Continent in for a drink, we would have failed as hosts.” Flame giant Yan Zong decided to get back some face. Even if he could not kill the opponent, he should at least defeat him. Otherwise, if news were to spread that Sky Flame Palace did not dare retaliate against Soaring Dragon Continent's Rankers who attacked Heaven Realm, they would lose all their face.

“Let me treat all you VIPs to a cup of tea!” Yan Zun thought the same.

“.....” Cang Yan pretended to not see Yue Yang, who was forcing the Abyss Manatees into the Demon Suppressing Pagoda.

Actually Yue Yang did not plan to make such a fuss, but he had a reason for doing so.

Firstly, he did not want to let the Abyss Manatees escape. His ability to control the power of the Ancient Code and Hei Hu's death had to be kept secret. Secondly, he did not want to waste the Abyss Manatees. Even though they were not smart, at least they

had intelligence. Furthermore, they were Heaven Ranked Level 2, they would be excellent to guards in Soaring Dragon Continent. Thirdly, he wanted to test out the Demon Suppressing Pagoda.

Yue Yang never had a chance to use the Demon Suppressing Pagoda.

In the past, it was because he did not have a strong enough opponent. But now, things were different. Even if it was the Black Hell King or the Scarlet Emperor, they had to be sealed.

Yue Yang was concerned that these 2 guys might not die easily. Anyway he was good at sealing, so the Demon Suppressing Pagoda was the best choice..... If the effect was good after testing it on the Abyss Manatees, he could later try to fit the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King and the twenty Ancient Slaughterers.

Actually, the two Abyss Manatees were hoping for Yan Zong, Yan Zun and Cang Yan to save them. But the problem was that all 3 of them pretended not to see anything. The Abyss Manatees could only begrudgingly go into the Demon Suppressing Pagoda, and become Yue Yang's. They did not want to die. Whether it was the World Exterminating Wheel or Nirvana Flame, they did not want to be hit by these. Once hit, it would mean eternal death, resurrection was impossible..... Now that their owner Hei Hu was dead, loyalty and pacts were all useless. Now, they could only hope that this owner would treat them well.

A golden splendour shone and the 2 Abyss Manatees took in their surroundings longingly.

At the last moment, they hopefully looked at Cang Yan.

After all, they used to be companions of their owner.

On account of them being comrades, could he help them?

Cang Yan looked at the sky nonchalantly, showing that he was a clueless bystander who only just passed by. Tears streamed down the faces of the two Abyss Manatees.....

“Get in! If this young master wasn’t so bored these days, I would not even care about you two!” Yue Yang kicked the 2 tragic Abyss Manatees’ butts. The two Abyss Manatees wanted to bawl so badly. But under their new master, they could only give in to him and crawl into the Demon Suppressing Pagoda.

They realized that this Demon Suppressing Pagoda even had to be crawled into. Their new owner did not even open a teleportation circle, and only left a narrow space for them.

In that instant, they saw darkness in their future.

Of course, they did not know that Yue Yang did not even know how to open the Demon Suppressing Pagoda.....

Yan Zong and Yan Zun decided to work together to show the 3 humans in front of them what they were made of. For two reasons,

to test their ability and also redeem some of their face.

Indeed, Empress Fei Wen Li's disciple was arrogant. But as a Heaven Ranked Level 6 Supreme Rankers, if they bowed down to him, they could forget about staying in Heaven Realm. They would become the biggest joke of Heaven Realm.

“Sky Flame Praire!” flame giant Yan Zong waved his hand as a purple golden sea of fire spilled out.

Zhi Zun did not budge.

All the flames were reflected by the energy shield surrounding her. It was completely ineffective like Cang Yan's attack previously.

With [Starry Sky Domain], Night Empress only used the Winter Circle and blocked all of the Sky Flames.

Only Yue Yang suffered.

He was burnt by the Sky Flames, in immense pain and almost suffocating.

However, Yan Zong was not pleased with Yue Yang's suffering in the least. Instead, he even felt fury.

Yue Yang had deliberately allowed the Sky Flames to burn him.

He was swallowing the power of Yan Zong's Sky Flames. After being burned, together with the continuous fusion of the Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus, the power of Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus was upgraded. Furthermore, majority of the Sky Flames that were not fused would become 'Dark Cloud Sky Flames' after purified by Nirvana Flames. Dark Cloud Sky Flames was something that even after 1000 years of trying, Yan Zong has still been unable to create.

Dark Cloud Sky Flames, was a Sky Flame that could transcend the limit of fire-types, changing from Yang to Yin.

For 1000 years, Yan Zong had desired to upgrade his Sky Flame but to no avail.

Today, Yue Yang used a mere few minutes to achieve what he had never been able to.

Even without Nirvana Flames, Yue Yang's Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus had a suppressive force. If he was also be able to form Dark Cloud Sky Flames, then his fire ability would surpass Yan Zong who had been training for thousands of years.

Such a heartless ridiculing move made Yan Zong lost all face.

He was furious, to the point of almost losing his senses.

Chapter 549 – What Was Zhi Zun Best At?

What made Yan Zong want to vomit blood the most was that Yue Yang gave most of the Dark Cloudy Sky Flames he created to a beast he summoned.

The Spirit of Earth Fire.

Yan Zong had an urge to slap himself as he watched Spirit of Earth Fire devour the Dark Cloudy Sky Flames, which he could not obtain even if he tried for thousand of years. If he had known, why would he have attacked Yue Yang with his Skyfire? He was just asking for it! Yan Zong felt regret twisting in his body. If it wasn't for his Skyfire, Yue Yang would have taken forever trying to learn the Dark Cloudy Sky Flames, so didn't he basically just helped Yue Yang level up for free?

Yan Zun shuddered after seeing the tragedy of Yan Zong's actions.

If he wasn't careful, he could be the one in trouble.

Yan Zun decided to be wise and not provoke this disciple of Empress Fei Wen Li. Maybe Yue Yang had Divine-ranked treasures to protect himself and Yan Zun would be utterly embarrassed if he tried his best but still failed to hurt Yue Yang.

The woman with the Starry Sky Domain was also a difficult opponent as she probably was an expert in manipulation which worked against his own close-combat style.

As for the woman who Cang Yan mentioned to be skilled in the Destruction Rays and condensing shattered voids into black grains, she had more of a long range attack style which gave his close-combat style a slight advantage. Moreover, she was one of the most powerful of them and if he defeated her, he would gain a lot of prestige. Most importantly, since this woman had defeated Hei Hu and Cang Yan in succession, his value and status in the Central Palace would surge if he could defeat her.

Having made up his mind, Yan Zun began to increase his powers.

Yan Zun, with his Pure Blue Fire Form, did not dare to be careless after witnessing the tragic outcome from Yan Zong's attack.

He levelled up to the peaked state of Heaven Innate Level 5, even more powerful than what Cang Yan possessed, before he stopped.

Yan Zun's Pure Blue Fire Form released even more horrifying temperatures. The ground and rocks beneath him melted and red hot lava spread rapidly before finally forming a bubbling and churning shallow lava lake.

Even so, Yan Zun did not immediately rush to attack.

He summoned a few Mirror Flame Bugs. They reflected light like mirrors, suspended around his Pure Blue Fire Form and rotated automatically.

Although they were not able to fully eliminate the power of the Destruction Rays, they would be able to resist most of the rays when they become mirror-like. To deal with the devastating black bullet, Yan Zun had to know their type of attack. If they were penetrative attacks, then he couldn't care less since the Pure Blue Fire Form was not a tangible form. It was an unique flame that could be returned to its original state even if it was cut into a thousand pieces...

Normal methods of attack would never affect the Pure Blue Fire Form.

Only attacks of energy that could cleanse and destroy all living beings like that of the Nirvana Flames and World Exterminating Wheel could cause the Pure Blue Fire Form to receive doubled damages. For this matter precisely, Yan Zun was unwilling to go against Yue Yang. He hated to meet such opponents who had power levels like a divine equipment.

“Weeping Blood Wings.”

At the other end, Zhi Zun bit into her index finger elegantly.

She drew an Ancient Rune Circle on the tiny Blood Winged Angel with her bloodied finger, the mystery behind her actions eluded even Yue Yang.

Zhi Zun then began to level up for the first time since the battle began.

She leveled up rapidly from Innate to Innate Elder Level 1, then Level 2 and finally Level 3. She was now much more powerful than Huang Quan's Heaven Ranked Level 3. Yue Yang felt that his foundations still lacked when compared to Zhi Zun's. Zhi Zun had practically reached a level of perfection where her energy was pure perfection and when she condensed her energy, there was her unique intent that intimidated people.

Perhaps a legendary goddess could also reach this level.

Cang Yan immediately became solemn. Although Zhi Zun had merely reached Heaven Ranked Level 3, a feeling of insurmountable defeat blossomed in his heart.

Zhi Zun definitely reserved a part of her energy, masking her real prowess.

Unless she really believed that she was able to go against Yan Zun with just her powers of Heaven Ranked Level 3 when he had already increased his powers to the breaking point of Heaven Ranked Level 5? In addition to winning in terms of his rank and powers, Yan Zun still had the Pure Blue Fire Form and the destruction rays and the lethal black bullet would become ineffective. Even if Zhi Zun had other attacks, Yan Zun still had his hidden trump card. Therefore, Yan Zun would never be defeated!

If this were a bet, Cang Yan would totally bet everything on Yan Zun.

Yue Yang summoned the Spirit of Earth Fire back and flew into

Night Empress's Starry Sky Domain, his face expressionless grim.

The tiny Blood Winged Angel which accepted Zhi Zun's blood grew slowly. Within a minute, she grew to be human-sized. 6 blood red wings fluttered gently as she raised her powers to Innate Level 10. She was actually a beast. A Level 9 Diamond-ranked Beast at that, with enormous room for further improvement. Her powers were close to those of Zhi Zun, with strength like the Sky Emperor and the Emperor of the Underworld... The Blood Winged Angel drew out the holy sword hanging at her waist. She held the sword in front of her chest and closed her eyes slowly, as her left hand brushed over it gently.

The sharp Sword Qi cut through her delicate skin.

A trail of blood appeared on the holy sword like the beautiful ray of a rainbow.

Colourful lights shone out from the holy sword and gathered on the Blood Winged Angel, as she further grew to become a 3 meter tall giant.

Even Yue Yang could not understand why Zhi Zun brought the Blood Winged Angel along. No matter how powerful the angel was, her presence was only a burden on Zhi Zun. She was unable to assist Zhi Zun so why did Zhi Zun insisted on bringing her along? Yue Yang wanted to ask Night Empress but he feared to reveal Zhi Zun's secret.

Yue Yang was willing to believe in whatever Zhi Zun does as she

would never do stupid things.

Despite the questions he had, Yue Yang still decided to trust her.

“Let us fight to determine the winner.” Yan Zun was puzzled as well but he just could not see through his enemy’s secret. He could only unleash all his strength and fight with all his might.

Heatwaves hot enough to set the world on fire burst forward. Yan Zun, under the protection of the Mirror Flame Bugs and with help from some kind of special beast, raised his fist and charged towards Zhi Zun like lightning.

The punch was imposing and invincible.

Full force ahead!

Yan Zun had no form of defense at all.

He believed firmly in his Pure Blue Fire Form; he believed that it can withstand all attacks from his enemy. For someone with a long range attack like Zhi Zun, her greatest fear would be hand-to-hand combat. As for her shield, Yan Zun had faith that he could destroy it with one blow. There was no shield in the world that cannot be breached; no enemy in the world that cannot be killed. As long as one has sufficient power, cities and even entire countries can be destroyed within seconds.

The human body was one of the most fragile among other races.

Close combat would always be a tragedy for weak bodies.

With her Starry Sky Domain, Night Empress summoned the Aries and Taurus constellations.

Although Yue Yang and her were protected, Yan Zun's powerful hit still forced the entire Starry Sky Domain to drift miles away.

Compared to Cang Yan's Trap Domain, Yan Zun's punch was more than 100 times more powerful. This, was still only an indirect fire energy hit through the air.

Having taken the hit directly, just how much pressure was Zhi Zun under?

Yue Yang could not imagine at all!

"Stupid!" Zhi Zun tilted her body slightly, moved her head and avoided the deathly hit from Yan Zun skillfully.

She struck back immediately. She flicked Yan Zun's hasty second hit away with her right hand while her left hand pressed down on his forehead. Multiple expressions appeared on Yan Zun's face in that second. He was first startled that his plan to suppress Zhi Zun with his powerful punch had failed. His shock was closely followed by his astonishment when his second punch was easily deflected by Zhi Zun and left him defenseless. How could he not be stunned after witnessing such mysterious close-combat skills on a woman

with a long range attack style?

His expression changed again when Zhi Zun's left palm landed on his forehead.

It was indifference.

With his Pure Blue Fire Form, he was most comfortable with close-combats. Unless he was under attack from Divine-ranked treasures, the Nirvana Flames or the World Exterminating Wheel, normal attacks would never hurt him.

“Ka-boom!”

Yan Zun was smashed into the ground, his entire body embedded deep in the rocks.

Before he could shake off his dizziness, Zhi Zun lifted him up and tossed him far away... Flying at least 2000 meters away before he hit the ground with a thud, Yan Zun could not get back on his feet even after a long time.

Witnessing such a scene left Cang Yan, Yan Zong and even Yue Yang stupefied.

Damn, what the hell just happened?

Night Empress could almost hear the question in Yue Yang's

heart. She explained gently to him: “Actually Zhi Zun is a close-combat fighter, she’s most knowledgeable in combat skills!”

Yue Yang felt faint.

Zhu Zun’s forte wasn’t destruction rays, not the black bullet, but close-combat skills instead?

If he hadn’t seen Yan Zun being blasted off himself, Yue Yang really couldn’t believe it.

Cang Yan was even more surprised. Fortunately he didn’t fight her himself, otherwise the person who was pummeled to the ground would be him... He didn’t have Yan Zun’s Pure Blue Fire Form. If he were the one fighting her, Zhi Zun might have torn his body to shreds! Cang Yan swore that he would never lay a hand on Zhi Zun, this formidable lady. In the future, he would run far, far away whenever he saw her. It was too scary to fight against such a woman. It was like he was seeking death!

“Phat’s imphoshifle!” Yan Zun, whose face was pummeled and teeth had fallen out, was bleeding with a blue-colored flame blood. His words were a little unclear due to his fallen teeth, and he sounded a little terrified: “You shouldn’t have been able to hit me with your hands, my body is made of Pure Blue Fire, I’m immune to any kind of physical attacks. Other than Divine Weapons, nothing should be able to harm me!”

“You have Pure Blue Fire Form?” Zhi Zun unfolded her palms and revealed a blister that seemed to have formed from a burn.

She was injured.

Yue Yang felt a twinge in his heart and immediately jumped out to her worriedly. Grabbing her hand, he channelled his Innate Qi to heal her.

Zhi Zun was stunned, and her cheeks started to redden with a blush. But they disappeared shortly as she freed her hands from Yue Yang and indicated for him to move back: “It’s a small injury, no big deal.”

Yue Yang was also surprised with his courage. He actually dared to touch her hand? If it was last time, he would definitely never touch her. Seems like after he managed to push down Phoenix Fairy Beauty and the others and became a real man, his boldness in pursuing women has gone up to a whole new level!

“Ah, I thought you were Sky Law just now.” Yue Yang pretended to be dumb as he recalled the wonderful sensation of Zhi Zun’s hand and slipped back into the Starry Sky Domain.

“Unforgivable!” Yan Zun was beyond furious. Yan Zun, who was miserably defeated, immediately powered up to a higher level.

The fight started once again. This time, not only Yan Zun, even the Flame Giant Yan Zong also launched a sneak attack suddenly.

Yan Zun pounced like a lion as he released all of his strength. He

charged forward, attacking with fury.

At this time, Yan Zong was waiting at the side, his shady face showing a snake-like expression.

blame crayon for delaying my edits since she left the chapter half done

Chapter 550 – Humanoid Divine Weapon

Yue Yang was completely focussed on the battle. Although he was secretly worried, he firmly believed in Zhi Zun.

It was the same for Night Empress.

Yan Zun who possessed the Pure Blue Fire Form body rained punches like crazed person. He completely gave up on defending. The failure of his previous attacks did not lower his confidence at all. On the other hand, the flame giant Yan Zong, who was preparing to launch a sneak attack, also gathered his greatest power and sent a fire punch ferociously.

“....” Yue Yang’s heart rose to his throat.

“It’s fine, Zhi Zun can handle it.” Night Empress comforted Yue Yang discreetly.

She made him stay in her Starry Sky Domain. If Yue Yang were to dash out in a moment like this, it would cause an adverse impact on Zhi Zun instead.

Zhi Zun waved her slim hand as she skillfully directed Yan Zong’s fire punch towards Yan Zun’s incoming punch. Her hand showed a combat skill which made use of the opponent’s force to counter the opponent’s attack, one which Yue Yang had never seen anywhere else. It was similar to the marital art move “four ounces yields 1000 catties” from Yue Yang’s memory, in addition, it even carried a guiding intent. The entire battle proceeded as if under Zhi Zun’s

command as Yan Zun and Yan Zong's punches collided together.

The two clashed together, resulting in a world shaking boom.

Yue Yang was euphoric when he saw it.

Zhi Zun was indeed impressive!

Although she might pale in comparison in terms of level with Yan Zong and Yan Zun, her skillful combat tactics were sufficient to compensate for the gap in power and level.

Talking about her weakness, it would be that she wasn't protected by any Divine Equipment, so it was somewhat imperfect. If she were to own an invincible Divine Equipment, then it would be perfect. If Zhi Zun were to possess Divine Equipment, the Heaven Ranked Level 6 Yan Zong and Yan Zun would have been beaten to a pulp by her.

The only thing that puzzled Yue Yang was that the Blood Winged Angel summoned by Zhi Zun with her blood hadn't been utilised.

What could it be used for?

"No, danger." Night Empress screamed suddenly.

Yue Yang who was previously pondering was shocked when he heard Night Empress and saw what happened.

The boom between Yan Zong and Yan Zun paused eerily like a video that was lagging. The entire space wasn't moving. It could also be said that the explosion was still continuing, but it was happening at a pace a hundred times slower than an ant. It was occurring at a speed not observable by the naked eye. Zhi Zun appeared to be in slow motion as she seemed to want to defend against an opponent but her reaction speed was greatly reduced by the strange force.

Their opponents must have used a kind treasure, it could be a Holy Ranked one or a Divine Ranked treasure, to control the entire battle.

A shadow shot out from the huge body of Yan Zong. It was moving at a breakneck speed as it waved a punch.

Although Zhi Zun reacted to it, she was too slow.

Although she made an action to dodge, the other party's punch was just too fast. It subsequently landed heavily on her back that wasn't protected by any armour.

Fresh blood splattered out like cherry blossom and landed on the ground, forming a gruesome red pool.

Yue Yang felt that his head was bursting as if his head was hammered. As if his soul just shattered, an uncontrollable violent energy was unleashed.

He shot out from the Starry Sky Domain and ran to her aid dauntlessly.

He was moving as fast as a meteorite initially. But as he got within hundred meters from the battlefield, he realized that there was an eerie energy controlling the entire battlefield. Yue Yang's body became slower. No matter how hard he tried to fly faster, driven by the violent energy, he could only fly slightly faster than a crawling snail. Just when Yue Yang was on the brink of madness, Night Empress had already caught up with him. Pressing her fair hand on his back: "Go! "

An extremely huge star exploded behind his back. This explosive energy counteracted effectively against the eerie pausing energy.

Numerous stardust opened up a path before Yue Yang.

Moreover, most of the star power had enveloped Yue Yang as he quickly shot towards Zhi zun like a comet.

The shadow waved a punch again, as Zhi Zun wasn't able to defend herself due to her slow movement, she could only choose to turn her body to dodge, allowing her a narrow escape from the lethal punch. The shadow was unrelenting. Not only did it rained punches, it kicked Zhi Zun in the abdomen, attempting to beat her to death before Yue Yang could rush to her aid.

"Shake." Zhi Zun spread out her four limbs and did an action to shoot the destructive ray.

Even before the destructive ray was shot, the shadow was repelled more than hundred meters away.

Yue Yang brushed past the shadow that was repelled away.

When he rushed to Zhi Zun's aid, he saw that Yan Zong and Yan Zun were waving two punches jointly onto the two arms of Zhi Zun which were trying to defend herself.

If not for the eerie energy that slowed down Zhi Zun's movement, the two punches wouldn't have been effective at all. Zhi Zun who specialized in counterattacks wouldn't have fought against them forcibly. Under the halting energy, Zhi Zun couldn't use her combat skills, so she could only use her hands to take resist the blows.

How strong would the joint attack of two Heaven Ranked Level Six rankers be?

Yue Yang couldn't fathom.

After Zhi Zun's forced retaliation, she was injured again, and blood splattered out her her cherry lips.

Yue Yang finally arrived and protected Zhi Zun with his body.

"You are asking for death!" The shadow that launched the sneak

attack laughed coldly. Yan Zong, Yan Zun together with it went up together and waved heavy punches, as they attempted to beat Yue Yang and Zhi Zun to a pulp and kill them.

“Get lost!” Yue Yang lost control as a World Extreming power of the Ancient Code burst out from his body. The power of the Cards of Fate rose to the peak in an instant. The suppressive force caused the trio to be pressed onto the ground as the eerie energy controlling the entire battlefield cracked like an eggshell by the power of the Ancient Code that exploded from Yue Yang’s body.

A golden giant bearing an uncanny resemblance to Yue Yang grew from a few meters to over hundred meters.

Its head was touching the sky and its feet were standing on the ground.

It continued to grow.

Nobody was able to raise up their heads, so no one could see where it grew to, but they knew that it was definitely more than 1000 meters.

As the golden giant grew like mad, Xiao Wen Li floated out of Yue Yang’s body. There was a similar golden image that appeared on Xiao Wen Li. It was even taller than Hui Tai Lang. It looked like a perfectly mature Xiao Wen Li, or it can also be said to be extremely similar to Empress Fei Wen Li. Following Xiao Wen Li’s will, the golden lamia furiously waved its golden arm. It sneakily slapped the shadow away easily... What was even more baffling was that a

huge golden giant was born on the injured Zhi Zun, who was below Yue Yang, too.

The giant female giant looked lost at the start, as if she couldn't believe it was real.

But she quickly regain composure as she immediately caught the shadow when the golden lamia slapped it. She then squeezed it with all its might and smashed it onto the ground.

This wasn't the end. In the instant the shadow was smashed towards the ground, the golden female giant that looked exactly like Zhi Zun bended over and reached out her hands to dig out the shadow from the ground. Together with the soil, she hurled it 1000 meters away. The shadow was buried nearly 100 meters underground, forming a huge pit that was even more terrifying than the crater formed when a meteorite smashed on the ground.

Although Hui Tai Lang was fast to respond, the speed where it went over to help wasn't fast enough to adapt to the rapid changes on the battlefield.

When it arrived and morphed into the World Exterminating Demon Wolf, the power of the Ancient Code on Yue Yang's body had already started to disappear.

The golden giant that was more than 1000 meters tall quickly dimmed, and disappeared into thin air after.

Before Yue Yang exhausted all his energy and fell into a coma, he instinctively took out the Three Realms Compass. But even before he could boot it and take everyone back to Tong Tian Tower, he had already lost consciousness onto Zhi Zun's embrace.

“Boom boom!” When the eerie halting power disappeared, Zhi Zun regained freedom. The furious Zhi Zun didn't let Yan Zong and Yan Zun off as she controlled the golden female giant with her will and slapped Yan Zong and Yan Zun onto the ground as if they were flies. As Yue Yang fell unconscious and the power of the Ancient Code disappeared, the golden lamia on Xiao Wen Li's body and the golden female giant on Zhi Zun's body disappeared.

Only Hui Tai Lang whose body became larger was able to maintain his shape slightly longer.

It couldn't wait to land on the ground as it puked out a huge dark energy ball in mid air and hurled it at Yan Zong and Yan Zun.

Of course the embarrassed Yan Zong and Yan Zun didn't dare to take the angry blow from Hui Tai Lang. They ran off in separate ways... As for Cang Yan, who was observing from afar, his legs shivered as he clattered his teeth. He almost peed his pants. This was too terrifying, luckily he did not do a sneak attack, if not he would have been dead.

Yue Yang could actually explosively unleash the power of the Ancient Code. If it wasn't due to the fact that he was unable to control it, it would be fat hope for him to survive.

Compared to the power of the Ancient Code, he, who was only a Heaven Ranked Level 5, was only a grain of sand in the vast ocean.

He might be even more insignificant.

Both Yan Zong and Yan Zun were Heaven Ranked Level 6 seniors.

They were only clowns in front of the power of the Ancient Code. If it weren't that Yue Yang was fell unconcious, they might be even more sorry than this! As for the shadow, Cang Yan didn't know who it was, and he also wasn't aware when it hid in Yan Zong's flame body to launch the sneak attack, but he knew that the shadow employed a vile tactic. That was to use the legendary 'Body Halting Pearl'. It must have wanted to use the Body Halting Pearl to make Zhi Zun stationary before killing her.

Who would have thought that Zhi Zun could still move under the effect of the Body Halting Pearl. Hence it was unable to kill her, and the Body Halting Pearl was shattered by the power of the Ancient Code in the end.

The legendary supreme Holy Ranked Treasure that was close to being a Divine Treasure, the Body Halting Pearl, was shattered like this...

This was the power of the Ancient Code.

Cang Yan realized that when the golden giant appeared from Yue

Yang's body, he wasn't even able to raise up his head. Under the suffocating force, he could only barely look at the toes of the golden giant. He didn't have any way to look up.

Luckily, Yue Yang didn't know how to properly utilize this unique power of the Ancient Code. If not, he would have killed Yan Zong and Yan Zun easily.

"I will return you a stab by my sword for the lunch I received from you!" Zhi Zun embraced Yue Yang who was unconscious. She reached out her right hand as a rainbow like light flashed across. The Blood Winged Angel amazingly morphed into a crimson Angel's Sword.

With a sword in her hand, Zhi Zun unleashed her unmatched power.

Her sword Qi shot through the skies.

Cang Yan was utterly speechless. Could the specialty of Soaring Dragon Continent be at creating such abnormally powerful rankers? Why did he ever go to the death arena to find trouble with these people from the Soaring Dragon Continent? Forget about Yue Yang who possess the power of the Ancient Code and would become the next Prison Emperor, he had even provoked Zhi Zun who possessed a Humanoid Divine Weapon... This Humanoid Divine Weapon was the dream of many Heaven Ranked Warriors! Forget about this, the terrifying black bullet and destructive ray alone were scary enough.

What should he do next?

Thinking of it, Cang Yan was instantly upset. The rest of his life would indeed be a tragedy!

Chapter 551 – You Are This Princess’ Man

“Chop!” Zhi Zun brandished and raised the Humanoid Divine Weapon, then chopped towards the thin shadow. The power of this sword strike tore the skies and cracked the earth. The hard Ancient Battlefield Ruins ground silently split open, forming a 10 meter deep and 1000 meter long crevice. It begun from Zhi Zun until the far behind the shadow.

The shadow wanted to hide but it was simply unable to.

The Humanoid Divine Weapon not only had unmatched power, it even carried a unique ‘Furious Chop’ intent.

The single chop seemed to have even cut through time and space. After Zhi Zun swung her sword, the thin shadow noticed that his body seemed as if he was trapped by the Body Halting Pearl. It was just like a while ago except their situations were in reverse. The shadow could not budge an inch as it stared at the oncoming chop about to hack his head.

Yan Zong sent out a fire punch, sending Yan Zun over.

Filled with the spirit of brotherhood, Yan Zun pulled away the thin shadow.....

When the sword light disappeared, only two arms could be seen falling on the ground. One was the shadow’s arm and the other was Yan Zun’s arm.

Although the shadow was saved by Yan Zun, they had received heavy injuries and were almost cut into four by the sword qi. Above all, the shadow's shoulder that had just lost its arm was now gushing blood. However, the shadow was extremely strong-willed and resisted the pain as he did not let out a single sound. On the other hand, Yan Zun possessed the Pure Blue Fire Form so he did not feel pain. As long as he could pick up his arm, he could instantly recover his previous state. It was only because of this that he dared to save the shadow.

Zhi Zun did not attack again. However, Yan Zun and the others understood that they have lost.

The reason was that they had misjudged the opponent's strength. If Yue Yang did not bring out the power of the Ancient Code from the Cards of Fate, the shadow's ambush after using the Body Halting Pearl might have been a success. As long as they could kill Zhi Zun, Night Empress and the new Prison Emperor had a chance of dying in the Ancient Battlefield Ruins, eliminating any future threats to Heaven Realm.

However, their ambush failed because Zhi Zun could still move under the effects of the Body Halting Pearl.

Moreover, that accursed brat possessed the power of the Ancient Code.

The power of the Ancient Code had heavily injured them. They couldn't help but retreat in defeat even if they had the advantage

in level, power and timing.

The two women on the other side not only had the power to fight, they also possessed a Humanoid Divine Weapon.

Three people had been heavily injured on their side. They had lost a huge amount of fighting power. The only one remaining was the coward, Cang Yan, who was unable to achieve anything but good at spoiling things. Previously, he could have impeded Night Empress' Starry Sky Domain but stood on the side like an idiot. If his report was more accurate, they wouldn't have been beaten like this. Now, they had offended Empress Fei Wen Li and also lost face as they retreat in defeat.

Shameful.

If they returned and reported this, they would definitely be berated.

Not only could they not report this matter, they must also close up Cang Yan's mouth to prevent his loose tongue from inviting disaster upon them.

"Let us go. Today's disgrace, we will return it back a hundredfold." Yan Zong quickly flew towards Yan Zun and the shadow. He pulled them both and turned into a sea of flames leaving no traces behind. Seeing the three people escape, Cang Yan was startled that his entire body went soft. He used his fastest speed to leave the Ancient Battlefield Ruins. If Zhi Zun were to gift him a slash, he had no confidence in being able to block it.

Zhi Zun loosened her hand on the huge Humanoid Divine Weapon and let it return to a Blood Winged Fairy.

With a bit of exhaustion, she carried Yue Yang and nodded her head towards the Night Empress: “Luckily, the people who came were all Heaven Ranked Level 6. If they were a bit stronger, then we might not have been able to beat them even with your strength.”

Night Empress asked with a bit of astonishment: “What happened awhile ago?”

What she was asking was how Zhi Zun was able to resonate with the power of the Ancient Code that came from Yue Yang and summon a golden female giant.

Zhi Zun could not understand this as she replied: “If there is another chance, you should also try it. With your knowledge, you might be able to understand this more than me!”

When the Night Empress heard this, she laughed with a bell-like voice. She once again hid herself: “Let it be. There are far too many strange things happening to that boy’s body. I also could not understand them. Since they are all good things, it’s fine to ignore them.”

When Cang Yan escaped to a suitable distance, a golden brilliance rose up from the War Altar. Every single god statue surrounded the golden light pillar.

The Heaven Realm interferers have already given up on fighting and admitted their defeat. According to the Ancient Code, Yue Yang's team had obtained victory. Since Yue Yang had not yet woken up, he could not know what the reward from the Ancient Code was. However, Zhi Zun and Night Empress both saw a strange light quickly entered Yue Yang's sleeping body from the Four-sided Divine Stele..... That should have been a treasure, as for what kind of treasure it was, Zhi Zun and Night Empress could not know.

Zhi Zun and Night Empress' bodies also shone with brilliance.

Although the Four-sided Divine Stele did not shoot a strange light, the War Altar still poured a pure energy towards them.

Different people had different rewards. Even the people quietly waiting inside the Grimoire World like the Southern Goblin King, Elder Nan Gong, Emperor of the Underworld, the giant loli, even the ancient warriors, were all bathed in the golden light.

When the golden light entered the ancient warrior's bodies, a black gas came out from their bodies and dissipated.

They excitedly cheered.

After this battle, they had finally obtained freedom. They were finally free from the punishment that their ancestors received.....

The Southern Goblin King had assisted Yue Yang in killing Ancient Slaughterers and also killed a lot of Amphibious Fish Demons. She was the one who guided Yue Yang into the death arena and after obtaining victory, her level increased by 1 and became a Level 10 Innate Ranker. Although the distance to become an Innate Elder was still far, she was not worried, because this battle had showed her the truth to become strong and reach a higher level.

Elder Nan Gong had also obtained a bit of upgrade, but he was not yet able to become an Elder Innate.

The Emperor of the Underworld was also similar to Elder Nan Gong.

There was only a paper-thin distance for them to become an Elder Innate, reaching Heaven Rank was just around the corner.

Under the golden light, the giant loli seemed to have grown a bit taller. Naturally, even if she had grown bigger and taller, she still had the appearance of a big loli. The Titan Armor on her body became even more stronger as the runes on it became even more profound. The runic pattern on it also became richer. These were her reward.

Hui Tai Lang, who had just returned inside the Grimoire World, howled towards the sky. Its grimoire automatically floated out and flipped.

Because it had assisted its master in defeating a Heaven Ranked

Level 5 Ranker, Hei Hu, it had obtained the more rewards. Other than leveling up, it had also gained a new skill. However, it wanted to make Yue Yang happy, so Hui Tai Lang did not immediately display it in front of everyone. Moreover, he appeared to be an incredibly loyal guard dog and high-spiritedly guarded the sleeping Yue Yang.

Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying, Bloody Queen Red, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man, and the others were rewarded with an upgrade. If it wasn't a rank up, it was a level up. As for the Spirit of Earth Fire that had devoured the Dark Cloud Sky Flames, it had directly leveled up into a Spirit of Sky Fire. Its rank, appearance and level all went up.

As for the loli lamia, Xiao Wen Li, she had obtained the greatest reward from the Ancient Code due to her outstanding performance.

Under the brilliance, her body had grown a bit.

Her level, which was at Diamond Rank Level 6, went up to Diamond Rank Level 7. With this level up, her strength had once more receive a great leap.

When Yue Yang woke up, he found out that he was lying on Phoenix Fairy Beauty's lap, while the Southern Goblin King and Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying were quietly talking to each other, afraid that they might wake up Yue Yang with the noise. In the distance, Elder Nan Gong and the Emperor of the Underworld were playing chess. On the other hand, Hui Tai Lang was lying down beside him, enjoying a roasted Abyss Manatee..... Zhi Zun quietly

sat on his other side. As for the Night Empress, she was currently helping Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia in adapting to the power gifted by the Ancient Code.

The sleeping giant loli outside was just like a small hill. Dozens of female ancient warriors were also cuddling her as they chatted.

Because they had won against their opponent, the Ancient Code had lifted the punishment, so they were full of joy as they cheerfully talked.

Everybody was waiting for Yue Yang.

This was because only he could utilize the Three Realms Compass. While Yue Yang was still asleep, they could only continue to stop over in Heaven Realm, unable to return to the Tong Tian Tower.

“Did I sleep for long?” Yue Yang moved his body and sat up. Phoenix Fairy Beauty used her soft white arms to embrace his neck, and then passionately kissed him in front of the Southern Goblin King: “You have slept for a day, but I’m still fine, you can still continue sleeping.”

“Are we going back immediately?” There was a bit of reluctance at the bottom of the Southern Goblin King’s heart. What did returning signify? Parting!

Although she felt sour seeing Yue Yang rest on Sky Law’s lap, it

was comfortable inside the Grimoire World, giving her a feeling of reluctance to leaving. She was fully aware that it was impossible, but she still hoped to stay for a bit longer. In here, although Sky Law would emit a hostile mood, Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia as mistresses did not oppose to it. Even Jiang Ying had fully welcomed her.

When Princess Qian Qian saw that Yue Yang woke up, she could not help but be pleasantly surprised and charged over.

Yue Yang opened his arms, preparing to embrace her.

However, this rogue tigress punched him: “You idiot. Why did you run to such a dangerous place! Did you know that you made this princess cry!”

“You really cried?” Yue Yang tightly pulled on his beloved tigress and intentionally teased her: “Princess, you did not drown the entire Soaring Dragon Continent in tears, right? If you did, then I have sinned! In order to apologize, let me sincerely give you a kiss.....”

“Who wants to!” If other people were not around, Princess Qian Qian might have let him kiss her. However, with this many seniors around, she felt embarrassed and forcefully struggled free from Yue Yang. She leapt a meter away from Yue Yang showing that he should not approach: “Just give your kiss to Wu Xia. If it was not because she wanted me to come, I would not even come to this death arena or Heaven Realm to fight.

“The tigress has once again raised his pride.” Xue Wu Xia naturally accepted Yue Yang’s embrace and kiss.

Although it was not a passionate kiss, Xue Wu Xia’s natural and guiltless expression made Princess Qian Qian angry. She felt that she had eaten a bug.

They were all his fiancée, so why only kiss her?

Princess Qian Qian appeared to not care, but her heart wished for Yue Yang to once again hug her and give her a strong kiss, then she would reluctantly let him kiss her. Like this she would be equal to Xue Wu Xia. Unexpectedly, as if he showed consideration for her feelings, Yue Yang patted her shoulder: “Tigress, I know that you feel embarrassed about kissing so I will give my kiss of longing for you to.....”

Phoenix Fairy Beauty suddenly rushed over. She hugged Yue yang and stole a kiss from him. Afterwards, she went over to the fuming Princess Qian Qian and sweetly smiled: “It was given to me.”

Princess Qian Qian was very angry. She wanted to use her sword and slash the big breasted Sky Law.

She pulled Yue yang inside the room and pushed him down.

She fiercely nipped his lips.

It was just a kiss, who didn't know how to do it?

What came to him was an extremely long kiss that could not be separated even if the world ended. In the end, with swollen lips, she brought out Yue Yang and arrogantly demonstrated: “Xiao San, quickly tell them that you are this princess' man!”

When everyone heard this, they split their sides laughing.

Chapter 552 – Return, Shocking The Whole World

Before returning back to the Tong Tian Tower, Yue Yang secretly sneaked out to bury a battle doll in front of the Four-sided Holy Stele. It was a battle doll without any ability to attack.

Leaving behind this battle doll, Yue Yang could use it to activate the Three Realm Compass at anytime and return back to Heaven Realm.

Although the Heaven Realm was more dangerous than the Tong Tian Tower, reaching the Heaven Realm was every Tong Tian Tower warrior's dream. Now that the Doors of Heaven Realm had been closed, without the Three Realm Compass, one had to wait for a hundred years for it to open once again. The most important thing was that, within the closed doors of Heaven Realm, even without the Heaven Ranked Rankers guarding the Heaven Realm, based on their terrible attitude towards the warriors from the Soaring Dragon Continent, they might ambush and murder them... It would be incredibly treacherous even before one goes through the doors of Heaven Realm. People may easily perish in the cracks of time and space.

After burying this battle doll and using the Three Realm Compass, Yue Yang could bring everyone up to Heaven Realm at any time.

Perhaps, he does not even need to rely on the legendary shortcut in the Heaven Stairways anymore.

Was there really a shortcut to go to Heaven Realm in the Heaven Stairways?

It was actually unknown!

Perhaps this riddle could only be solved after they find the tragic guy's mother.

Emperor of the Underworld, who longed to rise to the Heaven Realm as well as Elder Nan Gong, who was willing to stay and keep watch of Tong Tian Tower for eternity, expressed their approval in regards to Yue Yang's decision to leave the battle doll behind. This applied to the Night Empress and Zhi Zun as well.

Many Rankers from the Tong Tian Tower longed to enter Heaven Realm. Rankers such as Dragon Emperor, Sky Execution, Baruth etc. With their level of complacency, they hardly ran into worthy opponents, as a result they were slow to rise in rank. If there was any hope for them to enter Heaven Realm, they would very likely be willing let go of all the grudges they had in the Tong Tian Tower. As individuals, this would be a form of growth. As for all the warriors of Tong Tian Tower, it would be a form of distress... Without the pressure from Supreme Innates, more outstanding youngsters would emerge within the Tong Tian Tower.

“You guys are really not going to stay?” Yue Yang thought that Zhi Zun and Night Empress would stay in the Heaven Realm to explore and broaden their horizon.

Even if they could not oppose the Central Palace, with Zhi Zun and Night Empress' powers, they can easily drill and train in the Heaven Realm. Heaven Ranked Level 3 Huang Quan was able establish his reputation, he was even considered to be slightly famous in Heaven Realm. Zhi Zun's powers was way greater than Huang Quan. For her, training in Heaven Realm was not a problem at all.

However, what puzzled Yue Yang was that, Zhi Zun and Night Empress both decided to not stay in Heaven Realm. They both decided to return back to the Tong Tian Tower with him.

Zhi Zun's approach was to return back to train. In fact, she thought that training in Heaven Realm may not be as good as training in the Tong Tian Tower. Meanwhile, the main purpose of her research was to find out how to break through God's Ruins. In her mind, the Gods' Ruins was of a higher value and worth. Training in the Heaven Realm? Once she possessed enough power, she can attack and break through anytime.

Therefore, Zhi Zun does not want to stay in Heaven Realm.

Night Empress also decided to return. She decided to train Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress so that the younger generation can quickly improve.

With the guidance from Night Empress, Xue Wu Xia and the rest would definitely advance by leaps and bounds.

Yue Yang was very supportive of this!

Of course Elder Nan Gong was definitely returning. It was simply because, without him to control the present conditions, the Innate Alliance would probably cause a big ruckus. Emperor of the Underworld did not stay as well. He was the one who really wished to stay in the Heaven Realm but with his current strength, he thought that he did not have the power to defend himself. Thus he decided to return back to Tong Tian Tower to continue training and eventually level up.

Anyway, Yue Yang had the Three Realm Compass, he could get free rides and go to the Heaven Realm with him together. It was an entirely different story as compared to staying in Heaven Realm alone without anyone to aid him.

“We have no home to return to, please kindly take us in!” The cute dog beauty wagged her tail, pretending to be very pitiful. She was the smallest and cutest one out of all the ancient female warriors. She was so adorable it was as if she could instantly kill all pedo uncles.

“Nom Nom...”

The giant loli did not say anything, she was munching on huge mouthfuls of meat. Her mouth not free to say anything.

Now, even if Yue Yang were to shoo her away, she would not leave.

Yue Yang's place had food that she could not finish eating as well

as people who adore her. The giant loli was no longer afraid of anything. She was only afraid of hunger and not being loved.

Of course, even if Yue Yang had the guts, he would not dare say no to the giant loli. If he said he did not want her, the giant loli's tears will probably flood the entire Grimoire World. Anyway, grooming a giant loli was quite an adorable thing to do. Although the giant loli's size was a little huge, as long as Qilin Girl's special skill "minimize" were to improve, the giant loli still had hope to become an ordinary loli... In any case there were a lot of loli at home, it wouldn't hurt to add another one.

She just had a better appetite. How could it be possible for that glorious Soaring Dragon Continent to fail in feeding this ancient female titan?

Using the Three Realm Compass, Yue Yang once again returned to the death arena's crystal plaza.

At this very moment, the entire crystal plaza has changed.

As it turned out, the crystal passage had disappeared. The crystal wall that rose from the ground shrunk back underground. Other than the spiral crystal passage that was opened, everything had returned back to how they used to be. Everything looked the same, just like the time when Yue Yang and the Southern Goblin King went out treasure hunting.

"Third Young Master, hope to see you again." Emperor of the Underworld thanked Zhi Zun and the Night Empress before

bidding farewell with Yue Yang.

To Emperor of the Underworld, this death arena and the trip to Heaven Realm was one of life's honor. Although the person who overturned the perilous situation and reversed the situation was not him, he still got to play a part. Compared to the Sky Emperor, who had met with a violent death, Emperor of the Underworld felt that lady luck was on his side. He was really lucky. All this proves how important it was to be on the right side. If he did not choose to side with Yue Yang, and instead opposed him, Emperor of the Underworld felt that he would probably end up in the stomachs of the Ancient Slaughterers.

The Sky Emperor's skills were on par with Emperor of the Underworld.

They had their own strengths.

Because he choose to stand with the wrong team, the death arena became his grave. His storage ring got picked up by Yue Yang, even his dead body became the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen's fertilizer.

"I will return first to inspect the Innate Alliance..." Elder Nan Gong was worried that someone in Tong Tian Tower would take advantage of the situation and cause trouble. Especially Shun Tian, Black Prince and the Thousand Goblins Sect's leader. If Elder Nan Gong was not there to oversee the Tong Tian Tower, then they might start planning some crafty plots and machinations. Therefore, Elder Nan Gong had to quickly return and take a look. As for Yue Yang, he did not immediately leave the crystal plaza. He

still wanted to enter the spiral crystal passage to hunt for treasures. If it were other treasures, Yue Yang would not be bothered. It was just that he heard from the Dog Clan beauty and the ancient female warriors that there was something at the bottom of the spiral crystal passage. There was a teleportation circle that can directly teleport them to the Ancient Mausoleum. This palace preserved numerous books from the ancient times.

“Books? Great, I like to read books!” Yue Yang was interested in all kinds of knowledge, especially the history of the past and new runes.

The Ancient Mausoleum was separated into three layers, highest, middle and lowest.

The one that the Dog Clan beauty mentioned about was the first layer.

That meant that it was the lowest layer.

Within the lowest layer, there were already thousands of ancient books. These books recorded information in all kinds of language. It seemed as if history from different periods were recorded. It made Yue Yang and Xue Wu Xia, who loved reading, feel really satisfied from this trip.

As for the second layer’s middle hall and the third layer’s highest hall, it seemed as if they had to fulfill a particular condition to open them. Yue Yang did not have the time to inspect carefully, in the end he decided to return back to the Soaring Dragon Continent

to rest. Anyway there were no limits when entering the Ancient Mausoleum. Only ancient warriors and him, the chosen one can undo the seal and enter.

Zhi Zun and Night Empress both borrowed a hundred books to do research separately. They wished to quickly sort out the truth about history.

Southern Goblin King felt bad to stay inside Yue Yang's Grimoire World, she was reluctant to leave.

However, due to her ego, she pretended that she was not bothered.

She bid farewell with Yue Yang.

"I could not understand these books. What's more, that day I had managed to pick up the angel's Holy Gem Sword. Since, I have already received that treasure as a spoil of war. Forget about these ancient books. I get a headache when I look at books." Southern Goblin King knew that no matter how she reads the books, she was no match against Xue Wu Xia. Moreover, these books were useless for her. She glanced at Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying and smiled mischievously: "I really like Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying, If I have the time I will come and visit her. You won't dislike my visits right?"

"Of course we welcome you, my family's Third Young Master loves to entertain guests, especially beautiful women." The Phoenix Fairy Beauty declared that Yue Yang was hers.

“You answer.” Southern Goblin King signaled that whatever she said was not the final decision, she wanted Yue Yang to confirm.

“Not just visiting Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying, if you want to stay here on long term basis it’s totally fine. Don’t talk about other things, we will include meals and a place for your to stay.” Yue Yang had a look that resembled a wolf who was dealing with a lamb that wandered to the front of his door. Getting such a response, the Southern Goblin King felt delighted but immediately blushed and pretended that she did not hear anything. She then went to bid farewell to Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian.

“What is that girl’s intention?” Princess Qian Qian suspected that Southern Goblin King had other intentions.

“No matter what kind of intention, she’s already a lost cause. Sooner or later she might marry over with her savings, as well as her secret purse... I did not say anything, sister-in-law do not be angered, as a lowly concubine I am responsible for warming the bed tonight.” Phoenix Fairy Beauty yawned lazily. She decided to go and sleep to recharge. She reckoned that there’s going to be a war at night. Luo Hua City Mistress and the sickly beauty had not met Yue Yang for a long time, they probably wouldn’t be able to hold back.

As for the Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying and Princess Qian Qian, who had a sharp tongue but soft heart, whether Yue Yang could take them down depends on whether he could grab the right timing.

When comparing, the Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying had a higher chance since she had no guard against him.

She belonged to the kind that let their guard down.

As for Princess Qian Qian, the tigress, Yue Yang would probably need to use some force to push her down. If Xue Wu Xia did not come and disrupt, the success rate was only about 50%.

Yue Yang returned to the Soaring Dragon Continent. The moment Yue Yang stepped out, he realised that numerous people were waiting outside the Tong Tian Tower.

Because Elder Nan Gong returned back to the Tong Tian Tower first to attend to the Innate Alliance, he had already spread the news first hand to the entire Tong Tian Tower. They had participated in the Ancient War with the four realms, oppressed powerful Heaven Ranked rankers at the death arena, and while grasping victory, beheaded Ancient Slaughterers as if they were nothing. Even rose to the Heaven Realm, attacked the Water Palace Elder Hei Hu from the Heaven Realm's Central Palace and captured Hei Hu's Abyss Manatees as slave.

Any of these achievements was something people could not imagine.

Now, Yue Clan's Third Young Master had accomplished all of them.

How could the people of Tong Tian Tower not be amazed by his god-like performance?

Why would the people of the Soaring Dragon Continent, not be proud of such an excellent young man?

Not just the warriors of the Soaring Dragon Continent, even the Dragon Emperor who was one of the 5 emperors of Tong Tian Tower, Demonic Palace's Sky Execution, Demon Abyss' Great Demon King Baruth as well as rankers with different influences, even enemy rankers, all sent special envoy to the Soaring Dragon Continent to welcome Yue Yang for his return.

Standing in front of the crowd was the emperor of Da Xia Empire, Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai, as well as the old fox who was in all smiles, unable to close his mouth.....

Chapter 553 – Fourth Mother, San'er Has Returned!

Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai knew that Yue Yang was impressive. In the past he had won against a stronger opponent, saved the clan, bravely rushed through a demon's palace, hunt the enemy that had run a thousands of miles away, kill the Ocean Emperor, destroy one of the important bases of the Black Hell army, etc. Not one of them could easily be done by his peers. Every single thing he did was enough for history books to label him as a legendary miracle. They knew that his prospects were limitless and knew that Tong Tian Tower was unable to contain his limits. He would also experience going to Heaven Realm in the future. However, even if they had prepared their minds for this moment, they would never have imagined that Yue Yang's accomplishments would be so shocking.

If Elder Nan Gong did not spread the news, they would not dare believe it.

They knew about the information about him, going to the death arena.

They also knew that Zhi Zun and the Night Empress also went to help.

After three days, Elder Nan Gong suddenly returned. He brought back a piece of news that shook the entire Tong Tian Tower. As the leader of Western Heaven Realm, Yue Yang, who came from the Soaring Dragon Continent's Da Xia Kingdom, had led his team and successfully gained victory against all the strong opponents. He

had gained the ultimate honor from the ten thousand year war, won the ancient war.....

If anyone dared to question this, then they could look for Yue Yang's teammates.

Sky Emperor and the Emperor of the Underworld from the Five Emperors of Tong Tian Tower, chief of Innate Alliance, Nan Gong Luo Yun, Eastern Goblin Tribe's Southern Goblin King, six thousand year old ranker Black Hell King and his two subordinates, War Tiger and Fierce Tooth, and also Demonic Place's rank 3, Sky Law, as well as Zhi Zun and Night Empress, who arrived in the end.

Nobody could understand how this group was formed, they could never imagine why they would make the Yue Clan's Third Young Master their leader.

Naturally, what truly made everyone rack their brains was the events of the battle..... According to Elder Nan Gong's news, the enemy was unimaginably powerful, let alone the Heaven Realm's monsters, looking at Yue Clan's Third Young Master's teammates and competitors were enough to tell. The Black Hell King was his arch-enemy, the Sky Emperor were brothers with the Black Hell King. Their existences not only did not add to their fighting potential, they even became the greatest impairment. Elder Nan Gong even announced that the Black Hell King and the Sky Emperor, in front of the Heaven Realm monsters and Rankers, chose to surrender..... Under these circumstances, everyone wondered how Yue Yang was able to defeat these Heaven Realm rankers and monster and obtain the final victory.

Nobody could imagine this. Naturally, if they could, then they could also be like the Yue Clan's Third Young Master.

How was the Yue Clan's Third Young Master able to defeat the Heaven Ranked Level 3 Huang Quan, Heaven Ranked Level 2 Fen Tian, Yun Xing and the other competitors? How was he able to defeat the Heaven Ranked Level 5 Cang Yan, kill his four generals, kill the Ancient Slaughterers? How was he able to capture the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King and Abyss Manatees?

Elder Nan Gong did not explain any of these.

However, his words could not be doubted.

Elder Nan Gong had seriously explained that the Yue Clan's Third Young Master had decided to tame the Abyss Manatees, Ancient Slaughterers and many more Heaven Realm monsters. He will make them the eternal pets of the Soaring Dragon Continent, make everyone watch in marvel, as well as become the goal of the offsprings of the Soaring Dragon Continent.....

In other words, it won't be long before everyone could see the strong monsters of Heaven Realm as pets of the Soaring Dragon Continent.

All of these was due to the fact that the Soaring Dragon Continent gave birth to a man.

A man named Yue Yang!

“The Yue Clan’s Third Young Master’s glorious story is just beginning. Let us all wait and see. Before long, he will grow and become the Prison Emperor, who had shocked Heaven Realm’s Three Great Leaders 6000 years ago. He might even surpass him. Tong Tian Tower? It is only a step in his path to conquer Heaven Realm. All we can do now is to pay attention and use our gazes to follow his footprints as we witness the birth of a new legend. Youths, you should follow in the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master’s footprint. Tong Tian Tower is not your limits, the only battlefield that could bring out your full potential is Heaven Realm!” In order to revive the Tong Tian Tower, he encouraged the younger generation’s growth. He pushed Yue Yang out to be an example as he slowly turned into the new Prison Emperor.

The Tong Tian Tower needed an invincible Prison Emperor.

Whether it was six thousand years ago or right now, this was the only way to produce outstanding youths. Only then can new blood flow.

If Elder Nan Gong did not do this, this matter would not be concealed for too long.

This was because the Black Hell King had not yet died and escaped back.

If the Dragon Emperor, Sky Execution and Great Demon King Baruth did not join hands and repel him, foiling the Black Hell

Army's plans to exterminate the Soaring Dragon Continent, the result would have been too horrible to imagine. When Elder Nan Gong returned to the Innate Alliance, he immediately made a decision to spread the news of Yue Yang's achievements.

As a result, rankers of the Tong Tian Tower, who had just received the news of Black Hell King's fight with the Dragon Emperor and Sky Execution, immediately became shocked as they heard the news of Yue Yang winning the ancient war and went on a killing spree in Heaven Realm.

Originally, everyone thought that the Black Hell King was invincible. Now that they compared him with Yue Yang, they finally discovered that he was just a cunning traitor.

In just one night, the negative influence of the Black Hell King had disappeared without a trace.

With Yue Yang acting as the brightest dawn light, the unprecedented Yue Clan's Third Young Master in history, why did they need to fear the Black Hell King?

The Black Hell King was just a traitor. Now that the Yue Clan's Third Young Master had returned from Heaven Realm and even brought back the Abyss Manatee that was on par with Black Hell King in strength, how could the Black Hell army annihilate the Soaring Dragon Continent? This was only the Black Hell King's wishful thinking. Could the Black Hell army even compare to an Ancient Slaughterer? Every single one of those monsters were Heaven Ranked, something that even rankers of the Tong Tian Tower do not normally see yet the Yue Clan's Third Young Master

had many of these..... This made the people of the Black Hell army turn pale. In front of the Yue Clan's Third Young Master they were only chickens that could be killed in one hit!

The soldiers, that once fear being exterminated by the Black Hell army, instantly erupted with morale.

They suddenly wished to go to battle and prove themselves to the world.

Since Yue Yang was there, they did not have to fear losing the battle.

With a sure win weapon, why would they not fight?

“Greetings Third Young Master.....” Countless excited warriors tried to suppress their emotions. Once they saw Yue Yang return, they immediately kneeled down in worship as they could not help voice out their excitement. Even if they had not seen Yue yang before, even if they had treated him with hostility before, their hearts could not resist bursting forth with worship towards such a ranker.

“Yue Yang pays his respects to his majesty, pays his respects to grandfather, pays his respects to master. This time I went to the death arena and returned with victory bringing great fortune.” Yue Yang gave Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai and old fox some face in front of such a huge crowd. Under the eyes of thousands of warriors, he cupped his hands and courteously greeted the three.

“Good, good!” Elder Yue Hai’s tears flowed as he emotionally shuddered. Even if he had an iron will, he could not help being proud of his grandchild.

“He is my student, my student!” The old fox repeated as if no one knew about it.

“All army, all citizens, pay your respects……” Jun Wu You used his entire strength to shout as his voice echoed to the skies. Feng Kuang, who was standing behind him, immediately pulls out his greatsword and commanded everyone to pay their respects to the retreating Yue Yang. Whether it was a soldier or a citizen, everyone shouted as their voice shook the skies. Their voices seemed to be able to submerge the earth and shake the Tong Tian Tower.

From orderly shouts to unendurable cheers, everyone sunk into a state of merriment.

When Eastern Sky King, Feng Xiao Yun, Xue Wen Dao, and even Fatty Hai, Ye Kong, the Li brothers and the others wanted to lift him up and throw him in midair, Yue Yang extended their hands to stop them.

He looked at one person.

When Yue Yang looked at this person, everyone around him opened a path for him.

That person was a married woman that couldn't endure crying emotionally as her tears flowed down.

She was Fourth Mother.

Step by step, Yue Yang walked towards her.

His every step seemed to shake the hearts of the people as if he was stepping into their hearts..... Fourth Mother powerlessly pulled along the crying Yue Shuang. If Yue Bing, whose tears were gushing, was not there to support her, she might have already fainted from being too emotional.

Under the gaze of thousands of people, Yue Yang gradually walked in front of Fourth Mother.

Yue Yang, who had never showed anyone his greatest respect, was just like a youth, who had just returned from a great battle, returning to sincerely pay his respect to the elder.

He kneeled down with one knee.

Kneel in front of her.

Afterwards, with a world-shaking voice, he shouted from the depth of his soul: "Fourth Mother, San'er has returned!"

Fourth Mother's body shook as if she was about to fall down. Her

tears dropped down like pearls.

Her throat let out an unendurable sob. She threw herself towards Yue Yang and hugged him. Tightly hugging him in her embrace as tears dropped down like rain.

Following her suppressed tears, everyone could not endure being emotionally moved, could not endure crying their hearts out.

Yue Bing and Yue Shuang also threw themselves as they embraced their mother and their brother, bursting into tears. They were happy but they were unable to express it with a smile.

Only tears could show their thoughts.

Ye Kong kneeled.

Following him, Fatty Hai, the Li brothers, Xue Tan Lang and even the Tian Luo Prince.....

The golden elf Bao'er, Liu Ye, Hai Yingwu, the half-elf girl, Ox-head Fan Lun Tie, the four orc sisters, and many more younger generation kneeled down as they paid their respects to Fourth Mother.

Although Fourth Mother was not their biological mother, she had surpassed their own mothers. Without her, without Yue Yang, without the Yue Clan's Third Young Master, today's Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, Xue Tan Lang, etc. would not exist..... It was this gentle

and kind mother that brought up the good for nothing Yue Clan's Third Young Master. It was because of her that the Soaring Dragon Continent had a hero that they could be proud of!

Every soldier, warrior, tearfully, silently, spontaneously, raised their right hand showing their respect towards such a great mother!

In the Soaring Dragon Continent, where strength and men were respected, this was the first time in history.

Chapter 554 – Beast King's Blood

Tong Tian Tower was on fire.

Almost every warrior were chattering about the Yue Clan's Third Young Master's achievements excitedly, never tiring of it.

This Yue Clan's Third Young Master had always been under the radar, until he joined hands with An Xi and killed the Ocean Emperor Guan Lan. From then on, the youth immediately become everyone's point of interest. The warriors of the Tong Tian Tower finally heard that there was an exceptional youth with superpowers who hailed from the Soaring Dragon Continent. Afterwards, when the Black Hell Army invaded the Soaring Dragon Continent, his name was once again brought up. There was also the matter of the Sea Clan putting a 10,000,000 gold bounty on him, making him the person with the highest bounty throughout Tong Tian Tower history. Soon afterwards, at the Sixth Level of Tong Tian Tower, the Yue Clan's Third Young Master cut off the Black Hell King in a teleportation portal, making others break in cold sweat for him.

If it weren't for Elder Nan Gong and Southern Goblin King's help, a lot of people thought that this exceptional youth would kick the bucket and die young...

However, before ten days even passed, how would mankind ever conceive that this Yue Clan's Third Young Master had actually become the leader who led the Tong Tian Tower's warriors to a war against the Heaven Realm rankers and returned victoriously?

In Tong Tian Tower, there would always be skeptics...

A lot were saying that those were just empty stories, they would only believe it if they see it for themselves. Did the Yue Clan's Third Young Master really returned victoriously from the Heaven Realm after defeating its rankers?

Waiting at the Da Xia Kingdom Palace Hall in the Soaring Dragon Continent, the Abyss Manatees who had become mankind's slave should be able to tell those doubtful people the truth of that matter!

Legend said that 6000 years ago, this Heaven Realm monster 'Abyss Manatee' came to Tong Tian Tower due to the war between Heaven Realm's Three Great Leaders and the Prison Emperor. One of them was not able to return to Heaven Realm, hence it stayed at the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian Tower's Boundless Ocean, becoming the guardian that was worshipped by the Sea Clan. The descendant of this Abyss Manatee included Empress Jellyfish and the ruling clan of the deep seas. It was only 1000 years later that this Sea Clan Guardian died of old age, and because of this, the Ocean Emperor Guan Lan was able to rise to power.

The Abyss Manatee, who possessed the strength of Heaven Rank Level 2 and had become a guardian ancestor worshipped by the Sea Clan in the tenth level of Tong Tian Tower, had actually become the Yue Clan's Third Young Master's beast slave right now. It was even positioned at the plaza as a display for everyone to see. What was the intention here?

To show off!

This was slap in the face against Empress Jellyfish's order to capture him for 10,000,000 gold!

The Yue Clan's Third Young Master's actions was clearly telling the Sea Clan that it was not impossible to capture him, but the reward was too low...

Many warriors guessed that when Empress Jellyfish found out how their ancestor, an Abyss Manatee, had become the Yue Clan's Third Young Master's slave beast, she would probably be so angry that her nose would change its shape. However, Empress Jellyfish was definitely not the most miserable one. The most miserable one would be the Black Hell King.

This 6000 year old senior had become the greatest antagonist in the Tong Tian Tower. Forget about adults, even kids would call him a baddie.

Of course, those who believed the Black Hell King didn't bother to voice out.

Inside the Tong Tian Tower, the most important thing is power, not reputation!

"These people really have nothing to do..." Yue Yang composedly stayed at the little garden in the Valleys of Hundred Flowers and Butterflies. The entrance to the Heaven Stairway was also here.

Yue Yang had stayed here before. Because the Black Hell Army had retreated, Yue Yang moved out of the mirage in Tian Luo Palace. He moved to the little garden. There wasn't anyone to disturb him here, he could live a free and easy life. What Yue Yang wanted to do most currently was to help improving the girls' power, train his beasts to become Divine Beasts, and research on runes, history and other matters. With regards to politics, there would be Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai and the Old Fox to manage it. He, as the junior, would not take part in that matter. Furthermore, currently, all the Four Great Clans were united like steel. Even if the Black Hell Army came to invade again, they wouldn't be afraid of them.

With regards to the people's fanatical adoration for him, Yue Yang completely didn't care about them.

He was extremely clear-headed.

Taking away his powerful beasts and combat skills, with just the power of his own cultivation, forget about the Abyss Manatee, even killing an Ancient Slaughterer would be a tall order. Mostly, his beasts, combat skills and treasures were too powerful. Furthermore, he had the help of Zhi Zun and Night Empress whose powers were unimaginably strong. That was the only reason why he was able to have such battle prowess.

If Zhi Zun and Night Empress didn't come, Yue Yang would definitely not go to Heaven Realm. He would also not kill that Heaven Rank Level 5 Hei Hu.

Elder Nan Gong announced the result to the world, but he had

hidden the process of the battle.

If the world knew about Zhi Zun's battle, they would find out that the strong one wasn't actually Yue Yang, but Zhi Zun, who wasn't talked about much...

“There hasn't been an idol in the Tong Tian Tower for thousands of years, it's quite sad. Furthermore, older sister has overshadowed all the other rankers and became the undefeatable number one, making all men in the world ashamed. Since now you have appeared, little sweetheart, of course they will be happy. Simply said, this is the time when men can raise their heads and stick out their chests, raise their eyebrows and exhaled in relief, this is the turnaround moment for men!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty's words made the surrounding girls giggle secretly.

“Seems like Hai Ying Wu is not here?” Princess Qian Qian was sharp enough to realise that Hai Ying Wu had disappeared when they moved.

“Princess, older sister Hai Ying Wu has returned to the Sixth Level of Tong Tian Tower, she said that there were still many things to take care of in the Thunder Fortress. However, sister Hai Ying Wu said she will visit me if she has time.” The half-elf girl had stayed since Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress wanted her to do so.

Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress still wanted to train.

Although Night Empress had given them some time for a break, sooner or later she would train them again personally. After all, they were still Yue Yang's comrades, who can lend him their powers. Their powers were inadequate, but it was enough to hold back their enemies. Right now, Yue Yang would research on Battle Puppets or translate Ancient Books all day. It won't do if no one was there to take care of him.

The Sickly Beauty would normally take care of him, but Yue Yang had brought back hundreds of historical Ancient Books. She was even more serious in researching them compared to Yue Yang, almost to the point that she sacrificed sleep, rest and food. Yue Yang might need to take care of her instead, so forget about her. Yue Yu was also good in taking care of people, but she needed to be at Yue Clan Castle, Mirage and Little Garden in this period of time.

In the Yue Clan Castle, Yue Shan was still injured from the previous big battle. It was quite serious, hence he was still bedridden.

Yue Yu would need to visit her father often.

Right now, on Yue Yang's side, if no one took care of them, the Sickly Beauty and Yue Yang would probably starve to death and no one would know.

Although the Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying was there, she and the Spider Empress didn't know household chores. She would even need someone taking care of her. If she entered the kitchen for a day, there might not be any plates left unbroken..... Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Sky Law, was also born with a silver spoon since young, it

would be unthinkable to depend on her.

The Drunk Cat Big Sis was not drinking wine anymore, but she had become a martial fool.

She would challenge Yue Yang to a fight whenever she saw Yue Yang.

On the contrary, it was the little panda girl that would offer some help to Yue Yang nowadays. Although most of the time, she would only look at him with a brilliant smile and her round cheeks resting on her palms.

Yi Nan and Yue Bing were training diligently. Even if they wanted to help with household chores, Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian didn't allow them. Especially Yi Nan, she had mastered the 'Soul Realm' because of her longing for Yue Yang, and she was improving very quickly to master the next level of 'Soul Realm'. Towards the half-elf girl, Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian had forgiven Yue Yang's affair with her in the Thunder Fortress. After all, it was not his intention at the start. Towards the cute half-elf girl, no one would be able to guard against her charms.

It was actually the capable Hai Ying Wu that made Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress a little wary.

This girl was the daughter of the Ocean Emperor, she was not that simple.

“What did your boss say in his reply letter?” Yue Yang suddenly remembered that Sky Execution wrote Phoenix Fairy Beauty a reply letter.

“It’s nothing. Sky Execution has allied with the Dragon Emperor and decided to fight against the Black Hell King. He was initially an Innate Elder Level 1, but after the fight, he had levelled up to Innate Elder Level 2, a little higher than me. Dragon Emperor didn’t level up, but I heard that he was also Innate Elder Level 1. If he absorbed the Heaven Realm’s Tiger General’s orb that you gave him, he should be able to level up to Innate Elder Level 2... As for the Black Hell King, after escaping from the death arena, maybe he was punished by the Ancient Code, his powers has weakened greatly. He actually couldn’t win against Sky Execution and Dragon Emperor who had joined hands to fight him. The Great Demon King Baruth, who had came along to help the two warriors, almost didn’t have an opportunity to show off. Sky Execution had written a letter to ask me about the Card of Fate – that kind of Ancient Code-like power. He asked me if there was anything strange when you used it.” Phoenix Fairy Beauty replied.

“Black Hell King is definitely injured.” Princess Qian Qian said with a confident tone. “I think he had to pay a price for his betrayal. Maybe his body was shattered. Black Hell King might need to change into a new body.”

“I’m not that concerned with Black Hell King now, I’m more concerned with the Scarlet Emperor and Scarlet Concubine!” Yue Yang thought that rather than Black Hell King, the Scarlet Emperor posed a much larger threat to Soaring Dragon Continent. That fellow’s powers might even surpass Cang Yan from Heaven Realm. If he recovered from his injuries, recover his previous

power, entered God's Ruin and obtained some kind of treasure, that would really be a headache.

"Scarlet Emperor, it looks like he had escaped to Heaven Realm to recuperate..." Xue Wu Xia concluded after thinking about it for a long time.

"That's a possibility. Because Tong Tian Tower is not very safe to him." Luo Hua City Mistress agreed.

"Then let's just compete in the growth of our respective powers! Let's hope that we will be able to catch up to him before he recovers his powers." Yue Yang was quite confident in himself. After killing Hei Hu who was at Heaven Ranked Level 5, his confidence had boosted.

Most importantly, Zhi Zun had given him an enlightenment.

The real 'Innate Elder Realm' was something that made all other ranks insignificant.

Although Yue Yang had not yet managed to reach the real 'Innate Elder Realm', and that he wasn't able to fully master the 'Innate Elder's Heart', he already had a goal to reach for.

As they were discussing about this, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, Li Brothers, Xue Tan Lang and the others appeared on the teleportation portal outside. They would come here almost every day. Other than listening to Yue Yang talking about the details of

the ancient war, sharing that one-of-a-kind battle experiences, they had also come to secretly train. The two Amphibious Fish Demons that Yue Yang captured from Heaven Realm had now become their training partners.

With their powers, of course they wouldn't be able to win.

However, with such a strong training partner, they would definitely be able to improve quickly.

“All these are Ancient Slaughterer Beast King's blood. I have purified them with Nirvana Flames. Even a single drop contains a huge power that you wouldn't be able to bear.” Yue Yang took out a crystal bottle. With a stern look, he said, “Do you really want to drink it? Have you guys truly decided on this? I didn't have much time to research, so I don't know what kind of effects this will have. You guys might turn into an Ancient Slaughterer-like monsters... or you might even die instantly the moment you drink it!”

“Gulp!” Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and the others immediately tensed up when they heard Yue Yang. They nervously swallowed a gulp of saliva.

“I have thought about it, I don't want to drink a monster's blood!” The Golden Elf Bao'er was the first one to give up. To her, it didn't matter if her level rose faster or slower.

“I will drink. Even if my body explodes, I don't care. At least, I must rise to the Innate Realm. I'm not willing to stay weak!” The

Ox-head girl Fan Lun Tie had the complete opposite reaction to Bao'er.

She longed for a far greater power, even if she might lose her life as a price.

Fatty Hai suddenly walked out and waved at the others. He revealed a relaxed smile and said: "I shall be the first to try it! Haha, actually I look more or less like the Ancient Slaughterer when I transform. Maybe my ancestors thousands of years ago had drunk Ancient Slaughterer's blood, haha, haha..."

Although he was laughing, a bead of sweat was trickling down his forehead.

Death.

Facing death, who would be able to feel confident and at ease?

Chapter 555 – The Ancient Secret Method: Blood Awakening

The way for Fatty Hai and the others to ascend to the Innate Realm, Yue Yang had always thought about it.

Not only to protect Soaring Dragon Continent or to search for the secrets of God's Ruin, Yue Yang needed more people he could trust in his party. Right now, Fatty Hai and the others were too far behind in terms of power with Yue Yang. If they couldn't improve quickly, to Yue Yang, not only they would be of no help to him, they would also become his burden.

Through the knowledge he inherited from the tragic guy's mother, Yue Yang had found a dangerous method.

And that was 'Blood Awakening'.

With a much powerful being's blood as the guide, one would be able to call forth the potential of one's body from their blood. This process was extremely dangerous, because the blood of the other powerful being may take over one's body, turning one into a monster or causing one's body to explode and die. Long long ago during the ancient times, when some rankers were trying to get their guards to level up, they used the blood of giant dragons or titans. When the guards' blood mixed with the dragon's blood, their powers would immediately increase. This way was extremely effective, but the chance of success was questionable.

Even without a ranker's help, when a few dragon slayers were

bathed in dragon's blood, there would be a possibility that their blood would mix with the dragon's blood.

Hence, they gained great powers.

Of course, the chance of success was low.

There were many failures.

Furthermore, after gaining great powers, dragon slayers might be affected by the dragon's blood and had a change in personality.

With a ranker watching over the awakening, the mortality rate of the guards who were mixing their blood were lowered. However, it was still not 100% success rate. There were many whose personality changed. For example, Feng Jin, who was in charge of the military base in the Kingdom of Zi Jin working under the Black Hell King, found a way to become an Innate quickly. His method was a crazy experiment with high mortality rate, furthermore, the successful ones would have a change in personality... Of course, Feng Jin's method was way more inferior than the ancient blood awakening method that the tragic guy's mother had passed down. After all, blood awakening was a final method that was perfected over and over by ancient rankers through thousands or perhaps even tens of thousands of years.

Although the success rate couldn't be 100%, there was still a high probability of success.

Most importantly, the goal of the ancient secret method of blood awakening was to increase the power in one's own body, strengthen their minds, and increase their potential. Then, the success rate of achieving the goal would be higher. This was not a method that depended on luck, it was really a secret method to get stronger.

Before Fatty Hai came, he had already thought about it. As for the reason why he was the first one to volunteer, it was because he had confidence in his tolerance level.

Other than him, no one else could transform into an ugly monster.

Although Yue Yang never said this, Fatty Hai knew that his blood was different from the others. Fatty Hai looked at Ye Kong, Xue Tan Lang, Yan Po Jun and the others: "Those who are envious, move away from me. Or do you guys want to fight me to be the first to volunteer? Why don't you take a good look of me, I'm Yue Yang's big boss..."

Ye Kong didn't say anything. Normally, he would always talk back to Fatty Hai, it was like something would be wrong if they didn't fight everyday.

Today, he didn't mock Fatty Hai.

Fatty Hai felt a little strange.

“You guys don’t have anything to say to me?” With slightly trembling hands, he took the crystal bottle. Fatty Hai was about to drink it when he put it back down and asked Ye Kong nervously.

“If you wanna die, die quickly. If you are a man, do it happily!” The nervous Ox-head Fan Lun Tie gave Fatty Hai a punch that made him fall to the ground.

“I will really drink it.” Fatty Hai rolled up his sleeves, looking like he was about to throw out all caution out of the window.

“Fatty, I think you should just forget about it. Look at your trembling legs, you will definitely fail.” Xue Tan Lang felt that if Fatty Hai really drank it, he would definitely die. How could Fatty Hai, someone who feared death the most, have a Blood Awakening? Forget about Xue Tan Lang, even Liu Ye, who always believed in others, doubted Fatty Hai.

“You, you coffin-face, don’t look down on other people too much! After all, I’m still your big boss!” In a moment of impulse, Fatty Hai downed the bottle, drinking almost half of the content in the bottle.

“.....”

Everyone almost fainted as they watched this.

Even if Fatty Hai only drank a few drops, everyone thought that his body would probably explode.

But he drank half the bottle. It would really be hard for him to live. What did this pig-head think the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King was? It was a Heaven Ranked Level 5 Heaven Realm Beast!

Everyone looked at Fatty Hai in fear, fearing that he would explode the moment he burped.

Fatty Hai's explanation was: "If drinking a drop will kill me and drinking a mouthful will also kill me, then of course I will choose to drink a mouthful. Furthermore, maybe my power will increase even more if I drink more!"

Ye Kong broke into cold sweat: "I say, Fatty, even if you want to die, you shouldn't choose this way right? Please, you are not the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen Duo Duo, you are also not Hui Tai Lang. You don't have that kind of ability, what are you trying to show off? Alright, if you have any last words, say them quickly. Since I had borrowed 100 gold from you previously, I will help to fulfill your last wishes, albeit unwillingly."

Prince of Tian Luo was speechless when he heard that.

Liu Ye was a bit more compassionate, he quickly asked Fatty Hai: "How do you feel? If you really can't take it, let's wash your digestive system! Third Young Master had invented a method to wash your digestive system if you are poisoned. It seems to be quite effective."

Fatty Hai sweat out: "I am not poisoned. Furthermore, if you

want to wash my digestive system by stuffing pipes down my throat, I would rather just die!”

There was no other way, Liu Ye could only turn around to Yue Yang, hoping that he could resolve the current situation.

“Seems like I must do something.” When Yue Yang said this, everyone became happy. If Yue Yang was willing to lend a hand, Fatty Hai would definitely be saved!

“I don’t think there’s any effect... Let me try to bear it on my own first!” Fatty Hai pretended that he was very brave, that he didn’t need any help for the moment. Furthermore, if something really happened, Yue Yang wouldn’t walk slowly over, he would definitely try to rescue him quickly. Fatty Hai thought that he could still bear it by himself, so he wanted to act strong. He was the kind who would still try to act cool even if he was in his deathbed.

“You will feel it very soon!” Yue Yang suddenly kicked, sending Fatty Hai flying a few hundred meters away.

Everyone was shocked.

Yue Yang leisurely dust his hands together: “Actually, even if you guys drank a pail of blood, there wouldn’t be any reaction. I have to call forth the power of the Beast King, otherwise, it wouldn’t take effect. You guys can go back to doing whatever you are supposed to be doing. If this Fatty doesn’t die after suffering for an hour, he would definitely reach Innate Level 1.”

Fatty Hai, who was kicked hundreds of meters away immediately transformed into an ugly monster in that instant.

It was different from his previous ash grey form. After drinking the Beast King's blood, the monster that Fatty Hai turned into was blood red. He was even glowing with a little red light.

He looked like he was in extreme pain as he writhed on the ground.

He howled towards the sky.

After a few seconds, the green pasture was turned into overturned soil as he dug out a huge mud pit on the ground.

"I miscalculated..." Yue Yang entered into deep thoughts, he looked a little upset.

"Ah, what happened?" Liu Ye thought that something went wrong with the Blood Awakening method that Yue Yang had researched. She looked extremely alarmed.

"I didn't kicked that Fatty hard enough, he's ruining my garden. Hui Tai Lang, drag the Fatty a little further away. If that Fatty died, you can just bury him." Yue Yang yawned a few times and stretched his back. He went back for his afternoon naps, seemingly indifferent to Fatty Hai's miserable howling.

“He’s such a cold person!” Liu Ye stomped his feet, extremely angry at Yue Yang for going to his afternoon nap at this kind of situation.

“Just practice your martial arts.” Xue Tan Lang immediately went out to train with Prince of Tian Luo, when he saw Yue Yang walking away.

Ye Kong and Li Brothers also sat down and played “Three Kingdoms Murder”.

The board game was invented by Yue Yang. Initially, it was only taught to Luo Hua City Mistress, Yi Nan and Yue Bing to pass their time, but after Liu Ye and Bao’er learnt it, they spread it to the whole Yue Clan Castle, then to the rest of Da Xia Kingdom. It looked like before long, all the warriors in the sixth level of Tong Tian Tower would know how to play this game.

Even the sickly beauty who never played such games before praised that the game, which was made up of cards showing various human characters and beasts, would have a very good influence on the warrior’s cultivation.

At least, it became easier to remember beasts’ special skills.

For warriors who weren’t interested in historical figures, the stories of these historical figures would still be able to be passed down through this Three Kingdom Murders game.

Far away, Fatty Hai, who was being dragged away by Hui Tai Lang, was extremely frustrated as he shouted out angrily: “Damn all of you! You guys really disappointed me, who volunteered to test the poison. Once I have my blood awakened, I will definitely pay it back to you...”

The Ox-head Fan Lun Tie sat down, then stood back up.

She was extremely nervous.

She looked at Yue Yang’s back. In her heart, she thought that if they were really in life-threatening danger, Yue Yang would definitely not act like this. Maybe he was just lying to them. Fan Lun Tie was quite quick-witted. She grabbed the crystal bottle on the ground, raised her head and gulped 2 mouthful, shocking everyone on the scene. The Ox-head Fan Lun Tie didn’t pay attention to everyone’s shocked expression, she ran straight into the house towards Yue Yang and shouted, “Wait a moment, kick me too! No, I mean, help me awaken that power thing...”

Ox-head Fan Lun Tie’s figure immediately shot across the sky with a woosh, flying hundreds of meters away, smashing onto Fatty Hai’s body.

She was initially a 4 meter tall Ox-head, but she suddenly grew to 14 meters.

Her huge body was even bigger than Demon Kings in Demon Abyss.

Her whole body was glowing with a scarlet light, as ruthlessness, anger and pain shot across her heart. Controlled by these feelings, Fan Lun Tie got up and sent a heavy blow to Fatty Hai, whom she had smashed underneath her. She also gave it her all and stomped hard with her ox hooves.

Fatty Hai was furious.

With his sharp claws, his ugly form which was currently 20+ meters tall and possessing powers that are multiple times stronger than Fan Lun Tie, he easily lifted Fan Lun Tie's body and threw her into the air, then charged ferociously and bombarded her with punches and kicks. The two of them didn't seem to feel pain, or maybe the pain from Blood Awakening was far more painful than these punches and kicks. Fatty Hai and Fan Lun Tie continued to exchange blows with each other fervently. Boom bang boom rumble...

When the Ox-head Li Ao saw that Fan Lun Tie was losing, he gritted his teeth and grabbed the crystal bottle too, drinking a mouthful.

Then, everyone watched tensely as two gigantic Ox-heads fought a shocking battle against an ugly monster. After an hour of intense battle, all three of them were covered in injuries. They collapsed to the ground as they completely exhausted their last bits of energy.

An hour passed, two hours passed.

Yue Yang was awake, but he didn't try to save them. He was still

waiting.

The injuries on Fatty Hai and the other two Ox-heads' body became worse slowly. They became wider slowly, as if they were showing signs of exploding.

Ye Kong and the others had already stopped playing cards since long ago, as every single one of them looked at Yue Yang nervously. They knew that Yue Yang was still waiting, because he said before that with each hour of pain they passed, the Blood Awakening would become more complete, and they could reach their maximum potential even more. Everyone's potential was limited. Yue Yang was an exception, his potential was unmeasurable. He was a one and only existence in this world, it would be difficult to find a second Yue Yang. If Fatty Hai's limited potential was not able to be fully maximised, his powers would definitely decrease greatly.

"Fatty, are you okay?" Ye Kong shouted out in worry, because he realized that Fatty Hai's breathing was slowly getting weaker, as if he was about to die.

"Shut up. This young master is trying to sleep." Fatty Hai replied with an extremely weak, throaty voice.

Since this fatty was still able to speak, he probably wouldn't die anytime soon.

Everyone heaved a sigh of relief.

However, Fatty Hai had only started his journey in Blood Awakening, the rest would be up to the others.

Who could persevere to the end, who would end up giving up? All of this depended on everyone's willpower... Strong-willed, weak-willed; success, failures, you won't know until you try!

Chapter 556 – Persevere For The Future

Oh-head Li Ao had endured the extreme pain for 3 hours.

In the end, he gave up.

During the process of Blood Awakening, the Beast King's blood would continuously invade and dominate the target's body. On the other hand, the body will naturally resist the blood's invasion, creating a fight between the two elements and forcing the body to break down. From the innards to the skin, from the muscles to the bones, every part of the body will become a bloody battlefield. Although this kind of Blood Awakening is fast, it was the most painful way to do it. If the person did not have sufficient willpower to resist the invasion, they would most likely be unable to endure it and explode..... In other words, heaven and hell is only within a flash of thought.

Being able to endure something normal people could not endure was the only way to reach the realm ordinary people could never reach.

Yue Yang rescued the Ox-head Li Ao, who was about to explode. Then, everyone went up to congratulate this weak old cow.

“Li Ao, I never imagined that you would beat me in reaching Innate Realm.” The golden eld Lin En felt happy for his friend/ This was because the old cow's aptitude had limits. Although he had trained bitterly for a long time, his improvements were extremely slow. Everyone thought that the old cow would reach

Innate Realm last.

“Don’t be too happy yet.....” Yue Yang couldn’t help but pour cold water over everyone.

“What’s wrong?” Ye Kong expressed puzzlement.

“Didn’t you say that it only takes an hour to reach Innate Level 1?” the Prince of Tian Luo confusedly asked.

Following this calculation would mean that the old cow, that had been enduring for 3 hours, could already become an Innate Level 3. Although the process was painful, being able to reach Innate Level 3 in an instant was worth it.

Now, even Bao’er’s heart rate sped up.

She imagined that it’s not bad to try the Blood Awakening and become a bit stronger.

When Yue Yang spoke, she was terrible frightened: “Who said that enduring for 1 hour would be equal to Innate Level 1? If such a thing exists, then I wouldn’t have waited for you and endure it by myself for a few days and night. By then wouldn’t I be able to insta-kill Heaven Realm’s Three Great Leader already? Of course there’s no such thing! Don’t think that once Li Ao gets up he would be a Level 3 Innate. That is wrong! In the end, Li Ao still needs to cultivate but his cultivation speed would be faster by many times. After all, Blood Awakening will unleash all your potential,

allowing you to breakthrough easily.”

When everyone heard this, they could not understand anything.

Therefore, Yue Yang gave an example: “For example, if cultivation was like building houses, everyone would want to build a castle, meaning everyone wanted to become an Innate. Now, here’s the question, where would the materials for building a castle come from? How to build it? Where to build it? What style do you build it in? How long would you need to build it?”

“.....” Everyone instantly looked at each other. Everyone was unable to answer this question because they were not Innates.

Yue Yang continued explaining: “Blood Awakening is to help you resolve these questions. In other words, it will help you prepare the materials, find a good location and design a blueprint. The only thing you need to do is to affirm it.”

“What do we affirm?” Bao’er was still confused.

“Idiot, of course it’s to confirm how much materials you want, confirm the location of the site, confirm which blueprint to use.” Yue Yang lightly patted her small head and Bao’er cutely stuck out her tongue. She had always felt that she was a smart girl, but sometimes a little dazed. Seeing her mischievous appearance, everyone couldn’t help laughing.

“What Third Young Master means is that Innate Level 1, Innate

Level 2, Innate Level 3, are all building materials, location and blueprint?” Feng Qi Sha suddenly came to a realization.

“The Team Leader Li Ao’s affirmation would be the amount of time his will power could endure the Blood Awakening’s process.” Liu Ye also understood.

“That’s right.” Yue Yang lightly muttered: “I do not know where everyone’s limits lie. It might be higher than what I imagined it to be or it might be lower. In order to accurately confirm it, our ancestors researched the Blood Awakening secret technique. This was to use a person’s willpower to determine the limit of their growth. Although it was not 100% percent accurate, it was still close to the real state.

“Then, the old cow’s limit is Innate Level 3, right?” Ye Kong’s heart shook.

“Correct. If there were no accidents, Li Ao’s cultivation limit is Innate Level 3. This is related to his willpower and endurance. Wanting to move up is a very difficult thing to do.” Yue Yang nodded and did not mince his words: “Your limits will depend on your fortitude and the amount of time you can endure Blood Awakening. According to theory, the longer you endure, the higher your limits are. Unleashing your potentials would also be easier. A shorter time would then mean lesser achievements.

“This boss would never give up even if I die.....” Fatty Hai was just about to give up. But after hearing this, he was almost scared out of his wits.

He was not satisfied with only Innate Level 3. It's not like he had never suffered before. Since suffering would let him grow, why would he stop?

Previously, the old fox had trained him until the sky was black.

In the Five Elements Palace and the Blood Lake Torture Chamber, he had been oppressed and suffered terribly with cuts and bruises all over his body. Now, he could clench his teeth and endure through this. Every single second he could endure it, the more his potential will go up, so he desperately endured it.

The most tragic thing was that everyone was now looking at him.

If he only endured for 3 hours and by any chance Ye Kong was able to endure for 5 hours or higher, then he would not even be able to raise up his head in front of Ye Kong.

Ox-head Fan Lun Tie also thought about giving up, but when she heard this, she desperately gritted her teeth.

Ox-head Li Ao on the other hand, did not regret his decision to give up.

He knew his limits and understood that his body could not endure it anymore.

His limit was Innate Level 3. In the future, if he reaches Innate Level 3, becoming a ranker, it would already be enough. He imagined how his relatives would look at him once he returns to the tribe. An ordinary Level 7 [Overlord] like him had become an Innate Ranker, that had not appeared in the entire tribe for hundreds of years already.

“Sister Fan Lun Tie, you must endure it. You must not lose to the Fatty.” Bao’er quickly cheered for Fan Lun Tie.

“The Fatty seems useless anyways, he definitely couldn’t compare to you!” The orc sisters nodded their heads in agreement.

“Hey hey. How could you say that?” Fatty Hai became incensed. He believed that other than Hui Tai Lang, he was the most outstanding existence. He could at best fight on par with Xue Tan Lang and his beast were much more impressive. Naturally, he would not compare himself with Yue Yang, nor would anyone compare him with Yue Yang, because Yue Yang was simply from a different realm.

“Explain more about Blood Awakening!” Xue Tan Lang was slightly curious, even though he decided not to join in Blood Awakening as he relied on his hard work to level up.

“I’ll give another analogy. Blood Awakening is to confirm what kind of house you want to build. If you want to build an Innate Level 3 house, then you should endure to this degree and I (Blood Awakening) will help you build the foundations. You do not need to know the process of building the house as long as you follow my orders and continue to cultivate, like workers following only a

blueprint, your castle would be slowly built. Because the castle was planned by me, you do not need to waste time thinking about it. If you want to breakthrough, I can instantly bring you there. The process would be easier and faster than you trying to fumble about slowly.” Yue Yang then raised 3 fingers: “However, there are three disadvantages. First, when you reach the limit, it would be harder to breakthrough. Just like when you finished building your castle, it would be harder to extend it.”

“Second, because you used Blood Awakening, there would be some thing wasted, just like having some materials wasted, you cannot use up all your potential. Compared to doing things alone slowly, understanding things slowly, those who use Blood Awakening would be slightly weaker than anyone at the same level. Naturally, your advantage is that you could borrow my experiences to grow. With a target goal, you can understand more and increase your experience.” And then Yue Yang lastly said: “Third, if your limit was Elder Innate Realm or higher, you would not be able to surpass the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King, whose blood was used in the process, because it is used as the template. In other words, you could only build your castle to the highest template and never surpass it. If you want to build the White Stone Castle, it would not be able to surpass Shang Jing.....”

“I could die happily being able to reach Elder Innate Realm. I would not hope for reaching Heaven Ranked Level 5.” Fatty Hai struggled to speak as he continue to suffer.

“Che, you do not have that much potential!” Ye Kong couldn’t help but give him the middle finger.

He was still dreaming of reaching Innate Elder Level 5?

He was really overestimating himself.

Ye Kong estimated that this pig head's limit was only at Innate Level 6. It was not that Fatty Hai did not have any fortitude, but he absolutely could not reach Heaven Rank. Being able to reach Innate Level 6 would probably make Fatty Hai's parents excitedly pop an artery.

What was unexpected was that, Fatty Hai, who continued to shout like a pig being butchered, had been able to continue enduring.

On the contrary, although Ox-head Fan Lun Tie had received Bao'er's encouragement, she still could not continue enduring and gave up after 6 hours.

The second one to give up.

Ye Kong and the others were baffled. How could Fatty Hai endure this? Fatty Hai answered while panting like a dead pig: This boss will keep enduring. Once I reach Heaven Rank, I will step flat monkey Ye Kong and steal all his women, letting him stay as a bachelor.

Ye Kong, who heard this, became furious. At the same time, his was secretly alarmed. If he could not endure as long as Fatty Hai then it would be a stain in his life.

Because the Blood Awakening was taking too long, there was still no information sent back.

Old Fox, Jun Wu You and the others could not endure it anymore and came over to have a look. What they saw left them stunned. The normally vulgar and shameless Fatty Hai had actually gritted his teeth and endured for 10 hours. In just one more hour his potential will be Heaven Rank. At this point in time, Ye Kong did not fight with Fatty Hai anymore. He shouted, cursed, advised, coax the Fatty, using all his methods hoping Fatty Hai could continue enduring it.

His voice already became hoarse: “Fatty, do not fall asleep..... Pig head, now is the most important time, you absolutely cannot sleep. You are almost at Heaven Rank potential. Do you know how many people could actually reach this level? Even Sky Emperor and the Ocean Emperor of the Tong Tian Tower’s Five Emperors could not reach this level, even the Emperor of the Underworld could not reach this level yet. You are very close to surpassing them, you are very close to being able to suppress tens of thousands of warriors..... Work a bit harder Fatty. Do you still remember how we met? You were trash showin off you Ironback Rhinoceros but your strength was like fart. Now that you have a chance to be born anew, a chance to change you life, couldn’t you endure a bit more? In just one more hour your limit would already be Heaven Rank. Consider this as my request. Let me have a bit of limelight. Let me be able to brag that I have a teammate that could reach Heaven Rank. Wake up, wake up, do not sleep. Just endure this last hour, can’t you?”

“Enough, he has already reached his limits.” Yue Yang slowly

walked over.

Chapter 557 – Youth Potion

Yue Yang walked forward and slowly pulled Ye Kong away.

Ye Kong's whole body trembled.

He threw himself to Fatty Hai who was nearly dying, stopping Yue Yang as he pleaded with a miserable voice, "Let's wait for just another hour, this one hour is very important!"

"He had already fainted 5 minutes ago. If we don't do anything, his body will explode." Yue Yang rejected him.

"Let's wait for another hour. He'll definitely be able to persevere through it, he really will. How could this damn fatty die so easily? His breathing even stopped a few times just now, but he still managed to stay alive in the end. This time, he will definitely be able to pass through this." Ye Kong pleaded miserably once again, hoping that Yue Yang would give Fatty Hai another chance. He really didn't want Fatty Hai to give up. This one hour would be extremely important. No, if only Fatty Hai could just persevere through another 50 minutes, he would possess the potential of a Heaven Rank Level 1. The difference between Innate Level 10 and Heaven Rank Level 1 was just too much.

This difference was not any less than the difference between Tong Tian Tower and Heaven Realm.

The warriors in Tong Tian Tower may someday reach Innate Level 10.

However, through these thousands of years, those who managed to reach the Heaven Rank with their own powers were only Zhi Zun, Night Empress, Dragon Emperor and Sky Execution. Even Sky Law could only reach Heaven Rank through Yue Yang's help. The Tong Tian Tower was filled with countless strong warriors and geniuses, for example the Sky Emperor, Ocean Emperor, the current Emperor of the Underworld, Great Demon King Baruth and Elder Nan Gong. They were all Supreme Innates who balanced each other's powers, but they were still far away from Heaven Rank.

Ye Kong slapped Fatty Hai's face hard multiple times, unceasingly. Slap, slap , slap.....

He scolded as he slapped: "Damn fatty, wake up now! Didn't you say that you want to fight me just now? I would definitely reach Heaven Rank. If you sleep now, I will definitely be able to crush you under my feet in the future! Damn fatty, if you don't want me to crush you, wake up right now. Persevere on, I want you to persevere on!"

Fatty Hai twitched a little, as if showing some signs of waking up.

Everyone surrounded him, calling out his name with all they have. Everyone hoped that Fatty Hai could wake up and persevere on.

However, after being semi-conscious for 10 minutes, Fatty Hai's body went limp as he fell unconscious again. This time, no matter

how loud Ye Kong shouted or how hard he beat Fatty Hai, nothing happened. Fatty Hai had persevered to his limits, he simply had no strength to continue anymore.

Yue Yang soundlessly carried Fatty Hai away.

Ye Kong watched helplessly.

His knees felt weak as he fell limply to the ground.

After a long while, he slammed the ground hard: “Dammit, he just needed half an hour more...”

Amongst the scattered dust, a faint tear appeared on Ye Kong’s face. However, when he stood back up again, his face was filled with a serious, strict expression as he determinedly steeled his fists, “I will definitely reach the Heaven Rank. I was a loser, a poor and a weak person previously, but I have been given this opportunity now. I will definitely not disappoint everyone, definitely not!”

At this moment, even Xue Tan Lang was looking at Ye Kong with a different expression than before.

This was because from Ye Kong’s body, an aura of a winner was exuding out. His tall and lanky body suddenly appeared as big as a mountain.

Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian looked at each other and

noded slightly. Luo Hua City Mistress made a hand gesture, and when Yue Bing saw that, she immediately nodded happily, taking two bottles out from the house.

These two bottles were the same as the crystal bottle Yue Yang used just now, but the content was not the Beast King's blood anymore.

When Yue Bing approached Ye Kong, he was dazed for a while, "What is this? Is it for me?"

"Brother spent a lot of effort making this. This potion is called 'Youth Potion'." Yue Bing nodded proudly and handed one over to Ye Kong. She then said to the Li Brothers: "The other bottle is yours."

"Youth Potion?" Li Qie and Li Ge were confused.

"Brother said that this Youth Potion will make a person's body return to the state when they are 18 years old temporarily for a day. Brother made this by using the Grass of Time, Star Flowers and Reverse Aging Springwater he found from Hei Hu's Grimoire World. He also added other ingredients such as God's Dew, etc. Currently, he only made two bottles." When Yue Bing explained, everyone understood immediately.

Contracting a grimoire!

Ye Kong and the Li Brothers never contracted a grimoire before,

it was always their biggest regret in life.

This Youth Potion that immediately turned one into their 18 year old state was Yue Yang's gift to Ye Kong and Li Brothers.

Although Yue Yang didn't know if Ye Kong and the others would be able to contract a grimoire after drinking the Youth Potion, this was the best Yue Yang could do for them. Without needing to think, everyone knew how precious Grass of Time, Star Flowers and Reverse Aging Springwater are. Without needing to guess, everyone knew how difficult it was to concoct the Youth Potion. The reason why Yue Yang never mentioned this before was not because he wasn't willing to help Ye Kong and the others get stronger, he just had not found a way to do it and he didn't want to make empty promises. Not only Ye Kong, everyone knew what kind of person Yue Yang was. They cannot put it into words, but everyone knew that this Yue Clan's Third Young Master was someone worthy for them to follow and swear loyalty to for their whole life.

"Yes, this is the Youth Potion. He told me he would give it to me before." Ye Kong's lips were twitching slightly. Actually Yue Yang never told him that he will concoct a Youth Potion for him, but Ye Kong remembered that Yue Yang had told him that he would help him contract a grimoire before. Ye Kong would never forgot Yue Yang's words, even if he seemed to only say it at a whim. Yue Yang's words were worth their weight in gold!

Ye Kong opened the bottle and drunk all the Youth Potion.

His eyes were burning.

Ye Kong bit his lips tightly, but his expression didn't change at all.

A mysterious liquid quickly fell inside the empty bottle and splashed inside the bottle. A magical multicolored light started to rise up from the bottle which was filled with the Youth Potion previously.

On the other side, the Li Brothers took the crystal bottle with shaky hands. The older brother gave it to the younger brother while the younger one passed it to the older one. Both of them couldn't bear to drink the Youth Potion. In the end, Li Qie gritted his teeth and drunk half of the bottle, then passed the half-filled bottle to Li Ge. Whether it was success or failure, the two brothers would face it together... It didn't matter if half a bottle wouldn't show any results. To them, they were already extremely grateful that Yue Yang had concocted the Youth Potion for them.

Last time, they had almost starved to death at the entrance of the Tong Tian Tower. Right now, other than having the chance to reach the Innate Rank, they also had the chance of contracting a grimoire.

What else would they wish for?

Yue Yang had done more than enough for them!

It was just that everyone couldn't give back to Yue Yang, they were always unable to be of help to Yue Yang. If they were strong

enough to help share Yue Yang's troubles in the Soaring Dragon Continent, Yue Yang would probably already go to the Heaven Realm to train.

“Brother Ye Kong, this is what Brother Xiao San has prepared for you.” Yue Shuang obediently held up 3 Bronze Grimoires. This time, Ye Kong who had almost bitten his lips thoroughly couldn't stop his feelings anymore as he stooped and hugged Yue Shuang tightly. When he finally released Yue Shuang and took one of the Bronze Grimoire, hot tears were spilling all over the Bronze Grimoire.

He recalled how Yue Yang first teleported into Tong Tian Tower before, when they first met. Yue Yang had landed on top of his body: Hey brother, can you get off of me first?

He recalled the first time Yue Yang chose a Chaos Egg for him: I'll take this gamble, Third Young Master, I... I trust you!

... The evolution is successful, it is, it is a Bronze-ranked King Kong Demon Ape! Third Young Master, you, you have saved my life!

He recalled how Yue Yang took everyone to the Demon Abyss and fought against the Rhinoceros Beetle: Bei bei, you are most familiar with insects. Do you know other than their air chambers, what other weaknesses does the Rhinoceros Beetle have?

... I know, if you grab the Rhinoceros Beetle's butt, it will crawl even faster!

... Boss Hai, why don't you go and do it? Go and grab its butt!

... Do any of you guys want to contract this Beetle Larva? Although it is not a battle-type beast, its defense is extremely high. It can be used as the perfect meat shield. Any of you want it? If nobody wants it, I'll slash it off and take out its magic core. Quick! That Rhinoceros Beetle is going to come back soon!

The past memories seemed to gush out like a flash flood.

Hot tears flowed out like spring water.

Ye Kong looked to the sky as he howled for a long period of time.

In his hand, the grimoire that he was holding slowly shone with a faint, a very faint golden light. Through Ye Kong's hands, the light shone out, becoming brighter with each passing time. Finally, the golden light shone out like the sun as a pillar of light rose from Ye Kong's head to the sky. It rose up to about 100 meters tall, making the other onlookers such as Jun Wu You and the Old Fox watch with gaping mouth. This Ye Kong truly had a strong potential. Although he had missed out his chance of contracting a grimoire, with the opportunity that Yue Yang had given to him, the Youth Potion, this chap was truly able to bring out his full potential.

Ye Kong closed his eyes.

Just like having a dream, his expression looked like he didn't

want to wake up, as if he was afraid that his dream will be shattered and that he would lose everything dear to him if he woke up.

A few meters behind Ye Kong, the Li Brothers had already completed their contracts.

They didn't take the two grimoires, instead they only reached out their hands to one Bronze Grimoire, and did something that had never been done in history before. The two of them contracted one grimoire together. The thing that made the old fox's jaw dropped even lower was that the twins had actually succeeded. Although their pillar of light wasn't as high as Ye Kong, it was only a few dozen metres high, it was still better than most grimore contractors.

Everyone couldn't help but to break out in applause and cheered at this scene.

As for the Li Brothers, they followed Ye Kong and slowly kowtowed (something like OTL) to Yue Yang, who was inside the house.

The grimoire that floated in front of them flipped open to the first page. It revealed their special Inherent Skill: Protection.

Protection: When the user used this Inherent Skill, they must have a protection target. The Inherent Skill will bless protection upon the target proportional to the sense of loyalty the users have towards their target. The more loyal, the more people the users

can protect, and thus the greater their power will be. Currently, the skill level is 1.

Below the Inherent Skill description, they have a Guardian beast called 'Knight Protector'. It was a Bronze-ranked, humanoid beast.

After looking through the Li Brothers' grimoire, everyone couldn't help but to crowd around Ye Kong. Everyone was very curious, what kind of inherent skill and Guardian Beast would Ye Kong have? Ye Kong stood up and gestured to everyone, "Wait for me for a while, I will show you very shortly." Then, to everyone's shock, he took the crystal bottle containing the Beast King's blood and drunk a mouthful.

He strode inside the house, where Yue Yang was trying to save Fatty Hai.

"Fatty, I also have a grimoire now. Please don't die, wait for me to break through the Heaven Realm Rank so that I can show it to you. We are trashes whose lives are always hanging by the thread, but as long as we are given the opportunity, we are actually not inferior to others. You should understand." Ye Kong spoke to Fatty Hai, who was still unconscious.

Before long, everyone saw Ye Kong slowly walked out of the house.

His body was blood red.

All the skin in his body were splitting open, as if he was going to bleed out.

The ground shook with each step that Ye Kong took. However, he didn't howl in pain like Fatty Hai did. Instead, he was completely silent.

After walking for around 1 km, he slowly lay down on the ground.

After summoning the King Kong Demon Ape and fuseing with it, he allowed his body to expand and became a giant...

Chapter 558 – Research, Battle Angel

After persevering for 11 hours, his mind finally reached his limits and he lost consciousness.

His mental perseverance and tenacity had even changed the expression of Xue Tan Lang.

Xue Tan Lang thought that other than Yue Yang, he was the most talented person in the party. Now, it seemed that Ye Kong, who was born of low status, was his real life rival. His talents were great but it was hidden. Of course, Ye Kong couldn't be compared to Yue Yang. However, amongst the younger generation, Ye Kong who slowly grew stronger with harsh training actually had more latent potential and adaptability compared to well known super geniuses.

It could be ascertained that if Yue Yang didn't exist, his talent would be hidden forever, unable to have a chance to shine.

Meeting Yue Yang at the first floor of Tong Tian Tower was the most important turning point of his life. With this fated meeting, Ye Kong immediately grabbed onto the opportunity and allowed his brilliance to shine brightly. Under Yue Yang's tutelage, his cultivation had also improved very quickly by leaps and bounds, almost as fast as the members of the Four Great Clans.

“...” When Ye Kong opened his eyes once again, it was already afternoon of the second day.

The warm rays of sunlight bathed his face.

Not far from him, the Li Brothers, Ox-heads Li Ao and Fan Lun Tie, the Golden Elves Lin En and Bao'er were playing cards happily. When Ye Kong looked around, he found that almost everyone was there except Fatty Hai. Ye Kong slowly sighed. Although in theory, he had reached the limits of Heaven Rank, he didn't feel too happy. On the contrary, he felt an unexplainable sense of loss.

When Ye Kong sat up, everyone quickly surrounded him, congratulating him all at the same time excitedly.

Through Bao'er, who couldn't keep secrets, Ye Kong found out that he had persevered the longest.

The Li Brothers and Fan Lun Tie persevered for six hours while the four Orc girls persevered for an hour. Other than Elder Ning Hai who forcefully requested to take part in the Blood Awakening too, the four Orc girls had persevered the shortest time. Elder Ning Hai had only persevered for half an hour. Even if he trained to his limits, it seemed that he wouldn't even reach the Innate Rank. Feng Qi Sha and Yan Po Jun persevered for 3 hours. Although it was not considered long, Yan Qian Zhong and Feng Xiao Yun were completely overjoyed... At least their families had produced an Innate, this was an extremely good news already. Furthermore, their level of Innate Level 3 was not considered too low.

Xue Tan Lang didn't participate in the Blood Awakening. After considering it for a while Prince of Tian Luo finally decided not to participate in this Blood Awakening.

After all, training to cultivate their own strength would give them the strongest foundation.

Furthermore, it gives the most sense of accomplishment.

Amongst the Four Great Clans, the one with the most shocking latent potential was actually the fifth young master of the Yue Clan, Yue Ting, who never speaks most of the time and seldom makes an appearance. The future successor of the Yue Clan had actually persevered through 7 hours of Blood Awakening without making a sound, shocking everyone.

Even Yue Yang also never thought that the simple and honest fifth was actually a genius with a huge potential.

Compared to Yue Ting, Yue Tian and Yue Yan were good-for-nothings.

Under Second Uncle Yue Ling's pleas, Elder Yue Hai reluctantly agreed to let them participate in the Blood Awakening. However, they did not use the Beast King's Blood. They drunk a normal Ancient Slaughterer's, 'Behemoth's Blood'. Yue Tian and Yue Yan could only last for an hour before giving up. They simply couldn't hold a candle to Feng Qi Sha and Yan Po Jun. Fortunately, the Yue Clan had Yue Ting to feel proud of... The secret method of Blood Awakening also made the older generation hoped that they could grow stronger again and ignite the passion of their life, becoming an Innate.

They were too shy to ask of it in front of the younger generation,

so they invited Yue Yang to go to the Yue Clan Castle.

Half a day later, the older generation who had received the Behemoth's Blood for Blood Awakening were quite depressed and disappointed with their results. It seemed like they were unable to reach the Innate Rank. Only a few people, such as the Eastern Sky Emperor, walked out proudly, pleased with himself.

"It's no wonder that my daughter is so talented, she inherited it from me." Eastern Sky King didn't say how long he persevered, but looking at his mood, it seemed like he had done quite well.

"That is not inherited, she evolved from you." Jun Wu You hated it the most when Eastern Sky King was showing off.

"..." The only one who didn't participate in the Blood Awakening was Elder Yue Hai.

Ye Kong had wanted to talk to Fatty Hai initially, but it turned out that Fatty Hai had ran back to his hometown and would only be back to the Little Garden three days later.

When he met the fatty again, he didn't look depressed.

Instead, it was obvious that his face was glowing with a red glow and his aura had become more intimidating.

He took out a red envelope filled with gold ingots and said: "These are the red envelopes my parents have prepared for

everyone. All of you have one.” In the end, he even gave one to Ye Kong. Ye Kong was so shocked that his jaw dropped. Since when had this petty guy become so generous? Did his personality change because of the Blood Awakening? Ye Kong felt that he couldn’t recognize the fatty anymore. Not only was this fatty not sad, he was also not jealous of him, and he even gave him a [red envelope](#)?

What was happening?

Did the sun rise from the west today?

Looking like the Prosperity God, Fatty Hai laughed out happily as the others surrounded him: “You can call me Master from today onwards, because now I have really become a true Master! With the power potential of Innate Level 10, the whole of the Hai Clan was completely shocked out of their mind! You guys should see it when our clan elder, who had a long beard that touched his belly, bowing respectfully to me. Previously, he wouldn’t let me go to Shang Jing Academy no matter how I begged, he dumped me to that Ivy Academy instead. In the end, yesterday, he apologized to me solemnly about it. Haha, he even apologised again today because he was afraid that I wouldn’t forgive him. Just remembering about this made me feel so happy! Oh right, who wants some beauties? You can just tell me. My Clan Elder told me that he had prepared 1000 beauties for me, they are just waiting for me to give them love... Brothers, our happy times has finally come, let’s cheer with all our hearts!”

“All of you idiots!” Yue Yang suddenly appeared from inside the house. His mood seemed to be very bad, as he bellowed out the moment he opened his mouth, “Go and train now, every single one

of you! Fatty, you have extra punishments of 100,000 frog jumps! Also, no lunch for you!”

“100,000 frog jumps is still okay, but why can’t I eat lunch too?!” Fatty Hai quickly pleaded for mercy.

“So I can’t punish you anymore now that you have the power potential of Innate Level 10, is that it?” Yue Yang laughed coldly, making Fatty Hai cower in fear like a mouse.

Actually, no matter if it was the power potential of Innate Level 10 or Innate level 1, they would all need to train hard. Otherwise, they wouldn’t be able to bring out their latent capability. Blood Awakening was only a form of test on someone’s limits, to let them know the target they would need to strive for. They would not become strong just by having the ‘awakening’, it didn’t work that way.

Of course, having Blood Awakening was better than training blindly.

At least they would know where their limit was.

Furthermore, they would only need to focus on training in the future, they can let Yue Yang take care of the other things. They would not need to worry about getting stuck at a level or being unable to obtain enlightenment.

Ye Kong ran towards Fatty Hai who was doing frog jumps, and

accompanied him to do frog jumps as he asked: “Fatty, don’t you have anything to say to me?”

“Congrats, bro you are really awesome, having a power potential of Heaven Rank Level 1.” Fatty Hai congratulate Ye Kong full of sincerity, without even a single hint of jealousy in his voice.

“...” Ye Kong simply couldn’t believe his own ears.

“I say, monkey face, what kind of expression is that? Are you thinking of taking my position as the big boss, now that you have the power potential of Heaven Rank Level 1? I tell you, monkey, that’s impossible! Forget about you, even Yue Yang has to call me big boss. You need to know, once a big boss, forever will be a big boss!” When Fatty Hai said this, his frog jumps slowly stopped. Hui Tai Lang who was responsible for supervising them immediately let out a big howl, startling Fatty Hai so much that he started to frog jump again frantically: “Okay, I will continue to jump again. Hui Tai Lang, no matter what, I would usually feed you meat sometimes, can you not be so strict? If I secretly skip training, Yue Yang wouldn’t know too... Oh my god, even if I’m gossiping behind your back, you don’t have to throw me a Star Explosion right?!”

“Kaboom!”

The Star Explosion that flew out from the house was a new skill that Yue Yang had devised, copying Night Empress’ Meteor Shower in her Starry Domain. The Star Explosion split across the sky and smashed right on top of Fatty Hai’s head.

Seeing Fatty Hai's body which was burnt completely brown, Ye Kong quickly escaped.

Fatty Hai spat out the dirt in his mouth, "Monkey, where's your bro code?"

Ye Kong rolled his eyes: "Bullshit, the person who secretly left for 3 days during the observation period without permission was you, why would I accompany you to receive punishment? Unless I'm an idiot..."

After Yue Yang finished helping his teammates take the Blood Awakening, it was finally time for him to complete his great research. To fulfill Ghost Genius Yue Gong's third wish, Yue Yang had continuously planned out the Holy-Ranked Puppet "Battle Angel". In other words, the research of beautiful female puppet fighters. According to Yue Yang's imagination, he was about to create a Holy-ranked, or even a Divine-ranked "Battle Angel"

This kind of Divine-ranked Artifact Battle Angel, not only would it possess flesh and blood. It would also have a life and wisdom. It would possess three kinds of characteristics – to be able to live, learn and fight.

It would even have feelings.

If he could even create a puppet with a soul, that would be a Transcending Divine-ranked Artifact... Of course, Yue Yang still didn't know how to create Battle Angel, the Transcending Divine-

ranked Artifact. He didn't even have the confidence that he would be able to successfully create a Divine-ranked Battle Angel.

Fortunately, in the Death Arena, during their battle with the Heaven Realm, Yue Yang had secretly collected a little of Zhi Zun's blood. With Zhi Zun's and Night Empress' blood, and also Southern Goblin King's blood that he had collected accidentally, Yue Yang felt that he should be able to create a Divine-ranked Battle Angel with a little bit of research. The Black Hell King had hidden himself somewhere, the Scarlet Emperor had also disappeared. Sky Execution, Dragon Emperor and the Emperor of the Underworld were all in a hunt to capture the Black Hell King. The Soaring Dragon Continent was temporarily at peace without wars, so Yue Yang finally had the time to slowly research the Battle Angel.

The sea folk was also not a threat. Furthermore, they still had the Shark King, the pawn that they had hidden amongst the sea folk!

In order to research on the Battle Angel, Yue Yang needed peace, quiet and concentration.

If it wasn't because he was worried there would be problems due to the Blood Awakening, and that he needed to stay for a few more days to observe Fatty Hai and the others, Yue Yang would have drove them away long ago.

With them there, Yue Yang wasn't able to live a happy life with his girls, especially when Liu Ye and Jin-er was there. They would pester Yue Yang all day, making him unable to do naughty stuff to his beloved girls... Xue Wu Xia and Luo Hua City Mistress had

received Night Empress' letter that asked them to go to another place to train. Phoenix Fairy Beauty had also followed them to join in for fun.

Although her training was an excuse, her wish to make peace with her older sister, Zhi Zun, was real.

Yi Nan and Yue Bing were the most hardworking.

Aside from training the whole day, they would go to Tian Luo Palace to visit Fourth Mother every day.

"Dream Jadeite..." Yue Yang would take out the Dream Jadeite every night. He really wanted to use it, but he was afraid that he would destroy the treasure the moment he had a dream.

"Xiaosan, not everything in this world will be perfect. If 'Battle Angels' could reach Holy-ranked, it would already be very good. Although ancestor Yue Gong's will is important, even if we cannot make it happen, our ancestors would not blame us. Furthermore, if it became a failure this time, we can still try again." When Yue Yu saw Yue Yang feeling troubled, she advised him patiently. Only Yue Yu, whose responsibility was to take care of Yue Yang and research on some trifling stuff, knew the shocking power of the Battle Angel that Yue Yang was researching on. If the old fox and Jun Wu You knew that the puppet that Yue Yang was creating could reach Holy-rank at the very least, they would probably have a heart attack.

"What Second Sister meant is to leave it to fate?" Yue Yang was

initially hesitant, but when he heard Yue Yu's words, he made up his mind.

In any case, he had prepared a lot of materials. He had done all he can in preparation, but whether it succeed or not depends on the heavens.

This Battle Angel, would it be a Holy-rank, or a Divine-rank Artifact?

Let the heavens decide!

(Red envelope is the thing usually given to children during chinese new year, with money inside)

Chapter 559 – Inspiration Models, The Three Yue Clan Sisters?

Yue Yang was afraid that if he went into the Dream Realm through the Dream Jadeite, he would reveal the Sword Goddess, his biggest secret.

He was also afraid that he would make a perverted dream, destroying the Dream Jadeite.

Although the Dream Jadeite wasn't very high-ranked item, it was exceptionally rare. If it were any other item, Yue Yang wouldn't even think it was that important. Both Dream Jadeite and Wishing Dutchman's Pipe were precious wish granting items. Wishing Dutchman's Pipe would wither away if it fails; the Dream Jadeite would embody a person's dream, the moment it fails, it would break and disappeared.

Actually, Yue Yang had thought of using the Eternal Wishing Dutchman's Pipe to wish for the successful completion of the Battle Angel.

Even if it fails, he would be able to use it again after three years.

Afterwards, after careful thinking, he decided to use the 'Dream Jadeite'. Yue Yang still wanted to use the eternal Wishing Dutchman's Pipe as backup plan to increase the rank of the Battle Angel to Divine-ranked Artifact!

In order to guarantee its success, Yue Yang intentionally slept for a long while.

He then took a cold bath, his preparation was only lacking fasting and burning incense... He made up an excuse and asked Yue Yu to go out of the research room. Yue Yang held the 'Dream Jadeite' and laid beside the purified Crystal Men Corpses. Failure or success would depend on whether his dream was good or not! It was a pity that Fourth Mother wasn't willing to help. With her help, the success rate would probably be bigger. God's Blood, God's Water, Meteorite Vital Gold, Titan's Heart, Crystal Men Corpses and other ingredients had all been prepared, the only step left was to mix them altogether. Yue Yang only needed to 'transform' all these to a perfect human body.

On the other side, he had the blood of Zhi Zun, Night Empress, Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian, Luo Hua City Mistress and the others.

Some of them he had a lot, some of them he had very little, especially Zhi Zun's blood, he only managed to keep a few drops, so he couldn't waste it easily.

How would he 'transform' all these into a Battle Angel?

He would depend on the Dream Jadeite's wish granting power, because Yue Yang still couldn't understand the secret method of creating Battle Angels. Creating a mechanical puppet with no feelings would be easy, but that wasn't what Yue Yang wanted.

“...” Yue Yu was a little curious, but she completely respects Yue Yang’s privacy. She didn’t enter and continued to wait quietly outside.

Yue Yang closed his eyes and started dreaming

He didn’t enter the Heavenly Sword Goddess’ Dream Realm, instead, he entered a magical realm filled with energy. In this energy filled-realm, there was no gravity, there was not even a body, only souls existed here. Yue Yang felt that he could fly anytime he wanted, or maybe, it was not called flying, but moving according to his thoughts. He could fly if he wanted to, he could walk if he wanted to. Yue Yang felt that this energy-filled realm contained the wish granting power of the Dream Jadeite. He would make a wish here, then get the results in the reality.

If Yue Yu walked into the research room, she would discover that Yue Yang’s body was glowing and flickering with light. The Dream Jadeite on his hands was also burning brightly like the moon in the sky.

As to how to make a wish, he should probably faced that direction and made his wish. Yue Yang didn’t know what kind of hand gesture to make.

After entering this energy-filled realm, he felt that other than energy, this place was completely empty.

Could it be that his heart wasn’t clean enough? Wasn’t sincere enough?

Yue Yang was taken by surprise by the thoughts that suddenly appeared in his heart. He quickly revealed a super serious and sincere look as he made his wish. His wish was: I wish that the Dream Jadeite would create a Battle Angel with life, wisdom, thoughts and feelings.

For success, it was the first time that Yue Yang seriously wished.

Around 10 minutes passed.

In reality, Yue Yang's sense of time was completely wrong. The time passed with his soul in the energy-filled realm and the time passed in reality was different. He might feel that around 10 minutes had passed, but Yue Yu had already waited outside for 10 hours. If Yue Yang could see Yue Yu, he would realise that the real world had become very slow for him, as if he was watching a slow motion film. Of course, there were not many people who looked at the real world in their soul state. Only people who were about to die, in their state of near death when their soul left their body, would realise that the real world was moving very slowly. At the very least, it was very slow from the soul's perspective.

"Xiaosan is taking too long." Yue Yu really couldn't bear it anymore. She entered the research room, hoping to see how Yue Yang's dream was coming about.

No matter what, he had already been dreaming for 10 hours.

It would be weird if Yue Yu wasn't worried.

When she entered, she realised that Yue Yang was laying beside the Crystal Dolls, quietly sleeping as his body flickered with light.

The Dream Jadeite was shining like the moon in the sky, glowing with a soft light, enveloping Yue Yang's whole body.

Seeing this, Yue Yu secretly heaved a sigh of relief.

Good, the wish wasn't a failure.

Yue Yu sat down. She couldn't go outside and be anxious about whether Yue Yang was successful or not. No matter if it was success or failure, she would accompany him by his side.

At this time, Yue Yang was helplessly floating in the energy-filled realm. Seems like the wish didn't fail, but there was no reaction at all. He wasn't resigned to go out of the Dream Realm just like that. Yue Yang decided to rest his mind and repeat his wish again. No matter what, he needs to create this Battle Angel. It wasn't merely Yue Gong's wish, it was also Yue Yang's wish. He would feel happy just by thinking of teaching and training a beautiful female fighting puppet. Right now with this kind of chance, how could he give up easily?

Yue Yang thought evilly, if Yue Yu found out that a big part of the reason why he wanted to create this Battle Angel was to experience teaching a beautiful female fighting puppet, she would definitely be so angry that she couldn't eat!

“Amongst the three Yue Clan daughters, Yue Yu is the most gentle, Yue Bing is the most obedient, and Yue Shuang is the cutest of all.” The thought of the Yue Clan 3 sisters suddenly flashed across Yue Yang’s mind. Initially it was just a passing thought, but the magical energy in front of him suddenly changed, slowly turning into the figure of Yue Shuang. Yue Yang was shocked, could it be that the Dream Jadeite would need him to imagine the person he wanted to create?

If he created the Battle Angel with Yue Shuang’s looks, it didn’t seem like a good idea.

Maybe other people would mistook him as a sis-con. Sis-con, these kind of thing, wasn’t something that should be known to people.

However, if he gave up on Yue Shuang’s figure, if he failed, it would really be a pity... Whatever, sis-con, so be it! Success is more important than failure

Yue Yang quickly confirmed Yue Shuang’s figure with his mind and tried with all his might to use his memory to connect that Shuang’er that was formed by the energy. The figure of Shuang’er that was initially faint slowly became clearer. In the end, it looked exactly like Yue Shuang, even to her little dimples and long eyelashes.

It was just that this energy-formed Shuang’er was completely naked in its energy state.

Fortunately nobody else saw this, otherwise he would definitely be stuck with the sis-con name.

In reality, Yue Yu watched speechlessly as the light from Yue Yang's body became even brighter as countless of rays shone out like rainbow. They softly rose up, as if they were alive, connecting the Crystal Doll beside him together and forming a cocoon of light. The crystal doll that Yue Yang spent so much effort in was magically transformed as blood, energy, God's Water and God's Dew mixed together on their own, slowly forming into Yue Shuang. At first it was fuzzy, there was only an outline of her.

However, it slowly transformed, becoming better each time.

Yue Yu saw that before a minute even passed, the Yue Shuang which was wrapped in a cocoon of light looked completely like the real Yue Shuang.

Countless blood vessels formed inside her transparent body, then her heart, bones and brains, connecting altogether, forming a light rainbow that connected to Yue Yang's head...

"Oh my god!" Yue Yu almost cried from happiness. She quickly covered her mouth with her hands, as if afraid that she would disturb Yue Yang if she made any noise. Turns out that Dream Jadeite was used this way. The Battle Angel would be completed shortly. Although it was in Yue Shuang's form, it was still successful. Yue Yu was so happy that she wanted to kiss Yue Yang, her precious brother. Xiao San was simply too awesome, he could

even recreate Battle Angels that only existed in ancient times.

A Battle Angel that has life, wisdom and thoughts, could it still be considered a puppet?

It was practically a god creating a human!

After Yue Yang completed the energy-form Yue Shuang, he was still unsatisfied. Although he understood the way to use Dream Jadeite now, why should it be in Yue Shuang's form? Yue Shuang was simply too young, how would she fight? It would be much better even if it could be as big as Yue Bing. Yue Shuang's body was simply too small, it is not cool enough!

Just as he was thinking of this, the energy-form Yue Shuang immediately changed.

This shocked Yue Yang to death.

Please don't let it be a failure!

However, to Yue Yang's surprise, Yue Shuang's form didn't disappear, however, it slowly turned into Yue Bing's form.

More and more energy poured out, forming a naked Yue Bing. As Yue Yang had always seen Yue Bing's body from Body Fusion training, he knew her body like the palm of his hand. Anyway, nobody is seeing this, so there was nothing wrong for him to create Yue bing. Yue Yang had finally understood. Yue Shuang was the

Battle Angel first form that has life. The current Yue Bing was the Battle Angel's second form that could learn and cultivate. As for the third form, it was still undecided for now!

“...” Yue Yu was shocked speechless currently as she saw the naked Yue Bing.

Although she knew Yue Yang was imagining the Battle Angel's form, she still felt awkward seeing her brother creating a naked Battle Angel in the form of her sister.

Among so many women, why would he use his sisters as inspiration?

Shuang Er was still okay, she was still a kid after all. But Yue Bing was almost a grown woman.

Seeing Yue Bing's body slowly forming, bit by bit, from her chest to her breast, to her nipples, looking completely like a real person, Yue Yu immediately turned red, feeling like she wanted to scold Yue Yang, this naughty brother.

She knew Yue Yang could feel others' body very clearly during Body Fusion, but she never thought that he would remember it so clearly.

Seeing the Battle Angel in Yue Bing's form looking like a real person, as if it was exactly the same as the real one, Yue Yu blushed furiously. She thought of herself, previously, she had gone through

Body Fusion training with him and also used her Yin power to help him level up. Wouldn't he knew her body too? Of course, she understood that even if she told herself that he didn't know, it would be a lie. He just pretended not to know.

Yue Yu didn't know that prior to going through the Body Fusion training, Yue Yang had already used Divine Vision to observe her body before.

That time, Yue Yang thought that Yue Yu was Princess Qian Qian who was bathing...

Of course, that time was accidental.

"The Battle Angel's first form is Shuang'er, second is Bing'er, what will the third form be?" Yue Yu suddenly had this thread of thought, then she saw that Yue Bing's crystal doll had almost been completed, its body slowly grew bigger and its female characteristics was more clearly defined. She secretly had a bad premonition.

Please don't let it happen.

Please don't let it be her.

Yue Yu begged fervently in her heart, it didn't matter who, just don't let it be her. Otherwise, she really wouldn't know what to do in the future!

However, to Yue Yu's despair, the third form of the Battle Angel that Yue Yang imagined was... her. Furthermore, she realised that the level of understanding that this naughty brother of her had on her body was no less than her own understanding of her own body... Oh my god, Yue Yu almost fainted, especially when she watched the Battle Angel forming her female characteristics, that were completely identical to her own. Even her little garden and little bush were the same, it was so shameful!

What to do now?

Should she pretend not to know about this, or should she immediately let him change it to Princess Qian Qian?

Yue Yu helplessly stood there, staring dumbly as her own body was formed until the Battle Angel was finally completed. As the light slowly receded, she suddenly woke up from her daze and quickly ran out of the room.

No matter what, she would pretend not to know anything first.

Otherwise, she really had no face to see other people!

Chapter 560 – Self Awakening?

Although the three forms of the Battle Angel had been completed in the Dream Jadeite's energy realm, Yue Yang still could not tell whether it was a success or not.

He waited inside the realm for 10 more minutes. After confirming that it was completed, only then did he wake up. Naturally, due to the distortion, 10 minutes in the Dream Jadeite's realm was equal to 10 hours. As he woke up, he discovered a group of people sitting around him as they clicked their tongues in praise.

“The new Battle Angel really looks like little sister Shuang'er.” said Bao'er.

“Although he is normally strict, he is indeed a good brother.” Liu Ye evaluated.

“Master is actually very gentle.....” The half-elf girl defended.

“However, why doesn't this Battle Angel move?”

“Could it be that we have to wait for it to wake up?”

The chattering and whispering sounds made Yue Yang's head ache. Who allowed them to enter his own research room? Wasn't Sister Yu guarding outside?

After sitting up, he was about to drive them out but Bao'er came over: "Are you awake? You really are a deep sleeper. In just one sleep, you have slept for 20 hours. Everybody was quite worried."

20 hours?

Yue Yang was stunned. Wasn't he only inside the Dream Jadeite realm for only 20 minutes?

When he looked at the Dream Jadeite on his hand, the Jadeite was not the least bit damaged. But, when he moved his hands, it immediately turned into fine powder. The Dream Jadeite had completely run out of energy. The different materials that he placed around him had also disappeared and replaced with a clothed Shuang'er. It took a while before Yue Yang realized that this was not Shuang'er but the living Battle Angel.

The Battle Angel had already finished transforming and became similar to a human.

The only thing different was that it had the ability of a Battle Angel to transform into the corresponding forms for learning and for battle.

Everything was according to Yue Yang's wishes. After he stooped down to listen to her heartbeat and her deep breathing, Yue Yang became indescribably moved. An unprecedented feeling of accomplishment rose up from his chest. He had finally created a Battle Angel with life, with feelings, with knowledge, with its own thoughts.

He had now finished Yue Gong's miraculous third wish.

Yue Yang was on cloud nine and wanted to share this feeling with someone but he discovered that Yue Yu was gone.

“Eh, where did she go?”

This was the Battle Angel that he researched with her. Where did she go during this critical hour?

Yue Yang got up preparing to find Yue Yu to share this joyous moment. However, Bao'er pulled him back, pointed at the Battle Angel and curiously asked: “Why isn't the Battle Angel getting up? Wasn't it that if you woke up, the Battle Angel would also wake up at the same time?”

Yue Yang was also baffled about this. The Battle Angel was something that did not need to sleep at all.

She was able to sleep like a human but that was only imitating humans, not something she needed to do. She should be able to change between living, learning and battle forms anytime. Unless her energy was depleted, she would never get tired. Yue yang extended his hand and lightly stroke the Battle Angel's cheek. He inserted a strand of Innate Invisible Qi, probing her blood channels. He discovered that her blood channels were the same as Shuang'er's. The only thing different was that her heart was made from the strong Titan's heart and filled with God's Blood inside.

“I also don’t know.” Yue Yang tried to use his will to wake up the Battle Ange but discovered that there was no response.

Inside the Battle Angel there was an extremely unique will that seemed to be in a chaotic state.

It was different from the time when Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying was in a chaotic state. Yue Yang felt that there was something missing but he had no way of grasping the inspiration in his mind.

What was lacking? Yue Yang begun to ponder this question. There was nothing wrong with her body. Her body was even better than he imagined (not in a sexual way). She had already exceeded his design specifications, being similar to a human being and reaching the level of a Divine Artifact, In other words it was not a machine but a living, thinking battle doll..... Her body was already had the Titan’s heart as her nucleus, God’s Blood and Divine Meteorite Molten Gold as her blood. Three rune circles had completely merged together as her weapons had merged flawlessly.

What did this perfect Battle Angel lack?

Yue Yang ignored Bao’er, who burst with lots of questions, and went out to find Yue Yu. Perhaps speaking to her might ignite his inspiration.

“Second Sister, are you there?” Yue Yang did not knock on the door and just walked in. Yue Yu was currently leaning over writing

something like a diary. When Yue Yang entered she was surprised.

“Why didn’t you knock? Almost frightened me to death!” Yue Yu fearfully patted her chest and unhappily shot Yue Yang a glance.

She hurriedly put away her notebook. This made Yue Yang curious as to what she was writing. Could it have something to do with him? Yue Yu was afraid that Yue Yang would steal her diary and quickly ask: “You finally woke up? Why did you come here? I, I am already a bit tired for today and about to take a rest.....” She tried to push Yue Yang outside as she said it.

Yue Yang grasped her hand: “I won’t look at your diary so don’t quickly drive me out. I really have something to ask you!”

Yue Yu immediately cried out in fear when he grabbed her hand: “Stop, stop it. Quickly let go. People might come here. If you have something to say, quickly say it!”

“Are you feeling ill?” Yue Yang touched Yue Yu’s forehead. “There is no fever?”

“Wha, I am just a bit tired!” Yue Yu felt happy that he was worried about her, but she became embarrassed when she remembered how he was familiar with her body and even borrowed it as a model for the Battle Angel. If Princess Qian Qian found out about this, she did not know how to explain it to her. The most awkward thing was the Angel’s Blade that he gave her. Only she and the Battle Angel had it so it would create a huge misunderstanding.

It was fine to borrow anyone else's figure, but why did he have to use hers.

Sigh!

This was truly embarrassing.

Yue Yang secretly made a decision. From tomorrow onwards, she would move back to the Yue Clan Castle or return back to Shang Jing Academy and live with her master. She could not let this go on. In the past, she had hesitated over this, but now, she would absolutely not let this go on.

"Then you take a rest early. You have worked hard these few days!" Yue Yang had wanted to talk about the Battle Angel with Yue Yu.

"Xiao San, the truth is....." Yue Yu suddenly felt sad. She was already going to move tomorrow but she was still lying to him right now. He had always treated her warmly and even followed the rules without messing around. Perhaps the Battle Angel's third form was only a reflection of his subconscious mind and not his normal thoughts. The three forms of the Battle Angel was herself, Bing'er, and Shuang'er. The others were too small so he would definitely not have any ill intentions towards them. This could also mean that the Battle Angel's three forms were the three people who were the most intimate with him.

He did not do anything wrong and it was only her thinking too

much.

Yue Yu remembered the things she told him before. In order to not worry him, she said that she would not leave forever.

Now, she was concealing that she was going to leave him and hurt him..... However, the more she stayed the more her heart became disordered. She was unable to face him.

Yue Yang was confused, what did Yue Yu want to say?

Now, She seemed to be sad and wanted to cry for no reason at all. Could it be that Yue Shan's injury was too heavy and his life was at risk? This was not reason enough. If Yue Shan was willing to let him help, then he would be good to go in no time. Since he wanted to suffer, Yue Yang could not do anything. But still, even though Yue Shan's injury was heavy, it does not mean he will die.

"Xiao San....." Yue Yu suddenly embraced Yue Yang as tears began to drench his shoulders.

"Eh?" Yue Yang was extremely confused.

When Yue Yu relaxed her hands, Yue Yang couldn't help but take pity on her after seeing her tear-stained face. He extended his hand to lightly wipe her tears.

Yue Yu raised her tear-stained face and looked at Yue Yang through the haze of her tears.

She was about to bid farewell to Yue Yang after pushing down the pain in her heart.

Suddenly, a terrified shriek came from the direction of the research room.

It was Bao'er and the others!

Yue Yang and Yue Yu were startled. With mutual understanding, they both quickly flew towards the research room's door. On the left side, Yue Yang wielded his Hui Jin Magic Blade; On the right side, Yue Yu activated the Angel's blade. They both entered the room with one on offense and the other on defense.

They both thought that there was an enemy who came to kidnap Bao'er but never imagined that they were wrong.

Strange lights erupted inside the research room.

An unusual fragrance and beautiful colored lights filled the entire research room. An indescribably boundless energy was being born. The light pillar that could only be seen during a grimoire contract shot out of the room towards the sky..... Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, and the others, who were sparring, raised their heads. They discovered that the light pillar shot towards the sky with a height of more than 200 meters. They immediately became baffled.

Who was contracting a grimoire?

A 200 meter tall light pillar? Wasn't this too abnormal?

They gave up on training as each of them crazily ran back as if they had been injected with chicken blood. They wanted to know who was so divine that they had so much potential.

Inside the room, Yue Yang protected the half-elf girl, Bao'er and Liu Ye behind him. He happily looked at the floating Battle Angel that kept shuffling her weapons in her third form. He looked at the other Yue Yu that floated in midair while holding a grimoire in her hands. The Angel's Blade in her hands that were connected by Divine Meteorite Molten Gold had completely fused with her body.

Let alone Yue Yang, even Bao'er, who had no knowledge about battle dolls, understood that the Battle Angel was now complete.

"Very good. Sister Yu we have succeeded. This Battle Angel even contracted a grimoire on its own!" Yue Yang could not restrain his emotions and excitedly hugged Yue Yu.

"Cough!" Yue Yu quickly pushed him away. Seeing Yue Yang also hug Bao'er and the others, she understood that he didn't really have those kinds of intentions but he was just too happy. She immediately felt relieved. However, she couldn't help become embarrassed as her face flushed red.

Ye Kong and the others quickly arrived and saw Yue Yu in midair and Yue Yu on the ground.

Both of them possess the Angel's Blade so they did not know who was real or who was fake.

They almost thought they were delusional.

Luckily, they remembered about Yue Yang' Battle Angel so they instantly understood that the floating Yue Yu was the real Battle Angel!

Chapter 561 – Do We Need To Destroy This Life Form In Front Of Us?

The Battle Angel floating in the air slowly descended.

As its two slender legs slowly touched the ground, those big eyes with long eyelash fluttered open.

The moment it opened its eyes, it was even scarier than the Heaven Rank 3 ???. A rush of unimaginable force erupted like a volcano, the shockwave immediately sent Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others flying away. The whole research room was turned over as if a hurricane just destroyed it, everything was a complete mess. Without Yue Yang's protection, the weaker ones like Bao'er and Liu Ye might even choke from the super powerful force.

“What's that?” At the door, only Xue Tan Lang was able to stay unmoved. However, his feet had penetrated deep into the ground.

Even with his feet in the ground, he could only force himself to stand on the spot.

Xue Tan Lang's expression changed.

Sweat formed on his forehead, as he turned to Yue Yang and asked in shock, “What, what rank is she?”

“Heaven Rank, Heaven Rank 1!” Yue Yang gulped down his

saliva. This Battle Angel's power was simply beyond his imagination. She was already Heaven Rank 1 when she was born, if she trained in the future and continued to grow, how much stronger would she become? When Yue Yang thought about this, he was so happy that he didn't know what to do.

"He-He-Heaven Rank?" Fatty Hai's jaw was chattering so much that he almost couldn't speak.

"..." The Battle Angel's big, beautiful eyes were looking around, as if she was looking for something.

When she saw Yue Yang, she immediately let out a stronger shockwave of energy.

The whole research room was shaking.

Almost to the point of collapsing.

The Battle Angel didn't seem to be aware of her surrounding, as if she didn't care if the sky collapse or if the ground split apart. She only locked her gaze on Yue Yang and walked step by step towards him. This Battle Angel looked exactly like Yue Yu from the outside, but she had a different expression. Yue Yu would always look gentle no matter what, in both her actions and speech. This Battle Angel, on the other hand, didn't have any expression on her face. Her eyes were also empty, without any sign of humanity. There was only emotionless and coldness on her expression. Fatty Hai and the others were completely scared stiff just by seeing the Battle Angel's expressions.

If Yue Yang wasn't there, they would have already scampered away.

This was definitely not human, it was a cold, emotionless killing machine!

The Battle Angel walked towards Yue Yang, step by step. Bao'er and Liu Ye were so scared that they each held onto Yue Yang's arms and hid behind him, trembling unstoppably. However, they couldn't help but to be curious and continued to peek from behind Yue Yang. On the other hand, the half-elf girl was more daring. She seemed like she wanted to step out and protect her master, but Yue Yu quickly pulled her behind and protected her. The Battle continued to walk forward, destroying the ground with each step she took.

The obsidian tiles beneath her crushed as if it was tofu.

She controlled her own body well, she didn't lose her footing or trip over the holes.

Her first few steps were a little inflexible, as if she was a walking puppet. However, she learnt very quickly and her steps became even more accurate each time she moved. She continuously upgraded herself, and in the end, her strides were a little similar to Princess Qian Qian, strong and valiant.

Would this Battle Angel learn Princess Qian Qian's bad temper too?

No one knew the answer.

Including Yue Yang.

Up till now, Yue Yang didn't know if this Battle Angel would listen to his orders. He felt that he had a special connection to her in their soul level, but it was not at the level of a Guardian Beast. If there weren't so many people around, Yue Yang would probably approach her and try to communicate with her, but he wasn't able to do it now, as Bao'er and Liu Ye were both hiding behind him. If they couldn't take the pressure and their lives were endangered, it would be bad. The Battle Angel definitely didn't have bad intentions, but maybe she didn't know how to control her great powers, that's why it turned out this way...

The Battle Angel stood in front of Yue Yang.

Her eyes were looking straight at him.

"You?" The Battle Angel tilted her head, her actions cute like Yi Nan as she spoke a string of unknown language.

At first she was a little inarticulate, but her speech became more coherent each time. The second sentence she spoke was clearer and more accurate than the first, and the third sentence was practically the epitome of elegant and fluent, her voice sounding even more pleasant than birds singing.

Everyone, other than Yue Yang and the sickly beauty who just arrived, didn't understand what the Battle Angel was saying. However, even Yue Yang and the sickly beauty didn't fully understand what she said. Yue Yang could vaguely understand that that the Battle Angel's first sentence was an ancient language. Her second sentence was elf language, followed by dragon's language, then became Demon Abyss' language and finally, she spoke in human language. Although everyone didn't understand the beginning part of her speech, they could hear and understand the last word very clearly. This was because the Battle Angel looked to Yue Yang and shouted, "Daddy!"

Yue Yang almost fell flat to the ground.

He never thought that the Battle Angel would actually call him daddy... this...

"Daddy sounds nice!" Only Bao'er thought that it sounded nice. She tilted her head in contemplation and add salt to Yue Yang's wound, "I'll call you daddy too?"

"Tong!" Fatty Hai and the others fell to the ground.

"Don't cause problems!" The Golden Elf Lin En would usually dote on his younger sister, but this time he felt that she had gone too far.

"My little lady, please don't say anymore, I may get a heart attack." Ye Kong smiled bitterly as he moved away from Bao'er, afraid that her craziness might infect him. Yue Yu gestured to

Bao'er to stop speaking and let Yue Yang try to speak to the Battle Angel.

“Mommy.” When the Battle Angel saw Yue Yu, she whispered with a very soft voice.

This time, Yue Yu almost fainted.

The Battle Angel looked exactly like her and was calling her mommy. This, this was really too much..

Yue Yang and the others were once again speechless. How could the Battle Angel call Yue Yu mommy? Could it be that it was because Yue Yang and Yue Yu had created her together?

The sickly beauty was clever, she approached the Battle Angel and tried asking, “What about me? What do you call me?” Everyone was shocked when the Battle Angel turned towards the sickly beauty and said, “Mommy”, then turned her gaze back to Yue Yang. She called both Yue Yu and the sickly beauty mommy, Yue Yang started to understand.

It was because the blood used to create her were taken from the girls.

That was why she unconsciously called every girls who had donated their blood ‘mommy’.

When Yi Nan, Yue Bing and the others tried, indeed, the Battle

Angel also called them mommy. It made Yi Nan and Bao'er cheered out in happiness, but Yue Bing and Yue Yu were extremely embarrassed.

“Seems like she is still young, she would call everyone daddy and mommy, just like a little chick that has just been born. Hey, maybe, she will also call me mommy!” Fatty Hai debated that a lot of young beasts were not able to recognise their own parents, they would just call the first thing they saw their parents. He walked forward smugly and waved his hands to capture the Battle Angel's attention, “Good girl, call me mommy too!”

“囧!” (Shiro: That's Ye Kong's face) Ye Kong suddenly felt that knowing someone like Fatty Hai was his lifetime nightmare.

“This chap really needs a beating!” Xue Tan Lang felt that what Fatty Hai lacked the most in his life was beatings.

Rumble...

The machinery on the Battle Angel's shoulders suddenly changed. Three Ancient Energy Cannons formidably extended out from her shoulders in a blink of an eye, locking straight on Fatty Hai's fat face, which was devoid of colour right now. If she open fire, Fatty Hai would definitely disappear from this world, he would perish in a flash!

Fatty Hai didn't even dare to raise his hands in surrender, afraid that the Battle Angel would misunderstand him and shoot him, killing him on the spot.

Yue Yang hurriedly stopped her, “Stop.”

The Battle Angel looked at Yue Yang and asked, “Daddy, you don’t need me to destroy this lifeform that looks like a human in front of us?”

Yue Yang forced himself not to laugh and pretended to look serious, nodding, “Let him go. This lifeform that looks like a human is daddy’s friend!”

“Yes!” The Battle Angel kept away her ancient energy cannons, reverting to her original appearance.

“...” Fatty Hai who managed to keep his life hanging by the thread was so scared that his knees went weak as he crumbled to the ground.

Seeing the Battle Angel listening to his orders, Yue Yang was overjoyed in his heart.

He ordered her to transform into her first form, the ‘Life Form’.

The armor, weapons and the Angel’s Blade on the Battle Angel’s body went back into the Grimoire World. Her body, illuminated in light, slowly became smaller. She first became Yue Bing, then she became Yue Shuang. She even had a flowery skirt created from energy that was usually worn by Yue Shuang.

The Battle Angel in her 'Life Form' was no longer a Heaven Rank 1, she was Innate Level 1.

Furthermore, she didn't know how to hide her strength at all.

The sickly beauty took a chair, wanting to ask the Battle Angel to sit down and have a talk.

Unexpectedly, the Battle Angel destroyed the chair the moment she sat down. Her reaction was very quick, she immediately tried to balance herself by holding to the table beside her. But in the end, the table also crumbled into pieces... In the end, there was no other way around it. Yue Yang had to hold her as they sat, otherwise all the chairs, tables, or even their house would be destroyed. Facing towards the door, Yue Yang looked at the Eternal Wishing Dutchman's Pipe that was planted in a flower pot near the window. This was his dearest treasure. If it weren't for creating the Battle Angel, he wouldn't have taken it out normally. As there was crystal protection, he wasn't worried that the Wishing Dutchman's Pipe will be damaged, but it was his habit to check the Wishing Dutchman's Pipe every time.

However, when he looked, he shouted in surprise, "My flower..."

The Eternal Wishing Dutchman's Pipe that would never wither, that blooming flower, had actually withered.

Only a small bud was left. If it were other Wishing Dutchman's Pipe, it would probably wither and die. Fortunately it was the Eternal Wishing Dutchman's Pipe that was grown from God's Dew,

God's Wine and God's Water. The Evil Millennium Ancient Tree was right, this Wishing Dutchman's Pipe truly didn't wilt. Seeing the new flower bud, it seems that he would only be able to make another wish in another 3 years.

It's just that, who had used it to make a wish?

Also, what was the content of the wish?

Was it successful or a failure?

Yue Yang looked at everyone. Ye Kong, Fatty hai and the others looked indifferent. They usually never got close to Yue Yang's research room. In reality, they knew how precious the Wishing Dutchman's Pipe was, so they definitely didn't want to waste it on themselves. They wouldn't definitely let Yue Yang use it on the most important things.

Everyone looked at each other, only Bao'er, Liu Ye and the half-elf girl bowed their head down.

Especially Bao'er.

Her two forefingers twiddle against each other as she pitifully apologised to Yue Yang, "Ah, I didn't know... Actually, I didn't say anything, I just said a sentence, and the flower suddenly wilted..."

"What exactly did you say?" Yue Yang started to understand the situation.

It turned out that the super strong Battle Angel in his arms was actually born successfully because of the Wishing Dutchman's Pipe's power.

Yue Yang was extremely curious. What did Bao'er say to the Wishing Dutchman's Pipe?

How was it able to awaken the Battle Angel?

Chapter 562 – Hatred Inherent Skill

Shiro: I'm changing Humanoid Divine Weapon to Humanoid Divine Soldier

Everyone was looking at Bao'er.

At first, everyone thought that she was a troublemaker who destroyed the Wishing Dutchman's Pipe Flower. However, when they saw Yue Yang's expression, it seemed that Bao'er's wish was related to the Battle Angel's awakening, and everyone immediately remembered about Bao'er's high luck.

Bao'er couldn't exactly fight, but she had very high luck.

Everyone knew this point very clearly.

Could it be that this lucky loli had accidentally completed the wishing procedure, thus causing the Battle Angel to awaken?

“At that time, it seems like I was talking with Sister Liu Ye. Ah, I, I can't really remember.” Bao'er couldn't even remember what she had talked about. The only thing she remembered was that the moment she finished speaking, the flower withered and disappeared, turning into rays of light. Behind her, the Battle Angel had awakened and transformed its appearance. She was so shocked that her mind was jumbled up. It would be weird if Bao'er could still remember what she had said in that situation!

“Sweat!” Ye Kong and the others felt their head ache.

“Think about it carefully, this is very important...” Yue Yang wanted to know what happened so that he can find out the secret trick to make a wish on the Wishing Dutchman’s Pipe Flower. The Wishing Dutchman’s Pipe would never wither, and it could be used once in every 3 years. If he could find out the method to make a wish, he would really be prosperous.

“I really can’t remember...” Bao’er tilted her head and thought for a long time, but her mind was completely blank.

“Master, I still remember what little sister Bao’er had said.” Even Liu Ye couldn’t remember within that short period of time, but the half-elf girl actually surprised Yue Yang by remembering it.

“Tell me quickly, what did Bao’er say?” Yue Yang was overjoyed.

“Sister Liu Ye said: The Battle Angel was originally Holy-ranked, but master had developed it into a Humanoid Divine Soldier who had life. Master’s expectations was too high, hence the Battle Angel couldn’t wake up in such a short period of time. Sister Bao’er then said: What’s so good about a Humanoid Divine Soldier, if he could create a Heavenly Divine Soldier, then that would be awesome. That Battle Angel is covered with so many scrap metals, even if she managed to awaken, she might not even be able to stand up and fight.” The half-elf girl mimicked Bao’er’s tone and executed the speech perfectly. Everyone nodded when they heard it. That’s right, this was how Bao’er usually spoke.

“...” Bao’er was very embarrassed. She bowed down her head, afraid that Yue Yang would punish her.

“Great job!” Unexpectedly, Yue Yang not only did not punish her, he even patted her head and said: “Bao’er, for the next wish on the Wishing Dutchman’s Pipe Flower, I’ll leave it to you, you lucky child!”

“Really?” Bao’er was extremely happy when she heard that.

She was afraid that Yue Yang didn’t hear her reply, so she pulled both of his arms and made him face towards her, then very seriously and clearly said “Okay!”

Before Yue Yang even replied, she turned around and showed off towards Liu Ye and the others: “I have always been very good in making wishes. When the High Priest in our clan perform divinations with her crystal ball, she would always tell me to stand beside her and pray!”

Liu Ye laughed out loud when she heard her.

In reality, everyone knew that the reason why the High Priest told Bao’er to stand beside her and seriously pray when she was performing divination with the crystal ball. It was because she was afraid Bao’er would run around and accidentally break something, or maybe accidentally say the wrong thing. That was why the High Priest told Bao’er to stay by her side. This should have nothing to do with her praying power. However, speaking of that, if the Battle Angel’s awakening was related to Bao’er, was the Battle Angel a

Humanoid Divine Soldier or a Heavenly Divine Soldier?

Also, what's the difference between Humanoid Divine Soldier and Heavenly Divine Soldier?

Humanoid Divine Soldier is a Divine Soldier in a human form.

It was a special-type beast that possessed a life and was able to turn into humanoid form.

This kind of special-type beast would be at least Holy-ranked. Humanoid Divine Soldiers would be able to learn and grow like a human, it can also turn into a weapon that its master wished to wield. At first it may be weak, but after growing for some period of time, it would even be scarier than a real Divine Soldier or Artifact, because a Humanoid Divine Soldier was a 'Humanoid Divine Artifact' that never stopped growing.

The whole of Tong Tian Tower knew that only Zhi Zun had a Humanoid Divine Soldier.

The Humanoid Divine Soldier that Zhi Zun possessed was the six-winged Blood Winged Angel.

The Blood Winged Angel was far from reaching her potential limit, but the current her, after transforming into a Divine Soldier, was capable of instantly killing Heaven Rank 6 warriors when Zhi Zun wielded her... It can be seen from here that the Humanoid Divine Soldier's power was actually this terrifying. Yue Yang also

did not have a Humanoid Divine Soldier, but Yue Yang also possessed a special type of Divine Soldier, which also similarly had boundless power.

That was the only Tong Tian Beast in the Tong Tian Tower, the Golden Beast that Yue Yang could never see through.

The mysterious Golden Beast was definitely not a Humanoid Divine Soldier.

However, does it belong to the Beast-shaped Divine Soldier category, or does it belong to the legendary Heavenly Divine Soldier category, which transcends Divine Soldiers?

Yue Yang couldn't be certain of the answer to this question!

The Ancient Soldier Artifact was divided into three kinds, Humanoid Divine Soldier, Earthly Divine Soldier and Heavenly Divine Soldier. In the end, it was the sickly beauty who found out the description from the Ancient Records in the Ancient Hall. Ten thousands of years ago, many warriors in the Soaring Dragon Continent possessed Humanoid Divine Soldiers. Furthermore, most of them cultivate their Humanoid Divine Soldier as preciously as cultivating a Guardian Beast. At a more distant past, it was said that warriors even possessed Heavenly Divine Soldiers that were capable of destroying heavens and the earth. However, these Heavenly Divine Soldiers were rarely seen, even during the ancient times. Heavenly Divine Soldiers and Earthly Divine Soldiers were different from Humanoid Divine Soldiers. Heavenly Divine Soldiers were born and had their own will, there was no way of manufacturing them...

Earthly Divine Soldiers would be very strong the moment it was created, but its growth would be very slow. Furthermore, because it was beast-shaped, its growth potential was limited.

An Earthly Divine Soldier's biggest weakness was that it would never be able to contract a grimoire in its life.

In ancient times, warriors would usually use Earthly Divine Soldiers as their mounts.

For example if the Battle Angel was created without life and was purely a Holy-ranked Puppet, it could be forcibly considered as the most basic and awful Earthly Divine Soldier.

Of course, the Battle Angel that Yue Yang had created to fulfill Yue Gong's third wish had life, wisdom, and thoughts. Hence, she was different. This kind of Battle Angel would surpass Holy-rank, it would probably reach Divine-rank. This was because such a Battle Angel possess the power to transform into human and she could also learn and grow. Even though her power may not be enough, she would still be able to learn and slowly grow stronger. The original power of a Humanoid Divine Soldier was greatly weaker than an Earthly Divine Soldier at first, but it had higher growth potential and also faster growth. As long as they were trained well, they would probably surpass an Earthly Divine Soldier.

This was the reason why ancient warriors loved using Humanoid Divine Soldiers.

As for Heavenly Divine Soldiers, they could only hope but couldn't have them...

"This Battle Angel is definitely a Heavenly Divine Soldier, definitely!" Fatty Hai didn't dare to get close, but he continued to make a ruckus at the door, trying to gain the Battle Angel's favour.

"Grimoire, open your grimoire and let me see." Yue Yang indicated to the Battle Angel on his lap and asked her to summon her grimoire.

"?" The Battle Angel looked at Yue Yang.

After she saw Yue Yang's actions, she finally understood. She then reached out her hand and summoned her grimoire.

She didn't need to chant.

It was summoned instantly.

Furthermore, the moment the grimoire was summoned, everyone let out a sharp gasp.

The grimoire that the Battle Angel had summoned was actually a Gold Grimoire. It had immediately skipped Bronze and Silver... Fatty Hai almost cried, Ye Kong and the Li Brothers were also filled with tears. They were humans, but they couldn't even compare to

a Battle Angel. This Battle Angel was really extraordinary, she was even smarter than humans!

Compared to everyone's shocked reactions, Yue Yang was extremely calm.

When Xiao Wen Li was first born, she already had a Diamond Grimoire. The Battle Angel's Gold Grimoire wasn't that impressive.

Yue Yang had never announced Xiao Wen Li's secret, otherwise, Fatty Hai and the others would definitely be shocked to death.

On the first page of the grimoire, there was a picture of the Battle Angel's portrait.

Her head continued to change, one moment it was Shuang'er, her 'Life Form'; One moment it was Bing'er, her 'Wisdom Form'; One moment it was Yue Yu, her 'Battle Form'. Everyone almost had a headache watching it changing continuously.

Below, there was a description of her Inherent Skill and her Guardian Beast.

Hatred Inherent Skill: When this Inherent Skill is invoked, the caster would obtain 10 times Hatred Power and enter into a berserk state. At the same time, the caster will obtain immunity against all forms of negative effects. The hatred target will be locked on with the 'Hatred Arrow', and it cannot be nullified unless the caster

dies. The hatred target duration is related with the skill level. Currently the Inherent Skill is level 1.

“...” the surrounding people were speechless.

This Hatred Inherent Skill was simply too terrifying.

They thought about it. If the Heaven Rank Battle Angel had ten times of her hatred power and went berserk, at the same time gain immunity against weakness, confusion, blindness, poison and other negative effects, and attacked her enemies without control, who would be able to stop her? Worse of all, this hatred cannot be resolved, and the only hope was that the duration would be short. If this Hatred Inherent Skill reached its highest level and obtained the longest duration of the skill, whoever made the Battle Angel angry would be equivalent to seeking death...

Sweat filled Fatty Hai's face. Fortunately he wasn't locked on with the Battle Angel's Hatred Arrow. Otherwise, even Yue Yang wouldn't be able to save him.

When he thought about this, he felt his knees weaken.

Ye kong and the others didn't think too much unlike Fatty Hai, they immediately started looking at the Battle Angel's Guardian Beast.

Wishing Little Angel: Humanoid, special-type beast. Gold-ranked Level 1. Angel-shaped. Guardian Beast. Special Skills: Fly, Roar,

Wish.

This Guardian Beast didn't look very strong on the outside, but only Yue Yang who possessed the Divine Vision knew the frightening power of the Guardian Beast. If this Wishing Little Angel worked together with the Hatred Inherent Skill and was invoked by the Battle Angel, she would become so strong that it would make others go speechless.

For example, the special skill 'Roar' that seemingly looked unremarkable.

Ye Kong and the others weren't able to see its uniqueness.

Only Yue Yang knew that this 'Roar' Special Skill would make all allies who heard the roar have their battle power increased by 100%. This skill would be related to the Wishing Little Angel's level. Increase battle power by 100%? This skill would definitely make their enemies cry out bitterly... The other skill, 'Wish', was even more fearful. 'Wish' was a skill that could erase all kinds of negative effects on all allies in one go. It could even restore all its targets' power back to the maximum, or increase all allies battle powers by one-fold. The thing that made Yue Yang really speechless was that this Wishing Little Angel could use the 'Wish' skill three times in one day.

With such a powerful Guardian Beast helping her, it would be difficult for the Battle Angel not to be awesome.

"What does 'Roar' mean?" Fatty Hai did not understand.

“‘Roar’ is a enhancement skill, but the enhancement level is based on percentage...” Fatty Hai had just wanted to step in to get closer, but when Yue Yang said this, he knocked against the door with a loud thump. Yue Yang actually hid the fact that the enhancement will affect the whole body. Furthermore, it was related to the skill level. The higher the skill level was, the more terrifying the enhancement was. In Yue Yang’s estimation, when the Wishing Little Angel reaches Holy-ranked, the enhancement percentage would probably be more than 100%, it could even be multiple times.

“Although Ye Kong’s Inherent Skill is not bad, it really couldn’t compare to the Battle Angel’s Inherent Skill.” Prince of Tian Luo compared their skills and laughed out loud.

“Don’t tease me anymore...” Ye Kong could only shake his head and smile bitterly.

“The Battle Angel is so cute and strong, why not everyone think of a good name for her!” Yi Nan thought that the most important thing to do right now was to give the Battle Angel a name.

“I have already decided it long ago.” Yue Yang had always been a dictator, he said that he had already thought of a name long ago.

“What will she be called?” Everyone was extremely curious.

It must be known that although Yue Yang was a genius in cultivation and training, but his talents in naming was simply

mediocre. The refined Crescent Blade and Hui Jin Magic Blade's names were still alright, they were not so bad. But looking at Hui Tai Lang, Red, Duo Duo, Ah Man and the other beasts' names. From these, it can be seen that Yue Yang's naming ability was really mediocre...

What would the name he thought for the Battle Angel be?

Chapter 563 – Secret Door

“Her name will be [Ika](#).” Yue Yang shamelessly deceived Yi Nan: “This name is to commemorate the day I met Yi Nan.”

Actually, the main reason why Yue Yang named her Ika was because of the anime he watched in the past, Heaven's Lost Property.

The omnipotent angel Ikaros was loved by otakus.

Naturally, naming the Battle Angel as Ika was also to commemorate meeting Yi Nan, otherwise he could have named it something else. Yi Nan was the first little sister that Yue Yang met. At that time, she was dressed up as a male thief and courageously engage him with her ‘little sister’. Her feelings of love had deeply moved Yue Yang. Although he won’t say it, he treasured this brave Yi Nan.

Yue Yang’s words made Yi Nan touched.

Yi Nan was slightly sour at the fact that the three forms of the Battle Angel did not include her portion, feeling that she did not have a position in his heart.

Now, she felt that she was the world’s happiest person!

It seemed that Yue Yang had already thought about the Battle Angel’s name before he had created it. Moreover, it was specially

named to commemorate their first meeting. She had wrongly blamed him. From Yue Yu's words, the Battle Angel represented the people closest to him in his subconscious mind. Then Yue Yu, Bing'er and Shuang'er fit the description. However, the name was already thought of long ago. This proves that she had a in Yue Yang's heart, and it was an important position.

It was only a name, but his feelings had completely captivated Yi Nan's heart.

She did not resist and willingly let him captivate her for her entire lifetime.

In the past, Yi Nan would be shy girl in front of Yue Yang. First, the matter about their engagement made her feel embarrassed. Second, she was used to speaking with him while pretending to be a boy. When he was taking liberties with other women, she would feel shy. Now, when she heard how Yue Yang loved her, that he even named the Battle Angel after the memory of their encounter, she immediately became the brave Yi Nan. She ignored other people's gazes and tightly hugged him. She nodded: "In the future, let me be Ika's mother. I will definitely take care of her properly. I will properly teach to let her become the strongest Battle Angel....."

"You can do it sister Yi Nan!" Yue Bing also felt happy for Yi Nan.

Yi Nan emotionally stood on tiptoes.

Like a dragonfly touching the water lightly, she gave Yue Yang a

sweet kiss.

Afterwards, she pulled the Battle Angel 'Ika' to her embrace from Yue Yang.

Fatty Hai, Ye Kong, Xue Tan Lang and the others gave Yue Yang a thumbs up. They completely admired Yue Yang's skills in picking up girls. It was simply too awesome, just like a god of picking up girls. What realm had he reached to be able to create Battle Angels and pick up girls at the same time?

It's no wonder that he was able to tame the tigress Princess Qian Qian. They had thought that Jun Wu You was a passionate expert at picking up girls, but in front of Yue Yang, he was simply an apprentice that needs to pay Yue Yang tuition to learn from him. Diamond, treasures, flowers, food, pets, spirit pills, they were all nothing in front of Yue Yang. He only needed to name the Battle Angel, Yi Nan would already cry from being emotionally moved.....

"Everyone, listen to me. Two days from now, Shang Jing Academy will hold a student party. If we join them, then all the beauties will definitely throw themselves in our arms." Fatty Hai's amorous feelings moved as he excited everyone.

"Not interested." Xue Tan Lang turned around and walked away.

"Ah. There are already five people to be my future empress and more than ten concubines....." The Prince of Tian Luo showed that he was a bit allergic to women.

As people from big families, they had already been engaged and do not lack beauties.

Seeing that there was nothing that can be done, Fatty Hai looked at those from small families like him, Ye Kong and the Li brothers. The three of them were definitely not engaged. Ye Kong turned around and muttered: “The one vice-president Shui recommended or the one His Majesty recommended, I wonder which one should I choose? Both of them are not bad.” Fatty Hai was furious. Why did the old fox and Jun Wu You introduced people to Ye Kong this monkey yet they did not call him? What did this mean? He was still someone with the nickname of ‘Shameless Fat Devil’ in the sixth floor of Tong Tian Tower, so why?

He thought that this was wrong. Only he had no woman.

He was too miserable.

He immediately complained tearfully to Yue Yang: “No matter what, I am still the boss, yet I don’t have any woman. The future looks dark. Tell the old fox to introduce someone to me from the Death Class. It’s not like you don’t know me. I am single minded with strong emotions, gentle yet kind, be a good friend!”

“Stop. You don’t need to tell me the words to advertise you. Moreover, I charge 1000 gold per word.” Yue Yang ignored Fatty Hai’s complains.

“Don’t leave me to die……” Fatty Hai hugged Yue Yang’s thighs.

“The Iron Rhinoceros and the small Hippopotamus are both female. There is still a possibility for them to become beauties. The Wind Breath Seabird is also the same.” Yue Yang guiltlessly consoled Fatty Hai.

“Will the Iron Rhinoceros and the small Hippopotamus really become like Ah Man and constantly evolve?” Fatty Hai felt the light shine when he heard this.

“With effort you can do anything. As long as you persevere, you will definitely prevail.” Yue Yang was trying to say that he could not even understand such a simple concept.

“I understand. I will definitely work hard.” Fatty Hai emotionally collapsed.

He climbed back up and ran out. He looked at the sun and shouted: “Women are all transient. Only Guardian Beasts are my eternal companions! Let all those bastards, who marry early, be jealous of me. Those people do not understand my marvelous life.....” Ye Kong fell down on the floor. He had seen many idiots before but it was the first time he saw an idiot like Fatty Hai. His dream of making the Iron Rhinoceros and the small Hippopotamus become beauties was too naive. How many times did the Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man need to evolve before she reached this point?

Moreover, the Barbarian Cow Shadow was a phantom and had been blessed by the Ancient Code a lot of time in the Twelve Zodiac

Palace.

If Ah Man did not have the phantom's special ability to reconstruct, Ah Man would definitely not have such a perfect figure.

Reconstruct: After a phantom had possessed a new body, it would be able to absorb the body's shape and energy, reconstructing its body. The target must be alive. Chance of success increases depending on level.

Without this power, the Iron Rhinoceros and the small Hippopotamus would not even be able to become beauties after a 10,000 years.....

Ye Kong could not imagine what Fatty Hai would become after 10,000 years from now.

A white bearded virgin old man?

Ye Kong shuddered as he thought about this. He immediately moved away from Fatty Hai, afraid that his stupidity was contagious.

The Battle Angel Ika was officially a success.

The remaining work was to research the Ancient Records and to live a happy life with his little sisters. When Yue Yang had thought that he could finally relax and find time to push down Yi Nan and

the Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying, he never imagined that Phoenix Fairy Beauty had sent a letter back. What was written was not simply 'I miss you, kiss' but secret that shocked even Yue Yang.

In the letter, it said that there was a secret door in the tenth floor Tong Tian Tower's Boundless Sea.

Inside it, there was sealed 6000 year old Heaven Realm Ranker.

In order to confront Yue Yang, who had returned from Heaven Realm, the Sea Clan decided to open the seal on the secret door and invite the Heaven Realm Ranker inside to come out. It was unknown how powerful this Heaven Realm Ranker was. Was he like the hundred Heaven Realm Rankers sealed by the Prison Emperor?

No one knew anything!

Phoenix Fairy Beauty had obtained this information from a female earl from the highest decision body of the Sea Clan. This female earl's grandfather was the guard for the secret door.

When she became aware of the dangers of opening the secret door, that they could not defeat Zhi Zun, Night Empress, and Yue Yang's cooperation, she decided to betray the Sea Clan and inform Phoenix Fairy Beauty. This female earl was very wise. Let alone the combination of Yue Yang, Zhi Zun and Night Empress, even the combination of Dragon Emperor, Sky Execution and Great Demon King Baruth was enough to repel the Sea Clan and the Sea Clan's greatest ally, Black Hell King. Now let alone the six Supreme

Rankers, even the Emperor of the Underworld, who was also at the tenth floor of the Tong Tian Tower could send out his troops and exterminate the Sea Clan.

When the Ocean Emperor died, the Sea Clan Innates had been wiped out at the Underwater Graveyard.

Empress Jellyfish had sent her troops to the Soaring Dragon Continent. However, the Yue Clan's Third Young Master had risen in power. Even his slave beast was a Heaven Rank 2 Abyss Manatee. Did the Sea Clan even have any hope after its people begun deserting it?

The female earl immediately informed Phoenix Fairy Beauty in secret with out any hesitation.

Moreover, she promised to let her daughter become the Yue Clan's Fifth Young Master's concubine. This way they will be connected with the Yue Clan by marriage and protect her position in the Sea Clan.

“Related by marriage.....” Yue Yang understood this clearly. For Tong Tian Tower's clans and Kingdoms, connection by marriage was the base minimum needed for trust. Without it, everlasting friendship is nothing but nonsense. Being bound by marriage was the only surest insurance.

“The Sea Clan's natural resources are not that bad. Marrying is beneficial to the Yue Clan. However, Yue Ting is single-minded so I wonder if he would accept a concubine.” Sickly beauty felt that

this was an international practice so she accepted it as is. If Yue Yang did not rise to power, no matter how the Sea Clan fell in power they would never marry with the Yue Clan. They had lived in the tenth floor of Tong Tian Tower for a long time, once a child was born their power would be at Level 6 [Elder], which was Yue Ting's current level. If Yue Ting did not have the potential limit of Innate Level 7, then he might not be able to keep this Sea Clan concubine under control.

“I will go look first. The most important thing right now is the sealed Heaven Realm Ranker. If I don't eliminate the danger, it would be hard to feel at ease.” Yue Yang did not think about the concubine matter anymore since it was not his anyways.

“Be careful. This matter is not that simple otherwise sister Tian Fa would not need to write a letter to you. Perhaps the Black Hell King would also appear.” Yue Yu spoke after considering things. She felt that the secret door sealed an extremely dangerous Heaven Realm Ranker. If the seal did not have enough strength, the Sea Clan would not even think about letting them out and let them recover.

“It seems that Shark King nor the previous Ocean Emperor did not know about this secret door.” Yue Yang's desire to battle rose again. What was there to fear about a sealed Heaven Realm Ranker? It was a Heaven Realm Ranker!

Without a seal, it would be hard to tell who would win.

But if they just escaped from the seal they would be in their weakest state. No matter what kind of overpower BOSS they were,

they would only become his materials!

The more Yue Yang thought about it the more excited he became. He immediately sent Fatty Hai and the others back to the Yue Clan Palace and happily brought Hui Tai Lang with him to the tenth floor of the Tong Tian Tower.....

(Last: Ika = Yika, the Yi is the same as Yi Nan's Yi.)

Chapter 564 – Meteor Shower Ocean

Yue Yang was on the way to the Thunder Fortress.

Indeed, Hai Ying Wu didn't know about the secret door. Even the Shark King didn't return to the Boundless Ocean in the Tenth Floor of Tong Tian tower. Instead, he led the Sea Clan and the defeated remnants of the East and North faction of the Black Hell King Army to the Gu Feng Continent, stationing them there temporarily. War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tusk of the North had already died, hence, amongst their subordinate, the most powerful Thunder of the Center had taken the lead... In the Black Hell King's army, other than the personal bodyguards of the Black Hell King who still stayed inside Kingdom of Zi Jin, other warriors such as Gale of the West and Blood Hoofs of the South had already led their troops out of Soaring Dragon Continent, going to the Zhu Ao Jia Continent and Qi Lan Continent respectively.

Why did the Black Hell King divide his troops as such?

Why did the most loyal and most elite personal bodyguards of the Black Hell King still remained in Zi Jin Kingdom?

Yue Yang felt that the Black Hell King still had a plan and would not submit that easily. Furthermore, Yue Yang thought that if Black Hell King strikes once again, it would definitely be a fatal one!

“Xia Yi is not back yet, it seems like she found something useful.” Hai Ying Wu said in a low tone, “With her power, there is

definitely no problem if she wants to stay in the Gu Feng Continent. However, Thunder of the Center has also reached Gu Feng Continent. His abilities are not ordinary, and he has many subordinates under him. If they find Xia Yi, her life may be in danger.”

“Then send a letter and ask her to return to Thunder Fortress. Right now, I think I can guess a little what their plan in Gu Feng Continent is. If Xia Yi cannot return smoothly, tell her to stay at a safe place, I will fetch her personally.” Yue Yang nodded.

“The secret door, do you think it is real or fake? Do you think there will be a trap?” Hai Ying Wu was still suspicious about this matter.

“Rest assured, I will go with Sky Law. Even if Black Hell King prepared an ambush, both of us should be able to leave safely.” The current Yue Yang was no longer the former ignorant him.

Prior to entering the Death Arena, Yue Yang was a little afraid of the Black Hell King.

After going through the battle in the Heaven Realm, Yue Yang’s powers had levelled up.

He was extremely calm.

Furthermore, after successfully creating the Battle Angel, he only looked forward to another battle with the Black Hell King. There

were no longer feelings of fear. Furthermore, the Black Hell King's powers had already weakened currently. If he had laid an ambush and gave a chance for Yue Yang to capture him, the Black Hell King wouldn't be so fortunate like last time and escape death once again. Compared to the Black Hell King, Yue Yang was more worried about the Scarlet Emperor and [Scarlet Consort](#). If Scarlet Emperor managed to recover his original powers, it would be really dangerous.

Tong Tian Tower, Tenth Floor.

Boundless Ocean.

This place was formerly a restricted area for normal warriors, it was the domain of the Sea Clan's royal family.

The Ocean Emperor Guan Lan had died and most elite Innates in the Sea Clan had also died at the bottom of the ocean. One failure had actually caused the Sea Clan to fall to such an impoverished state.

Empress Jellyfish had quickly tried to rectify the situation and turned towards the Black Hell King Army, taking the initiative to be hostile towards the Soaring Dragon Continent. In the end, they dug their graves deeper. Their main army went to the Soaring Dragon Continent for an expedition, and their internal powers were in chaos. Boundless Ocean was no longer a restricted area in Tong Tian Tower.

The Sea Clan's glorious era had ended.

It was no longer intimidating enough for adventurers, especially some adventurers who harbor evil intentions.

Although Empress Jellyfish still controlled the Sea Clan Elder Association and also possessed a strong army, the Boundless Ocean area was too big, it was more than ten times bigger than Soaring Dragon Continent. There was the boundless ocean surface, long shorelines and islands as many as stars in the sky. It would be impossible for Empress Jellyfish to defend the whole of Boundless Ocean, hence she could only decide to retreat and defend the most important place, 'Meteor Shower Ocean' domain.

In the Meteor Shower Ocean, other than being the richest and most fertile domain in the Boundless Ocean, it was also the most glorious and flourishing capital city of the Sea Clan.

Most importantly, this was the place where the 'secret door' was sealed.

"Welcome Supreme Sky Law, welcome Third Young Master." The person who welcomed Phoenix Fairy Beauty and Yue Yang was a middle-aged, upper-class lady who wore robes as colourful as butterflies. Of course, she wasn't from the Butterfly Clan. She was also not from the Flower Fairy Clan, she was the Clan Master of the Butterfly Fish Clan.

"Countess Jie Wei, you don't have to be so polite." Phoenix Fairy Beauty had just reunited with Yue Yang in Tong Tian Tower's 10th Floor Warrior's Guild. As the saying goes, absence makes the heart

grow fonder. If it wasn't for the limited time, she would still want to sleep together with her lover, pacifying the longing in her heart, before they came to this Boundless Ocean for the exploration. She held onto Yue Yang's hands without reserve as he acknowledged the Countess' respects with a warrior's etiquette, then turned towards Yue Yang and introduced them, "This is Countess Jie Wei that I mentioned before. Of course, if it weren't for Empress Jellyfish's schemes, the current empress of the Sea Clan might have been her highness [Countess Jie Wei](#)!"

"When Guan Lan died, did he leave any message for Jie Wei?" When the Countess heard Sky Law's words, her face slowly turned red. She turned and asked Yue Yang.

"Ah, before he passed, he instructed his children on his will and funeral arrangements. I was an outsider, so I didn't stay to listen." Actually, Yue Yang heard most of Ocean Emperor Guan Lan's last will, but there was nothing related to the Countess. In order to not disappoint her, Yue Yang said he didn't hear anything.

"I understand. He never had Jie Wei in his heart, even from the beginning." [The Countess sighed slowly.](#)

"That, I didn't know your highness Countess Jie Wei at that time, otherwise I would definitely ask him about you." Yue Yang only said that to comfort her, he was definitely not a gossipy person.

"Jie Wei thanks third young master. I don't know about the private daughter that he left his will for, but if you meant his son, it should be the Shark King. Other than him, the Ocean Emperor

didn't trust anyone else." The Countess was extremely clever.

One guess and she managed to guess the Shark King.

Yue Yang cleared his throat.

He neither admit nor deny the Countess.

Yue Yang had already promised to help Hai Ying Wu to become the new Ocean Empress, so he would definitely try to keep his promise.

Before he could confirm that this Sea Clan Countess was 100% his ally, Yue Yang would definitely not mention Hai Ying Wu, so as to avoid side issues to arise.

The Countess wasn't very hung up on that topic, she quickly calmed herself and changed the topic, "Allow me to ask, Third Young Master. What do you think of establishing marriage ties between my daughter Yu Wen and the Fifth Young Master of the Yue Clan, Yue Ting?"

Yue Yang smiled slightly: "This matter should be decided by our elders. I'm just a junior, it would be inappropriate for me to make this decision."

When the Countess heard his reply, she laughed, "Third Young Master is filial, Jie Wei has heard it before. If this matter makes things difficult for third young master, Jie Wei will not pursue it

any further. Although fifth young master's name is not so well known, my friend spoke of him very highly. Most importantly, fifth young master takes love very seriously and will only love one person. If Yu Wen can marry such a passionate man, her life would be worth living." Her words made Yue Yang cough. Although she didn't meant anything, when Yue Yang heard her words, they were like arrows piercing to his playboy heart. Hence, he felt a little awkward. Fortunately the Countess didn't say anymore, otherwise Yue Yang would really be ashamed that he couldn't show his face.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty watched gleefully at the side as she pouted her lips to Yue Yang, provoking him soundlessly, "Scoundrel, you are an unfaithful scoundrel."

Her expression was extremely seductive, igniting Yue Yang's heart in fire, so much that he almost couldn't stop himself from ravishing the little fox.

"With regards to the seal on the secret door, it's like this..." Countess Jie Wei narrated about how her grandfather had guarded the seal to the secret door. It turns out that 6000 years ago, a world-shaking great war had broken out in the Boundless Ocean. At that time, the Three Great Leaders of the Western Heaven Realm had not descended, and Prison Emperor was still fighting with the other Heaven Realm warriors. Because of that great war, many Heaven Realm warriors died, and just like meteor showers, they fell into the Boundless Ocean. Hence, the Sea Clan called the ocean domain where many of the Heaven Realm warriors fell as the 'Meteor Shower Ocean'.

The Sea Clan was originally not very strong.

However, after obtaining the various treasures that the Heaven Realm warriors left behind, they obtained the remaining powers of the strong Heaven Realm warriors. Hence, many strong warriors emerged continuously in the Sea Clan.

It was also because some of the Sea Clan received some of the inherited strength of the Heaven Realm warriors. The Abyss Manatee that was unable return to the Heaven Realm was forced to stay amongst the Sea Clan and continue to take residence in the Meteor Shower Ocean. In the end, it became the Guardian God of the Sea Clan.

This decision made the Sea Clan got on the fast-track to glory. In the end, that Abyss Manatee's and the Sea Clan's descendants all became the Sea Clan royal family without exception.

As for the original various Sea Clan Clan Leaders, due to the birth of the Guardian God and the new royal family, they were forced to recognise the new era of the ocean rulers.

At the same time, they also received the titles of the Ocean Nobility, becoming dukes and earls, forming the Council of Elders.

The Countess' grandfather, Gu She, was one of them.

That year, the three elders who received the seal to the secret door was Gu She, Tie Bing and Ai Shi. All three of them had passed

away.

Gu She's descendants were Butterfly Fishmen, he was also Countess Jie Wei's grandfather. Tie Bing's descendants were Angel Fishmen, and their Clan Leader was another Countess called 'Yan'. As for Ai Shi's descendants, they were Clown Fishmen and their Clan Leader was 'Qiao Dao'. Due to the new royal family's pressure, the Clown Fishmen Clan had declined greatly. Today, they had become one of the vassal clan of the Sea Anemone Clan, completely falling from their nobility position.

"In other words, there are no more seals anymore now right?" Yue Yang frowned. If there were no seals, in this long 6000 years, with the Abyss Manatee as a spy, all the Heaven Realm warriors had probably all escaped already.

"Jie Wei also doesn't know the specific details, because my grandfather had died one thousand years ago." Countess Jie Wei's word made Yue Yang feel even more headache.

A thousand years?

Forget about Heaven Realm warriors, he didn't even think there would be an ant behind the secret door.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty gestured to Yue Yang to calm down. Since they have come to this Boundless Ocean, they should just go in and take a look. Even if they were not able to get anything from the secret door, it would be a good chance for them to check out the Sea Clan internally. Maybe when they open the secret door, there

would really be treasures or sealed Heaven Realm warriors. If that was the case, with the Countess as their guide, they really shouldn't miss this chance. On the other hand, if there really was nothing inside, they could still give a chance for Countess Jie Wei and her clan to officially join the Yue Clan.

With Countess Jie Wei's secret help, it would be very beneficial for Yue Yang to plot against Empress Jellyfish!

Yue Yang also wanted to see the Boundless Ocean.

Even though the Boundless Ocean was only a part of the domain that the Sea Clan occupied in the Tenth Floor of the Tong Tian Tower, although it wasn't exactly the largest ocean in Tong Tian Tower, Yue Yang had still heard of their famous reputation.

“Supreme Sky Law, third young master, pardon me, but you would need to change your clothes. Empress Jellyfish was determined to reorganise the Sea Clan and was planning to use the strength of the secret door to threaten different clans. Hence, a few days ago, she had secretly invited us Clan Leaders to go to the Meteor Shower Ocean and enter the secret door together. I implore Supreme Sky Law and third young master to pretend to be my younger sister ‘[Lan Ban](#)’ and my general ‘[Ni Ji](#)’.” When the Countess waved her hand, the maids standing quietly far away respectfully walked over, offering two sets of clothings.

Other than the fake ‘Lan Ban’ and ‘Ni Ji’, the Countess had also brought along two of her trusted aides, ‘[Chang Wen](#)’ and ‘[Yin Ci](#)’ as cover.

Furthermore, she was extremely careful. She had met Phoenix Fairy Beauty and Yue Yang first.

When the two of them finished changing, she then brought them to her residence to meet Chang Wen and Yin Ci.

It seemed like even Chang Wen and Yin Ci didn't know that Lan Ban and Ni Ji were fakes. From this, it could be seen that the Countess was extremely cautious, taking care even to the simplest detail. It was no wonder that she could continue to live through the cruel struggle of power amongst the Sea Clan. She was able to protect herself.

Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty's appearance was a little different from Ni Ji and Lan Ban.

However, with the Countess' treasure, 'Fantasy Pearl', unless someone else possessed an all-seeing ability like Yue Yang's Heaven Eyes Divine Vision Inherent Skill, no one would be able to tell that they were fakes.

When the ocean teleportation portal light flashed, they finally reached the most secretive place of the Boundless Ocean, the Meteor Shower Ocean.

(Shiro: changing Scarlet Concubine to Scarlet Consort, sounds better)

(Shiro: changed earl to countess)

(She is speaking in third person)

(Shiro: Just for fun, Lan Ban means blue spot, Ni Ji means rebel spear)

(Shiro: Chang Wen is long kiss and Yin Ci is silver thorn)

Chapter 565 – Disguise, Infiltrating the Sea Clan

Meteor Shower Ocean.

This place was indeed a beautiful, rich and fertile land.

There were as many islands as there were pearls in the sea. The silver sand spread across the ocean shores and the vast ocean was like a blue-coloured jewel. Here, water and sky merged into one, the bluish-emerald waves stretched across thousands of kilometers. When the light sea breeze blew a slightly misty air, it seemed to sweep all troubles away. In Meteor Shower Ocean, no matter what season it was, it would always be summer, where the sun burn bright warm. The warm yet not burning sun rays allowed everyone to bask in the warm sunlight.

If one were to rank the most beautiful scenery in Tong Tian Tower, the Meteor Shower Ocean would rank in the top 3.

Many Innates, who had pursued to be at the top, in their later years, would mostly abandon their daily training and chose to make their residence there, enjoying their old age.

Meteor Shower Ocean was also the only ocean domain in Tong Tian Tower where the Meteor Shower Shellfish resides. This kind of Meteor Shower Shellfish contains Meteor Shower Pearl inside. The pearls were only available for sale in higher levels of Tong Tian Tower. As for its worth, it was not any less than the Wisdom Fruit, which helped in cultivating beasts' strength and power.

Meteor Shower Shellfishes were extremely rare, and they need at least a hundred years to produce one pearl. A thousand year old pearl would be an extremely rare treasure in the world, and as for three thousand years old Meteor Shower Pearl, there were only 3 present in the whole of Tong Tian Tower. They were strung together into a necklace and hung on the Empress Jellyfish's pearl necklace.

The Meteor Shower Pearl that was even more favoured than Wisdom Fruit by Innates, possessed thousands of uses and power.

Each of them different from another.

However, they have one similarity, and that was to increase the compatibility of an Innate with their beasts.

The compatibility between beasts and people was something that cannot be quantified, but it did exist. The higher the compatibility of a beast with its master, the more support the beasts would give its master. The lower the compatibility, the less support it would provide, and the easier it would betray its master.

Some people were born with the expertise to summon certain types of beasts.

In other words, they have high compatibility with these beasts.

Of course, the most important factor contributing to compatibility rates depend on the beast itself. If the beast and its

master's compatibility rate was high, it would be easier for them to become humanoid and level up to Holy-rank.

Meteor Shower Pearl's usage was divided into two. First, it could be used by an Innate-ranked warrior to increase their own strength. Second, it could be used by beasts to increase their power.

In both cases, the user must be at least Innate-ranked. Everyone would wish for their beasts to grow stronger, everyone wanted their beasts to level up and become Holy-ranked beasts. It was just that the number of Meteor Shower Pearls was extremely few, and it wasn't even available in the lower floors of Tong Tian Tower for sale. Most pearls were only sold by Merchant Guilds that had been specially appointed by the Sea Clan. For the higher grade, extremely popular Meteor Shower Pearls that were hundreds of years old or even thousands years old, they must be sold in an auction. Many Innates would be invited to participate and compete in their bidding. Only then could they decide who the owners would be.

Previously, the Fantasy Pearl that Countess Jie Wei had used was actually one type of Meteor Shower Pearl.

It was just that this Fantasy Pearl was only 1500 years old, it couldn't compare to Empress Jellyfish' three 3000 years old 'Heaven's Mandate Meteor Shower Pearls'.

"These Meteor Shower Pearls might have something to do with the fallen Heaven Realm Warriors. Maybe the remnants of their power had influenced these pearls." Phoenix Fairy Beauty who was

disguised as Countess Jie Wei's sister, Lan Ban, didn't have anything to do while they were on the journey, so she chatted with Yue Yang at times.

"Maybe." Yue Yang who was disguised as Ni Ji nodded and agreed.

"Maybe we should just attack and conquer this place, then slowly find the Meteor Shower Pearls! Maybe, in some hidden places that had not been explored yet, there are still some Meteor Shower Pearls left." Phoenix Fairy Beauty thought that the time to conquer the Boundless Ocean had come. As long as Yue Yang agreed, all the Charm Demons under her and the Demonic Place backing her up would all come out in full force. Most importantly, Yue Yang still did not have any territory under him in Tong Tian Tower. A pea-sized place like the Thunder Fortress wasn't considered a territory. Forget about a warrior with a power as immense as Yue Yang, even warriors who were Innate Level 3 and above all had territories corresponding to their own powers.

"The Sea Clan had dominated the Boundless Ocean for 6000 years. They have definitely scoured through the whole seabed. It seems very unlikely that there are still undiscovered Meteor Shower Pearls." Yue Yang wasn't very optimistic with this point.

"In any case, we still have nothing to do, right? This Meteor Shower Ocean is so beautiful, why don't you bring it down?" Phoenix Fairy Beauty wanted to persuade Yue Yang to conquer this place. She planned to have him give the Meteor Shower Ocean to her as dowry in the future.

“The Heaven Realm is more beautiful than this.” Yue Yang laughed out loud.

He liked Meteor Shower Ocean, but there was no need to be anxious about this at this time. He still had an Ocean Empress to scheme against now.

After he managed to make Hai Ying Wu the Ocean Empress, wouldn't all that Hai Ying Wu owns become his, too? Expanding the family business was a good thing, but there would be more problems. Currently, Yue Yang only wanted to chase girls. He didn't care about territories. As long as he had power, even if he didn't want it, other people would voluntarily offer him their territories for his acceptance.

Yue Yang actually really had a plan to attack the Sea Clan. Of course, the first target he had to deal with was the Black Hell King.

After he finished discussing the terms with Dragon Emperor, Emperor of the Underworld, Sky Execution, Baruth and the others, Yue Yang would make an alliance with them and completely eliminate the Black Hell King, making him unable to recover for eternity. Before coming to the Boundless Ocean, Yue Yang had already sent letters to a few big bosses, stating clearly the division of benefits and inviting them for an alliance. In any case, he didn't mind giving some people some soup when he was eating his noodles.

Otherwise, it would be difficult to make an alliance to fight against the Scarlet Emperor in the future!

“I am really looking forward to the Heaven Realm!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty giggled and didn’t pursue the matter any further.

In the teleportation portal, a bunch of red-robed slaves kneeled at two sides.

All of them, not even one exception, were Clown Fishmen with beautiful appearances.

The Clown Fishmen was actually a clan filled with beautiful people. There were many beautiful and handsome Clown Fishmen. Many of these Clown Fishmen who were born as slaves obtained the favours of several Sea Clan Clan Leaders who owned them. One of the special abilities that Clown Fishmen had, that made some evil warriors fond of them, was their ability to transform. Under the right condition, they could transform to either be a man or a woman.

Of course, the Clown Fishmen were not the only race in amongst the Sea Clans to have this kind of transformation power. There were dozens more clans who possessed such abilities.

However, there were not many clans that had beautiful and handsome appearances. In terms of appearances, these clans did not meet the tastes criteria of these evil warriors.

Hence, the other clans were not as popular as Clown Fishmen slaves.

“Welcome, Countess. I am Empress Jellyfish’s ambassador who has been appointed to welcome you.” The official that Empress Jellyfish had appointed was an Innate Level 6 Elder Xing Pan. In Yue Yang’s eyes, this fellow looked like an octopus.

“Jie Wei pays her respect to the Empress.” The Countess bowed deeply, respectfully returning the politeness to show her respect to Empress Jellyfish.

Who would have thought that the first to betray the Sea Clan, and the first to draw Yue Yang, their mortal enemy, was actually the Countess Jie Wei, who was so respectful to Empress Jellyfish?

Yue Yang walked forward together with the Countess. Along the side of the pathway towards Empress Jellyfish Meteor Shower Palace, he saw many oddly shaped sea creatures from different clans. Furthermore, every single one of them was extremely powerful. It looked like all these sea creatures were the elites that Empress Jellyfish had invited or picked out herself. In front of the palace, Yue Yang saw different Clan Leaders of various domains. There was the Walrus King with his tusks protruding out, there was an obese Dugong Elder, there was the Lionhead Queen with special stone-like characteristics, and there was also a Devil Duchess who possessed a huge fleshy wings, that was not used to fly but to control electricity...

Every single one of them was an Innate Ranker, and all of them were Innate Level 5 and above.

However, they did not join the Innate Alliance.

They only formed the Sea Clan Council of Elders, and then they spread out to dominate various ocean domains on the seventh floor of Tong Tian Tower and above, becoming the ruler of that ocean domain.

The treasures left behind by the fallen Heaven Realm warriors made the Sea Clan gain a huge advantage and rise abruptly in power. Even the Winged Clan of the Guang Ming Continent, the Underworld Clan of the Darkness Continent, and the Eastern Goblin Tribe who were known for being the strongest in the whole of Tong Tian Tower, every one of them weren't able to produce so many Innate Rankers in such a short period of time.

In the Underwater Graveyard, Yue Yang had exterminated dozens of Sea Clan Innates. He initially thought their power would be greatly weakened.

Who would have thought that today, even those old fellows who came for the secret meeting numbered in the twenties.

He couldn't help but sweat.

No wonder the Ocean Emperor was put in such great pressure. It turned out that there were so many strong experts in the Sea Clan.

“Obtaining the remnants of Heaven Realm Warriors' powers, the Sea Clan indeed have many Innate Rankers. But that's nothing

much, because they didn't become Innates through their own cultivation. Not only are their powers weaker than those Innates, who became Innate by training hard on their own, it would also be difficult for them to level up. Look at the Abyss Manatee. These Heaven Realm beasts are born strong originally. But we could even kill them easily now. Their powers only increased from the outside, and it would only be beneficial to them at the beginning. In the future, when they weren't able to improve, they would just be trash in the end!" Phoenix Fairy Beauty completely looked down on the Sea Clan warriors.

"Beauty, that's because you are talented! Normal people don't have talent, if they are not able to improve no matter how hard they train by themselves, of course they would hope for a fortunate encounter." Yue Yang secretly sweat.

He wouldn't say anything else, but just by looking at those elders in the Soaring Dragon Continent. They dreamed of levelling up to Innate Rank to the point that they were borderline crazy.

If they could choose between levelling up to Innate and be stuck at that level or slowly level up and spend 100-200 years training, until they reach Innate in their twilight years, if these choices were made available to those elders in Soaring Dragon Continent, 90% of them would definitely choose the former.

If they didn't want to level up to an Innate, they wouldn't have gone through Yue Yang's Blood Awakening

One sentence, everyone wants to become Innate, it was just a matter of whether they had the opportunity to.

Empress Jellyfish sent out her ambassador to invite each Clan Elder to enter.

All the others such as companions or trusted aids, they were definitely asked to stay outside.

Before Countess Jie Wei entered the Meteor Shower Palace, she glanced intentionally or otherwise towards Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty. Yue Yang understood what she meant. She hoped that Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty who didn't have the qualifications to enter the secret door to be careful so as not to reveal their identities.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty smiled slightly.

Yue Yang also nodded. In any case, everyone that was staying outside were all either Sea Clan Generals or the Clan Leader's trusted aids. They were all not close to each other and seemed to not get along well. Furthermore, all the Sea Generals outside were all Innates, what could they do? Yue Yang could kill them with just his finger, hence he wasn't worried at all about their identities being discovered. Of course, Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty didn't want to cause trouble and quietly withdrew from the crowd, maintaining a distance with the rest of the people.

Chang Wen and Yin Ci didn't know that these two were fakes, they even voluntarily introduced a few Sea Clan Generals who had quite an amicable relationship with their clans. Maybe there would be a chance for them to work together in the future.

This really made Yue Yang speechless.

He hastily replied a few sentence, and then stayed quiet.

“Humph.” A Sea Urchin Man stormed away, angered by Yue Yang’s arrogance. However, his sworn enemy, the Starfish General, had actually came over and took the initiative to shake Yue Yang’s hands: “I have admired General Ni Ji’s great reputation for a long while. Now that I have seen you, you are indeed extraordinary. As a fellow Carnivorous Echinoderm warrior, I really despise those useless Ocean Hedgehog and other clans related to them... Let’s not care about those fools who reproduce like infectious diseases. Those fellows and sea cucumbers are the shame of our Echinoderm family! Aha, turns out General Ni Ji also had a Sea Cucumber Beast, it is so cute. Yes, the biggest contribution of the Sea Cucumbers, other than their flesh, is to become an ornamental pet... My name is Li Wan, I am the first-ranked General of Countess Yan!”

“Not bad, nice to meet you too.” Yue Yang looked very courteous on the outside as he shook his hand, but he was fuming inside. Inside, Yue Yang raged about how this fellow was not a Starfish, he was a parrot!

“Meow, meow meow?” Hui Tai Lang who was disguised as Sea Cucumber tried to make fun of this parrot.

“Your Sea Cucumber Beast can actually talk? So clever! Seems like this Sea Cucumber has the makings of a Holy-ranked Beast!”

Starfish General Li Wan praised Hui Tai Lang excitedly, trying to flatter Yue Yang, making Hui Tai Lang arched its eyebrows in amusement.

“...” Yue Yang was speechless. Although Sea Clan’s beasts were not exactly smart, he didn’t need to have such an exaggerated reaction, right?

If it wasn’t for the sake of entering the secret door, Yue Yang wouldn’t even bother to care about this trash’s talk.

Inside the secret door of the Sea Clan, would there still be Heaven Realm warriors?

Or maybe, there were a few Abyss Manatees locked inside?

Chapter 566 – Empress Jellyfish

Under the torture of the Starfish General Li Wan the chatterbox's unending chatter, Yue Yang almost went crazy.

Compared to him, the talkative Fatty Hai was practically a mute.

Turns out no matter what world we were in, Tang Seng exists... Yue Yang thought of sewing this fellow's mouth with needle and thread several times, but he restrained himself in the end. If he did something, he would not be able to obtain the treasure inside the secret door. He had endured it for so long anyway, if he didn't persist until the end and went back to Soaring Dragon Continent empty handed, he really wouldn't do himself justice.

With regards to Starfish General's chatter, Yue Yang used one of the noise cancelling skill: He pretended that the Starfish General was a cicade buzzing on a tree.

“Just wait. Just wait until I come out of the secret door. I will definitely sew your mouth up.” Yue Yang decided in his heart. Although he was ignoring the Starfish General, this Li Wan didn't seem to have any intention of leaving. He was actually showing interest in Hui Tai Lang, conversing happily.

“Heehee.” Phoenix Fairy Beauty giggled happily as she comforted Yue Yang with a few words. Due to their fake identities, she wasn't able to rescue him from trouble, she could only wait quietly for the Countess to come out.

“You are such a clever Sea Cucumber, oh yes, I’ve never seen a Sea Cucumber cleverer than you. Did you know that I was originally very disappointed with the Sea Cucumber Clan because they are simply too foolish. They never strive to improve, and they are very lazy. They never participated in any banquets, unless they are in the form of a delicacy, served on a plate. If only in the Sea Cucumber Clan, there is just one as smart as you in ten thousand, we will all be proud of the Sea Cucumber Clan. As an Echinoderm, I couldn’t raise my head normally, because sea urchins and sea cucumbers are simply too disappointing. Amongst the Echinoderm family, only us, the starfishes could make our family proud...” Starfish General poured out his bitter misgivings to Hui Tai Lang, and Hui Tai Lang replied him with several foreign languages, e.g. meow meow, woof woof, awoo, squeak squeak, chirp chirp, etc.

Under the Starfish General’s unceasing torrent of words, time slowly passed by the seconds.

Finally, the Meteor Shower Palace gates opened.

The Sea Clan Council of Elders meeting had ended.

The crowd of Sea Clan Clan Leaders walked out in a line. The Countess seemed to be worrying about something as she was the last to come out.

“What’s wrong?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty was disguised as the Countess’ younger sister, so it was natural for her to come up to her and ask. As for Yue Yang, who was disguised as General Ni Ji, he also took this chance to escape from Li Wan the chatterbox.

“Empress Jellyfish suggested for all Clan Leaders to enter the secret door altogether... After a round of discussion amongst the Council of Elders, more than half of the Elder agreed.” The Countess looked at Yue Yang and whispered, “I have a bad feeling about this, I hope it’s just a false alarm.”

“It’s okay, we will ensure your safety.” Yue Yang didn’t say that because he was disguised as General Ni Ji, it was also his word as the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master.

“To enter the secret door, other than the 3 Seal Keys, we also need the fresh blood of 1000 Rankers.” The Countess lowered her voice, her tone carrying an irrepressible anger: “I initially didn’t know that it had to be like that. I thought I only need to give my Moon Key. Who would have thought that Empress Jellyfish still wanted the fresh blood of 1000 rankers. Even if 600 of them are captives, in order to barely scrape by the numbers, dozens of clans have been killed by Empress Jellyfish, almost to the point of extinction. I think it will be difficult for the Sea Clan to restore their original glory even after 300 years.”

“The fresh blood of 1000 rankers?” Yue Yang apprehensive, wasn’t the secret door a teleportation portal? Why would they need a blood sacrifice?

“We need the blood of 1000 Level 6 Elders and above. In order to fulfill the blood sacrifice requirement. All clans would have to take part, including us, the Butterfly Fishmen. Empress Jellyfish had actually gathered some Ocean Knights who had no hope of reaching the same level as an Ocean General. Now, they have all

become blood sacrifices. The most detestable thing is that none of Empress Jellyfish's personal bodyguard was offered as a sacrifice." The Countess was especially not happy about this point.

"Distinguished guests... it is almost the meeting time. All Clan Leaders, please proceed to the Ocean Palace at once."

Elder Xing Pan's voice resounded from far away.

The Clan Leaders who were still discussing heatedly were now in a sticky situation. They couldn't do anything other than choosing their most trusted aide as they enter the Ocean Palace.

Everyone knew that opening the secret door together was merely Empress Jellyfish's scheme, but nobody dared to publicly rebel against her. After all, Empress Jellyfish was someone whom even Guan Lan couldn't subdue. Not only did she possess an extremely strong power, she was also extremely cunning and had the backing of her strong clan. Behind her, there were at least ten Ocean Elders who possessed great power. She also had the support of the whole Sea Clan Royal Family. Furthermore, she also possessed the Neptune Blade that the Ocean God left behind. It became the scepter that allows her to order the other Sea Clans.

Yue Yang followed the Countess quickly, pretending to be a loyal general.

He lowered his head and secretly observed the situation.

In front of the Ocean God Palace, the place which was built as a memorial for the Abyss Manatee, Yue Yang finally saw Empress Jellyfish, the legendary powerful woman.

Her forehead was high and her gaze was deep, her features were distinct and her appearance exudes an extraordinary grandeur. Even if she wasn't wearing a crown or wearing grand and beautiful Empress' robes, even if she was wearing a normal slave's clothing, it wouldn't be able to mask her powerful, charisma that was so strong it was on the verge of eruption. This woman was born to be a person of power. No matter who, instead of sighing at her beauty, everyone who saw her would first be shocked by her majesty... Such majesty would usually only be seen in men, but the majesty that Empress Jellyfish exudes was in no way inferior to any man in this world.

Yue Yang immediately thought of a woman's name, Wu Ze Tian.

Maybe this Empress Jellyfish was the same kind of woman as the one and only female emperor in the history of China. There had been no one before her, and no one after her.

They both had that domineering aura that a man might not even have. They could easily suppress and control the officials under them. Other than being extremely wise, they were also ambitious and extraordinary. Becoming enemies with such a woman would be extremely dangerous, unless one could crush her in one move.

"Distinguished lords, the Ocean Emperor has passed away early, and strong enemies are everywhere. For the revival of the Sea Clan, I have no other option but to go all out, thus I have proposed

this plan. I hope my lords will put the Sea Clan's interests first, and help this weak woman to restore the Sea Clan's former glory." Empress Jellyfish didn't treat her subordinates condescendingly, on the contrary, she was extremely humble. It was as if the Clan Leaders who didn't agree to help her were bullying her.

"This woman is very impressive..." Phoenix Fairy Beauty secretly said to Yue Yang, praising her continuously.

The most impressive thing about Empress Jellyfish was actually her hidden strength.

On the surface, Empress Jellyfish was a Level 8 Innate.

However, with Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, Yue Yang could clearly see her hidden strength. This Empress Jellyfish was actually Innate Level 10. She also had many treasures on her body. It was no wonder that even the extremely strong Ocean Emperor Guan Lan wasn't able to overpower her.

Facing against this opponent, even though she was a woman, her threat level was almost as high as the Black Hell King.

If he didn't kill her, she would cause a lot of harm in the future.

Yue Yang's killing intent was slightly aroused. In order to not let his killing intent leak out and alarm Empress Jellyfish, he quickly lowered his head and looked away from her.

“Sister Jie Wei, come over here! Although General Ni Ji is extremely powerful, you don’t have many guards guarding you. There are many unknown dangers when we enter the secret door. Sister Jie Wei, you are as delicate as a golden branch. If even a single strand of hair of you is hurt, it will all be my fault.” Empress Jellyfish approached the Countess personally and took her towards her personal bodyguards. She also glanced subtly at Yue Yang.

“Thank you, your majesty.” The Countess clearly understood that she had become a hostage, but she had no way to retaliate.

If it wasn’t for the fact that she still had the secret trump cards of Yue Clan Third Young Master and Sky Law, she would probably meet a tragic end today. When the countess thought of this, she couldn’t help but to break out in cold sweat.

Yue Yang quickly lowered his head. Fortunately, after going through the Death Arena and the battle in Heaven Realm, Yue Yang had slowly begun to understand the ‘Innate Elder’s Heart’. He had also gained confidence because he had killed Heaven Rank warriors before. Now, even though he was facing against an extremely formidable enemy like the Empress Jellyfish, he was able to conceal himself smoothly.

Of course, ultimately, he would still need to rely on his Counterfeit Inherent Skill to fool Empress Jellyfish.

Otherwise, with just the Fantasy Pearl to change his appearance, a sharp and clever woman like Empress Jellyfish would have been suspicious from the start.

Ocean God Palace.

This was the Ocean God Palace that was built as a memorial to the Guardian God of the Sea Clan, the Abyss Manatee. There was a gigantic statue of an Abyss Manatee inside the Palace. It looked like it was one level higher than the two Abyss Manatees that Yue Yang had captured. There were crowns on its heads, and it was holding giant blades in its hands. The statues looked so real, as if it was alive. It looked extremely magnificent. On the sides of great hall, there were statues of Sea Clan Innates who had already passed away, each taking different stances.

The statue of Ocean Emperor Guan Lan was also amongst them, but he was only placed at the eighth place from the entrance, on the left side of the door. If it wasn't because Yue Yang recognised him, he wouldn't notice this Ocean Emperor.

In the Inner Hall of the Ocean God Palace, there was a big, white wall.

When Empress Jellyfish's subordinates smashed the wall, a dark passage appeared.

The whole passage was constructed with a special Heaven Realm Meteorite. Even the strong Sea Clan guards who were able to crush the wall easily were not able to budge these stones. When Empress Jellyfish tried to slash it with Neptune Blade with all of her strength, she was only able to create a tiny scratch.

Seeing this, the onlookers couldn't help to be shocked.

The secret door can only be opened when the Sun, Moon and Meteor Key are all present. Currently, I only have the Sun Key. Sister Jie Wei and Sister Yan, please help me open the secret door together.” Empress Jellyfish didn't have the Sun Key at first, as the Sun Key originally belonged to the Clown Fishmen Elder Ai Shi. However, after Ai Shi passed away, her descendants all became vassals of the Sea Clan Royal Family. Hence, it was obvious that they were not able to keep the Sun Key, such an important artifact anymore.

“We will follow Empress' wishes.” the Countess took out the brilliant 'Moon Key'. Together with Countess Yan who took out her 'Meteor Key', the three of them proceeded towards the secret door.

A loud rumble resounded in front of them, and the ground started to shake.

The previously dark passage was suddenly illuminated with light.

The radiant light shone brightly for a long time.

After around 1 minute, the light disappeared, and the scene that appeared in front of everyone was wilderness covered in snow.

The snowy wilderness and the passage where everyone was at were only separated by a door. There was a gigantic metal door

densely covered in runes which was widely open. Inside there were three runic circle sacrificial platforms. There was a small key hole in each platforms for Sun, Moon and Meteor Keys. The three runic circles were emitting red light, which made others feel uncomfortable as they seemed to be exuding some kind of death omen and blood.

When Elder Xing Pan the octopus, waved his hand, two Ocean Knights threw a trembling Clown Fishmen inside the secret door.

Boom!

The Clown Fishmen that was thrown inside didn't even have the chance to fall onto the ground. His body exploded in mid-air.

It was obvious that there was some kind of restrictions that prohibits life forms from entering.

Chapter 567 – The Mysterious Sea Dragon King

Empress Jellyfish didn't seem to care about the death of the Clown Fishmen.

She turned around and sent everyone a strict look.

When she looked at Yue Yang with such a strict look, Yue Yang felt like he was seeing a female tyrant that was capable of killing people like scything flax. His heart felt cold. This Empress Jellyfish's heart was even more merciless than the Black Hell King. Although the Black Hell King was evil, always betraying his friends and hit a person when they are down, he still treated his subordinates well. When the War Tiger of the East and Fierce Tooth of the North committed self-detonation, Yue Yang could see that the Black Hell King felt very grieved. However, he was forced to do this and wasn't able to reverse the situation.

In comparison, Empress Jellyfish who seemed apathetic to her subordinates life and death was more suitable as a ruler compared to Black Hell King.

After glancing at everyone, Empress Jellyfish realised that no one dared to make eye contact with her. Her expressions turned gentler and she purposely lowered her body to explain to the Clan Leaders who were completely silent: "Blood Sacrifice is the secret method passed down by our ancestors and the only way to enter the secret door. Although it pained me to lose our clans people, we still need to offer blood sacrifice."

Elder Xing Pan immediately waved his hand when he heard her declare her position.

He ordered the blood sacrifice to start.

Countless Ocean Knights appeared, carrying big buckets of fresh blood and poured them into the the secret door made of meteorite iron. The secret door begun to absorb blood. Other than some blood splatters, the door quickly absorbed all the blood.

It slowly turned red colour.

Blazing red like fire.

The three Rune Circles on the platform that was shining red just now, slowly turned blue.

A few elite Ocean Knights threw in another Clown Fishmen slave. The poor fishman fell on the snowy ground with a loud thump. Although he was thrown with a force enough to break his bones, he didn't immediately explode and die. When he realised he had escaped death, he almost choked himself on tears. The other sacrificial Clown Fishmen waiting outside the door also cried with him, as they were all sufferer of the same fate.

“Distinguished lords, please follow me to restore the Sea Clan's glory!” When Empress Jellyfish saw that the secret door was successfully opened, she couldn't help but to be pleased.

She personally held onto the two important figures, Countess Jie Wei's and Countess Yan's hands, and entered the secret door.

Countess Jie Wei turned around.

She looked a little worried as she looked at Yue Yang.

When she saw that Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty was still there, she immediately felt hugely relieved.

This action had almost alerted Empress Jellyfish's attention, so Countess Jie Wei immediately lowered her head, afraid that Empress Jellyfish would notice that something was amiss.

The inside and outside of the Metal Door was worlds apart. Inside, it was a world filled with snowstorm and chilly wind. The temperature was even colder than any other environment Yue Yang had visited before.

However, the temperature was not the deadliest threat inside. When everyone stepped on the snowy ground, before 5 minutes even passed, monsters started appearing amidst the blizzard. They were all semi-transparent Wind Goblins that were around ten meters tall. The upper half of their body was semi-transparent humanoid while the lower half of their body was a hurricane. Strangely, they did not touch the ground at all, they were completely floating.

A dozen over Wind Goblin appeared and slowly surrounded them from afar. They did not immediately attack.

These Wind Goblin were not afraid of sharp blade attacks, they were also very fast.

If any warriors below Innate came across these Wind Goblins, it would be extremely difficult for them to defeat these monsters.

“These Goblins are only Normal Level 8, there’s no need to be afraid.” Elder Xing Pan raised his right hand, and a fish-like image appeared on top of his head. The huge fish head opened its mouth and released a water dragon. It then quickly disappeared.

The Water Dragon that was controlled by Elder Xing Pan swept through the Wind Goblin’s body.

The Water Dragon was absorbed by the Wind Goblin’s tornado body and disappeared.

However, as the temperature was freezing and the Wind Goblin’s body was filled with water, it quickly turned into ice, unable to turn anymore.

One by one, the Wind Goblins collapsed on the snow. Countless elite Ocean Knights rushed in and easily mowed them to the ground. Yue Yang was secretly impressed with this move. This octopus was really good, he was really an expert in using water techniques. At first Yue Yang thought that he would summon a

bolt of lightning to destroy the Wind Goblin's core. Unexpectedly, Elder Xing Pan had made use of the geographical advantage and simply used water to freeze the Wind Goblins, making them an easy target for the Ocean Knights to kill.

This way had not only increase the chances of killing their enemies, it could also increase the troops morale.

One stone kills two birds.

“All Innates continue to march forward, Lesser Innates please stay behind. Elder Xing Pan, please lead the group slowly forward.” Empress Jellyfish swept a glance through everyone. Yue Yang thought that she was looking at him, so he quickly looked down and acted like “I am a Lesser Innate.”

The Countess didn't dare to look at Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty anymore this time. She respectfully followed Empress Jellyfish and marched forward.

Over 20 Innate Rankers walked forward. Leaving Elder Xing Pan to lead the army.

Elder Xing Pan led the elite Ocean Knights forward, followed by 20 over close aides of the Clan Leaders and the serving clans like the Clown Fishmen.

Why was it arranged this way?

Yue Yang frowned, feeling that something was amiss.

“What is this Empress Jellyfish up to?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty was also suspicious, but she couldn’t tell what was amiss.

“Let’s see.” Yue Yang thought that Empress Jellyfish definitely wasn’t able to see through him, otherwise she would definitely not open the secret door and allowed him to enter. Most importantly, Empress Jellyfish’s lover, the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King, who was preparing to steal the title of Ocean Emperor, had not entered yet.

After the party marched forward for 10 minutes, the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King finally appeared.

He stood in front of 5 Innates and march forward proudly.

If one were to compare the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King and Ocean Emperor Guan Lan, based on looks alone, the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King was slightly more handsome. He had the qualities of a pretty boy. This Nine-headed Sea Goblin King had a handsome countenance and eyes sharp like lightning. However, his forehead looked slightly gloomy and sinister, one would be able to tell that he was not a kind person in one glance. His hair was his distinguishing feature. They were meticulously combed into small braids, Yue Yang thought they were quite similar to the braids that black people had. The Nine-headed Sea Goblin King’s hair color was similar to the Empress Jellyfish, it was golden.

Although it wasn’t of the highest quality, the Nine-headed Sea

Goblin King was still draped in a high quality Holy-ranked Armor. Furthermore, his armor was very unique. There were 4 snakes on each of his shoulders.

On his chest, there was also a bust of Sea Snake with long horns on his chest.

Maybe he only got his title of Nine-headed Sea Goblin King because of this Sea Snake Holy-ranked Armor!

Yue Yang didn't really know the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King well, he only heard of him once from Hai Ying Wu and the Shark King.

This Nine-headed Sea Goblin King was said to be Empress Jellyfish's lover and also the Lord of the Dark Ocean in the Ninth Floor of Tong Tian Tower. Due to the Ocean Emperor's pressure last time, he almost never did anything in Tong Tian Tower. The only thing he was more prominent for was when he was fighting for the Eight Ocean King's position, he had killed his cousin Hai Mo Yu in public, thus earning him the position in the Eight Kings.

Eight Great Ocean Kings, four of the Ocean Kings were Ocean Emperor's trusted aides, and they were the Shark King, Cuttlefish King, Jellyfish King and Manta Ray King.

Now, other than Shark King, all the other three Kings had already died in battle.

Only four Kings were left, and they were internal royals.

These four kings were controlled under Empress Jellyfish, and they were the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King, Sea Snake King, Sea Turtle King and the most secretive and low-key Sea Dragon King.

“This old man greets Sea Goblin King.” Elder Xing Pan was an expert in diplomacy. He personally welcomed the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King.

“Elder Xing Pan, no need to stand on ceremony...” Nine-headed Sea Goblin wanted the Ocean Emperor’s position, so he would definitely need the support of an elder like Elder Xing Pan, hence he was particularly intimate. When he saw that Elder Xing Pan was the only Innate, he frowned and asked, “Have Sea Snake King, Sea Turtle King and Sea Dragon King arrived? They would usually race to be the first, but they are actually cowering in fear now. It’s really too much.”

“Sea Dragon King has already explained to Empress Jellyfish personally that he will not be joining on the secret door expedition.” Elder Xing Pan chuckled.

“Humph, his Sea Dragon title is really just for show. He is actually just a coward.” Nine-headed Sea Goblin King laughed mockingly.

“Who’s a coward?” Beside the secret door, two figures appeared. The one who was leading was a fat guy wearing tortoise-shaped armor and the other one was a man who had a snake tail on his

back and a pitchfork on his hand. With his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, Yue Yang found out that although the fatty wearing tortoise armor was an Innate Level 8, he was not as powerful as the Shark King. However, the Snakeman who was holding the Platinum-ranked Sea Pitchfork would probably be able to fight the Shark King on equal grounds.

“The cowards are those who asked who are the cowards! My two uncles, has old age caught up with you, so much that you cannot walk anymore? Why did you only come now?” Nine-headed Sea Goblin King didn’t seem to be respectful towards these two seniors.

“We’re still fine, we are not that old yet. Otherwise, how else would we be able to make it here in time to join the fun?” The fatty wearing Platinum-ranked Tortoise Armor guffawed out loud.

“Stop talking nonsense with him, let’s move!” The Sea Snake King who was carrying the Platinum-ranked Sea Pitchfork had an extremely bad relationship with the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King. They just couldn’t see each other eye to eye.

Yue Yang really wanted to make his move then and there, and kill all these fellows in front of him.

Then he wanted to chase after Empress Jellyfish and exterminate all the people in her group. Finally, he would close the secret door and slowly look for treasures inside... Just as he was thinking of this, suddenly there was a loud noise from outside of the secret door. The loud noises continued on, and finally, a scene that made everyone gape in shock appeared. The secret door that was opened

just now suddenly shut closed. When the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King sprinted and finally reached the secret door, it had completely closed.

What was happening?

Was there a spy amongst the internal Sea Clan Leaders?

Or was there a plot going on? Yue Yang looked at Phoenix Fairy Beauty, but she only shook her head, showing that she still couldn't understand the situation.

However, Yue Yang had already experienced a terrifying scene like the one on the death arena before, so his mental state had already become as hard as steel. He completely didn't think of it as a big deal. At the most, they could use the Three Realm Compass to return back to the Soaring Dragon Continent. How could a mere secret door be able to trap him?

That would be a big joke!

However, he was a little curious. Why would the Empress Jellyfish allow such a mistake like closing the secret door. Could it be that it was on purpose?

“We need an explanation...” Sea Snake King and Sea Turtle King angrily looked at the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King. They suspect that their nephew was the one who did it.

“My two uncles, are you so old that you have gone senile? While it’s true that I wanted to become Ocean Emperor, I’m not a fool. I need many people’s support to become Ocean Emperor. It’s okay if you don’t support me, but you don’t even trust this nephew of yours? If I’m the one who did it, would it even give me any kind of benefit? I can guarantee that this is the Sea Dragon King’s doing! I already told the Empress since the beginning, that fellow is an expert in enduring. He was also colluding with the Black Hell King, so he needed to carefully and quietly plan his next steps. However, the Empress actually told me that Sea Dragon King was extremely loyal, and that we couldn’t accuse him of something easily. Now, we really fell into his trap! The moment this secret door closed, we will all be trapped inside. And the Sea Dragon King will be able to seize power on the outside!” Nine-headed Sea Goblin King was extremely enraged as he howled out.

“What? It was him?” Sea Turtle King and Sea Snake King did not dare believe what they were hearing. How could the most low-key Sea Dragon King do this? Could it be that his normal subdued yet calm state and inability to handle government affairs were all pretend?

Chapter 568 – Beheading Moon Chains and Prison Dragon Pillar

“During the instant when the secret door closed, I saw his unique figure, that ugly face, that huge burly body, that ridiculous meat wing and that holy-ranked shield. There should be no other ranker who looks the same as him. It was him who stirred the betrayal of the Clown Fishmen! I also saw the leader of the Clown Fishmen ‘Qiao Diao’ killing the guarding Ocean Knights..... Without the Sea Dragon King’s support, how could those gutless Clown Fishmen even think of betrayal?” The Clown Fishmen following them all kneeled down in fright when they heard the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King’s words. The kowtowed deeply as they shook like leaves.

The leader Qiao Diao was indeed outside of the secret door, but he was Empress Jellyfish’s trusted aide, how could he turn traitor?

Even if he betrayed her, it was impossible for him to ally with the Sea Dragon King.

The Sea Dragon King was the Clown Fishmen’s natural predator. He would eat both males and females of the clan. Being loyal to him was the same as giving him the authority to let him toy around with males and females of the clan, which was the same as humiliating the clan!

However, because the Sea Goblin King Had nailed this fact, the pitiful Clown Fishmen slaves could not even retort. They could only kneel down and beg for forgiveness, hoping that the furious Innate royals would generously spare them.

“.....” Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty looked at each other.

The Nine-headed Sea Goblin King previously had the chance to charge out of the door, but he was afraid of the Sea Dragon King's ambush so he pretended to be too late.

From this point, it was easy to determine that the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King was actually a coward that was afraid of adventure. He was not the kind of person to accomplish big things. Compared to the Ocean Emperor Guan Lan , he was simply not on the same level.

What was suspicious about this was why Empress Jellyfish fall for the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King.

Based on what kind of woman Empress Jellyfish was, she would not even be attracted to a gutless pretty boy.

Could it be that the Abyss Manatee did not die yet and was actually sealed inside the secret door? And Empress Jellyfish's main goal was to search for that Abyss Manatee?

These unpredictable situation made Yue Yang filled with doubts and suspicion. Even Phoenix Fairy Beauty was very interested about all this. She felt that she would be able to dig up a bit of gossip inside the Sea Clan while searching for treasures. Being fond of gossip was a woman's nature.

“There are changes in the Sea Clan and the secret door closed.” Yue Yang used the Three Colors map to send this information to the Shark King while everybody was still in confusion.

“Although the secret door closed, you don’t have to rush in writing a will right?” The Starfish General saw that Yue Yang was writing so he rushed over to comfort him: “General Ni Ji, even though we are trapped here, we should still maintain our confidence. As generals, we should serve as an example for others to follow and take the initiative to raise the troop’s morale.. We need to boost their morale now that they seemed to be stuck in quicksand. With this many Innate Rankers here, there should be no problems. We should continue to press on and search for treasures. And at the end of the journey, we must grandly lead all of our subordinates back to our beautiful country! Achoo, achoo! Sorry, I seemed to have caught a cold. Right, where was I?”

“Woof.” Hui Tai Lang answered.

“It looks like you are quite calm! Good boy, as Echidnoderms, I am proud of you! Unfortunetely you are only a Sea Cucumber and a pet, otherwise, I beleive we could be good friends.” Starfish General begun to chatter with Hui Tai Lang.

“.....” Yue Yang was extremely speechless.

One of Nine-headed Sea Goblin King’s subordinate quickly chased after Empress Jellyfish to report the matter about the secret door closing.

After 10 minutes, Emress Jellyfish calmly returned without any changes in her expression. Even Yue Yang was able to perceive a 'this is just about right' thinking from the depths of her eyes.

She inspected the secret door and softly comforted everyone. Expressing that there was a way to leave and there was no need to worry.

At the same time, she magnanimously forgave the Clown Fishmen's betrayal.

The Clown Fishmen shed tears of gratitude as they cried.

Yue Yang was able to conclude that this Empress Jellyfish has problems because she was able to stay calm even though the secret door had been closed. Moreover, she continued to lift the seal on the Heaven Realm Innates. Could it be that she had the confidence to reopen the door that needed the blood sacrifice of 1000 people? Or could it be that the Sea Dragon King was her true ally and the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King was only for show?

As Yue Yang deliberated, a blood-curdling scream was heard from far away.

The 20+ Sea Clan Innate in front were all injured. Could it be that the Heaven Realm Rankers had been freed?

Empress Jellyfish, Nine-headed Sea Goblin King, Sea Turtle King, Sea Snake King and Elder Xing Pan moved to the front. Large

quantities of Ocean Knights also followed after while Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty sneaked into the group to enjoy the scene.

On the snow field, a puddle of fresh blood shocked the eyes of everybody in front.

The Innate subordinate that Nine-headed Sea Goblin King had sent to report had tragically died. Not even a whole corpse was left by him as his entire body exploded into pieces. The subordinate had become minced meat and the only thing left that could be recognized was his right hand. Nine-headed Sea Goblin King's complexion changed. He furiously threw down the right hand and shouted upwards as he increased his power to Innate Level 8. He prepared to face the enemy..... Sea Turtle King and Sea Snake King also reacted as they followed suite and increased their powers to Innate Level 3. Although it was not that high, it was still able to instantly kill enemies. The attacker was at least an Innate Level 8 ranker. It was also possible for them to be that Heaven Realm Rankers that had been freed from the seal and attacked everyone.

"That's simply not it." Yue Yang secretly told Phoenix Fairy Beauty: "This is a type of self-destructing beast. This is the result of it exploding inside of this guy's body."

"Exploding Demon Parasite. I have heard of this beast before." Phoenix Fairy Beauty was preplexed: "Although its power is strong, it needed the owner to plant it inside the enemy's body. It is simply hard to achieve and only an idiot would stare at the enemy as they planted it inside the body."

"What if the person who planted it was someone he never puts

his guard on? Or what if the person who planted it was stronger than him and capable of suppressing him?” Yue Yang laughed as if he had guessed the truth.

Naturally, he was still slightly far from the actual truth.

The thing he needs to do now was to observe the entire process and timely make his move.

As the wind cried out, spreading panic to the soldiers and dampening the mood, no one dared to speak. The entire place was silent as everyone carefully guarded against the surroundings. They contradictorily relied on their allies as they continued forward. They moved forward to find the Innates and discovered that they stood in front of a giant fort. This fort was made from Heaven Realm Meteorite and incredibly tall.

The pitch-black gate of the fort seemed like a giant monster that can swallow everything.

Because they were anxious about obtaining the treasures that could have been left inside, the brave Seal Captain and the Lobster Clan Leader already went inside.

The only ones remaining were the Jie Wei, Yan, Walrus King, and a Dugong Elder stood outside waiting. The rest of the Innates were also clamoring to enter. The Nine-headed Sea Goblin King was slightly worried, but after seeing Empress Jellyfish did not move, he could only endure his bad temper that was about to erupt.

Yue Yang used his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision to look at Empress Jellyfish's expression and discovered that she was not angry at all but contained a sneering ridicule.

It was as if saying 'nothing can escape me'.

This Empress Jellyfish was that amazing? She could actually control everything?

Yue Yang was still puzzled after much thought.

"Three Sea Kings, will you accompany me to lift the seal on the Heaven Realm Innates or go in to explore the fort?" Empress Jellyfish cordially pulled on Jie Wei and Yan the two contesses: "These two sisters must follow this big sister okay? Otherwise, if some kind of monster pops up, I won't be able to protect you. Let us go. Right, will the two sisters bring their relatives with us?"

After saying this, she intentionally sized up Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty and then looked at Starfish General.

Jie Wei and Yan both quickly expressed that there was no need.

Expecially Countess Jie Wei, who secretly complained, as she was afraid that Empress Jellyfish finding out about Yue Yang's identity..... Bringing Yue Yang was easy to let Empress Jellyfish raise her suspicion. Not bringing him on the other hand was a risk to her safety.

If by some chance that the Heaven Realm Rankers' seal was lifted, who would protect her if they begun a huge massacre without Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty beside her?

"I think we should just bring them, or else other people may say it's my fault." Empress Jellyfish waved his hands and ordered Yue Yang, Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Starfish General, Cutlassfish General and a few other people: "Everyone, bring two buckets of blood and follow me. Pay attention to the places we will pass and move carefully, or else you will meet a tragic end if you step on some kind of mechanism. Elder Xing Pan, lead the Ocean Knights and stay at the door. Pay attention to the movements of monsters. If an enemy appears, immediately warn us. As for the Clown Fishmen camp, follow the original plan and prepare food."

"Yes." Elder Xing Pan was someone Empress Jellyfish trusted the most.

They discovered that the space inside the fort was huge after stepping inside.

Other than spiralling upwards and a huge staircase leading downwards, there were also many main palaces, side palaces, winding corridors and many more. There was even a special teleportation portal inside but it was unknown where it led to. As if she had been here many times, Empress Jellyfish moved with ease as she guided in front. After passing through long hallways and side palaces, they arrived at a place that looked like a martial arts hall. Then, Empress Jellyfish personally moved a statue and pushed the painting behind, exposing a long passage.

There was no light in the passage, but Countess Yan had already summoned a Glowing Sea Snail to light up the entire passage.

After moving in the passage, there was a dueling field the size of a football field.

What made Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty's eye light up was that the rumored sealed Heaven Realm Ranker exists and there was more than one.

On the left side, a Heaven Realm Ranker had both of its hands cuffed. Its body was suspended by long silver chains that were bound to a strange moon in the sky. Naturally, this moon was not real but a high grade holy-ranked artifact shaped like a moon. This was the first time Yue Yang saw this kind of special treasure. Although it was not a divine artifact, it was extremely close to being one. It was like a lesser divine artifact. It was a holy-ranked artifact that was capable of attacking defending and sealing. It made Yue Yang broaden his experience. Compared to the attack oriented God Killing Dagger, this moon-shaped holy rank artifact was clearly much more outstanding.

A holy-ranked artifact that even Heaven Realm Rankers could not break free from?

If he did not personally see it, Yue Yang would not dare believe it.

This was simply the truth and not a mirrage. Moreover, there were two of them..... On the right side was also a Heaven Realm

Ranker that had been bound to a pillar. A dragon was engraved on the pillar with three golden halos on top. It was these three halos that firmly imprisoned the Heaven Realm Ranker who was at Heaven Rank Level 2.

Compared to the Prison Emperor's Seven Star Pillar, the dragon engraved into the pillar seemed like a beast and not a treasure.

It seemed to be alive and linked with the Heaven Realm Ranker on the left side. The three golden halos would also expand and contract based on the enemy's struggle. On one side, it exhausted the enemy's struggling power and on the other it intensified the binding power on the opponent's body making the opponent suffer.

At the same time, the moon shaped holy chain belonged to the Heaven Realm Ranker imprisoned by the pillar. It also followed the will of the owner, pulling up and putting down the enemy from time to time. When the enemy was resting, it would let out electricity and shock the enemy, tormenting the enemy. The two people were imprisoned by the enemy's treasure and neither was willing to let go of the other side as they tormented each other.....

“Beheading Moon Chains and Prison Dragon Pillar? Such ruthless treasures, but the owners are much more ruthless!” Yue Yang was unable to imagine that these two had been like this for the past 6000 years.

How could they endure their days like this?

Chapter 569 – It Is A Sea Cucumber, But It Looked A Little Like A Dog

“Seniors, this junior has come before you by my grandfather’s wishes to listen to your instructions.” Empress Jellyfish humbly paid respect to the two elder.

“You guys will always come once in every thousand years.” The guy imprisoned by the Prison Dragon Pillar and binded with a gold coloured halo light sighed, completely ignoring the stares of 100+ people. He closed his eyes as if there was nobody around, “You don’t have to ask me anymore. Unless that fellow over there dies, I will never go out.”

“I won’t die even if you die. Bei Feng Jia Suo, if you have the capability to do so, let’s waste away 6000 more years. Let’s see who will die first. I, Feng Zhu, am a proud human Ranker. I ranked amongst the top 10 Rankers in the Tong Tian Tower, how would I not be able to take you, a mere disciple of the Central Palace Hall from the Heaven Realm, down? A mere disciple like you is not even worth as much as trash. If it wasn’t because of a little luck that you ended up facing against me, who is the weakest amongst us, how would you be able to live until today? I dare say if you met the Prison Emperor, you’ll definitely be so scared that you’d pee your pants! Did you think the Tong Tian Tower is a place that you guys can come to? This place is our, human race’s glorious courtyard.” The guy that was hung on the Beheading Moon Chains looked very young. If it wasn’t because of his beard that made him look a little mature, people would think that he was a young boy.

“What? You discriminative fellow, am I not human too?” The

guy called Bei Feng Jia Suo was completely driven mad when he heard him.

“That’s different. You are a human that lives in Heaven Realm.” The guy called Feng Zhu shook his head seriously.

He seemed to be very proud of his identity as a human.

It was as if the human race was the most honorable and glorious race.

Towards Bei Feng Jia Suo’s claim that he was also human, Feng Zhu seemed to disagree, his expression was like: “We may have the same roots but we don’t walk the same path.”

Through these two Heaven Rank Innates’ conversation, Yue Yang immediately understood that this was the prolonged war between Heaven Realm Rankers and Human Realm Rankers. Even until 6000 years later, they were still unable to determine the winner. As for how they managed to get each other imprisoned, Yue Yang still didn’t know. It looked like their beasts, skills or artifacts were similar, and their strength was also more or less the same. Maybe they invoked their skills at the same time and imprisoned each other at the same time.

It was just that mutually squandering their energy and time for each other, unwilling to let go of each other until 6000 years, this was something that ordinary people would not be able to do.

These two fellows...

If they weren't mad men, they were paranoids!

“No matter how powerful the Prison Emperor was, he still died in the end. In the end, we, the Central Palace Hall are definitely stronger. Feng Zhu, it's not that I am trying to attack you. Tong Tian Tower has really plummeted. Look at these people, the strongest are merely Innates, none of them are Heaven Rank Innates. 1000 years has passed and none of you humans in the Tong Tian Tower could reach the rank of Innate Elder. If it was in the past, do you think it's possible?” Bei Feng Jia Suo continued to look down on the people around and laughed out loud.

“I definitely don't believe that Prison Emperor has died. You simply don't understand, he's undefeatable.” Feng Zhu wasn't fazed at all, looking like a wise man.

“Then do you think these people who came here lied to you?” Bei Feng Jia Suo asked back.

“You shouldn't talk about ice melting to insects that dies in summer. You simply don't understand what it means to have unparalleled strength. No need to say anymore, I will definitely not let you out. I will definitely not forgive a thief like you who wanted to enter the God's Ruin and claim yourself as human.” Feng Zhu closed his eyes and decided not to speak anymore.

“You damn pig head, I will definitely not let you go too! Death Lightning God's Claw...” Bei Feng Jia Suo angrily released a Silver

Eagle made of lightning.

“Blood Flower Whip!” At the same time, Feng Zhu also summoned a Mourning Ghost holding a blood-coloured whip.

Almost at the same time, the Blood Flower Whip and Death Lightning God’s Claw collided with each other.

Boom!

The clash of the Blood Flower Whip’s and the Death Lightning God’s Claw’s attacks created a shockwave that was enough to blow away warriors below the Innate Rank.

Other than Empress Jellyfish and Nine-headed Goblin King, other Innates couldn’t help but to be pushed a step back. Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty also pretended to not be able to withstand the shock wave and took three steps back, so that their real strength would not be revealed. As for the Starfish General, he was at an even worse state as he was still unable to stop even after stepping seven or eight steps back. His ugly face was coloured in fear.

It was only a shock wave caused by the clash of whiplash and electric blast, but it was enough to push Innate Rankers back.

If these two people regain their freedom, in Tong Tian Tower, who could be their match?

Starfish General didn't understand anything, but Empress Jellyfish was extremely clear. These two Heaven Rank Innates, if they could be of use to the Sea Clan, they would definitely bring the Sea Clan to the top. Other than Zhi Zun and Yue Clan's Third Young Master, there shouldn't be anyone who could match these two, not even the Black Hell King.

As they have been imprisoned here for 6000 years, they only had the power of Heaven Rank Level 2.

If they were allowed to regain their freedom and regain their peak power, Empress Jellyfish believed that they would definitely be Heaven Rank Level 3 and above...

“To hell with it! You actually dared to order your beast to whip me too? I will definitely not let you off! Lightning Claw!”

“Blood Flower Whip...”

Yue Yang watched speechlessly.

The two Heaven Rank Innates in front of him fought like they were kids. They kept whipping and clawing each other in revenge loop.

After a round of fierce battle, the two of them were covered in scars and bruises.

Finally, they were in so much pain that they could only pant.

This, could this be legendary thing called masochism?

Even if they want to fight, they could have waited for their bodies to recover first. Now that they were fighting like this, they were simply masochists!

Yue Yang sweated when he thought this.

Of course, he knew that this conjecture was improbable. A masochist with a twisted heart would never be able to cultivate to become Heaven Rank. There must be a reason why these two kept trying to imprison the other. Furthermore, the reason must not be that simple, not like what they saw on the surface. Yue Yang had a sudden thought; if things wasn't like what it seemed, there must be another truth behind it.

The truth must be related to this meteorite fort. They had not even explored half of this huge fort.

It's real secret was definitely still hidden deeper inside!

“Seniors, both of you are interesting and extraordinary, you are not someone that a vulgar junior like me can fathom. However, please let this junior know if you have any orders.” Empress Jellyfish's target was not to release Bei Feng Jia Suo and Feng Zhu, the two Heaven Rank warriors.

Her motives lie somewhere else.

Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty looked at each other and nodded secretly. Indeed, other than Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo, there was a third warrior sealed in this place.

Rather than saying that Bei Feng Jia Suo and Feng Zhu were keeping each other imprisoned, it could be said that they were watching each other.

These two had stuck to this place even after 6000 years, it seemed like they were here to guard the seal.

From here, it could be seen that the real prisoner sealed in this place must be someone even scarier.

Two Heaven Rank Level 2 warriors were needed to guard this person, and they did not leave even after 6000 years... Could it be that it was a warrior that the Prison Emperor had sealed before? Or was it another reason?

Yue Yang was immediately interested when he thought of it this way.

“I know, you are like your ancestor, who wanted to release that fellow and borrow his strength.” Bei Feng Jia Suo looked at Empress Jellyfish who was respectfully bowing and waiting for orders. His face looked a little mocking as he said: “But, first, let’s not talk about whether you guys are able to release that fellow. Even if you could, do you think you can control that power? It is a terrifying power that even troubled us, Heaven Rank Innates. Once

it is released, I dare say that the whole of Sea Clan would become its food. It will not be as what you have hoped...”

“Go back, the more meteor power you guys receive, the easier you could lose yourselves.” Feng Zhu closed his eyes and stopped speaking.

“As long as seniors are not opposed to it, please forgive this junior for overestimating her own abilities. This junior wants to give it a try.” Empress Jellyfish slowly bowed again and stepped back, returning to stand in front of the group of people. She gave everyone another glance, and Yue Yang sharply caught that her expression seemed to be saying: “Everything is within my prediction.”

Under Bei Feng Jia Suo’s and Feng Zhu’s silent acceptance, Empress Jellyfish drew a large circular arc with a sword.

What made Yue Yang astonished was that Empress Jellyfish knew how to draw a Heaven Rune Circle that he had never seen before.

After the Rune Circle was drawn, Empress Jellyfish raised the Neptune Blade that the Abyss Manatee had left behind and released her Innate Level 8 strength. On the outside, it seemed like she had released her strength to the maximum. However, Yue Yang who had Heaven Eyes Divine Vision and Phoenix Fairy Beauty who was stronger than Empress Jellyfish were both able to see that the Empress actually didn’t use her full strength. When the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King saw the Neptune Blade, his eyes lit up a little.

Yue Yang sharply caught that, and the corners of his mouth curved up a little, revealing a secret, soundless smile.

After Empress Jellyfish's huge blow, not only was the Heaven Rune Circle not destroyed, it revealed a bright, shiny light.

A ray of light shone out from the Heaven Rune Circle and rose straight to the top of the dome. Then, a weird cry sounded out from within the starry sky-like dome. All the stars in the dome died out like fire immediately, only Bei Feng Jia Suo's Beheading Moon Chains dimly emitted some light.

In the sky above the dome, there were countless black light beams shining down.

At this time, the ground was also rumbling.

The ground split open to reveal a stairway that led them down, deep below. Yue Yang was extremely sharp, he noticed that the stairway was made of Obsidian Stone, different from the Meteorite Stone that was used on the fort outside. Does this mean that the third sealed person had already been sealed before this fort was built? Could it be that because this person was too strong that the previous generation had built this meteorite fort on top of the seal? If Bei Feng Jia Suo and Feng Zhu, these two Heaven Rank Innates, weren't here as guards, Yue Yang would not even have these kinds of suspicions. But now Yue Yang was 90% sure that things were like this.

Yue Yang's last question was who was it actually that require 2 Heaven Rank Level 2 warriors to guard?

At this time, seems like Central Palace Hall and Prison Emperor is related. At least they could find out about the secret between Central Palace Hall and Prison Emperor.

This sealed warrior that never left his name on the history, who was he actually?

Phoenix Fairy Beauty asked this, but Yue Yang didn't answer. He only smiled at her and showed a reassuring expression.

Yue Yang thought: Fortunately, the seal in the Obsidian Prison looked like a material object. This means that it wasn't very strong. If they met a warrior that needed to be sealed in a Black Hole Space like Empress Fei Wen Li, that would be trouble!

Although it was different from the Blood Pond, Yue Yang had reason to believe that the sealed person in this Obsidian Prison was definitely that type of person.

At least, he would definitely be a Heaven Rank warrior.

"Goodness!" The Nine-headed Goblin King who was the first to enter let out a surprised cry, as if the scene before him was unbelievable. Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty shot each other a glance and prepared to go down the stairs to look at what kind of powerful saint that had actually shocked Innate Level 9 Nine-

headed Goblin King. However, just as Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty was about to go down to the Obsidian Prison, Feng Zhu who was closing his eyes suddenly opened them and greeted Yue Yang, “Can you come over here to chat for a while? You are very strange, I can’t determine if you are human or fishman. Also, your dog looks interesting.”

“Actually it is a sea cucumber, but it looked a little like a dog,” Yue Yang replied this way.

“Meow meow!” Hui Tai Lang immediately nodded his head, trying to say that he was definitely an authentic sea cucumber.

Chapter 570 – Death and Smile

Outside the secret door.

“Give me the Silver Key.” A large figure was threatening the group of Clown Fishmen, making them so scared that they were cowering in a corner.

“I’m very sorry.” Only the person standing in front of the Clown Fishmen slaves that was wearing a bloodstained robe was standing proudly upright. He looked at his enemy who was standing in front of him, bigger and stronger than him, and shook his head determinedly, “Before you conquer the Sea Clan and become the Ocean Emperor, I will never give the Silver key to you.”

“You wanna die?” The large figure extended his hand and lifted the guy wearing the bloodstained robe up easily.

The guy wearing the crimson coloured robe did not resist. In the situation where he was choked for breath, his eyes were full of determination.

There was no fear at all in his eyes.

The large figure smacked the guy wearing the bloodstained robe onto the ground.

The ground was made of extremely hard meteorite stone, hence the impact was extremely painful. The guy wearing the

bloodstained robe fell hard on the ground, breaking a few ribs. His head was even bleeding. However, he still struggled to get up and pushed his chest out, standing straight like a spear facing the large figure.

He didn't speak, but from his clear eyes, it could be seen that this person would not be fazed by pain that normal people wouldn't be able to endure, or be threatened by threats of deaths. It would be impossible to subdue someone who was not afraid of death. The large figure couldn't help but to feel a sense failure when he saw this guy with bloodstained robe. His embarrassment further fueled his anger.

The large figure roared out with a volume that shook the ground.

In that large figure's hands, there was shield decorated with a motif of a lion. When he raised it up, it immediately shone with a cold light. A golden lion jumped out amidst the burst of light and charged right at the guy with bloodstained robe.

As if it was a living being, it opened its mouth wide to bite.

The guy with bloodstained robe slowly closed his eyes. He didn't try to dodge, because he knew that with his current strength, all kinds of struggle would be futile.

However, no matter how strong his enemy was, at the most, they could only destroy his body.

They would never be able to subdue his will!

Tear...

A big splash of blood, along with a blood-drenched armed that was bitten off by the golden lion, spatter across the air.

The guy with bloodstained robe continued to endure with all of his will, not moving even an inch.

Due to pain, beads of sweat oozed out of his forehead.

“Que Diao, are you a fool? How long has the Ocean Royal Family enslaved the Clown Fishmen Clan? Since your clan elder Ai Shi passed away, your Clown Fishmen Clan had become the Ocean Royal Family’s slaves and playthings!” The large figure roared out towards the guy with bloodstained robe, “Now your Clown Fishmen clan has the chance of getting freedom, but you are still so stubbornly loyal to that damned bitch Empress Jellyfish. Have you licked her foot for too long that your brain became numb? What would you get from being loyal to her? Would she give you freedom? You guys will forever be slaves! Give me the Silver Key. Your kind has been lowly slaves for thousands of years, your clan will definitely perish. Just give me the Silver key, just give it to me!”

“Sea Dragon King, you will never understand the Empress...” the guy with the bloodstained robe called Que Diao had not finished speaking when the golden lion charged forward again.

This time, it bit Que Diao's other arm.

The Sea Dragon King raised up his right hand and summoned a bunch of body-eating insects. They crawled very quickly towards the terrified Clown Fishmen slaves who were screaming in despair, and dug into their bodies. Starting from their insides, they started to slowly devour their whole body.

Sea Dragon King lowered his head and looked at Que Diao with menacing eyes, "This, is this what you wanted? Going against me will result in your whole Clown Fishmen clan annihilation!"

Que Diao's eyes were still as determined as ever, "All sacrifice is worth it. You don't understand the meaning of our sacrifice..."

Sea Dragon King didn't wait for Que Diao to finish his words and furiously grabbed him, then smashed him hard to the ground.

He also kicked him hard, completely breaking Que Diao's body, whose ribs were broken and was vomiting blood, into 2 pieces.

"This is our whole clan's pride. The journey for a new Ocean Emperor requires a few sacrifices of blood..." Que Diao mumbled before his death. Although he was in extreme pain and that he seemed to be losing consciousness, he still revealed a happy smile.

"Die!" Sea Dragon King furiously crushed Que Diao's skull, then killed all of the Clown Fishmen.

In the end, his anger was still not pacified. He looked up to the sky and roared out.

His roar resounded through the Ocean Palace Hall continuously.

At this time, there was a Clown Fishman whose whole body was trembling. He just stepped onto the Warrior Guild in Tong Tian Tower. As he was used to bowing as a slave, he bowed towards the Warrior's Guild receptionist, and politely asked, "Could you please help to send a top secret letter? Those kind that other than the recipient, no one else can receive it or open it."

The Warrior's Guild receptionist nodded strictly, "Sending a Top Secret Letter will require 1000 gold coins. May I know who are you sending it too?"

The Clown Fishman shyly shook his head, "I don't have money, but can you ask the fee from the letter recipient? The letter recipient will definitely pay you!"

The receptionist shook his head, "The warrior's guild doesn't have such protocol... Can you first tell us who is the letter recipient?"

The Clown Fishman didn't reply, instead he took out the letter that he had already prepared, perfectly sealed from his grip. He hold it up above his head, just like when a slave was passing a report to his master, and offered it to the receptionist. When the receptionist saw the name of the letter recipient, his expression immediately changed. Without a second thought, he knelt down

and received the letter, “The Warrior’s Guild has never sent a letter without receiving payment first. However, if the letter recipient is this person, I, I can help to pay it first on your behalf. May I ask, do you have any words to pass to the letter recipient?”

“The lowly me is only passing you my master’s wish. I myself don’t have anything to say to the letter recipient.” The Clown Fishman took out another brightly shining Silver key from his grip, and passed it to the receptionist who was extremely afraid of the letter recipient, “My master’s second wish is for the letter recipient to safeguard this Silver key temporarily.”

When the receptionist received the Silver key, the Clown Fishman bowed to him again.

The Clown Fishman walked out of the Warrior’s Guild and slowly knelt on the ground, kowtow-ing towards the ocean that was as boundless as the sky for three times.

Then, he took out the short dagger on his waist and stabbed his heart... Before he died, the Clown Fishman’s lips curved up into a smile. His smile was just like the smile Que Diao had before he died.

Inside the Secret Door, in the Meteorite Fort, Fighting Arena.

Feng Zhu laughed out loud, “Very interesting, we have never seen such an interesting person and beast before.”

Yue Yang pretended to be honorable and replied, “Same here.”

Bei Feng Jia Suo started to get interested too and asked, “What’s the situation like outside? Is the Prison Emperor truly dead?”

“Prison Emperor? Maybe, probably, possibly, more or less... can’t say for sure, maybe he is already dead.” Yue Yang’s reply really made Bei Feng Jia Suo and Feng Zhu’s head spin.

Then has the Heaven Realm Door truly closed? Have you heard news about the Central Palace Hall in the Heaven Realm? Do you know who are Heaven Realm’s Three Great Leaders that fought against Prison Emperor? Was it the Central Palace Hall’s Fourth Palace Lord?” Bei Feng Jia Suo asked.

“I haven’t been to the Heaven Realm Door before, so I don’t know. I heard that there were many city officials guarding that place, so I didn’t dare to come. I didn’t know any of the Palace Lords, but when you talk about the Central Palace Hall of the Heaven Realm, I would probably know a few of them. There was Hei Hu, Cang Yan, Yan Zun and Yan Zong. I met them before when I was eating my supper. Every single one of them deserves beatings, and they are also very arrogant. That’s right, I heard that Hei Hu got caught when he went to that Heavenly Bathing House to get a bath and massage. You should know too that currently they are very strict on this kind of things. It will be weird if he didn’t get caught, I even saw his picture once on the paper.” Yue Yang spoke another round of gibberish.

“Hei Hu? Who is Hei Hu?” Bei Feng Jia Suo completely couldn’t recall there was such a person in the Central Palace Hall.

“I heard that he was an elder from one of the Central Palace Hall’s external associations. As an official of a country, he even used the public’s money to take baths and massages. How could us, the common people, endure this!” Yue Yang changed his tone and then clapped his hand in celebration, “Luckily, Hei Hu contracted depression and had killed himself.”

“Depression? Killed himself?” Bei Feng Jia Suo discovered that after staying here for 6000 years, they completely couldn’t keep up with the current events.

“This is what the government official said...” Yue Yang indicated that he was about to reveal the truth that wasn’t released to the public.

“Then who are the three great leaders of Heaven Realm who fought against the Prison Emperor?” Feng Zhu was also very confused with Yue Yang’s story.

“I think they are called Ming Yue Guang, Jiu Xiao and Xu Kong. Why? Are they your friends?” Yue Yang’s half-truth and half-fake story really made Bei Feng Jia Suo and Feng Zhu’s head spin, but Phoenix Fairy Beauty was enjoying every single one of it.

“How could it be! How could the three great leaders of the Western Heaven Realm wage a war against the Prison Emperor? They used to be the three great Introducers for warriors who just ascended to the Western Heaven Realm from the Tong Tian Tower!” Feng Zhu revealed a disbelieving expression. Not only

him, even Bei Feng Jia Suo who was born in the Heaven Realm Central Palace Hall was completely in shock, unable to believe this fact. When Yue Yang saw their expressions, he deduced that there was another story in that history. However, as far as he was concerned, the truth behind the history 6000 years ago was not that important anymore.

“That’s enough chit-chat, we ought to enter the Obsidian prison now!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty pulled Yue Yang away. If he boasted even more, Countess Jie Wei might lose her life.

“That’s right, if you don’t do your work properly, I will have to cut your wages. You guys should guard this place carefully, in the future I can introduce you to a beauty who is also a guard. Her name is called Ma Wei. She is quite beautiful, but her temper is a little... She is as vengeant as you two, so you guys definitely have something similar to talk about.” Yue Yang waved his hand and walked away with Phoenix Fairy Beauty, looking extremely relaxed.

They flew into the Obsidian Palace, leaving Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo behind, staring at each other in complete speechlessness.

Forget about Hei Hu, the elder of one of the Central Palace Hall external associations, who was this beauty Ma Wei who was also a guard?

The more these two people thought, the dizzier they got. As they looked up to the glittering stars on the dome above them, they both closed their eyes.

There were two levels in the Obsidian Prison. The higher level was filled with many scary-looking demon statues that vaguely resembled a rune circle. It seemed like there was order although it seemed like chaos. On every scary-looking demon statue, there was a script labelled on them. Yue Yang who possessed the pitiful guy's mother's knowledge could only recognise a part of the scripts. All these scary-looking demon statues were records of a particular demon. According to some identical texts, Yue Yang judged that they were once warriors from the Demon Abyss.

When Yue Yang reached the lower level, he realised that Empress Jellyfish was lying on the ground.

It didn't seem like she was injured.

However, it seemed like she had received some kind of status effect from a beast. The number one warrior of the Sea Clan was currently sleeping soundly...

Jie Wei and the others were so scared they were gathered in a corner. As for the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King, he was kneeling with a high-spirit in front of a 50 meter tall Ancient Demon. He also looked very pious and loyal as he announced his loyalty, "Yao Feng is willing to swear upon my life, if master can bestow me with power and recognize me as the new Ocean Emperor, Yao Feng will pledge eternal loyalty to master."

Chapter 571 – The Number One Most Scheming Conspirator

Why did Nine-headed Sea Goblin King suddenly become so loyal to the Ancient Demon that is sealed here so suddenly, within a blink of an eye?

Yue Yang scratched his head but could not understand why.

Seeing Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty enter, Countess Jie Wei had a look of happiness in her eyes and secretly bowed to them. On the contrary, Countess Yan's face was pale. She was slightly afraid but was constrained by circumstances and unable to escape, so she could only silently endure. The previously dignified Starfish General had now weakened. Standing in front of Ancient Demon that was 50 meters high, he was literally like an ant. It was reckoned that the opponent would not have to even raise his hand, and just randomly blow one breath to kill him.

It would be redundant to talk about other Sea Clan Generals or Ocean Knights as they all cowered in fear. All of them were trembling as if they were typhoid fever patients submerged in cold water

Yue Yang raised his head.

He looked at this 50 meter tall Ancient Demon.

He recognised that not only was it was one of the demon statues

outside. Moreover, it was the one that was on the far left among the four statues beside the Ancient Demon King's Statue.

This Ancient Demon's strength is only Heaven Rank Level 1, which was about the same as death arena's Weng Jin. In fact, it might be slightly weaker compared to the 4 generals under Cang Yan. Of course, at Tong Tian Tower, with Heaven Rank Level 1's abilities, it was totally possible to defeat everyone in one sweep. If this Ancient Demon escaped, it would be totally invincible and only a rare few would be left standing.

"What is going on? How did Nine-headed Sea Goblin King become a kowtowing bug?" Yue Yang expressed his confusion.

"It's like this, the Demon wanted Empress Jellyfish to enter into a Demon Contract with him. Then he will help her become the new Ocean Emperor. However, Empress Jellyfish said that as a female, it would be difficult to become a female Ocean Emperor that could convince the masses. Thus, she recommended Nine-headed Sea Goblin King. Then, the Demon used a secret art to hypnotize Empress Jellyfish and inquired Nine-headed Sea Goblin King if he was willing to make a Demon Contract with him. If he was willing, then the Demon would bestow him with energy and assist him to become the new Ocean emperor!" Countess Jie Wei explained in a low voice. Countess Yan felt that it was uncalled for and felt unhappy. Why did Countess Jie Wei need to explain it to her subordinate? Now was not the time to speak at all!

Countess Yan tried to stop her a few times, but in the end Countess Jie Wei did not stop and instead spoke in a whisper. So, Countess Yan could only sigh in her heart.

Hopefully Nine-headed Sea Goblin King did not hear anything.

Otherwise, Jie Wei would definitely be in big trouble.....

While the 50 meters high Ancient Demon was drinking the fresh blood that Nine-headed Sea Goblin King's servant served, he laughed heartily "You must believe that I, Mo Ce, am never wrong. A thousand years ago, I also bestowed demon blood to the Ocean Emperor of the Sea Clan. At that point in time, it was also Empress Jellyfish that brought him to me."

Even though the Soaring Dragon Continent's Language that Ancient Demon spoke was very inaccurate and contained a thick accent of Demon Abyss' language, everyone still understood him.

As it turns out, Empress Jellyfish brought Ocean Emperor Guan Lan here a thousand years ago. No wonder a military human like Guan Lan could become Ocean Emperor. This was because he had also received Ancient Demon's Energy.

"Demon Contract, forever falling into the path of a demon. Having a demon as master and become the demon's slave." The Ancient Demon used his five claws and penetrated deeply to where his heart was. Then he used his sharp claw dripping with blood to draw a Demon Contract's diagram slowly beside the Nine-headed Sea Dragon King. A scary red light emerged from the huge diagram and an incomparably sinister Demon portrait appeared above Nine-headed Sea Goblin King's head.

The Ancient Demon put his hand on the sinister blood red demon portrait and transferred his energy into it.

A huge sinister ball of energy appeared in the Demon portrait's mouth.

Red light twinkled.

Nine-headed Sea Goblin King stood up and absorbed the ball of energy that appeared in the Demon portrait's mouth continuously. His body started to demonize as distorted demon horns, demon wings that were bat-like and a very long spiky tail grew. The originally handsome Nine-headed Sea Goblin King disappeared. Instead, his mouth was filled with scary sharp teeth, ten blade-like claws and raging flames started to ignite from his body.

He shrieked loudly towards the sky and sucked in the Demon portrait in the sky into his mouth.

In a split second, his strength increased explosively from Innate Level 9 to the pinnacle of Innate Level 10.

“Good potential. The original Ocean Emperor that was responsible for the Demon Contract did not have the same potential you have at all.” The Ancient Demon sighed with exhaustion. It waved its sharp claw, and instructed Nine-headed Sea Goblin King: “Listen, my slave. You must prepare more fresh blood for me. I invested all my energy to give you power and it would take me a few years to be able to fully recover.”

“Of course I will give you fresh blood. In fact, I would give you a lot!” Nine-headed Sea Goblin King laughed loudly towards the sky.

He waved his hand.

Four Innate Rankers immediately took out 4 totally different weapons.

They all brought out light attributed weapons, a battle-ax, battle halberd, long bow and even a holy-ranked sword..... The weakest looking Innate ranker took off the cloak he was wearing and showed his true self. He was a Innate Level 10 powerful Winged Clan Ranker. He looked very similar to Sky Emperor. The only difference, was the armor that they wore. Sky Emperor wore a Light Sacred Armor, while this man did not and only had a Holy-ranked Sword.

Light Sacred Armor?

It had already became a part of Yue Yang's collection. Although this armor was damaged on the death arena, Yue Yang used Nirvana Flame and successfully repaired it. He even used Heaven Runes to increase its grade, and reached middle grade Light Sacred Armor. It is more powerful than the one worn by Sky Emperor in the past.

Regarding Nine-headed Sea Goblin King's betrayal, the Ancient Demon was fuming.

But he understood the current circumstances and did not rush to take his revenge on Nine-headed Sea Goblin King while he was still weak.

He just pointed at Nine-headed Sea Goblin King and cursed: “When I recover and get my strength back, it will be your time to die, you traitorous slave. Betraying the contract shall be your nightmare forever! Don’t think that you can stay smug for a long!”

Nine-headed Sea Goblin King laughed heartily: “Fool, you will be sealed in this Obsidian Prison forever. How are you going to use the Demon Contract to punish me? If you have the ability, why don’t you punish me now. I’ll wait for you. Aren’t you very angry right now? Come on, come on. I am waiting for you here. Let’s see if you will punish me or will I absorb all your remnant energy in the end. I am very grateful that you bestowed me your demon energy. However, please don’t think that others will be loyal to you just because you gave them something. What is loyalty when it’s all bullshit. In this world, only power is truly useful!”

“Damn it, you traitorous slave. I will not let you off easily.....” the Ancient Demon was seething with anger. However, once he saw Nine-headed Sea Goblin King started his attack, it immediately thundered with rage, a shock wave of power came out of it’s claws when he waved it and forced Nine-headed Sea Goblin King to retreat. At the same time, without waiting for it’s opponent to attack again, it’s body already transformed into a ball of blood red smoke and quickly entered the obsidian wall behind it.

Above it, there were a few broken Sealing Circles.

Nine-headed Sea Goblin King was ready to bang on the wall and continue his pursuit of the Ancient Demon.

However, the man that looked like the Sky Emperor immediately waved his hands to stop him: “Yao Feng, don’t be rash. It would not be good if you completely damage the Sealing Circle and allow the Demon to regain it’s true freedom. Even though it is weak now, it is still capable of fighting the both of us. It is not advisable for us to tangle with the Demon for too long as there are more important business that we need to attend to now.”

“Well said, my brother. When I successfully become the Ocean Emperor, I will also definitely assist you in seizing the position as the new Sky Emperor. Xiang Yu, we have been good brothers all these while. When the older generation of the Five Emperors pass away, it would be our time to lead the Tong Tian Tower!” Nine-headed Sea Goblin King used his sharp Demon Claws and amiably patted the eight-winged man’s shoulder. On the surface, both of them were laughing happily, incomparably joyous. But underneath, both of them were secretly guarded against each other..... Before Nine-headed Sea Goblin King devoured demon energy from the Demon Contract, he would definitely lose to the eight-winged man Xiang Yu.

However now, the situation has completely reversed.

Eight-winged man Xiang Yu lowered his head without putting down his guard and even congratulated Nine-headed Sea Goblin King’s ascension as the next Ocean Emperor.

Nine-headed Sea Goblin King also stayed away from Xiang Yu’s

Sacred Sword with slight fear. Now that he has obtained Demon Energy, he hated this kind of Light Energy.

“Maybe you need some time to adapt. Don’t worry, as the new Ocean Emperor, I will benevolently give you the time to adapt.” Nine-headed Sea Goblin King picked up Empress Jellyfish that was in deep sleep and threw her to Countess Jie Wei. Then pointed at the Ocean Knights that were shivering in fear, and laughed: “If any of you guys are not kneeling to welcome me when I come back, the simple solution would to become my tribute for ascending to the throne of the Ocean Emperor.”

“Let’s go, there are still many elders and lords that we have to deal with.” Xiang Yu advised, then quickly flew out from the second floor of the Obsidian Prison.

“You are right, they shall be stepping stones for me to ascend to the throne..... Under my regime, there is absolutely no need for any elders. Only the Ocean Emperor is the one and only ruler.” Nine-headed Sea Goblin King laughed heartily, then brought his three Innate Level subordinates and left the dungeon proudly.

Once Nine-headed Sea Goblin King left, Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan looked at each other in dismay, not knowing what to do.

A ball of blood red smoke sprouted out of the obsidian wall and became the Ancient Demon again.

The look of exhaustion and weakness seen previously had

disappeared, and it recover to the state from before.

Maybe it was all just part of his plan and it was pretending the whole time..... 50 meter high Ancient Demon rushed towards the sleeping Empress Jellyfish and said: “Beautiful Empress, I have completed our pact. As you wished, that greedy lad has obtained Demon energy. How are you going to complete my part of the contract?”

Empress Jellyfish which had been in deep sleep all this time suddenly opened her eyes.

She recovered to the person who had great disdain for the world, and it was as if she was never hypnotized into deep sleep at all.

Looking at the disdainful look in her eyes, Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan felt a chill in their heart. They did not know what Empress Jellyfish was scheming. But only now did they found out that this woman was not someone they could challenge.

This was seriously too scary. This woman was essentially more like a demon than the Ancient Demon. Everything that happens in the world seemed to be all under her control.

“The timing is just right.” Empress Jellyfish spoke to herself. Then turned her face to speak to Ancient Demon: “Demon, do you know why I made this contract with you a thousand years ago? The reason is because you are stupid! Don’t think that I did not know that you have a brother that take turn to come out from the obsidian wall’s Seal! And don’t think that that your laughable

scheme succeeded in tricking me. I cooperated with you purposely, otherwise, you would not even be comparable to 2 clowns performing on the stage!”

“Beautiful Empress Jellyfish, have you found a formidable helper? Are you not afraid that I would kill you?” Ancient Demon felt that it was odd.

“Helper?” Empress Jellyfish suddenly turned her face and looked at Jie Wei: “Even if I do not have anyone formidable around me, understanding and kind Younger Sister Jie Wei will still help me find a good helper.....”

“What?” Countess Jie Wei was shocked.

“Don’t be afraid my younger sister. I have already forgiven you for your betrayal. In fact, the secret invitation you have was delivered personally by me to Warriors Guild. Younger sister Jie Wei and younger sister Yan, if I wanted to kill the both of you, do you think you would still be alive? To me, in the whole Sea Clan, the only loyal and usable people are the 3 guardian clans. In those days, after Elder Ai Shi, Elder Tie Bing and Elder Gu She listened to my plan, they all agreed to the sacrifice of your clan’s life to cooperate with my plan. Compared to the two of you, Que Diao was far more loyal and filled with the spirit of sacrifice. He was more willing to believe that I would be able to revive the Sea Clan, while the two of you only worried about whether I would kill you. My two younger sisters, there is actually no need for you to worry. The people I really want to kill are those like Nine-headed Sea Goblin King and the rest of the elders. Even if they die, they would not now what happened just like foolish chess pieces!” After

Empress Jellyfish said that, Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan sweated profusely.

“I thought I hid it very well.....” Yue Yang sighed.

“Third Young Master, you did hide it quite well. I did not sense that you are a powerful Innate Ranker at all. If I did not know the inside information, I would not have suspected you as well. However, it’s all part of my plan. Thus, it is regretful that I knew you were the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master and Lan Ban was Sky Law from the first look.” Once Empress Jellyfish said that, Yue Yang sweated slightly. No wonder Empress Jellyfish always tried to test him because she suspected him from a long time ago.

“We could kill you right now. Is this also part of your plan?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty asked with a smile on her face.

“You guys will not kill me because I know about a secret that you guys need very urgently. A secret regarding Ancient Demon King’s revival. The Demon Brothers always wanted to use me to revive the Ancient Demon King. And outside, there are 2 powerful Heaven Rankers that have been guarding for over 6000 years, Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo. I presume that you talked to them before entering the dungeon.” Empress Jellyfish looked directly at Yue Yang, “Third Young Master, maybe you won’t believe me but Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo alone will not be able to hold back the Ancient Demon King at all. The Ancient Demon King’s soul had already escaped a long time ago. What’s inside is just the body which was forever sealed above the dome of the martial arts field. The Demon Brothers had wanted me to secretly bring the Ancient Demon King’s body in..... Once Ancient Demon King gets his body

back, and recovers his powers, the whole Tong Tian Tower and every creature inside will be destroyed. Third Young Master, as the new generation Prison Emperor, you can't just let the Ancient Demon King revive right? If you want to protect your homeland, Soaring Dragon Continent, if you want to see the Tong Tian Tower flourish under your control, you should follow my instructions temporarily!"

"I get really pissed when people tell me to do things." Yue Yang spread out his hands: "What if I reject?"

"You will not reject. Third Young Master, you just have a male chauvinist thinking and feel that I'm scheming against you since I am smart..... You think that I have been plotting this plan for a thousand years. Even though I did not predict your appearance, your appearance has perfectly completed my plan. Thus, under unintentional circumstances, you became part of my plan. Third Young Master, don't be angry yet. Once the plan is completed, I will die here and you will leave this place to be the next Prison Emperor and live a happy life with the woman you love. You are a smart man, why are you fighting a dying woman regarding this issue? When I win, I will lose my life; when you lose to me once, you will win for the rest of your life. Isn't this compensation more than enough?" Empress Jellyfish walked past Yue Yang: "So you should listen to me temporarily and kill the Demon Brothers while I wait for you outside."

"What benefits do you get from doing this?" Phoenix Fairy Beauty asked as she could not understand.

"After I die, you will understand and you will also be very

impressed by what I am doing now..... Sky Law, it is undeniable that you are more talented than me in cultivation. But I am still better than you when it comes to scheming against people.” Empress Jellyfish waved her hands: “Clown Fishmen, and my Ocean Knights, it’s time for you to be loyal to me. All of you raise your chest and meet death like a real men!”

“Empress, as you wish!” In one moment, the Ocean Knights and Clown Fishmen that were shivering in fear were no longer afraid. The expression they were showing before were all just pretence. In this instance, they had a very glorious and proud look on their face. It was like death was the highest honor for them.

They receded out of the obsidian prison’s second floor like tide, back up to the first floor.

They kneeled and worshipped Empress Jellyfish to send their farewells.

They stood up, and like fanatical believers, one by one, they took out their weapons and stabbed themselves in the heart. Their blood spurted onto the demon statues. The originally dull rune on the statues began to radiate light rays that were as bright as the constellations once the blood from their sacrifice touched it. The Rune Circle shone brightly, while those sinister demon statues, become dull and lifeless after the blood sacrifice.

10 Clown Fishmen surrounded the Ancient Demon King’s Statue, then one by one took their own lives in front of Ancient Demon King’s pedestal.

Everyone of them would say ‘the path to become Ocean Emperor shall be paved by blood’ before they died.

Although they were dead, they still had a smile on their faces.

Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty saw this.

In their hearts, they were shocked.

When it came to the rank of power, Empress Jellyfish was definitely not in Tong Tian Tower’s top 10. But when it comes to scheming, she was definitely the best of the best conspirator. Yue Yang had never seen such frightening woman.

Just by watching how hundreds of people were willing to die for her without any complaints, you could see her abilities when it comes to controlling situations.

Yue Yang thought he saw the truth, but never thought this was just the tip of the iceberg.

The real truth, that was concealed by Empress Jellyfish, was incomparably enormous.

“Let’s try to follow her instructions. My instincts tell me that she does not have any ill intentions for us!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty looked at Yue Yang, hoping he would make the final decision.

“A very interesting conspirator, too bad she is going to die of an illness soon.....” Yue Yang sighed slightly.

Chapter 572 – Thousand Year Revival Plan?

Obsidian Prison, Second Floor.

The Ancient Demon looked at Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty while disdain was written on his face.

One seems to be Innate Level, one seems to not even be Innate Level. They want to kill him and his brother with these kind of strength? Was this a joke? Ancient Demon decided to play with his opponents. Regarding this kind of opponent, he could not find enough zeal. To play with them for a while due to boredom would be too weak for him.

“Maybe the two of you still have some treasures like the Light Sacred Sword or something. Take them all out!” Ancient Demon believed that the two of them had some treasures.

“Treasures are needed to fight you?” Yue Yang used his pinky to pick his ear. He was not very enthusiastic about the fight as he had killed Heaven Rank Level 5 Hei Hu in the past, thus he was looking down on it as it was only Heaven Rank Level 1.

“Scoundrel, quickly kill him so we can go back and enjoy some alone time!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty felt that they should not waste their time.

“Yes.” Yue Yang banged the floor and stood in attention, expressing that the policy to listen to your wife and follow a party, will not change in a hundred years. As for Hui Tai Lang, it directly

pounced forward while in its sea cucumber form. It wanted to be of use in front of its master and now was the best chance to do so. It wanted to show off, but there were not many opportunities. By the time Xiao Wen Li, Bloody Queen and Barbarian Cow Shadow come out, it would be too late.

“You are courting death.....” the Ancient Demon was so angry that it’s nose became askew. An insignificant sea cucumber dares to challenge him?

In another place, within the fort, the side palace’s treasure chamber.

The Fort was filled with Essence Gold, Shooting Star Meteorite and other treasures.

Seal Captain, Sea Lion King and other captains and elders, were all incredibly happy and were prepared to split the treasures evenly.

According to Sea Clan’s customs, only part of these things needed to be offered to Empress Jellyfish. The rest belonged to the the elders, and the person who discovered them can get most of the treasures.

“Found anything good?” Xiang Yu, who was holding onto the Sacred Sword, and the totally demonized Nine-headed Sea Goblin King rushed inside.

“It’s, it’s Yao Feng?” Lobster Clan Leader, Elder Ru Gen and the others turned pale with fright. How did Nine-headed Sea Goblin King become like that? Was this the embodiment Nine-headed Sea Goblin King’s real abilities? Cutlassfish Clan Leader was closest to the door and did not manage to evade. Nine-headed Sea Goblin King grabbed him with one hand. With everyone watching, Nine-headed Sea Goblin King tore him into two, and poured the fresh blood into his mouth. After drinking the delicious fresh blood, Nine-headed Sea Goblin King let out a chilling laugh.

“He is crazy!” Seal Clan Leader saw that the situation was bad, immediately summoned his beast and was ready to escape.

A Holy Sword chopped down.

Seal Clan Leader’s body was chopped into two.

This person was Xiang Yu from the Guang Ming Continent, who was preparing to become the new Sky Emperor. To find a competent helper, he continuously assisted the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King to become the Ocean Emperor. Lobster Clan Leader, Elder Ru Gen, Sea Lion King and other clan leader nobilities, very helplessly found out that even though they had the advantage of numbers on their side, it would not help when they were facing off with two powerful Heaven Rank Level 10 Rankers in front of them.

The hard meteorite floor, that had just been dug by the Sea Flea Clan Leader, had been stomped by the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King.

Rumble!

The surface of the meteorite cracked.

Immeasurable fresh blood seeped out from the cracks.

Innate Level 5 Sea Flea Clan Leader was stepped to death in the ground by Nine-headed Sea Goblin King.

“You guys have 2 choices. One is to give us all the treasures, then commit suicide; or two, charge forward and get killed! The first choice will allow you guys to die more comfortably, while I promise you guys that you will die a very painful and tragic death if you choose the second choice!” Nine-headed Sea Goblin King laughed crazily without restraint as he was very pleased with himself.

“Let us go, we can support you in becoming the Ocean Emperor” Elder Ru Gen wanted to drag out some time.

“I am sorry, I will become the Ocean Emperor, but I want to be a dictator. The whole Tong Tian Tower shall belong to me, Yao Feng only. I, Yao Feng, will definitely not share my power with you old people. I am not a fool like Guan Lan, and you old fellas have lived a long life, so you people must die!” Nine-headed Sea Goblin King waved his sharp Demon Claws and easily captured Sea Horse Clan Leader.

He did not listen to the pleas of Sea Horse Clan Leader and

directly choked the Sea Horse Clan Leader with a hard outer shell to death, then forcefully snapped his neck.

Lastly, he even crazily bit off Sea Horse Clan Leader's head.

And started to chew.....

Empress Jellyfish, who was sitting quietly at the martial arts field, snorted without any expression on her face at this instance: "Whom the gods would destroy they first make mad!"

Standing beside her, Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan's hands started to shake uncontrollably after hearing what she said.

They were very afraid of Empress Jellyfish.

But now, they understood that Empress Jellyfish had no intentions of killing them.

They were afraid because Empress Jellyfish had already schemed everything, including Nine-headed Sea Goblin King receiving Demon Energy and going crazy killing people. She was even able to draw support from the Yue Clan's Third Young Master and Sky Law to deal with Ancient Demon. All these were within Empress Jellyfish's hands. Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan knew Empress Jellyfish since they were young, but they only today were they able to clearly see what kind of person Empress Jellyfish was.

"My two younger sisters, sit, with the Third Young Master and

Sky Law's abilities, it would take less than 2 hours for them to kill the Ancient Demon." Empress Jellyfish sat down and closed her eyes, waved her hands to indicate for Jie Wei and Yan to sit, "Don't the two of you have a lot to ask me?"

"Yes." Jie Wei felt rebellious. Since Empress Jellyfish did not kill her, she might as well try her luck: "Why must you kill all the elders and clan leaders?"

"The new Ocean Emperor is about to ascend to his throne. Do you think keeping the conservative elders in the nobility hierarchy, that like to do things their own way, alive will be beneficial? For the Sea Clan, the largest enemy is themselves! The Sea Clan does not lack in resources nor descendants. We were born with many advantages, such as a comfortable environment, few predators, infant mortality rate is low and the young successfully grow up. And other advantages such as having good body compositions. We are born powerful, have many secret treasures left behind by powerful Heaven Ranked Rankers, remnant energies and many more. All these circumstances can let Sea Clan descendants grow up quickly. However, why does Soaring Dragon Continent with terrible conditions, a place that lacks resources produce people like the Yue Clan's Third Young Master, Xue Tan Lang, Ye Kong, Hai Da Fu and other bright stars? Jie Wei, your future son-in-law Yue Ting is not practically not famous in Soaring Dragon Continent, nobody knows him in the Tong Tian Tower. But you should know his potential. How many Sea Clan youths could have the potential of Innate Level 7?" Empress Jellyfish asked.

"....." Jie Wei thought for a bit and felt that it was true. Although there were many Innate Rankers in the Sea Clan, but the

younger generation, including many princes and princesses in the royal family were weak. They were dregs of the dregs.

Let alone comparing with the Yue Clan's Third Young Master, who was a highly talented genius, just comparing them to Xue Tan Lang, Ye Kong and Hai Da Fu and other young fighters, the younger generations in Sea Clan should really be ashamed of themselves.

Just cultivating for 20 years or self cultivation.

Everyone else were prepared to become Innate Rankers.

With regards to Sea Clan youths who train for almost 300-500 years to reach Innate Rank, this kind of difference is like the difference between heaven and earth. Most importantly, the Sea Clan belongs to the higher levels of Tong Tian Tower, at least above the sixth floor of Tong Tian Tower, born with such powerful strength. Such as the royal family born in Tong Tian Tower's tenth floor endless ocean, they have ordinary level 6 strength when they were born. This is something that human fighters in Soaring Dragon Continent will never be able to attain.

However, with a short 20 years.

Human youths are able to catch up and easily surpass Sea Clan youths.

When human youths begin Innate Rank, they will desert all

competition opponents, and will never give Sea Clan youths any chance to catch up.

“Almost all Innate Rankers in Sea Clan are old. If they did not obtain remnant energy or treasures left behind by powerful Heaven Rankers, they would not have the abilities they have now. Them living, has become a barrier for the Sea Clan youths. If I don’t kill them, am I supposed to let them continue destroying Sea Clan’s future?” Empress Jellyfish opened her eyes. She looked at Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan with eyes that were like swords: “When I married Guan Lan, I already had the intention of changing the Sea Clan’s future. If I was really the kind of person that you guys are worried about, will I have allowed you guys to have his son and daughters? My two younger sisters, I do not need anyone to understand what I am doing, but I really hope that the two of you won’t think that I did things to let you down. On the contrary, for Sea Clan’s future, I can totally put up with these because the children you two have with Guan Lan are indeed descendants with a lot of potential, such as Jie Wei’s daughter, Yu Wen.

“.....” Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan could not help but shiver slightly. Older sister actually knew all about Guan Lan and them.

“I don’t blame you guys because I was not able to have children in my early years. Although Guan Lan did not know, but all the secret meetings he had with the two of you were arranged by me.” Once Empress Jellyfish said that, Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan sweated profusely.

“You, you don’t blame the Third Young Master?” Countess Yan picked up her courage and asked.

Empress Jellyfish could forgive Jie Wei because they were sisters.

But this does not mean that she will forgive the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master.

After all, the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master killed Sea Dragon Crown Prince and Sea Anemone Crown Princess and other princes and princesses that were all flesh and blood of Empress Jellyfish.

Regarding this problem, Empress Jellyfish gave a mocking look on her face: “What a joke. Don’t tell me that you two still think that Sea Dragon Crown Prince and Sea Anemone Crown Princess are my biological children? That was my servant who swallowed Clown Fishmen’s ‘Transformation Pearl’ and gave birth to those prince and princess. Do you really think I would have a son with those fools, Sea Dragon and Yao Feng? In my eyes, they are more worthless than the trash floating on the sea.

Jie Wei was slightly confused, “Then, why did you give Third Young Master a bounty of 10 million?”

Shortly after asking this question, she understood.

To boost support!

Empress Jellyfish actually did it to boost the Yue Clan’s support,

using this opportunity to make public his strength, allowing him to become well known within the Tong Tian Tower fighters.

After understanding this, Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan could not understand the intention behind boosting his support. Why did she want to boost support for the Yue Clan? It was not possible for Empress Jellyfish to marry the Third Young Master. For the Sea Clan, Third Young Master had only enmity and massacre, with no intention to help at all. Why did Empress Jellyfish help with the publicity of an enemy?

“Ocean Emperor Guan Lan is an outstanding man. You guys know this as well. But in my eyes, he was not outstanding enough. Guan Lan has the ambition, but his ambition is limited to Tong Tian Tower’s ocean, no matter how big it was, his ambition is only until the Innate Elder Realm..... Strictly speaking, Guan Lan is just a man who preserves the accomplishments made by predecessors, but is unable to improve! If I was a man, I would definitely do better than him. It’s a pity that I am not!” Empress Jellyfish slowly closed her eyes, and hid her sword-like gaze: “That day, he went to Fire Island, I knew he would definitely die. A normal genius would never be able to come back alive after meeting an exceptional genius that only appears once in ten thousand years.”

“Will Guan Lan’s death be beneficial to Sea Clan’s future?” Jie Wei was angry. Guan Lan had always been a man she loved deeply. Empress Jellyfish did not stop him when she knew he was going to be killed by the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master?

“You?” Countess Yan was also very angry.

“Although it is destined, we were still a married couple. When I tried to warn him, he was very afraid of me and was very guarded against me. My warnings fell on deaf ears.” When Empress Jellyfish said this, Jie Wei and Yan wanted to vent their anger but they could not do it at all. Indeed, with the attitude Guan Lan had for Empress Jellyfish, it would be weird if he listened to her!

“You were the one who dispatched An Xi?” Jie Wei was not reconciled and questioned closely.

“No, I never talked to An Xi. I have no reason to be acquainted with a man filled with hatred and paranoia.” Empress Jellyfish looked proud: “In fact, my real target is the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master. A thousand years ago, I already made such preparations. Yue Clan’s Third Young Master is the most important person I need to accomplish my plan!”

“A thousand years ago, Yue Clan’s Third Young Master hasn’t even been born yet!” Countess Yan felt that Empress Jellyfish has gone crazy while trying to scheme against others.

“In the world, there is one 5000 year old Meteor Shower Pearl.” Empress Jellyfish smiled: “That was the one I picked up from inside Meteor Shower Ocean’s ‘Death Pool’. It has the power of prediction..... Through this Meteor Shower Pearl, I saw that 1000 years later in Soaring Dragon Continent, an exceptional genius would appear..... Thus, I prepared a 1000 year revival plan. Maybe because of my 1000 year revival plan, the true history and the scenes seen in the prediction were slightly different. However, it did not affect my 1000 year revival plan and instead perfected it. You guys will never experience the feeling when everything is

under your control. Just like a mother incubating her egg, quietly waiting for the egg to be born and for a new life to start. That sense of achievement is something you two will never be able to experience.”

“Now I understand, why the three great elders supported your plan. It’s because you are very scary.” Jie Wei was already totally speechless.

“Last question. You could convince the three great elders, and could also command Clown Fishmen and Ocean Knights to sacrifice their lives for you. But what did you do to convince the Third Young Master to help you save the Sea Clan? It is impossible that he would listen to you!” Countess Yan wanted to know this.

“The Third Young Master, I don’t need him to do anything for me..... Although the Death Pool’s curse, together with the prophecy’s reflective power almost killed me.....”

Empress Jellyfish opened her eyes. Her look that was originally sword-like soften to be like water.

At this moment, she was like a benevolent mother.

However, while Jie Wei and Yan looked startled, the corner of Empress Jellyfish’s mouth, changed into a mysterious smile: “I worked hard for 1000 years. Not only did I not die, I also gave birth to a very intelligent daughter which is very similar to me..... You two will never understand, she will never find out what I did for her as a mother.”

Chapter 573 – Female Ocean Emperor

Boundless Ocean. Meteor Shower Palace.

Sea Dragon King was crazily massacring the imperial family, elders, lords, clan leaders and other members of the faction. Other than slaves, all the imperial family and nobilities were killed, none were left behind. There was so much blood on the floor that it was like a river, the ocean surrounding the Meteor Shower group of islands, has been dyed red, more than a hundred thousand sea clan dead bodies were sinking, floating and drifting over the entire Meteor Shower Gulf.

It was horrible spectacle to endure.

Shouts from killing, anguished wailing, screams, and crazy laughs.....

At Star Gazing Cliff, batches of Ocean Nobilities were escorted, killed and their bodies were thrown into the ocean by the rebelling army.

Numerous upper-class woman who took great care of their appearances, and female slaves that were quite pretty were raped by the perverted soldiers.

“Kill! Other than Sea Dragon Clan, there is no need for Tong Tian Tower’s Ocean to have any other rulers!” Sea Dragon King killed till his body was spattered with blood. As it turns out, he had killed all the Ocean Generals, tributes and soldiers that stayed behind to

protect the Meteor Shower Palace. Other than the women who became captives, none of the accompanying personal soldiers that the elders and clan leaders brought were able to live. Almost hundred over Meteor Shower Islands, other than the rare few stubborn defenders that guard the places which were natural strongholds, or some secret rooms, no more resistance can be seen anywhere. The rebel army quickly went out of control and spread the fire of war to the Innate Ranker's homes that were situated there.

“Kill all, rob all. Burn all.....” the rebel army was large in numbers and attacked altogether.

The powerful Innate Rankers that lived there were mostly not on the Meteor Shower Island.

Some Innate Rankers woke up to a rebellion.

But they were unable to contact the others, and could only fight by themselves.

Although the Innate rankers tried really hard to protect their homes, but under the strong attack from the Sea Dragon Rebel Army, they could only strenuously brace themselves. Especially Sea Dragon's subordinates, the 4 Ocean Marshalls and 10 Ocean Generals. All of them had Innate Level Strength. Once there was resistance, they will flock together to attack their opponent together.

Benevolent Ocean God, please open your eyes.....”

“We need an Ocean Emperor, but not a tyrant like the Sea Dragon King.....”

“Ocean God, is this the punishment given to us by the gods? Enough blood has been spilled from the Sea Clan.....”

Every Ocean Clan member that become captives were crying bitterly and hatefully. Although the Sea Clan once secretly opposed to Guan Lan being their Ocean Emperor, because he was human, and not a real member of the Sea Clan. Today, the people of the Sea Clan realised that the self proclaimed new Ocean Emperor, Sea Dragon King could not even be compared to one of Guan Lan's finger. Ocean Emperor Guan Lan was dignified and benevolent, loved the common people as his own children, never used dictatorship to control the government. Other than accepting the elders to supervise his control of power, he also pitied the poor and lowly vassal clans. Every year, he would hire the outstanding youths from the vassal clans to become attendant Ocean Knights, bestowing the descendants from the poor races to have a chance to become successful.

Sea Dragon King was completely a tyrant. He has yet to officially become the new Ocean Emperor and had already purged the nobilities and killed the most outstanding descendants from the clans.

This kind of tyrant that anger the gods and hated by the people, has been suppressed by Ocean Emperor Guan Lan and Empress Jellyfish.

Until today, he finally showed his blood-thirsty hunting tooth.....

The people of the Sea Clan finally saw clearly what kind of person the Sea Dragon King they supported was like..... A Demon, he was scarier than the Demon Abyss's Demon King.

If they knew things were going to turn out like this, they would have continued to support Ocean Emperor Guan Lan. Even though he was from a different clan, a human, not Sea Clan's pure blood, he would have been better than Sea Dragon King that had pure Sea Clan blood.

“Let the Ocean Emperor be revived, we need him.....”

“We are regretful.....”

Heavy rain was pouring down from the sky, it was like the remorseful tears from the people of the Sea Clan.

But it was all too late.

Other than the Meteor Shower Palace seized by Sea Dragon King, all other houses and shops were looted. Many soldiers went crazy and started to burn the surrounding buildings.

Even the downpour was unable to extinguish the raging fire. There was nothing the people could do other than sit on the floor, look at the thick smoke column that was twisting like a cobra and

also look at the fire that was swallowing the buildings up like a monster. Maybe this is the legend about the wrath of heaven, ruthless betrayal stirred up the god's anger. The god's punishment was to let the betrayers suffer in the abyss of suffering, repent painfully!

Hundred of thousands were escorted by the rebel army, waiting to be sent up to the executioner standing on the Star Gazing Cliff, while the old and young were all crying while locked in the cells.

But it was too late for regrets!

Once all the nobilities were killed, it was the the vassal clan's turn.

Sea Dragon King promised to give the vassal clans a free identity, but this had already become bubbles on the ocean's surface under the bloody hatchet.

Compared to this kind of 'free people', people suddenly felt that the vassal clan in the time of the Ocean Emperor was their real lives. Attempting to obtain freedom without strength and hard work? Wasn't this just a pipe dream?

“One of the 4 kings under Old Ocean Emperor Guan Lan, Shark King has come back to pacify the rebel army under Ocean Emperor's orders. Any subordinates of the Sea Dragon King, immediately disarm yourselves and surrender by keeling on the floor to concede defeat, otherwise you will be killed without discussion!” On the surface of the Meteor Shower Ocean, a tall man

came through the wave. Holding a shining silver tiger shark blade. He stood at the bottom of the Meteor Shower Cliff and let out a world-shaking cry!

Behind him, more than ten thousand Sea Clan Elites came back from the Soaring Dragon Continent.

The whole Meteor Shower Ocean echoed the sound of the battle bugle horn.

First, a black line emerged from the horizons, subsequently becoming bigger and people could be seen. Countless Sea Clan beasts mounted by elite Sea Clan Horsemen, majestically galloped their way towards Meteor Shower group of island.

“Is this real? The Ocean God did not abandon us!”

“It’s the Shark King that works for the Ocean Emperor. Expeditionary forces has come back to save us! Long live the Ocean Emperor.....”

Tens of thousands vassal clan people were moved emotionally. Each and everyone of them could not control themselves, they screamed and shout, and cried and laughed.

With regards to the return of the Sea Clan expeditory forces, each and every one of the Sea Dragon King’s rebel army changed their expressions after hearing the news. Although Ocean Emperor Guan Lan was dead, but his prestige still awed people. If the Sea

Dragon King was not looking at the Meteor Shower Cliff, the rebel army soldiers would have ran away in fear once Shark King showed himself.

Sea Dragon King looked at Shark King with disdain: “Ridiculous illegitimate child, you want to challenge me with your measly Innate Level 8 strength? Even Guan Lan was afraid of me to some extent, what status do you have?”

Once Shark King raised his hand, ten of thousand of soldiers stopped instantaneously.

Neatly like one.

When tens of thousands of expeditionary forces shouted, the whole Meteor Shower Cliff seemed to shake. The rebel army tremble with fear, and their morale fell once seeing this.

“I am only a general leading an army, prompted by Ocean Emperor to have a duel with the king. The fight between the kings do not belong to me.” Shark King kneeled on the waves of the ocean with an oddly strict expression. Once he kneeled down, all the Ocean Horsemen flipped over and kneeled on the surface of the ocean by the Sea Clan beasts. This ceremony was the highest ceremony to welcome the Ocean Emperor.

Could it be that Ocean Emperor Guan Lan was not dead yet?

Sea Dragon King was shocked.

Just when Sea Dragon King and all the rebel soldiers thought that Ocean Emperor Guan Lan reappeared at the Meteor Shower Ocean, on the remote surface of the ocean, a gold war chariot pulled by 18 golden level dolphin beasts appeared.

Above it, there was a female wearing the Ocean Emperor Armor and holding onto the Ocean Emperor Halberd.

Her majestic presence was incomparable.

“So it’s Chu’er.” Sea Dragon King realised that it was not Empress Jellyfish. Just an unfamiliar Innate Level 1 girl. He felt at ease and immediately laughed grimly.

“I am Ocean Emperor Guan Lan’s daughter, Hai Yingwu, and also the rightful heir to the throne by blood. Those who support me as the Ocean Emperor shall become my citizens; those loyal to me, can become my soldiers. Now Sea Clan is in the clutches of the enemy and the rebel army has caused disorder to the Sea Clan. the Sea Gods are furious, punishment has befallen. If you guys do not repent, you guys shall become food for the fishes and shrimps in the ocean!” Hai Yingwu brandished the Ocean Emperor Halbert, above her head, a three-headed young dragon was summoned out, roaring towards the sky. Although the three-headed young dragon was small in size, but everyone in the Sea Clan could hear him clearly. It has the same dragon power the Guardian Beast Gold Three-headed Dragon King that protected Ocean Emperor Guan Lan had.

“Innate Level One Ranker, you are literally seeking death!” Sea Dragon King felt that one slap from him would make Hai Yingwu run away.

Does having a Golden Three-headed dragon mean that the person will be very powerful?

It was just a young dragon!

Seeing that Hai Yingwu was only Innate Level One, the rebel army soldiers felt more calm. Luckily Ocean Emperor Guan Lan was not the one who arrived and not the real Gold Three-headed Dragon King. Otherwise they would be dead!

“Somebody come and capture her for me. I want make her an imperial female slave when I ascend to the throne!” Sea Dragon King waved his hand forcefully, and 4 Innate Level 7 Ocean Marshalls appeared. Although their ranks were slightly lower than the Shark King’s within the 4 of them, 2 could distract the Shark King, one defend and one attack. They believed that they could easily capture Hai Yingwu like this.

“Bridge Jumping Clown, this Ocean Emeperor wanted to play a more intelligent plan, but who knew there was no need for that at all!”

Hai Yingwu elegantly turned her body. Octopus Boss, Swordfishman Ji Feng, Whale Zhang, Mudskipperman Sui Zui, Big Crabman Ao and others appeared through the surface of the ocean, in front of the 18 Gold Dolphins.

Once Sea Dragon King heard that, he was so angry that his eyes turned black, “I have Demon Energy, an Innate Level 10. Who can kill me?”

He started to roar crazily, transforming into a beast with a demon look.

Everyone in the Sea Clan turned pale with fright upon seeing this.

We are doomed. The Sea Dragon King we supported is actually a terrifying demon that lied to all of us!

Not only were the vassal clans shocked, even the rebel army soldiers were very frightened..... if circumstances did not change in such a manner, Sea Dragon King would not have wanted to transformed into the scary demon look. But there were a few Innate Level 8 Rankers among the opponents, and they had over ten thousand troops from the expeditionary army. If he did not transform into the demon, he would be killed by the enemies sooner or later. Although transforming into the demon Look was scary, as long as he could kill Hai Yingwu standing opposite him, Shark King and the few helpers, under his high pressure dictatorship, who would dare to disobey him? In Tong Tian Tower, he was number one in strength. As long as he had power, why should he be afraid of criticism!

After Sea Dragon King finished transforming, Innate Level 10 strength immediately exploded out.

Ruthless energy erupted.

Blood-thirst and massacre, dominated Sea Dragon King's desires.

He waved his claws and directly sent thousands of vassal clan men into the ocean. Countless of them died and got injured.

“Clowns like you guys dare to challenge me, the Sea Dragon King?” Sea Dragon King laughed loudly. He flew high into the sky, ready to kill Hai Yingwu that was wearing the Ocean Emperor Armor and holding Ocean Emperor Halbert.

“My god, the Yue Clan's dog is more powerful than you, why are you so proud!” Fatty Hai, Ye Kong, Xue Tan Lang, Prince of Tian Luo, Li Brothers appeared in front of Hai Yingwu's Gold War Chariot. Among them, the Li Brothers lead the two tall slave beasts, Heaven Ranked Level 2 Abyss Manatees.

Chapter 574 – Actually, It's Consider Slow This Time!

If Yue Yang did not appear, the Heaven Ranked Level 2 Abyss Manatee would exist as the Sea Clan's Protector Gods. Now? Two Abyss Manatee were slave beasts! Helplessness was written on the two smart Abyss Manatee's faces, after all, to be lead by the Li Brothers like a dog was slightly hurtful to their pride, but they had already come to understand that this was their destiny.

Who could blame them for being born at the wrong time?

If they were born 6000 years ago, they would be the Sea Clan's Protector God when they came to Tong Tian Tower.

There was no hope in being the protector gods now but it's not too bad being slave beasts. Thinking back to that day, their companions were killed by the Third Young Master with the God Killing Dagger, or killed by Zhi Zun's Black Bullet and Night Empress' Shooting Star.

A good death was inferior to living badly. It was already very fortunate that they were alive.

Wasn't the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King, which had the strength Heaven Ranked Level 5, also the Third Young Master's slave?

What's even more useless was that Heaven Ranked Level 5 Hei

Hu, the grand Central Palace's Outer Water Palace Elder died suddenly. The Yue Clan's Third Young Master killed powerful Heaven Rankers like he was chopping up white cabbage. He did not care what rank you were in Heaven Realm nor how famous you are. In front of the power of the Ancient Code, Nirvana Flame, World Exterminating Wheel, all Heaven Rankers have to stand aside.....

Besides, being a slave beasts for a powerful ranker is not that bad, at least there would be a high ranker taking care of you. Being someone's slave was a slave? Hei Hu was not powerful enough, of course, so they would follow the Third Young Master to conquer the world.

Even if you travel through the entire Heaven Realm, it would be impossible to find a master like the Yue Clan's Third Young Master.

Thus, being his slave beast was actually a kind of luck!

Once the Two Abyss Manatees saw Sea Dragon King rush towards them, they immediately took out the attitude of a slave beast, with a wave of the long beheading blade, they charged forward..... This was the best time for the both of them to accomplish something as they were anxious to do so. It was normally difficult for 2 Abyss Manatees to accomplish something. Hui Tai Lang that scumbag was always there to fight over the jobs they can do. This lowly dog was a World Exterminating Demon Wolf, born with the ability to get on with their owners very well, and was very good at boot-licking, thus he was favoured by the owners. Even if the two of them wanted to show off their abilities, they wouldn't have the

chance to!

A war finally broke out at Tong Tian Tower. If their owner find out that they did not accomplish anything...

The reckon that the fate of becoming a blood slave like the Ancient Slaughterer Beast King, who was only kept for its blood, would befall them.....

“Aaaaaaaa!” Sea Dragon King was extremely terrified when he saw the two Abyss Manatees rushing forward. He knew very clearly what kind of existences these Abyss Manatees were. They were the Sea Clan’s Protector God, even if there was only one of them, it would be sufficient to eradicate the whole Sea Clan. Although Innate Level 10’s abilities were strong, it would not even be sufficient to defend against one of his opponent’s hand.

“Fishnet capture!” suddenly, a few fishnets flew out of the Ocean Surface.

Those were Heaven Realm Amphibious Fish Demon’s fishnets.

These kind of fishnets were very special. They are able to cause powerful Heaven Rankers Weng Jin, Three-eyed Tigerman and others to suffer.

Sea Dragon King had yet to reach the peak of Innate Level 10, compared to Weng Jin and others, he was still very weak. Even if he could escape from the fishnet using all of his strength, he would

not be able to do it immediately. Moreover, once Sea Dragon King was captured by the fishnet, the two Abyss Manatees' long beheading blade would have arrived.....

Rumble!

Rumble!

Sea Dragon King's body suffered two heavy strokes from the blade, and he was immediately badly injured.

But his vitality was surprisingly tenacious and he did not die.

Lava-like blood flowed from the Demon body as Sea Dragon King painfully fell towards the ocean surface. His two demon arms were chopped off and his body distorted.

He wanted to escape but the two Abyss Manatees, who wanted to accomplish something, would not let him escape. They immediately used Heaven Ranked Level 2 strength to chase after him. One grabbed him from the right, one from the left, and they pulled hard, directly tore the demonized Sea Dragon King apart into two. Sea Dragon King painfully bawled, a look of bitter resentment appeared in his eyes. The demon head that had not died, suddenly turned back and he opened his demon mouth to spit out a destructive blast wave towards Hai Yingwu that was below observing the battle.

“Roar!” the two Abyss Manatees were very furious. They took out

their beheading blades together and refracted away the blast wave.

Following which, they stretched out their huge paws and pressed it onto Sea Dragon King's demonized head.

One from the front and the other from the back.

Immediately squeezed his demonized head until it bursts into paste.

Seeing this, everyone in the Sea Clan was astonished and flabbergasted. They stood there watching without any reactions.

Innate Level 10 Sea Dragon King was killed just like that, it was almost like he was killed within seconds and he did not have any ability to defend himself..... Moreover, the ones who killed him were two Abyss Manatees that were Sea Clan's Protector Gods.

The rebel army were all dumbstruck. Starting a war with the Protector Gods?

Wasn't that seeking death?

Besides, Sea Dragon King was already dead, what were they even fighting for? Even if they do win, who would be emperor?

"Sea Clan rebel army, I have an order. Immediately disarm yourselves and surrender, otherwise, I kill you all without

pardon!” Hai Yingwu waved the Ocean Emperor Halberd as her stern voice resonated through the skies.

Her shout totally defeated the rebel army’s willpower.

No one in the whole rebel army on the Star Gazing Cliff dared to treat this new female Ocean Emperor as their enemy, one after another, they ran away in defeat. Even Sea Dragon King’s 4 Ocean Marshalls ran away in fear. Even more rebel army soldiers knelt down in surrender at the glare that the two Abyss Manatee gave them.....

Octopusman Boss, Swordfish Man Ji Feng, Mudskipper Man Sui Zui immediately chased after them. This was the best time to get rid of the enemy as they were all afraid and running for their lives. If they didn’t take this opportunity to root them out now, they might be trouble in the future. The 4 Ocean Marshalls under Sea Dragon King must be eliminated, other than them, the 10 Ocean Generals under Sea Dragon King must also be eliminated completely.

Ye Kong and Fatty Hai were also unwilling to be left behind, thus they chased after them as well.

For them, this was the best chance to temper oneself. Demon Abyss was afraid of Yue Yang’s rise in power, and have already ceased their war. Besides, Great Demon King Baruth and other Demon Abyss rulers have a secret agreement with Yue Yang, and they had a temporary alliance. Ye Kong and Fatty Hai would not be able to use the Demon Abyss to train even if they wanted to.

Meteor Shower Group of Island's war was the best stage for them to display their abilities.

“Congratulations your Majesty Ocean Emperor, long live!”

As for the Sea Clan Citizens, they had already knelt on the floor and tears were rolling down their face to welcome Hai Yingwu as the new Female Ocean Emperor.

Temporarily, no one knew who Hai Yingwu was but this is no longer important.

What's important was that she was Ocean Emperor Guan Lan's daughter, had Ocean Emperor's blood flowing through her veins and had his strength and right to the throne. Moreover, once she returned, she pacified the rebellion that Sea Dragon King started, and even has the support of two Protector God level Abyss Manatees. If she was not the Ocean Emperor, who else could she be? Although this new emperor was a female, it did not matter as she was better than Sea Dragon King by ten thousand times.

For the first time, Sea Clan citizens accepted her willingly and knelt on the ground, respectfully welcoming their Ocean Emperor.

Unknowingly, rain stopped falling from the sky.

The sky, that was covered by black clouds, suddenly parted to reveal an empty hole.

The blast wave that Sea Dragon King spat out that was refracted away by the two Abyss Manatees opened a hole in the clouds. Bright sunlight, shone through the sky like a light beam shining down directly onto the new female Ocean Emperor Hai Yingwu.

“Long Live.....“

Once Sea Clan citizens see this, they believed strongly that this was heaven’s will, and bowed down to Hai Yingwu more respectfully.

However Hai Yingwu did not care about the citizen’s bows, but urgently flew towards Meteor Shower Palace.

Her aim was the secret door.

In front of the secret door, an old man was already waiting quietly.

“New Female Ocean Emperor, Nan Gong pays his respect.” This old man was the Elder Nan Gong. A benevolent smile appeared on his face, first he saluted slightly to Hai Yingwu, then he slowly raised his right hand for Hai Yingwu. When he opened his palm, there was a shiny silver key sitting there.....

“Hai Yingwu thank Mr. Nan Gong.” Hai Yingwu respectfully extended an Innate Bow, nodded her head, extended her jade hands and took the silver moon key.

Behind, 4 expeditionary Ocean Marshalls that only followed orders from Empress Jellyfish quickly flew towards them.

They knelt on the floor, the two in front used both hands to present something to Hai Yingwu.

It was the Sun Key and Shooting Star Key found from Sea Dragon King's body, and still had some blood stains on them, as they presented it to Hai Yingwu.

Hai Yingwu did not even look at them, just lightly waved her hands and the 4 Ocean Marshall's stood up in sync. One of them came forward, respectfully bowed and held his hands above his head take the Silver Moon Key from Hai Yingwu's hand. Then he walked forward with his companions to reopen the sealed secret door. Inside the secret door, the world with pure white snow reappeared. Hai Yingwu looked at Elder Nan Gong once more.

"Go then, Nan Gong will be waiting for you and Third Young Master to come back outside the secret door." Elder Nan Gong gave Hai Yingwu a reassuring smile.

"....." Hai Yingwu silently nodded her head.

She bowed slightly to Elder Nan Gong, then strode into the white snow world inside the secret door.

The 4 Ocean Marshalls guarded outside the door like they were

extremely strong statues, waiting for the new Female Ocean Emperor to come back.

For them, this was an order given by their ancestors a thousand years ago that could only be fulfilled today..

Meteorite Fort, inside the battle arena.

Empress Jellyfish was nowhere to be found. But Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan were still there. As for Starfish General and other Ocean Generals, they had already picked up their courage to look for the big group that Elder Xing Pan led to stop outside.

Yue Yang came out from the Obsidian Prison alone without Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

“You killed the Ancient Demon in such a short time?” Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan were shocked. That was a Heaven Ranked Level One Ancient Demon, and had a body with 50 meters in height. The Yue Clan’s Third Young Master and Sky Law managed to kill it within 30 minutes? According to Empress Jellyfish, there were 2 Ancient Demons sealed here and not one.

“It’s quite fast.” Feng Zhu was also very surprised.

“What treasures do you have with you? Divine Weapons?” Bei Feng Jia Suo felt that the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master would not have been able to kill the Ancient Demon in such a short time without any Divine Weapons!

“Divine Weapons are needed to kill them?” Yue Yang shook his head violently.

“How did you kill them so quickly without Divine Weapons?” Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo could not believe.

“Actually, it’s already considered slow.” Yue Yang fixed the collar of his shirt, coughed slightly: “I just showered, changed my clothes before coming out. That’s why I was slightly slower.”

“Took, took a shower?” Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo could not understand what they heard.

“.....” Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan’s faces reddened. When they saw that Sky Law did not come out with him together, they guessed that maybe Third Young Master and Sky law had sex. After listening to Yue Yang, they affirmed that after Sky Law and Third Young Master finish killing the Ancient Demon, they still had time to go to the take a shower like married couples. After calculating things like this, how much time did this boy actually use to kill the Ancient Demon?

“How is this possible, you were in there for less than half an hour.” Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo felt that taking 30 mins to kill 2 Ancient Demons, and even taking time to take a shower and have a change of clothes then walk out handsomely too extreme?

“Actually, the fastest time I took to kill a Heaven Ranked Level One was one minute. This time it’s considered slow as I took 10

minutes to kill 2.” Yue Yang humbly swiped his shoulders. After saying this, Feng Zhu that was hanging upside down fell down into the floor. The two of them were totally unaware and looked at this man who was smiling brightly like the sun as if they were looking at a ghost.

Shocked!

Is this guy really human?

Chapter 575 – What Is Ancient Demon King's Rank?

Both Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo could not believe that Yue Yang could kill a Heaven Ranked Level 1 in just 1 minute, it was too unimaginable for them.

Even if they tried their best, worked together and used Prison Dragon Pillar or Beheading Moon Chains, it would still take them more than an hour to kill a Heaven Ranked Level 1. It would also depend on the opponent's size and race's abilities. For some that are larger in size, such as the Ancient Demons, which would never die unless their heads were chopped off and smashed to pieces, the battle would continue for a longer period of time.

It would require both Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo more than a day to carry out the task of killing the 2 Ancient Demons.

You have to understand, that to fight with one enemy and to fight with two enemies wasn't as simple as increasing the amount of time in battle. In a fight where it was two against one, the amount of effort the solo fighter was required to use was increased by ten folds.

“What is your current rank?” Feng Zhu could not figure out Yue Yang's true rank. He thought that Yue Yang was a powerful Heaven Ranked fighter with a ranking that was higher than his.

“Innate Level 6, ah, it's Innate Level 7, I increased my rank after killing the demon brothers just now.” Yue Yang replied.

“How is that possible.....” Not only was it unbelievable for Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo, both Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan felt that it was unimaginable. There had been precedents where low levels killed high levels. However, for an Innate Level 7 to kill a Heaven Ranked Level 1, it was more impressive than an ant killing an elephant. If the difference was only one level, due to the suppression of one’s attributes or techniques, it would still be reasonable for a high level to lose. The problem is how many level difference was there between Heaven Ranked Level 1 and Innate Level 7? Without mentioning Innate Level 7, even if it was Innate Level 8 or even Innate Level 9, Heaven Ranked Level 1 would have been able to kill them within a second.

“Forget it, let’s not talk about this problem.” Yue Yang felt it was fortunate that he did not tell them he had killed Heaven Ranked Level 5 Hei Hu, otherwise they would have gone crazy.

Of course, killing Hei Hu the other time was due to many reasons.

Firstly, Zhi Zun and Night Empress worked together and had already seriously injured the careless Hei Hu.

Secondly, many magical weapons and beasts worked together to surround and kill him. Additionally, Cang Yan that selfish bastard who only wanted to save himself and thus was not willing to come forward to rescue Hei Hu, left him to battle alone.

Thirdly, and the most important reason of all, Yue Yang used the

Ancient Code power bestowed to him by the Card of Fate. Hei Hu was unable to fight back. The world destroying demon wolf that Hui Tai Lang became almost succeeded in swallowing Hei Hu, forcing Hei Hu to continuously deplete his life force. Due to the restriction from Prison Emperor's Seven Stars Pillars, when Hei Hu failed to teleport, it allowed Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian to use Divine Weapons one after the other to defeat him. At the time where he was in so much pain that he wished he were dead, Hei Hu got hit by Yue Yang's newly practiced Innate Invisible Sword Qi 'Shuang Hua'. With such terrible injuries, Hei Hu who had an unkillable body was not able to survive.

Yue Yang managed to kill Hei Hu only because the stratagem succeeded.

Without Zhi Zun and Night Empress, it would be very difficult for him to kill Hei Hu.

Even if it was Yue Yang's own estimates, killing the four Heaven Ranked Level 3 Central Palace Generals alone would be his limits.

If it was the less intelligent Ancient Slaughterer Beast King, Yue Yang could have intimidated him using the power of the Ancient Code and Nirvana Flame. However, it would still have been difficult to kill him. After all, Heaven Ranked Level 5 was not a pushover level and you could not pinch it however you would like to.

Heaven Ranked Level 5 was difficult to kill, but for Yue Yang, killing a Heaven Ranked Level 1 right now was no longer a problem.

He had gone through the Blood Lake Torture Chamber and fought the Ancient Titan. That was the most challenging battle. It was because at that point of time he had not mastered the power of the Ancient Code, his Innate Sword Qi had yet to receive guidance from Sword Goddess, thus had yet to form the black Gui Cang and the white Shuang Hua. Not only did Ancient Titan Wu Su had an extremely strong body, his heart also contained a drop of God's Blood. Basically, he could not be killed. If Yue Yang did not have Nirvana Flame, it would have been impossible to kill the tough Wu Su.

The Ancient Demon brothers compared to the Heaven Ranked Level 1 Ancient Titan Wu Su, were clearly not of the same rank.

In actual fact, Ancient Titan Wu Su was not only at Heaven Ranked Level 1. It was due to the constant torment from the Blood Lake Torture Chamber that decreased his rank to Heaven Ranked Level 1..... Even if the Demon Brothers fought against the Ancient Titan Wu Su, two against one, they would still have died a terrible death.

Let alone this, just the 'Titan Thunderbolt' was enough to make the Demon Brothers not be able to walk away scott free.

Within Heaven Ranked Level 1, the Demon Brothers were practically the weakest ones in existence.

The Ancient Slaughterer's body would surpass them in brute strength, even if its intelligence was slightly inferior to them.

“I still can’t believe it.” Bei Feng Jia Suo gave a request: “Can you take out Ancient Demon’s demon heart for us to take a look? Don’t tell me you didn’t even take the demon heart. Those are good stuff.”

“The demon heart was eaten by my dog.” Once Yue Yang said that, Bei Feng Jia Suo and Feng Zhu both collapsed to the ground with a thud, almost fainting.

“Burp!” Hui Tai Lang coordinated by burping.

Both Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan laughed hysterically.

Yue Yang thought for a moment, took out a runic crystal bottle and passed it to Countess Jie Wei. This was demon blood that he refined using Nirvana Flame. Considering it as Jie Wei’s gift to thank her for bringing them in the secret door. As it turns out, demon blood burns at a temperature as high as lava and has a black red colour. After purifying it with Nirvana Flame, large amounts of demon blood concentrated in to 3 bottles. It was bright yellow in color and filled with energy.

This was very generous for Yue Yang to give Jie Wei such a valuable item.

At first, Jie Wei refused to accept the gift, but after a while, nodded her head and smiled: “ Thank you for the betrothal gift of the Yue Clan.”

She was referring to her daughter Yu Wen and Yue Ting's marriage. Although Yue Yang had yet to make the decision, he was very supportive. With this, the marriage between the two families would happen soon.

Countess Yan was not a person that would lose out. She immediately suggested to Yue Yang: "Third Young Master, I have a naughty child at home too, only aged 9. I heard that little brother Yue Feng is very intelligent, has great potential. How about arranging a marriage between our families as well?"

"Oh my god....." Yue Yang felt dizzy just listening. He wasn't a matchmaker in charge of marriages, and thus there is nothing he could do even if he really wanted to.

"Third Young Master, after this matter with the secret door is completed, I will head to Soaring Dragon Continent and personally make a formal visit to the Yue household to discuss the marriage formalities in detail." Countess Yan seem to be very keen about this issue. Yue Yang secretly felt that it was a close call, luckily she was not trying to give him a daughter, otherwise Princess Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian would think that he was there just for the marriage. Actually both Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan both knew that it was impossible to marry their daughter to Yue Yang with Sky Law by his side. If Sky Law found out, this newly promoted Heaven Ranked will definitely explode with rage on the spot.

Instead of provoking Sky Law and angering her, it would be better to form a marriage alliance with the Yue Yang's brothers,

since they could still build a relationship like this.

Yue Clan's Third Young Master's future was immeasurable while their own daughters' abilities were limited, making them an unfit match.

Regarding Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan's good intentions, Yue Yang neither opposed it nor supported it. As long as this matter could be settled by Elder Yue Hai, he did not care about it. Besides, he did not even have time to date anyone himself, how would he have the time to care about others.

"Cough, Third Young Master....." Bei Feng Jia Suo opened his mouth.

"You have a daughter too?" Yue Yang felt that the sky had darkened and there was no longer any daylight left. It seemed that being famous was not a good thing at all. Everywhere he went, people would ask him about marriage.

"What are you thinking, I am not even married!" Bei Feng Jia Suo felt that he was going crazy. Where would he find a daughter to marry off to him. Even if he did have a daughter, she would be too precious to be married to him!

"What he meant was to ask if you would like to work together with us. There is a very formidable guy in Icy Wind Valley. Every thousand years, he would drill his way out of the ground and it takes a large amount of energy for us to hit him back into the ground. If you come with us, maybe it would be much easier." Once Feng

Zhu said that, Yue Yang understood that they felt his abilities were not bad and wanted to hire him as a hitman.

“How much is the salary?” Yue Yang decided to be specific about his terms upfront and be a gentleman later on by asking questions to clear his doubts.

“Salary?” Bei Feng Jia Suo was stunned.

“If you have no money, who would work for you? I am not going to help you hit this ground worm back into the ground for the two of you if I don’t get anything out of this!” Yue Yang refused. It was too early for him to serve the people. Even government officials only work for the money they earn. In one line: There’s no reason to work without benefits, no money means no motivation.

“Even if you do not join the battle, you can help by staying here and watch over the dome. As long as you see that the stars start in diminish in brightness, you can increase the energy by sending out rays of light, allowing the star seal here to absorb the energy and thus take effect once again.” Feng Zhu felt that this job was quite simple. Not to mention Yue Yang, even an Innate Ranker could do the job well. If it was not due to the worry that the Ancient Demon King’s substitute may sneak in, he would not have asked Yue Yang for his help to guard the dome.

“My apologies, I just asked a little beauty out and I can’t be late.” Yue Yang expressed that it was more important to solve the problem of him being a bachelor.

“Don’t you have any sense of justice! The Ancient Demon King is a very well known monster!” Bei Feng Jia Suo felt that Yue Yang was acting slightly weird. This lad was maturing too fast, normal human youths were at the peak of their righteousness at this age.

“Ah.....yawn!” Yue Yang seemed tired, carelessly stretched his body and yawned.

“It seems that Tong Tian Tower is going to be destroyed!” Feng Zhu felt very dizzy. Tong Tian Tower finally gave birth to such a genius, but his character was lacking. It would be impossible for Tong Tian Tower to not be done for.

“The Prison Dragon Pillar and Beheading Moon Chains look good.....” Yue Yang constantly glances at their treasures. Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo turned pale with fright after hearing what he said. They hurriedly shook their head and waved their hands: “No, these are Holy Items linked to our lives. Will and treasure in one body. We can’t give it to you no matter what. As for money, the both of us have been here for 6000 years. Where would we get money. Moreover, why would a man like you lack money!”

“I don’t lack money, but the problem is that without money, I would not have the ability to do work!” Yue Yang expressed that he now only needed a slogan to imitate Lei Feng. If he really truly imitated Lei Feng, then he would become an idiot.

“How about this. You can take a look at Icy Wind Valley first. If the guy drills his way out from the ground, you will come back and inform us and we will go there and kill him. Everything we obtain from the kill will belong to you. Will that do?” if it was Bei Feng

Jia Suo in the past, he would have despised Yue Yang. However, now that he had something to ask of him, he could not show it even if he despised him.

“It’s too troublesome. Wouldn’t everything just belonged to me if I see it and kill it on the spot?” Yue Yang asked in reply.

“That can be done as well. You can have everything as long as you kill it!” Feng Zhu expressed that he did not want anything as well.

“Out of the question!” Yue Yang shook his head.

“Why not?” Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo both felt faint. Why did he say no when they had already agreed that everything from the kill would belong to him?

“If I kill the man that is drilling his way out of the ground, there is no reason why the things would not belong to me, like how I just killed the Ancient Demon brothers. However, when the two of you tell me to kill him, there is no reason why should not be paid by the both of you. Like this, you guys are only telling me to do work but not paying me. Brother, this job is way too hard to be done by anyone. Who would do it without being paid? Only fools would do that!” Yue Yang felt that it was unfair.

“.....” Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo both listened. Suddenly, they smiled widely: “According to what you say, we have not taken any wages for 6000 years and yet we have watched over this place!”

“Your boss is too balck hearted. 6000 years without wages? Who told you guys to watch over this place?” Yue Yang asked.

“Prison Emperor.” Feng Zhu gloomily said his name.

“There is nothing I can do since the Prison Emperor has passed away.” Yue Yang wanted to help them but could not. At the same time, he was very curious: “Prison Emperor asked the both of you to guard this place for your whole life?”

“At first he said it was for 100 years. Who knew that after the secret door closed, there would be no news of him. We could not just leave this place without permission, thus we have stayed till now. It has been 6000 years, without getting rid of the Ancient Demon King , we have to continue guarding this place forever. Life is so hard!” Feng Zhu wanted to cry out loud. Unexpectedly, Bei Feng Jia Suo was the one to cry out: “It is still alright for you, borhter Zhu. You belong to the Soaring Dragon Continent, protecting your homeland is the right thing to do. I only came here from Heaven Realm to have fun, why must I watch over this place for 6000 years? It’s too much!”

“.....Ah, okay, stop acting like you guys are crying. Let me think about the issue of the Ancient Demon King.” Yue Yang felt that as the new Prison Emperor, he should have some sense of responsibility, thus he asked: “What is his rank?”

“Ancient Demon King? Heaven Ranked Level 8!” Once Feng Zhu said that, Yue Yang immediately turned on his heels and walked

away: “Take it that I didn’t ask!”

Chapter 576 – Who Is Scheming Against Who?

Inside the Secret Door's Meteorite Fort.

Yue Yang did not have the leisurely mood to help Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo fight againsts Ancient Demon King. Firstly, Ancient Demon King had escaped from the secret door a long time ago. To find him, would be like finding a needle in a haystack; secondly, Ancient Demon King's body was still sealed in the dome. Not only is it sealed by the Dome's Constellations, Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo had been watching over it. Even if it was a powerful Heaven Ranked Ranker, it would be almost impossible to take take body away. Let alone the Dome's Seal, Prison Dragon Pillar and Beheading Moon Chains are both very powerful; thirdly, Ancient Demon King was paranoid, thus he would never set foot into the Secret Door again.

Instead of risking his life again and again, escaping death would give him freedom.

Ancient Demon King would rather not have his physical body then to step into the Secret Door World.

“If you are unwilling to help us, why did you kill the Demon Brothers?” Feng Zhu was slightly curious. By killing the Demon Brothers, Yue Yang did not get a single cent of commission!

“That's because I told him to kill them..... What he will get for doing this, shall be the entire Tong Tian Tower's territorial

waters, and maybe even more.” Empress Jellyfish came back, her stare was like a sword. She looked at Yue Yang like she could look straight into his heart: “You took too long, luckily it is not too late yet.”

“Cough.” Yue Yang knew what she was going to criticise him about.

It seems that Empress Jellyfish had already predicted that he would return to the Grimoire World and have sex with Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

Maybe he had spent a little too long having sex with Phoenix Fairy Beauty, this seemed to have affected her plans.

Yue Yang felt slightly awkward, but he had a thick skin and pretended to not hear her.

Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan wanted to speak in defense of Yue Yang. Empress Jellyfish lightly waved her hands: “Forget it. No harm was done to the plan at all. Actually, it is better this way. After the last minute minor changes, the enemies will be less paranoid and it would be easier for our plan to succeed and become more perfect.

Bei Feng Jia Suo looked at her strangely: “Was it part of your plan for Third Young Master to kill the Demon Brothers? What kind of plan is it?”

Both Jie Wei and Yan did not understand why as well.

Only Yue Yang was able to guess a part of it.

He even managed to predict what Empress Jellyfish was about to say next, but did not rush to reveal it. He only smiled and quietly waited for Empress Jellyfish to speak. Even though Empress Jellyfish was an enemy, she was extremely intelligent and scheming. To be enemies with someone like that would be very problematic; However, to become allies with someone like her would be quite interesting. If she was not cursed, and her death imminent, Yue Yang would really look forward to fight with her.

Pity, Yue Yang could already tell.

This 1000 year plan shall be Empress Jellyfish's last mission before she dies.

Empress Jellyfish slowly shut her eyes: "The formulation of this plan started 1000 years ago. Maybe you guys have forgotten. At that point of time, there was a young servant that suggested to the 3 elders, Ai Shi, Tie Bing and Gu She to let you guys kill the Demon Brothers. Keeping the Demon Brothers alive from then on was all for today's plan....."

"You, you were that intelligent young servant girl from the past?" Feng Zhu was very shocked.

"Let's not talk about the past. Now I will tell you guys my plan.

Actually, regardless if it is you guys, the two younger sisters or me, even Third Young Master are now all part of the plan.”

Empress Jellyfish sat on the floor, gave Yue Yang, Jie Wei, Yan, and even the two guards Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo a task each.

Everyone was totally shocked after hearing Empress Jellyfish’s plan, including Yue Yang.

An adjective emerged in Yue Yang’s heart.

Frightening was the word to describe Empress Jellyfish’s scheme.

“Luckily she is not a man. Otherwise, it would be more problematic than that Scarlet Emperor” Yue Yang sighed inwardly.

“Fine. Even though we swore that only the Prison Emperor could order us around, we shall make an exception today.” Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo muttered to themselves for a long time before finally making a decision: “ We shall listen to you once, and only this one time.”

Inside the secret door’s Snow Border World.

Icy Wind Valley.

As far as the eyes can see there was an endless snow mountain

with continuous peaks and dips. It was an ice cold world. An Ancient Demon was buried in every single mountain top. These Ancient Demons were personally killed and imprisoned by the Prison Emperor. They would never be able to revive, unless gods descended to help them. They were once powerful but now they are just like dust in history and part of Prison Emperor's military legacy.

In the middle of the many snow mountains, there was a huge valley that was extremely icy and windy.

Water droplets had already turned into ice, the cold wind was like a blade.

The only thing that did not match the surrounding environment of snow mountains was the lava lake at the bottom of the Icy Wind Valley that had hot lava raging in it.

There was a very powerful Demon sealed inside..... one of the four Ancient Demon Marshalls that worked under Ancient Demon King. This Demon Marshall from the Demon Clan was famous for being cunning. It was the only Ancient Demon that was able to fake its death successfully by temporarily dying and deceived Prison Emperor.

This Demon Marshall named Yan Shuo, started to struggle free from the seal slowly since 3000 years ago.

Almost every 1000 years, it will drill its way out of the ground, trying to breakthrough the Demon Cemetery that all Ancient

Demons were buried in, from Icy Wind Valley's ultimate seal.

If Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo, the two powerful Heaven Rankers had not been suppressing it, it would have succeeded in escaping 2000 years ago. When the response of the death of the Demon Brothers spread, this Demon Marshall that had been waiting for thousands of years immediately awoke from the bottom of the Lava Lake. After repressing the emotions in its heart, it slowly swam through the lava, floating up.

When its head appeared at the surface of the Lava Lake, it immediately showed an evil look.

It saw the two people that it was most unwilling to see. The two powerful Heaven Rankers that had been guarding Ancient Demon King sealed in the dome, Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo.

“Dog Shit. Why are the two of you not dead yet? It has already been 6000 year, why are the two of you still alive? This is so unfair. As Ancient Demons, we enjoy a long life. You guys are just lowly humans, with a short life. Like bean sprouts, when one germinates and leaves grow, but very quickly, after Spring ends and Autumn arrives, the leaves will immediately wilt and decay into the mud! I really want to understand why such a lowly species is actually able to defeat the noble Ancient Demon. We are the descendents of the gods, whereas humans are failed creations, puppets made out of the mud!” Demon Marshall Yan Shuo shouted at Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo hatefully once it saw them.

“You say a lot of bullshit!” Feng Zhu grunted.

Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo suddenly released their strength to Heaven Rank Level 2 and ruthlessly attacked Yan Shuo.

The current Demon Marshall Yan Shuo had already attained the beginner stages of Heaven Ranked Level 3 after a thousand years of accumulating its strength and was much stronger than Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo combined. However, it was still sealed in the Icy Wind Valley's seal from its knees and was unable to leave the Lava Lake.

Otherwise, with Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo, it would not be easy to suppress it back into the Lava Lake.

Demon Marshall Yan Shuo also increased its power, and the thousand year energy and anger it accumulated exploded. Momentarily, flames raged into the sky, just like a volcanic eruption. Blood red lava shot towards the sky from the Lava Lake, making a deafening sound. Thick smoke emerged and pervaded the whole Lava Lake and right inside it, the 3 people were having a battle of life-and-death.

Boom boom boom boom boom.....

A major battle just like the one a thousand years before repeated itself.

Half an hour later, the brave Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo that were blood-soaked retreated to a snow mountain top while Demon Marshall Yan Shuo crazily roared at them.

It was still unable to leave the surface of the Lava lake. Otherwise, it would not have been so easy for them to escape from the battle.

“Come out, Prison Dragon Pillar!” Feng Zhu held up his Prison Dragon Pillar high in the air. 3 incomparably huge golden hoops spread out on top of his head. As long as it reaches its full potential, it would be able to restrain the enemy. If that is so, even the Ancient Dragon would not be able to escape. Out of all the holy treasures, Prison Dragon Pillar was one of the best holy equipment. Its use totally depends on the will of its owner. The stronger the will of its owner, the more powerful the weapon becomes.

“Beheading Moon Chains.....” if there was any weapon in the world that could be compared with the Prison Dragon Pillar, it would be the Beheading Moon Chains. When these two treasures are used together, it would be a formidable weapon.

“Damn it, Humans. You guys always use these kinds of despicable methods.” Demon Marshall Yan Shuo crazily sank back into the Lava Lake.

Facing these treasures, he knew his limitations.

If it did not continue to sink, it would end up like the demon brothers and get captured back to the Obsidian Fort’s Seal. In there, the seal’s power was much stronger, and it would be even harder for it to escape. Demon Marshall Yan Shuo cursed and sunk back into the Lava Lake to continue sleeping. Its strength was

insufficient to escape from the seal, otherwise, it would not have been afraid of these two darned humans.

10 minutes passed. Suddenly, Demon Marshall Yan Shuo floated up like usual.

After that ugly head drilled through the Lava Lake, it suddenly showed a cunning and weird grin.

“Go back? It is already too late!” Demon Marshall Yan Shuo let out a ear shrilling laughter, looking very proud of himself.

At this time, on practice field, below the dome’s seal.

Nine-headed Sea Goblin King was arrogantly criticising Empress Jellyfish: “I did not hear this wrongly, did I? You said you disagree? Do you have the ability to stop this? You are a prostitute that is like a sow. I used you in the past, and reluctantly slept with you. Otherwise, I would not have even given you a second glance! You have no idea how disgusting you are, always acting like a queen. It’s disgusting. Do you think that you would no longer be a prostitute if you act like this? I really feel sad for that fool, Guan Lan. Why was he willing to marry spoilt goods like you, not even knowing how many times you cheated on him! Damn it. Even up till today, I still cannot be sure whether that idiot Sea Dragon is my biological son! There is no reason for him to be such an idiot if he really is my son!”

Empress Jellyfish did not say anything.

Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan also hid in a corner. As for Yue Yang who pretended to be a General Ni Ji, he just yawned as he was bored to death.

Xiang Yu who was holding onto the Holy Sword, did not even look at Yue Yang and the others, but only stared at Empress Jellyfish.

He coughed and reminded the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King that was fanatically hooting: “Yao Feng, this woman isn’t that simple. I don’t have a good feeling about this. She seems to be hiding her abilities and does not look like Innate Level 8.”

Nine-headed Sea Goblin King unhappily roared: “If she thinks that I am still the man I once was, that would be a big mistake! I have received the demon’s power and attained the highest level of Innate Level 10. This prostitute is only at Innate Level 8, Even if her real rank is Innate Level 9 or 10, she would still be dead!”

“Idiot! Even if I did not hide any of my abilities, you would be too trivial to be my opponent. For an idiot like you that do not have any real strength, you would always be kneeling in front of me, just like how you did in the past. Licking my foot like a dog!” Once Empress Jellyfish said that, everyone looked at Nine-headed Sea Goblin King. No one could imagine that Nine-headed Sea Goblin King would lick Empress Jellyfish’s foot just to get into her good books? Yue Yang almost forgot to give Nine-headed Sea Goblin King a thumbs up!

“Vomit!” Hui Tai Lang almost puked. The most it would do to show its loyalty to its owner, would be to rub his legs and shake its

tail. This guy actually licked foot. His preferences were way too strong!

“Damn it prostitute.....” Nine-headed Sea Goblin King let Empress Jellyfish expose the truth about his past. He immediately felt ashamed and was so angry that his whole body vibrated.

“Cough cough cough!” His ally, Xiang Yu, pretended not to hear, but secretly felt happy.

“That’s enough, stop talking rubbish with them. Take advantage of the fact that Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo’s absence, quickly kill these people. As long as the dome’s seal is destroyed, the demon brothers would come out. According to the promise, we will support you to become Sky and Ocean Emperor.” A man dressed in the Ocean ritual’s attire kept following them silently. He sensed that there was indeed no ambush surrounding them, Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo were also so far away at the Icy Wind Valley suppressing Demon Marshall Yan Shuo and would not be able to come back quickly, thus he slowly spoke. Once he opened his mouth, he immediately ordered Nine-headed Sea Goblin King and Xiang Yu to move. He seemed like a very respectable man.

“Sky Emperor has nothing to do with me. However when it comes to the Ocean Emperor, the Sea Clan already has a suitable candidate for a successor.” Suddenly, a person swooped in from the passage outside. It was Hai Yingwu and she was holding onto the Ocean Emperor’s Halberd.

Her gaze disregarded the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King, swept past Empress Jellyfish and directly at Yue Yang, who was hiding in

the corner and drawing circles on the ground in boredom.

Nine-headed Sea Demon King was stunned. Why would someone appear now to disturb?

Moreover, it's an Innate Level 1 girl.

Seeing Hai Yingwu wearing Ocean Emperor's Halberd and armor, Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan immediately stared at her.

This woman really looks like someone..... Emperor Jellyfish opened her eyes, looked once at Hai Yingwu, then slowly closed her eyes again. It was as if she didn't see this person. The face of the man dressed in the Ocean ritual's attire changed slightly after seeing Hai Yingwu coming in, immediately waved his hand, and shouted: "Kill her and kill everyone else. We have limited time!"

"Don't worry, this is just an Innate Level 1 female. I only need one finger to kill her in a second." Nine-headed Sea Goblin King did not care at all.

He was comparably more vigilant when it came to Empress Jellyfish.

Empress Jellyfish was a successful woman who had power over the Sea Clan for a thousand years after all.

If he had not received the demon's power, and had someone powerful supporting him, he would not have had the guts to

challenge Empress Jellyfish.

Nine-headed Sea Goblin King was like lightning, flying towards Hai Yingwu, grabbed onto the Ocean Emperor's Halberd with his right hand and Hai Yingwu's neck with his left. He wanted to kill the opponent within a second, and also snatch the Ocean Emperor's Halberd to become the new Ocean Emperor legitimately.

“Something's wrong.....” The man dressed in the Ocean ritual's attire suddenly cried out, warning Nine-headed Sea Goblin King to be careful.

However, it was already too late.

Two huge wings, one left and one right extended out and easily obstructed Nine-headed Sea Goblin King's attack. Nine-headed Sea Goblin King's arms were pushed back by an irresistibly powerful force. Hai Yingwu confidently waved the Ocean Emperor's Halberd with a huge amount of force. In addition to the Ocean Emperor's Halberd's own power, it directly hit Nine-headed Sea Goblin King until he flew from the impact.

If she was not an Innate Level 1 Ranker and could only bring out part of Ocean Emperor's Halberd power, Nine-headed Sea Goblin King would have been severely injured.

Nine-headed Sea Goblin King angrily flew down from the sky, getting ready to strike back.

Once he saw the two bodyguards behind Hai Yingwu, he immediately got shocked and stood there..... There were actually two Sea Clan Protector Gods from legends, Abyss Manatee. They actually appeared behind the unfamiliar girl, becoming her bodyguard.

No wonder she could easily hit him when he used his Innate Level 9's power. The reason was because she had 2 Heaven Ranked Level 2 bodyguards.

“Aren't Sea Clan's Protector Gods already dead?” Xiang Yu also felt a bitter taste at the back of his throat. I'm finished, I massacred too much and provoked the Sea Clan Protector Gods.

“Quickly kill the Empress Jellyfish and go open the dome's seal.....” The man dressed in the Ocean ritual's attire suddenly took a deep breath, looked at Hai Yingwu again and groaned in a calm and composed manner: “Let me deal with her.”

Chapter 577 – Curse

That man who was pretending to be an Ocean Ritual Master charged towards Hai Ying Wu like lightning.

Hai Ying Wu didn't step back even a little bit.

Behind her, the two Abyss Manatees, which were holding long blades with both of their hands, swam out quickly and defended in front of her. While they swung their long blades getting ready to attack, the man who was pretending to be an Ocean Ritual Master slowly stretched out his left hand and pressed it on the ground. A special type of territorial energy spread out from his left hand. Though the area was not very big and was only 20 meters in diameter, the two Abyss Manatees and him sunk into stillness. It was as if time and space in the territory had stopped.

One man and two beasts did not move at all in the territory.

The man who was pretending to be an Ocean Ritual Master floated in mid-air, the two Abyss Manatees maintained their attack stance, holding onto their long blades.

The two most powerful Abyss Manatees had been restrained. Nine-headed Sea Goblin King and Xiang Yu felt at ease. Although the appearance of the Abyss Manatees was unexpected, but 'that man' is here, so nothing will be a problem. In fact, that man came to deal with the two guardians, Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo. But, because of the appearance of Empress Jellyfish, the plans had changed.

No one knew what Empress Jellyfish said to Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo to convince them to kill the demon brothers.

Killing the demon brothers seemed to be a huge loss as they lost two fighters.

But in truth, the Sky Vault Constellations Seal would be unbalanced easily if Obsidian Prison Seal was not there to balance it..... Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo killed the Demon Brothers, causing them to be drained of a lot of energy. When they go to Icy Wind Valley to suppress Demon Marshall Yan Shuo, their vitality would definitely be sapped. Even if they come back, they would be unable to stop that man from opening the Sky Vault Constellation Seal, and obtaining the Ancient Demon King's perfect demon body.

(Changed dome seal to Sky Vault Constellation Seal)

“Die, prostitute!” Nine-headed Sea Goblin King leveled up to Innate Level 9. He felt that he could handle Empress Jellyfish even if he did not transform into a demon.

Nine-headed Sea Goblin King waved his hand as a distraction and then kicked Empress Jellyfish's lower abdomen with great force, causing Empress Jellyfish to fly back 10 meters.

Blood was flowing down her mouth, but she still held her steely gaze, stood up straight and planted her feet firmly on the ground.

Empress Jellyfish's expression was as if she was not injured at all. She appeared to maintain her disdain for the arrogant Nine-headed Sea Goblin King..... The thing that ticked the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King the most was looking at her make that kind of expression. Xiang Yu was about to rush towards Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan, but stopped in his tracks immediately when he saw Empress Jellyfish's gaze. He felt a chill in his body. The kind of anger in her look was without hatred, without any loser or weakling. It was more like a winner or a ranker who had total control of the situation. Xiang Yu felt that if he saw some ants making threatening gestures and strutting around, he would have the same look of disdain and contempt just like Empress Jellyfish.

That's right, it was contempt.

Xiang Yu could see clearly in Empress Jellyfish's eye that there was a look of mocking disdain.

"What this king hates the most is that look on your face. Die!" Nine-headed Sea Goblin King pounced forward like a madman.

"Garbage!"

Empress Jellyfish spat out this word coldly. It was as cold as ice frost.

Her hands did not defend in anyway. She just slowly avoided Nine-headed Sea Goblin King's fist, then while the opponent was swinging his fist, she grabbed Nine-headed Sea Demon King's throat and threw him to the ground ruthlessly.

Rumble!

Huge vibrations resonated throughout the entire battle arena. The Constellations above the Sky Vault were also affected and started to become darker.

Other than Yue Yang who looked at the Sky Vault, no one else had the time to look above their heads.

Nine-headed Sea Goblin King wanted to stand up.

But Empress Jellyfish stepped on his head with her foot and humiliated him by forcing him back onto the ground: “In front of this Empress, garbage like you will forever be dogs! If you wag your tail well, I will reward you with a bone. But you do not recognize your own master and barked crazily, which will lead to your death!”

“Darn you, prostitute.....”

Nine-headed Sea Goblin King was so angry that his whole body started shaking. He never expected that Empress Jellyfish could step on his head even after he had obtained demon energy.

This was such the greatest disgrace!

The demon energy the just obtained exploded, and his body

started to demonise.

The high temperature demon energy erupted from Nine-headed Sea Goblin King's body. As it burned and ignited, the earth shaking energy exploded. Nine-headed Sea Goblin King, who had attained Innate level 10 in an instant, raised his head angrily. Little by little, he lifted Empress Jellyfish who was still stepping on him..... His neck bone was popping to the point of breaking. It was very painful, but he felt that if he did not succeed in lifting his head in front of Empress Jellyfish, he would never be able to regain his pride.

“Idiot!” Empress Jellyfish used 10 times more energy to step on him, instantly stepping Nine-headed Sea Goblin King into the ground.

“Aaaaa!” Nine-headed Sea Goblin King struggled again and again.

But every time he lifted his head after much effort, Empress Jellyfish would use a faster speed and more energy to step on his head until it was on the ground. Until now, Nine-headed Sea Goblin King finally realized that Empress Jellyfish's strength was not lesser than the demon energy he obtained, and maybe even surpass it.

If Nine-headed Sea Goblin King was alone, this battle would have ended.

But there was still a powerful aid from the winged clan, Xiang Yu, who was holding onto a holy sword.

At first, Xiang Yu wanted to escape.

The circumstances did not seem to be good for him, Empress Jellyfish was more powerful than he expected.

But that man was still here. Without that man's support, with the defeat of his ally Nine-headed Sea Goblin King, in addition to the fact that he had already offended a strong enemy Empress Jellyfish, the seat of Sky Emperor seemed impossible to achieve.

After thinking, Xiang Yu who was holding onto the holy sword bit down hard, and decided to fight on.

If he succeeded, then he would have a chance in becoming Sky Emperor.

“Kill.....”

Xiang Yu increased to the highest level and used all the energy he had in his body, with the light holy sword as his weapon. Human and weapon combined together shot towards Empress Jellyfish in anger.

He did not hope that he would kill the enemy, but just to save Nine-headed Sea Goblin King, his ally.

If the two of them worked together to fight Empress Jellyfish,

they might still have a chance to win. As long as they beat back Empress Jellyfish, Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan would be insignificant. Once Ancient Demon King's perfect body was released from the Sky Vault Constellations Seal, Guang Ming Continent's chief consul, the position of Tong Tian Tower's Sky Emperor would be his.

The holy sword moved like lightning.

Under Xiang Yu's attack with all his effort, he actually succeeded in stabbing Empress Jellyfish..... What made it weird for Xiang Yu was that Empress Jellyfish did not make any attempts to avoid him. It was as if she did not see the attack coming.

The holy sword was incomparably sharp and it pierced into Empress Jellyfish's back and out on the other side.

Xiang Yu was stunned, he totally could not believe it.

He killed Empress Jellyfish with one sword?

Why didn't she avoid it?

Jie Wei and Yan, the two countesses were screaming silently. They were also unable to believe it. Empress Jellyfish was dead?

Only Yue Yang knew the real reason why and sighed lightly. He could have stopped her from doing this, but he respected her last wishes. He watched quietly and let her handle this because this

battle arena would be Empress Jellyfish's last stage. The final act could only be finished by her... At the entrance Hai Ying Wu also saw everything.

Hai Ying Wu felt that it was odd. She hated this woman because she had killed her mother and her father.

Before this, she could not wait to kill her personally. But when she saw the sword go through her heart, she could not bear it.

"Ah, howl!" Empress Jellyfish was still stepping on Nine-headed Sea Goblin King. he wanted to take this opportunity to escape.

"Worm, you are only fit to eat the mud under my foot....." Empress Jellyfish stepped on Nine-headed Sea Goblin King's head again. It was as if she did not see the holy sword in her chest. She still held the 'I am in control of the whole situation' gaze with arrogance.

"Why?" Xiang Yu shuddered. He could not understand why Empress Jellyfish did not avoid him when she could have. Why didn't she avoid this fatal attack?

"There is an incurable curse in my body because I used a taboo power that I should not have used. This curse would be passed onto my descendants when I die. Of course, I would not want my descendants to have this curse, thus I chose you! Whoever kills me will have the curse." Once Empress Jellyfish finished her sentence, Xiang Yu's face turned greenish blue. He was scared out of his wits.

He gave up on his holy sword and stumbled backwards.

He raised both of his hands and suddenly realized that there were weird black spots on his hands. It was like some sort of rune diagram, deeply burned into his skin, flesh, bone marrow and even his soul.

Xiang Yu knelt on the floor in pain, screamed out in desperation: “No, you can’t do this to me.....”

“There are many choices in life, once you make the wrong ones, nothing can be reversed.” Empress Jellyfish removed the sword that had her blood, and the holy sword came out of her body, falling in front of Xiang Yu: “You are just a chess piece to me. Since the moment you pretended to be an Ocean General and stepped in here, you are destined to die.”

“No, it can’t end like this. I should be the Guang Ming Continent’s Chief Consul, I should be Tong Tian Tower’s Sky Emperor!” Xiang Yu lifted the light holy sword in grief. The moment his hands touched the light holy sword, the bright and shiny holy sword seemed to be contaminated by evil spirit energy, turning dull and dark. The sword quickly transformed into skeleton demon sword that had the shape of a demon bone..... When Xiang Yu lifted the sword, desperate tears formed in his eyes. He finally understood that his dream to become the Sky Emperor would never happen.....

“A man can be ignorant, but taking this ignorance as truth, thinking that the ridiculously small delusion is the power to control everything, that person would be an idiot.” Empress

Jellyfish snorted: “Do you know what is the scariest thing about life? It is not knowing where you stand and believe in oneself infallibly!”

“Prostitute. Xiang Yu, kill this darned prostitute! No matter if we are human or demons. As long as we have power, we are still gods!” Nine-headed Sea Goblin King struggled with all his strength, but it was a futile attempt and he could not escape from beneath Empress Jellyfish’s foot.

Even now, he was still unable to do it.

Xiang Yu raised the sword in despair.

Ready to kill himself.

He felt that his thoughts were like an unqualified retard in front of Empress jellyfish.

“If you kill yourself, not only will you not die, the curse will spread to your entire clan. You have a thousand years to reflect in the pain and torture of the curse.” Once Empress Jellyfish said that, Xiang Yu knelt on the floor. It was as if his soul had left his body and he was like a living dead.

“Let me go..... Darned prostitute, I will kill you!” Nine-headed Sea Goblin King was still struggling beneath Empress Jellyfish’s foot but was unable to escape.

“You, come here.” Empress Jellyfish pointed at Hai Ying Wu, who was watching the battle from afar.

“Me?” Hai Ying Wu was stunned with a startled expression on her face.

Chapter 578 – She Is Laughing, Proudly Smiling.

“How to be a ruler?” the sole of Empress Jellyfish’s feet exploded with energy and she directly stepped on Nine-headed Sea Goblin King’s neck bone with a thud until it broke: “First, be ruthless enough!”

Nine-headed Sea Goblin King was in so much pain, he did not want to live.

He howled tragically.

Empress Jellyfish turned a deaf ear, pointed at Nine-headed Sea Goblin King with her delicate finger and he stopped immediately. It was as if something sealed his mouth. Hai Ying Wu looked at Yue Yang, waiting for him to silently allow, then walked to Empress Jellyfish with fear and awe. With regards to this scary woman, Hai Ying Wu was totally on her guard, extremely afraid of being duped accidentally.

If Yue Yang was not present, she would definitely not walk in front of Empress Jellyfish.

This woman was seriously too scary!

“As a ruler, you must be ruthless. You would be able to intimidate others with your dignity only when you are ruthless enough.” Empress Jellyfish looked at Hai Yingwu with a gaze that

was like a sharp blade: “Little girl, if you want to be the Ocean Emperor, please remember this: never ever let anyone from the Sea Clan have a chance to challenge your dignity. If they do, then you will have to kill them!” When Empress Jellyfish was saying this, she was only looking at Hai Yingwu, and not at Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan. But the both of them were frightened as they felt that Empress Jellyfish was talking about the both of them.

“Why are you telling me these?” Hai Yingwu could not understand. Based on normal reason, wasn’t she her enemy?

“Guan Lan’s daughter, you know what my status is when I stand in front of you? I am the Sea Clan’s Empress Jellyfish, Guan Lan’s original other half, and you should even call me Empress Mother.” Empress Jellyfish’s voice was as cold as ice.

“No, I would definitely not call you Empress Mother.” Hai Yingwu raised her chest with hatred showing on her face: “ My mother is a female slave, not an empress and she has already passed away! My father committed suicide due to your children’s revolt. I have nothing to do with you. Besides, Empress Jellyfish, please look carefully, I, Hai Yingwu, am already the new generation Ocean Emperor, the previous generation Ocean Emperor Guan Lan has already become history..... Now, there is only Ocean Emperor Hai Yingwu, there is no Empress Jellyfish!”

“Very good, you sound a bit more like an Ocean Emperor.” Empress Jellyfish laughed humorlessly.

“I learnt this from you..... You said, not to let anyone in the Sea

Clan challenge my dignity, if they do, I should kill them!” Hai Yingwu raised the Ocean Emperor Halberd in her hand and pointed it towards Empress Jellyfish.

She hated this scary woman in her heart.

If she was not worried about getting a curse if she killed her, Hai Yingwu really would have used the halberd on her.

Her mother’s tragic death, her father’s tragic death. She seemed to have missed happiness narrowly. Luckily she met Yue Yang, and he brought her to meet her father and received his powers and the blood line to carry on as Ocean Emperor in the end. Thus, allowing her to become what she is today. Before this, she was always living in suffering, always careful. Many times, she was almost killed by the princes and princesses that this woman gave birth to.

Hai Yingwu’s biggest memory about Empress Jellyfish was the fact that this woman constantly killed female slaves and Ocean Emperor Guan Lan’s illegitimate children in large batches.

Luckily she was smart and cautious enough to escape. She kept hiding her abilities, and acted like a weakling.

Of course, her mother and other sisters helped to protect her as well.

Without them, she would not have met Yue Yang and died early on..... If Xiang Yu did not stab Empress Jellyfish, Hai Yingwu

would have really wanted to kill this woman personally. Only this kind of woman was the biggest obstacle for her to become Ocean Emperor. However, now that she had a hole in her heart, she would definitely die. Moreover, she had a curse, thus she could not attack her.

“New Female Ocean Emperor Your Majesty, you seem to be learning very quickly, but have you really learnt it? Do you dare to kill me?” Empress Jellyfish loosened her foot, walked away from Nine-headed Sea Goblin King’s head until she was in front of Hai Yingwu and stared at her.

“I don’t need to kill you because you are going to die soon!” Hai Yingwu countered without showing any weakness.

“Coward!” Empress Jellyfish suddenly slapped Hai Yingwu’s face and glared at her, then went back to staring at Hai Yingwu with an icy look. The distance between their faces was barely 3 inches. Hai Yingwu was terrified, but she clenched her fist tightly, not willing to show any signs of weakness for this woman in front of Yue Yang. She knew that he was looking at her. Whether she was a qualified Female Ocean Emperor would depend on today. Hai Yingwu used all her strength to not step backwards, angrily stared at empress Jellyfish, who was giving a icy look. Even if she was slightly trembling, she would not cower.

From a spectator’s point of view, they would be surprised to find out that there two women may look different on the outside but their vigor and character were amazingly similar.

Seeing the two of them staring at each other face to face,

Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan suddenly felt disheartened. Disparity, what is disparity, this is disparity! If it was one of them, Jie Wei and Yan would not have had the guts to do this.

Empress Jellyfish kept staring at Hai Yingwu: “There is no longer a curse on my body, and my heart is in pieces. I am in a state of weakness, and even used part of my energy to control and suppress the trash, Nine-headed Sea Goblin King. As the Ocean Emperor, you don’t even dare to kill someone in this state with your halberd? How are you even considered the Ocean Emperor? You don’t even dare to kill an obstacle that stands in your way to the throne, you are practically a cowardly and useless pitiful creature! You are counting on using someone else’s power to help you obtain the position of the Ocean Emperor? You are counting on using someone else’s power to obtain your own happiness? Think about it, you cowardly woman, how did your mother die, how did your companions die, how did your father die.....”

“Stop talking, otherwise, I will kill you!” Hai Yingwu felt that her chest was about to burst from rage. To be looked down by Empress Jellyfish was one of the biggest failures in her life, unfortunately Yue Yang had to witness this.

“Let me tell you, I was the one who ordered for your mother to be killed; I was also the one who ordered for your companions to be killed; even your father, that useless guy was like a person who refused to face reality. He thought he was very smart and tried to make petty maneuvers behind my back, but did not know that I was always aware of his actions and thought that he had escaped from my clutches! The battle that occurred at the Underwater Graveyard was controlled by me behind the scenes. Your father was also killed by me..... What can you do about it? Continue

Guan Lan's energy and blood-line, possess the young golden dragon that he gave you but so what? A coward will always be a coward! Even after inheriting his power and blood-line, you can never become a truly powerful person!" Empress Jellyfish mocked and ridiculed Hai Yingwu.

"Go and die, you evil woman!" Hai Yingwu raised the Ocean Emperor Halberd, and hacked at her ruthlessly.

"Humph!" Empress Jellyfish closed her eyes, not even dodging the blow at all.

However, an unexpected thing happened.

Furious Hai Yingwu did not behead Empress Jellyfish with the Ocean Emperor Halberd.

That super sharp Ocean Emperor Halberd filled with splendid energy went close to Empress Jellyfish's neck then stopped. Due to the lack of control, a red line of blood was drawn on the surface of the skin on her neck.

Hai Yingwu took a deep breath, changed her mood: "Empress Jellyfish, although you tried really hard to provoke me to kill you, I still don't want to do that. I am the Ocean Emperor, and have my own will. I will not do whatever you want me to do! It's true that I really hate you, but don't try to use my hatred to destroy my rationality! I want to kill you with my halberd, but there is no need for that anymore as you are already a dead person! I, Hai Yingwu, am the new Female Ocean Emperor, and I possess a one of a kind

willpower and dignity. I will not be affected by the previous generation's old empress..... Although I did not know why you wanted to provoke me to kill you, but I will not fulfill your wishes! I have decided that this is the true willpower of the real Ocean Emperor!”

Empress Jellyfish stilled after listening.

She did not let out any sound for a long time.

Just as Hai Yingwu was ready to turn around and leave, Empress Jellyfish suddenly laughed out loudly.

Once she laughed, fresh blood spurted out from the wound on her chest. The injury erupted like a mountain flash flood and could not be stopped.

But Empress Jellyfish seemed like she did not notice the fresh blood spurting out of her chest like a waterfall and continued laughing. She laughed till her whole body was convulsing, there were even tears in her eyes after laughing so much: “hahahahaha..... Guan Lan, you did not believe me your whole life, but now, let me tell you that you were wrong..... hahaha, haha.....”

Hai Yingwu looked at Empress Jellyfish. She thought to herself, had this woman gone crazy?

Empress Jellyfish's body shook.

Then stood firmly on the ground.

She took strides and walked towards Hai Yingwu.

Hai Yingwu was slightly frightened and unknowingly took 3 steps backwards.

Empress Jellyfish continued to walk towards her. Large amounts of fresh blood would spurt out from her wound every time she took a step, forming bloody footprints.

“What do you want to do?” Hai Yingwu tried to suppress her fear with all her strength, and stared at Empress Jellyfish who was acting like a lunatic.

“Guan Lan, you did not accomplish much your whole life. Luckily you left a decent daughter..... Guan Lan, you did not lose, but I won.” Empress Jellyfish walked till she was in front of Hai Yingwu. Her mouth was filled with blood but she still wanted to laugh. When Hai Yingwu decided to retreat due to fear, Empress Jellyfish removed the bloodied Meteorite Pearl Necklace on her neck, and hanged it onto Hai Yingwu’s neck gently. While gurgling blood and smiling: “I’ll teach you one last trick: find a man that is smarter than you, you must not find a man like your father that is sharp but petty-minded at all cost. Those kind of guys can’t even tell that his wife and female slave are the same person.....”

“Eh?” Hai Yingwu felt that it was slightly odd, but could not figure out why at that moment.

Empress Jellyfish collapsed to the ground.

Hai Yingwu instinctively stretched out her hand and hugged onto Empress Jellyfish's body, urgently asked: "What did you mean by that? Who are you?"

Empress Jellyfish used her hands that were covered in blood and caressed Hai Yingwu's face. She closed her eyes slowly and laughed proudly: "Take a guess?"

After saying that, both her hands fell powerlessly.

It was like she was sleeping, Empress Jellyfish lay down in Hai Yingwu's embrace. Her eyes were closed and her lips were still curved upwards, in a smile.

She smiled, and she was smiling proudly.....

Hai Yingwu realized that she was crying for no reason. Drop by drop, they fell onto Empress Jellyfish's proud and pleased face..... She looked up at Yue Yang, who had walked to her side while she was unaware, her voice hoarse, she asked to seek confirmation: "Who is she? Can you tell me who she is? Why? Why is this like that?"

Yue Yang nodded his head at Hai Yingwu: "She is the most important person in your life. This world has become wonderful because of her existence!"

Hai Yingwu was stunned, big beads of tears rolled down her face.

Drip.

They splashed onto the dead Empress Jellyfish's face.

Countess Jie Wei and Countess Yan kneeled down and kowtowed to bid their farewells to Empress Jellyfish.

At the last moment, they were totally subdued, and they happily accepted her.

They were all women, but compared to Empress Jellyfish, they were extremely ashamed!

Chapter 579 – Thousand Goblin King

Inside the secret door, in the world of pure snow, in the Icy Wind Valley.

A figure appeared before the Lava Lake. It calmly reached out its hand and summoned a meteorite shower.

Once Senior Demon Yan Shuo saw this person appear, he was overjoyed by the unexpected good news.

Immediately, he emerged from the surface of the lake.

Bowed to greet.

Inside Meteorite Fort, that strange man that was impersonating an Ocean Ritual Master suddenly lost his territorial energy and escaped away like a fish past the two Abyss Manatees. Even Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo, that rushed back from outside, could not stop him successfully.

“Where are you escaping to.....” Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo immediately pursued him, unwilling to let him escape.

Yue Yang remained unmoved.

He stayed behind to accompany Hai Yingwu, who was crying silently.

Hai Yingwu was a smart girl and was born with a woman's instincts. She could not confirm this beforehand because Empress Jellyfish's rumor affected her judgement. When Empress Jellyfish died in her arms, Hai Yingwu finally realised that she was devastated by her death. Although she did not know what Empress Jellyfish did for her in the past, she only needed to look at Empress Jellyfish's proud and pleased smile to know that whatever Empress Jellyfish did was in fact all for her.

"No, no....." Hai Yingwu's tears dripped down, she mumbled to herself: "Being the ruler of the oceans as the Female Ocean Emperor is not what I truly wanted. What I wanted the most was a warm family, parents that loved and cared for me. I do not want to be this strong nor be a pitiful orphan. I don't want to possess the vast oceans but not have any close relatives..... Why must it be like this? I would rather be the daughter of an ordinary family, why....."

"There are many things in the world that we can't decide." Yue Yang hugged her and consoled her in a hushed voice.

Around 5km outside the Meteorite Fort, the man impersonating an Ocean Ritual Master was finally overtaken by Feng Zhu, Bei Feng Jia Suo and the two Abyss Manatees.

However, this man did not panic.

Instead, he was very calm.

From a distant place, two shadows came towards them like the wind.

The looks, clothes, temperament, strength and other details of the two men were exactly the same. It was as if they were clones of each other.

The same slightly long and narrow face, the same high and bulgy nose, the same blade-like lips, and the same detached look from their pupils in their eyes. This kind of expression could not be acted out, but had to be inborn.

Looking at the natural arrogance and this heartless look of disdain they have for all living things, you would know that these two men were used to being above others.

Other than that, they were ruthless, viewing people's lives as if they were grass.

If you were to talk about differences, the only difference between the two men was the holy-ranked pearls that were floating in front of them. The guy on the left had a pearl that was burning with a blood red color, this was the Scarlet Flame Spirit Pearl; the guy on the right had a pearl that burned in a cyan phosphorescence colour, this was the Cyan Flame Spirit Pearl. These two spirit pearls were the only difference between the two men.

The man standing on the left, bowed to Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo in a refined and courteous manner: "I am the first clone of the Thousand Goblin King, Chi Yan."

The man on the right also bowed in the same way: “I am Thousand Goblin King’s second clone, Qing Yan,”

The strange man that was impersonating an Ocean Ritual Master also suddenly transformed. He transformed into exactly the same look the two Thousand Goblin King clones had. A purple colored devil fire, Purple Flame Spirit Pearl floated in front of him.

This man that was impersonating an Ocean Ritual Master smiled slightly: “I am Thousand Goblin King’s third clone, Zi Jiu.”

Colour immediately drained from Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo’s faces. 4 against 3?

This did not look good.

Due to the battle with Senior Demon Yan Shuo just now, a lot of their energy was drained. If they were to fight another battle, the outcome did not look optimistic. What’s more important was that although the two Abyss Manatees were Heaven ranked level 2, they were not very smart and thus have limitations when it came to exhibiting their military capabilities. Maybe they could attack one of them together. For the other two men, Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo were not confident in fighting the both of them one against one.

On the other side, the three men who claimed that they were the clones of the Thousand Goblin King, all had the strength of Heaven Ranked Level 3.....

“We do not wish to fight with you guys, after all, the most important task is to obtain the Ancient Demon King’s body. But you guys are very troublesome. If we don’t kill you guys, you guys would be in the way.” The first clone Chi Yan spoke.

“If you think that the three of you can defeat us, you are wrong.” Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo looked at each other, the two of them leaned their backs against each other.

“Of course we are not just defeating you four, we want to kill you guys!” the man that was originally impersonating an Ocean Ritual Master, the third clone Zi Jiu flew to them at top speed, raised his hand and an unusual domain energy pervaded out. Instantly, Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo ‘froze’ in place. Inside the domain, time and space seemed to have stood still. Even Zi Jiu himself was floating in the air unmoving.

The first clone Chi Yan and the second clone Qing Yan immediately attacked the two Abyss Manatees.

Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo could not move but were still able to think.

The knew that the two Abyss Manatees were bound to lose, but they were trapped in this mysterious domain and unable to escape. Thus they could only worry helplessly.....

Elder Xing Pan, Ocean Kinghts and the Clown Fishmen fell at the door of the fort, and they were all fast asleep. Senior Demon Yan

Shuo that had just escaped from the seal was taking big steps, following the man that was wearing the cloak into the fort. He even squeezed his way into the battle arena.

In the middle of the battle arena, Jie Wei, Yan, Starfish General and the others were already long gone.

Hai Yingwu, who was holding Empress Jellyfish in her arms, was also gone.

Only 3 people were left in the arena.

One of them was the Nine-headed Sea Goblin King that was still recovering from his broken neck bone; the second was the Winged Clan Xiang Yu, who had to bear Empress Jellyfish's curse after killing her.

The third person was Yue Yang who was sitting on the floor leisurely eating an apple while waiting for the enemies to arrive.

When he saw the man wearing the cloak appear, he laughed.

It was as if he saw an old classmate that he had not seen in a long time.

The man wearing the cloak kept his cloak, his face was also filled with a brilliant smile, and he was also smiling affably.

This man looked exactly like Chi Yan, Qing Yan, and Zi Jiu on the outside. Other than a look of arrogance and ruthlessness on his face, he also had two other naturally formed characteristics, which was confidence and self. This kind of confidence was not from power or status but from his character. It was an inborn characteristic. Whereas the strange look of self was a very unique expression no one else had other than this man. This was a 'I am me and not like others' unique look, as if he had to mark out that he was different from everyone else.

When he saw Yue Yang, he smiled.

It was not an intimate smile nor was it a polite smile but a special kind of happy smile.

This kind of joyous smile, was the kind of smile seen when a farmer sees the bumper harvest from their crops, or when a fisherman sees the strings on his fishing line being pulled on, or when a hunter sees that a beast had fallen into his trap.

He only had eyes for Yue Yang, and not for Nine-headed Sea Goblin King and the inconsolable Winged Clan Xiang Yu.

He smiled and asked Yue Yang: "Are you the genius known to appear only once in ten thousand years, the Yue Clan's Third Young Master?"

Once Yue Yan heard that, his smile became even brighter, "Are you the genius known to have lived for 3000 years, the Thousand Goblin King?"

He did not deny it, instead he clapped his hands and laughed: “That’s right. I am the Thousand Goblin King. I thought you did not recognize me so I was about to introduce myself. I did not expect the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master to have such a good eyesight.”

“Not even mentioning Thousand Goblin King, even if it was Thousand Magnet King, Thousand Beast King, Thousand Slave King, Thousand Sword King, Thousand Snake King..... I would recognize all of them, and I would definitely not miss you out.” Yue Yang laughed. His expression seemed to be saying that he had just met the Thousand Vegetable King selling vegetables in the streets a few days ago. Once Thousand Goblin King heard that, the smile fell from his face and his face darkened.

“Young man, you seem to treat me with hostility?” Thousand Goblin King asked.

“If I did not remember wrongly, a year ago, some man and woman who claimed to be your believers abducted my relatives.” Yue Yang was still smiling: “I am not treating you with hostility, I just do not like you very much.”

“Yue Clan’s Third Young Master, both of us were born in Soaring Dragon Continent. I do not wish to fight you. If you leave this place, I shall give you Tong Tian Tower. I will have no comments on whatever you do in Tong Tian Tower, my future is in the Heaven Realm.” Thousand Goblin King tried to advise Yue Yang: “Young man, as a senior, the things I am doing and the things that you are thinking are very different. Maybe you heard many rumors

about me, but have you ever thought about how similar I was with you when I was your age? You were a loser when you started out due to the lack of breakthroughs in your training and people rolled their eyes at you. Later when you had a fortuitous encounter, you improved quickly..... I was also in a similar predicament, I started out as a failure, then met with a fortuitous encounter and improved tremendously, becoming the genius unprecedented in history..... There is nothing to fight about between the two of us. You will go through what I have gone through; what I have done, is what you want to do now. Now, I just want to take the body of the Ancient Demon King, leave Tong Tian Tower and go to Heaven Realm..... This way, Tong Tian Tower is no longer under the threat of the Ancient Demon King, and you can also continue living the life you want.”

“Great, that was a great talk.” Yue Yang vigorously clapped his hand and then patted his chest, and laughed wackily: “Thousand Goblin King, do you know that you have the potential to become an lobbyist? I was almost convinced by what you said, almost!”

Yue Yang even used his fingers to make a gesture of ‘almost’, showing that he was not exaggerating.

Thousand Goblin King’s face darkened even more instantly.

Yue Yang seemed to not see this, and laughed: “Old Senior, as a junior, the things I do and the things you think are actually very different. Maybe you heard many rumors about me, but has it ever crossed your mind that I am very different from you, the 3000 year old genius Thousand Goblin King. We are in fact very different people? Why should I repeat whatever you have done? Why should

I let you have what you want? Your future is in the Heaven Realm but mine is only limited to Tong Tian Tower? Don't think that I am a 3 year-old-kid. Thousand Goblin King, I want to tell you that no matter how you persuade me, I will treat you like fart..... You would be so kind to give me Tong Tian Tower? If you were really that kind, why won't you let me have Ancient Demon King's body?"

"Fine, we shall fight then. We can use our fists to talk." Thousand Goblin King looked grudgeful and sighed: "Yue Clan's Third Young Master, you are really like me when I was young! The same stubbornness, the same obstinate attitude. Even if we know the best choice, we still choose to persevere to the end."

"Is that a compliment?" Yue Yang used his leg to kick Hui Tai Lang that was dozing off on the floor: "go and drag Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo back here. I guess that they have already been beaten to death by their opponents."

"Don't worry, they would probably not die." Thousand Goblin King gave a confident smile: "My main aim is to kill you first!"

"Now this is a coincidence, we have the exact same way of thinking." Yue Yang clapped his hand in approval.

Thousand Goblin King raised his hand.

Rumble rumble, a loud sound resounded. An Ancient Demon, that was more taller than the 80 meter tall Senior Demon Yan Shuo, appeared in the battle arena. Its power was Heaven Ranked

Level 3. It appeared and kneeled on the floor in front of Thousand Goblin King. When Thousand Goblin King pointed, the 150 meter tall Ancient Demon took a big step right in front of Yue Yang. It stretched out its huge demon claws and was ready to pinch Yue Yang to death like he was a flea.

Yue Yang yawned: “I am so scared!”

Behind him, a giant loli wearing Titan War Armor appeared in a flash.

“You dare to attack my brother?” The angry giant loli roared loudly. Her roar was world-shaking and deafening. She grabbed the Ancient Demon’s huge horns, used some energy, and then overturned the Ancient Demon, then kicked it forcefully, instantly causing the Ancient Demon to be kicked hundreds of meters away, hitting the other side of the battle arena heavily and deeply into the meteorite wall.

“.....” Thousand Goblin King’s face changed slightly upon seeing giant loli appearing.

He did not say anything, but took out a magic ball and threw it at the giant loli who was charging towards Ancient Demon.

A bright light appeared, then both the giant loli and the Ancient Demon disappeared from the battle arena and appeared in a Battlefield of Death in another space where they fought for their lives. Even if 2 Heaven ranked level 3 opponents entered this Battlefield of Death, they would be constrained by the Ancient

Code. One of them would have to die for the other to come out.

“I still have Heaven Ranked beast, what about you Third Young Master?” Thousand Goblin King summoned a Heaven Ranked Level 2 Snow Mountain Giant. It was 100 meters tall, wearing a unique frost heavy armor. It had one eye and a big mouth, 4 arms with boundless strength. There was even a Heaven Rune Circle on it to increase in strength. On its head were two black horns that were bigger than a demon’s horns. Its horns were twisted like a bull’s, protecting the only weak spot on the giant’s body, its ‘skull’.

“I do not have anymore.” Yue Yang expressed that he was not a rich upstart.

Behind him, Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen flew out. Duo Duo that had just woke up from deep sleep, bit on its finger: “Master, this guy does not seem to taste good!”

Before she finished her sentence, a thorny flower wrapped around the Snow Mountain Giant’s ankle.

Without waiting for Snow Mountain to react, another thorny flower, bit the Battlefield of Death magic ball that Yue Yang threw.

A bright light appeared.

Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen and Heaven Ranked Level 2 Snow Mountain Giant, both teleported to the Battlefield of

Death..... Thousand Goblin King was slightly astounded when he saw Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen. He could not understand why he could still see this battle monster that was almost extinct. On the other hand, Yue Yang looked good, and laughed: “Actually I also have this kind of Battlefield of Death magic ball. There was no need to trouble you to take them out. Thousand Goblin King Senior, please summon all the other Heaven ranked battle monsters you have. Let this junior have a look!”

Chapter 580 – Who Is More Awesome?

Competition Of Beasts

“Heaven Realm Demon Dragon.” Thousand Goblin King summoned out an incomparably glorious Holy Grimoire and softly supported it on his palm. A golden light flashed, and an incomparably huge demon dragon appeared above his head. This demon dragon was not a holy beast, but it had peak Heaven Ranked Level 1 strength. As it was a flying type beast, its battle capability was not inferior in any respect to the Heaven Ranked Level 2 Snow Mountain Giant. Its whole body was burning in black flames, scales like obsidian, horns like demon spears, wings stretch out for almost 100 meters. Its head had fierce look, demon pupils in its eyes were as dark as a cave and had a faint malicious look of being able to swallow every living thing around.

Yue Yang was expressionless, Thousand Goblin King was indeed awesome.

He actually owned a Holy Grimoire.

This was the first time Yue Yang had seen a human warrior possessing a Holy Grimoire.

The Heaven Realm Demon Dragon roared towards the sky. It spurted out a very long tongue of flame. Unexpectedly, it used special energy and a summon crystal and started summoning.

3 Blazing Giant Dragons that were half the size of the Heaven Realm Demon Dragon appeared at the battle arena upon being

summoned. They were also not holy beasts. Although all of their levels were Platinum-ranked Level 10, but their strongest fighting capability was not inferior to human warriors. It was at least equal to an Innate Level 8.

Peak Heaven Ranked level 1 Heaven Realm Demon Dragon, with the addition of 3 Blazing Giant Dragons which had strength equivalent to Innate Level 8.

How should this battle be faced?

Although Reaper Mantis was born with abilities to restrain the dragon clan and enjoyed eating dragons, but a Heaven Realm Demon Dragon was not chewable by the current Reaper Mantis..... Bloody Queen Red was also an expert in flying, but how could she fight off three 1000 year old dragons and one 5000 year old dragon? Yue Yang thought and thought, creasing his forehead, how to defeat these 4 very old giant dragons?

“Mai Bo En is a good fighter, I hope Third Young Master likes its arrival.” Thousand Goblin King had a very pleased look in his eyes. Seeing his enemy’s helplessness was the happiest thing in his life.

“Master, Ah Man wishes to fight!”

The Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man came out of the Grimoire World with her head high and stood in front of Yue Yang.

Thousand Goblin King laughed when he saw this.

A female Barbarian Cow Shadow wants to fight four Giant Dragons? This was such a joke. Even a Blazing Giant Dragon would be able to crush her easily, let alone the most powerful Heaven Realm Demon Dragon Mai Bo En.

Yue Yang closed his eyes and took a deep breath. He instantly called out his grimoire, and stacked Giant Shadows onto Ah Man's body. Ah Man had the Heart of Earth and the Ancient Titan's energy. She was a female war god that would never get tired. As long as she stands on the ground, no one could defeat her. She was definitely not Heaven Realm Demon Dragon's opponent, but if she drained the Heaven Realm Demon Dragon's strength bit by bit, it would run out of energy eventually.....

The Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man threw out the God Binding Chains as her strength exploded with the support from the Giant Shadows.

She immediately pulled the arrogant and pleased Heaven Realm Demon Dragon to the ground.

She took out Battlefield of Death magic ball and broke it, dragging the Heaven Realm Demon Dragon and disappeared.....

Yue Yang did not know how long Ah Man would take to defeat the strong Heaven Realm Demon Dragon. He hoped that death gaze would be triggered so a lot of time could be saved.

4 giant dragons and the opponent's female Barbarian Cow

Shadow disappeared at the same time. This aggravated the Thousand Goblin King. He was an exceptional genius that was unrivalled by anyone for 3000 years. He did not expect that he could not defeat this 20 year old brat even though he had so many Heaven Ranked beasts.

“Descend, Fallen Angel.....” Thousand Goblin King was hell bent on using beasts to compete with Yue Yang.

He was the only Thousand Goblin King in the world with countless matchless beasts. If he could not even suppress a brat, how could he even have the face to look forward?

He felt very unhappy seeing Yue Yang face his beasts so calmly and countering all his moves.

Competing with beasts? Let's see who has more and whose is stronger!

Thousand Goblin King raised his hand and millions of ultra bright rays shot out of the Holy Grimoire. Within the radiance that was as bright as the sun, a black shadow narcissistically strolled out. His appearance caused the arena to be eclipsed. Even light rays lost their might. An angel with wings spanning not more than 10 meters appeared in front of Yue Yang. However, his energy and might was capable of making light disappear.

His wings were as black as ink, and every single feather looked like black feather arrows or even black daggers. He was carrying a boundless killing intent.

Dark Gold Treasure Armor and a pitch-black Rebel's Angel Demon Sword..... compared to the cursed Bright Light Holy Sword in Xiang Yu's hand, this Angel Demon Sword was more evil and strange. A kind of bloodthirst emitted from the blade's edge. It was as if this Angel Demon Sword was in a hurry to drink human blood.

Although this Fallen Angel had Heaven Ranked Level 1 abilities and had yet to reach the peak of Heaven Ranked Level 1, he had a pair of intelligent eyes, and you could tell that he was very difficult to deal with.

A Fallen Angel with intelligence was more terrifying than two Ancient Slaughterers.

“Ohh! What kind of enemy is it that you had to summon even me?” The Fallen Angel slowly descended to the ground. He pointed at Yue Yang but it's black eyes were only looking at Thousand Goblin King: “King, is this the runny-nose brat that angered you? Do not be angry, wait for Mo Fei to help you kill him! Do you remember? 3000 years ago, there was also an arrogant brat that wanted to challenged your dignity? What a funny flea. Do not be bothered, my king. I will use my sword to behead him and present you with his head to appease your anger!”

“So it is a damn transexual.....” Yue Yang could not tolerate the Fallen Angels tone and vomited.

No choice as this was the legendary authentic submissive tone.

For a guy who stays at home all the time, Yue Yang was unable to tolerate fujoshis. Of course, nothing was impossible in the world, and it was reasonable that they exist. Thus, Yue Yang could only act like he did not hear it. He really feared that he would be infected if he listened to it too much.

Damned Tai Lang was not around, Reaper Mantis was too weak, Bloody Queen Red and Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying are no different. Who should fight the next battle?

Yue Yang had a headache.

He realized that Thousand Goblin King who has lived for thousands of years was indeed a freak.

It is already impressive enough to have one Heaven Ranked beast, but he had a group of them and everyone of them were more perverse than the previous one..... While Phoenix Fairy Beauty was sighing and preparing to meet the enemy head-on, two shadow rushed in through the passageway.

Senior Demon Yan Shuo swepted his claws, wanting to kill the two people at the entrance of the passageway.

But a Blizzard Lady rose up. It was almost as tall as the 80 meter tall Senior Demon Yan Shuo. What's more terrifying was that when she spat out cold air from her mouth, the whole battle arena instantly transformed into a world of ice and snow. Snowflakes were dancing around, a bone-chilling cold wind blew, and ice

fragments quickly filled the ground. Within a blink of an eye, the ground had froze into a pure white snow ground.

Senior Demon Yan Shuo was looking at his blazing hand in shock. That hand had actually froze due to the coldness. Even the blazing fire also became solid.

A Divine Sword chopped down from above him.

Although the energy of the sword was insufficient, the power to kill all life within a second from the sword was still able to scare Senior Demon Yan Shuo, causing him to dodge it instantly.

He was not a fool that would fight a Divine Weapon head on.

Even Thousand Goblin King was emotionally moved when he saw this Divine Weapon.

“The legendary Prison Emperor’s Divine Sword?” Thousand Goblin King faintly sighed. Although the Divine Weapon was right in front of him, he knew that he had no chance with the Divine Weapon as it belonged to the heroic female swordsman.

“I am late, are you alright?” The valiant and formidable looking Princess Qian Qian did not look at Thousand Goblin King nor the Fallen Angel that was ready to attack Yue Yang. After she forced Senior Demon Yan Shuo to retreat, she kept her Divine Sword behind her back and walked towards Yue Yang in big strides. In her eyes, there was only this bastard that she would forever love

and hate at the same time. Maybe it was because of the competitive consciousness that refused to lose, maybe it was because she refused to admit that she fell in love at first sight, maybe she developed feelings for him after a long time..... Anyways, she did not know when she had started to like this man that laughed like a bad guy. If he was not Xue Wu Xia's fiancé, would she still like him? If he did not peek at her or touch her at all, would she still like him? Princess Qian Qian could not resolve these problems so she decided not to think about it instead. It is always happier to live a simple life than live a complicated one. It would be sufficient as long as she knew that he lives deep in her heart and the only one she thinks about.

“Princess, your subordinate is being bullied really badly by others.” Yue Yang quickly acted pitifully.

“It's okay, I will chop him and avenge you.” Princess Qian Qian would never say things like that usually, but in front of enemies, she was always his most capable imperial older sister swordsman and not a proud and pampered tigress.

“Although that dead transsexual looks like he needs a spanking, his abilities aren't bad. Will you be able to deal with him yourself?” Yue Yang was slightly worried for her.

“Xue girl is here as well!” While Princess Qian Qian was talking, Xue Wu Xia also floated down. Unlike Princess Qian Qian who used her white fists to hit Yue Yang's chest, she changed her usual aloof exterior, opened her arms and gave him a big hug. She even kissed his cheek with her cherry lips: “Thousand Goblin King is not that formidable. I trust that you will be able to defeat him! Remember,

you are the guy I fell for and the most outstanding man in the world!”

“What a joke, do you guys think that a few nauseous words of love would scare me to retreat?” Fallen Angel laughed coldly after hearing what was said: “Only my king is the most outstanding man in the world. All of you are trash. My king is the only person that is truly fit to have Tong Tian Tower, and the real man who can conquer the world!”

“We will kill this guy for you..... Our abilities are limited, thus we will only be able to help you this much!” Xue Wu Xia kissed the corner of Yue Yang’s lips

It was very light.

Her kiss encouraged Yue Yang and fired him up, boosting his morale.

Hai Yingwu watched this scene enviously. She wanted to throw herself into his arms and kiss him too.

But she knew that there were two other more outstanding women in his arms. If she wanted to be acknowledged in front of the two of them, she had to become more outstanding.

Princess Qian Qian also gave Yue Yang a hug. But when Yue Yang tried to give her a kiss.

She twisted her face away to dodge it and his kiss landed on her cheeks.

On the other side, Xue Wu Xia who had lightning in her left hand and frost in her right had already flew towards Fallen Angel.

“After struggling free from Yue Yang’s hug, she held out a Decisive Battle Scroll. This kind of Decisive Battle Scroll would bring them to another space, but it was not the kind of space like the Battlefield of Death magic ball. They were his fiancées. Even if they had the confidence to kill their enemy, they still had to be wary of any crafty plots the enemies set. Thus they were not willing to fall into the Battlefield of Death where one party must die. Instead, they entered a battle space where they had a chance to escape.

Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian met with the transexual Fallen Angel head-on. When the Decisive Battle Scroll opened, the three of them disappeared.

“Be careful.....” Thousand Goblin King suddenly felt uneasy. He warned the Fallen Angel at the last moment, hoping the proud Mo Fei would be careful during the fight as the two women did not give him good feeling. They did not seem very strong but his warrior’s instinct told him that they were very dangerous, far more dangerous than they seemed.

“Senior Thousand Goblin King, do you still have other Heaven Ranked beasts?” Yue Yang asked while laughing. Thousand Goblin King did not respond, and Yue Yang straightened up his face: “If you have none, it is my turn to play!”

Chapter 581 – Battle? What's There To Fear!

“Wait.” Demon Marshall Yan Shuo suddenly took a big step. It's huge body shook the ground with a rumble: “I'll be your opponent!”

Yue Yang looked towards Thousand Goblin King. He isn't fighting?

However, Thousand Goblin King did not look at Yue Yang. Instead, he walked to the discouraged and desperate Xiang Yu, used a type of ranker's gaze to aloofly and remotely looked at him: “I can remove this kind of curse.”

It was as if Xiang Yu was revived from the dead and his eyes was once again filled with vigor.

He looked at Thousand Goblin King excitedly: “Really, you really can?”

Thousand Goblin King firmly nodded his head, “Fallen Angel Mo Fei originally suffered from an irreversible curse like yours. But do you know what my Innate Skill is? It's Separation. Not only can my Innate Skill separate any negative states from the body, it can also separate a person into two, do you understand what I am saying? In my hands, you would not have to suffer even a minute of pain..... As long as you pay your allegiance to me and be loyal, I can bestow you with a second chance at living with a perfect and healthy body.”

Without waiting for Xiang Yu to react, Nine-headed Sea Goblin King suddenly knelt on the floor.

His knees were aligned straightly in front of Nine-headed Sea Goblin King, face full of emotions and sincerity: “Powerful, you are the master that I have been looking for. Yao Feng is willing to pledge my allegiance to you! Yao Feng swears to god that I will treat Thousand Goblin King as my master, no matter what the order is. If I have any thoughts of betraying you, Let the heavens punish me!”

A weird look flashed across Thousand Goblin King’s eyes. The look disappeared quickly and no one caught the meaning behind that look other than Yue Yang.

He personally helped Nine-headed Sea Goblin King up, his expression was happy: “I understand your intentions, there is no need for you to kneel to me. Get up. Actually my aim is the Heaven Realm. I need more rankers to help me manage the Tong Tian Tower, Guang Ming Continent can be handed to the one with the curse; the vast oceans will be handed to you, loyal and devoted Yao Feng. You guys will become Tong Tian Tower’s new generation of rulers. Although your powers now are still lacking and unable to defeat Dragon Emperor and Emperor of the Underworld, but I will bestow the two of you with powers. In the future, you guys will definitely become Heaven Ranked Rankers.....”

“Yes, master.” Nine-headed Sea Goblin King was a model of someone who will follow whoever is stronger. Once he saw Thousand Goblin King accept him, he immediately called him ‘master’.

“.....” Xiang Yu tremble after hearing this.

But he was cursed and had no choice but to kneel, hoping that Thousand Goblin King will use Separation Innate Skill to remove the curse from his body.

Yue Yang watched this silently.

He did not stop them.

Hai Yingwu took this opportunity to hold his large hands with her small hands.

When Yue Yang felt the coldness from her white jade hands, he finally reacted and waved his hands to tell her to leave the battle arena: “Go, it’s too dangerous here. Quickly bring the Sea Clan members outside away from here! If a fight really occurs, this entire Snow World may even collapse!”

“If, if I leave, you will be alone here.” Hai Yingwu hoped to stay by his side. This battle was really difficult and he might be in danger. She did not care about being the Ocean Emperor. As long as she could stay to accompany him, everything else was not important. If he died in the battle, she would die with him. If he lost the battle, she could comfort him.

“Foolish woman, haven’t you heard about the rule where woman shut up while a man is doing stuff? I am not negotiating with you,

understand? This is an order” Yue Yang was furious.

“I will listen to your instructions, there is no need to be so fierce.....” Hai Yingwu felt that she was wronged and she implored weakly: “I will listen to you but you must come back. No matter what happens, you must not go to the extreme..... I will be waiting for your return with the others, you must know that if you die, none of us will be able to live on..... Promise me, you must not be like my father. You are the best, nothing must happen to you..... Previously, I was angry with you, it was wrong of me to do that. When you come back from the battle this time, I will be the best woman for you and wait upon you with all my heart. Remember, you must remember, we are all waiting for you!”

The more Hai Yingwu spoke, the more passionate she became. She hugged Yue Yang and her fiery lips kissed his lips firmly.

Her tears kept falling, into their mouths.

She ignored the reluctance she had, raised the Ocean Emperor Halberd in her hand and left without turning back. She was not heartless, but she was scared that she would be softhearted. If she turned back to look at him, maybe she would not have enough will to leave.

She was smart and knew clearly what kind of enemy he was facing.

One was a Heaven Ranked Level 3 Ancient Demon. The other one was even scarier than the Ancient Demon. He was the Thousand

Goblin King who once rampaged in Tong Tian Tower 3000 years ago.

If Yue Yang had the confidence, he would not have waited so long before attacking..... Hai Yingwu knew that this battle was as dangerous as the Death Arena and his battle in Heaven Realm. During those times, Zhi Zun and Night Empress were by his side. Now, he had to fight this battle without their support.

Hai Yingwu secretly hated herself. Why was she not strong enough?

If she was, she could have shouldered some of his burdens.

Demon Marshall Yan Shuo did not care about Hai Yingwu leaving at all. For an Ancient Demon, Innate Level 1 was as small as an insect. Furthermore, his biggest opponent was Yue Clan's Third Young Master, As long as he kills this man, no one would be able to stop Thousand Goblin King in the entire Tong Tian Tower.

Lava Dragon, Blazing Queen Bee, and my Demon Bat, come out!" Demon Marshall Yan Shuo did not summon his battle beasts when he was fighting Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo, but when Yue Yang was the enemy, Demon Marshall Yan Shuo did not dare to have the slightest amount of carelessness.

After all, this was the rumored super genius that was able to go to Heaven Realm and capture Abyss Manatees..... Out of all the people Demon Marshall Yan Shuo knew, only two of them were able to do that. One was Thousand Goblin King, the other was Yue

Clan's Third Young Master. This human genius teenager that was very similar to Thousand Goblin King must be killed before he grows up; otherwise, he would gain powers very quickly and become the same level as the Thousand Goblin King. Although Demon Marshall Yan Shuo accepted Thousand Goblin King, he was not willing to accept another human genius that was very similar to the Thousand Goblin King.

One human genius was enough.

This was what Demon Marshall felt in his heart.

On the other side, a golden light ray appeared on Thousand Goblin King's body, and it enveloped the recovering Nine-headed Sea Goblin King and cursed Xiang Yu directly.

Yue Yang laughed but did not stop them. Nothing was needed to be said about Nine-headed Sea Goblin King. Xiang Yu from Winged Clan was not someone good as well. If they died, Yue Yang would not be bothered by it. Anyways, this world was not lacking in fools. If they were duped by Thousand Goblin King, it would be because they were stupid. Who cared about what happens to fools?

A volcano emerged from the ground of the battle arena.

Blood red lava spurted out from it into the sky, forming a Platinum Level 10 Lava Dragon. Its strength was equivalent to Innate Level 9 and slightly larger compared to the 3 Blazing Giant Dragons summoned by the Heaven Realm Demon Dragon.

Of course, the main reason why Demon Marshall Yan Shuo summoned the Lava Dragon was not to be the main fighter but to form a lava terrain, which would be beneficial to him.

Demon Marshall Yan Shuo was only able to fight with 100% of his abilities only in environments with a high temperature.

The higher the temperature, the better it was.

The icy cold air that Blizzard Lady blew out in the battle arena just now lowered the temperature and caused Demon Marshall Yan Shuo to feel uncomfortable throughout his body. After summoning the Lava Dragon to change the terrain of the place, it allowed the place to become more beneficial to him.

Blazing Queen Bee was also Platinum Level 10. Its use was not to attack the enemy but to lay eggs continuously.

As long as it was in the volcanic lava, it would be able to lay eggs endlessly.

Every hatched Blazing Bee Soldiers had the strength of Innate Level 1. Although this type of Blazing Bee Soldier's firepower was useless on Heaven Ranked Rankers, they still had the ability to self-destruct. Even Heaven Ranked Rankers would be harmed when facing countless self-destructing Blazing Bee Soldiers.

If combined with Demon Marshall Yan Shuo's Tomb Innate Skill, this self-destructing technique was essentially a perverted attack.

When a beast dies, Tomb Innate Skill would accumulate 10% of the energy of the dead beast endlessly. For example, if the enemy receives thousands and thousands self-destructing Blazing Bee Soldiers, even a powerful Heaven ranked rankers would be severely injured from the process.

The only shortcoming of this technique was the fact that the enemy can't be locked in place and thus the enemy could run away easily.....

Demon Marshall Yan Shuo did not summon Flaming Bee Queen to deal with Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo because there was no one around to restrict the enemy, and the opponent had restricting type treasures like Prison Dragon Pillar and Beheading Moon Chains, which were Blazing Queen Bee's most feared treasures. If Barbarian Cow Shadow had not taken the God Binding Chains, Demon Marshall Yan Shuo would not have attacked on his own accord.

Now?

He felt relieved!

Thousand Goblin King was there to support him, and the opponent did not have any treasures that could limit Blazing Queen Bee from laying eggs. They would definitely win this battle!

Besides, he had Heaven Ranked Level 1 Demon Bat. It was his Guardian Beast. With it's ability to suck blood and echolocate,

even if his opponent was rumoured to be the Yue Clan's Third Young Master, who could defeat Heaven Ranked opponents, they would all be defeated without doubt!

“Third Young Master, give me your body! I had been wishing to become a human for a very long time. Your outstanding body is a treasure that I have looked forward to. I promise to use it well.....” This was Demon Marshall Yan Shuo's heartfelt words. Even though he was an Ancient Demon, he could not level up beyond Heaven Ranked Level 3. He then realized that the best kind of lifeform was the incomparably weak humans. Only humans had the best bodies, and the potential to become the best.

“I am okay with it, but you would have to ask my beasts if they agree.” Yue Yang summoned them continuously, Battle Angel Yi Ka was not used as she was a secret weapon. He wanted to save her for the battle against the overly confident Thousand Goblin King.

Blood Queen Red, Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying, Reaping Mantis, Spirit of Heaven Fire were summoned out one by one.

Lastly, the most capable Xiao Wen Li.

Xiao Wen Li had already summoned Stone Element Medusa, Storm Mermaid, Thunder Naga, and Ice Serpent Demon.

Stone Element Medusa and Storm Mermaid hated environments with high temperatures. They prefer to fight in the water..... Once they came out, the Storm Mermaid immediately blew the Storm Conch. Thus a marvel was born. Black clouds gathered in the sky,

lightning flashed and thunder rolled. Countless droplets of rain fell down. Behind Storm Mermaid, raging waves came in, it rolled upon the lava spurting volcano like a tsunami.

Lava Dragon and Blazing Queen Bee were angrily emitting heat to resist. Waves of heat evaporated the water.

Lumps and lumps of lava were like dams, stopping the ocean waves.

Water and fire were colliding violently.

Suddenly, a terrifying weird sound erupted. The whole battle arena suddenly transformed into a water fire fight miracle landscape.

Heaven Ranked Level 1 Demon Bat flapped it's wings, and swooped towards Yue Yang. But before it was able to use echolocation, Lamia Loli stared at the Demon Bat and it immediately froze in the sky. Blood Queen Red appeared, and let out an incomparable mournful Banshee Scream into the Demon Bat's huge ear.

When Demon Marshall Yan Shuo was preparing to help out Demon Bat, Yue Yang appeared in front of him.

Yue Yang did not move and was planning a scheme for his enemy.

Yue Yang had faced many difficult real battles with strong enemies. One big battle after another, Yue Yang had overcome them all. What was there to fear now?

Chapter 582 – Stealing Is My Innate Skill

Numerous stones shot towards Demon Marshall Yan Shuo with Yue Yang's control as they imitated Night Empress' shooting stars.

Demon Marshall Yan Shuo laughed inwardly. He thought this lad was really impressive but he only had stones to use against him. If it was really the shooting stars from Night Empress' Starry Sky Domain, Demon Marshall Yan Shuo would not dare to face it head-on. But Yue Yang was only imitating it using normal stones, thus the power was very different and not a threat at all.

“Rumble rumble rumble.....” Demon Marshall Yan Shuo waved his fist in disdain and smashed those rain-like rocks.

Trying to use rocks to defeat an Ancient Demon?

That's just a dream!

On the other side, Demon Bat's battle did not look as optimistic as its master's. It was bound by Xiao Wen Li, and its ears, which were originally very sensitive and able to listen to ultrasound, had exploded due to Bloody Queen Red's Banshee Scream. Blood was spurting out from its ear drums.

Its consciousness blanked for a moment and its body fell from the sky like an animal hide.

At the same time, Xiao Wen Li's Dual Icicle Blades went into its

heart. Although the wound was superficial and unable to penetrate into the heart, that kind of extreme cold from the icicle could still easily envelope its internal organs, forming a layer of ice slag. Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying that was holding onto Yue Yang's Crescent Moon, chopped at Demon Bat's left wing forcefully. The other wing was flogged by Blood Queen Red's Whip of Agony.

Although its level was higher and its strength was stronger, the Demon Bat, that was Heaven Ranked level 1, was unable to deal with them. Under the valiant attack of Xiao Wen Li and the other's Innate Skills and cooperation, its body was badly injured.

Without any warning, Demon Bat escaped from the clutches of the Binding and Banshee Scream and transformed into a ray of golden light.

It used the technique of changing its form to try to minimize the physical damage and hide from the enemies.

If it did not transformed into the light ray form, it would have been trapped in a frozen state..... Regarding Demon Bat's escape, Xiao Wen Li raised her right hand, which was small, silky and pure white as jade.

Limitless purifying light rays emitted from Xiao Wen Li's hand.

This kind of purifying light rays carried the property to disperse negative effects. It's main use was not to heal, or even inflict negative effects on the opponent's body but to attack the enemy! Xiao Wen Li used this skill very rarely, unless she was dealing with

Demon Abyss Rankers or enemies that were good at using negative energies.

Once the golden ray Demon Bat transformed to come in contact with the light rays, it instantly gave off a thick smoke.

The two kinds of energy cancelled out each other quickly and melted.

In the thick smoke, Demon Bat that was in pain rolled around a few times, then quickly transformed into more than 100 golden little bats, and flew all over the place, trying to escape.

“Tch!”

Stone Element Medusa, whose had flaming snakes as hair, suddenly displayed her might, her terrifying eye piercing gaze let out a ray of bright light emerged. Energy from her body quickly gathered at her hands and converged into the Dark Golden Snake Bow she was holding onto. As she stretched out her arms, the bow became a full moon, more than ten oddly shaped arrows were aligned on the Dark Golden Snake Bow with burning flame energy... With a swish, the flaming arrows shot out angrily in a shape of a fan, then strangely traced down each of their targets automatically in the air.

As it turns out, every arrow was able to land on the small bats.

All those golden bats that were shot by the flaming arrows rolled

around in pain and one by one, fell down from the sky.

Although this kind of flames was not the Nirvana Flame, this was an imitation of the Nirvana Flame on Yue Yang's body that the Gemini Palace created. This kind of fake Nirvana flames combined perfectly with Stone Element Medusa's snake hair. This kind of energy was not comparable to normal flames.

In addition, after Yue Yang mastered Yang Energy and comprehended the Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus, he had helped to increase the power of Stone Element Medusa's flaming snake hair. Especially after he defeated Heaven Realm's Yan Zong and Yan Zun and obtained powerful Pure Blue Fire Form Energy, Yue Yang purposely fused it with Stone Element Medusa. Although it had not reached that level, her flaming snake hair was already close to the Pure Blue Fire Form. Moreover, she had full control over it, so it became one of Stone Element Medusa's 'cheat code'.

Demon Bat realized that it when had transformed into a small bat, it was defeated more quickly and will die a more terrible death.

It hurriedly gathered together, and transformed into the huge size again.

Stone Element Medusa's golden arrow reached and went through the top of Demon Bat's lip..... Very slowly, Demon Bat's lips started to become stone. Originally dark golden skin colour started to turn into the greyish black colour of rocks, and its texture also changed.

A ray of purple lightning flashed across the and struck onto Demon Bat's huge wing till a huge hole appeared. The supporting wing bone was only left with a black bone, its hair was burnt, and its flesh was damaged. Demon Bat summoned a huge Wild Bull, which was Bronze Level 10, while in pain. The appearance of this wild bull did not seem to be a suitable helper but more like food..... Demon Bat jumped onto huge Wild Bull's back and sucked its blood aggressively. The injuries on its body healed quickly, but the bronze level 10 Wild Bull cried out in pain, then knelt on the floor due to the lack of energy.

“Die!” Ice Serpent Demon, who had not attacked all this while, directly chopped off the Wild Bull's head.

At the same time, Reaper Mantis appeared from the sky, jumped onto Demon Bat's back. With the same position, it started to bite into Demon Bat's neck.

Xiao Wen Li's double-edged blade, Jiang Ying's Crescent Moon and Blood Queen's Whip of Agony landed on Demon Bat's body at the same time. Demon bat that just recovered was covered in injuries again within seconds.

“Screech!”

Demon Bat instantly transformed, it demonized and then turned into a 10 meter tall monster that looked like a demon king.

A golden light flashed across the sky like a small dragon,

emerging from the ocean.

The tiny dragon-shaped golden beast glided down the sky with a beautiful posture. It opened its small mouth and bit Demon Bat's head. Different to a real demon king, the demonized Demon Bat did not have the huge horns that demon king had. It only had two huge ears on top of its head.

Without the protection from the demon horns, it was very easy for golden beast to bite through its head. It was like opening the gates to a palace, making the attack so easy.

It instantly bit open the Demon Bat's skull and drilled into it.

Demon Marshall Yan Shuo was so pleased with himself, but then realized that he was tricked. The Yue Clan's Third Young Master was just a distraction and not the real battle.

Seeing his Guardian Beast holding its head and grinding its head on the floor, Demon Marshall Yan Shuo was seething with anger. Even though his Guardian Beast would not really die, but this disgraceful defeat would decrease its powers drastically. It may also lose some intelligence and some growing potential.

"Go away!" Demon Marshall Yan Shuo wanted to slap Yue Yang away and save his beloved beast.

"Don't be anxious, let us have a good chat." Yue Yang looked at Thousand Goblin King, silver light spread out the sky, forming

sealing rune circle. What was most special about it was the one and only Everlasting Wheel that Yue Yang had.

Demon Marshall Yan Shuo's hand was stilled in the air by the Everlasting Wheel.

Unless the demon arm was cut off, he would have to wait for Yue Yang's Everlasting Wheel to disappear, only then would he be able to regain his abilities to use his demon arm.

When Yue Yang and Demon Marshall Yan Shuo were fighting, Thousand Goblin King also appeared on the other corner of the battle arena. He was smiling while holding a ball of light in his hands. His left hand was white, mildly showing an angel's form; right hand was green, mildly showing nine-headed monster's form. Before the light totally disappeared, two tired and wobbly legs that were as soft as mud appeared..... It was Xiang Yu that was cursed and Nine-headed Sea Goblin King that was badly injured. They looked more tired and wrecked than men who had been visiting prostitutes continuously for 10 days and 10 nights.

Within a minute, their form became bigger.

As it turns out, the cursed Xiang Yu's wings had become as bald as a vulture, and the floor was filled with grayish black feathers.

His bright and shiny eyes had also become dead and dull, without any luster. Furthermore, a pair of dark eye circles signifying a severe lack of sleep appeared.

Looking closely, this youthful face had already started to age. Wrinkles could be seen on his forehead.

It was very obvious that Xiang Yu's power had decreased drastically.

It had now decreased to a mere Innate Level 6.....

Nine-headed Sea Goblin King suffered a worse fate than Xiang Yu as he lay on Xiang Yu's right like mud. He had already fallen lower than Innate Level 6 and was only left with Innate Level 5. His hair had all turned white, and his complexion looked like he was a patient with critical illness.

"Why?" Xiang Yu realised that the curse had not diminished at all. Instead, he had lost an unmeasurable amount of pure energy.

"A bunch of fools, that's right, you guys did not hear me wrongly. You guys really are fools, born fools. Other than Yue Clan's Third Young Master, I am too smart for anyone else!" Thousand Goblin King immediately sucked in the two balls of pure energy in his arms happily. It was as if he was eating a delicacy, incomparably invigorating.

"Separation Innate Skill....." Xiang Yu realized he was wrong now, there was definitely something wrong with Thousand Goblin King's Separation Innate Skill.

"You did not guess wrongly. Separation Innate Skill, as long as

the target is willing, everything can be separated. Such as your body's energy, or the treasured sword in your hand, the holy armor that you are wearing, even internal organs, blood, bone marrow, brain juice. My Separation Innate Skill can successfully separate things and deprive anything You are already useless!. Rather than wasting pure energy that have yet to be contaminated, it would be better if it was given to me. After I control Tong Tian Tower, conquer Heaven Realm, I will think of the sacrifice you guys made occasionally.” Thousand Goblin King no longer looked at Xiang Yu and Nine-headed Sea Goblin King as he turned and walked away.

“Darn you Thousand Goblin King, I have already pledged my loyalty to you!” Nine-headed Sea Goblin King gasped for air, used the last bit of strength and shouted.

“You guys should be ashamed! Why was I able to trick you guys? It was neither because I am very clever, nor because the Separation Innate Skill was very impressive, but because the two of you are extremely stupid! Secondly, you self-proclaimed top notch warriors, it is delusional for you to become Tong Tian Tower's Five Emperors. You guys only have a little bit of pure energy, it is like you guys are trash. A dog beneath Yue Clan's Third Young Master's foot would be better than you guys. It angers me to even talk about this, I wasted so much on my Separation Innate Skill on you two but only obtained such a small amount of energy!” Thousand Goblin King seemed to be suppressing his anger. He took in a breath and his usual arrogance came back: “If I did not kill the two of you personally, the energy I took away will dissipate. You two pieces of trash would have been chopped and fed to dogs. You're on your own now, based on the type of retarded clowns you guys are, it would be impossible for the two of you to become Tong Tian Tower's Five Emperors. Living is already a

luxury for the two of you!”

“Pu!” Xiang Yu vomited blood, his eyes became black and he fainted.

“Kill you, I must kill you!” Nine-headed Sea Goblin King swung his fists crazily, but he did not even have the strength to stand up.

“Talking to you guys is literally an insult to my intelligence!” Thousand Goblin King twitched his mouth in disdain, flew up to the Sky Vault instantly. He slowly drew a Constellation Diagram with his hands, as he was trying to open the Sky Vault Constellation Seal.

He suddenly remembered something, stopped and looked at Yue Yang which was on the ground of the battle arena: “Yue Clan’s Third Young Master, are you not going to stop me?”

Yue Yang had just defeated Demon Marshall Yan Shuo and smiled: “I can’t break the Sky Vault Constellation Seal. Once you break it and obtain the Ancient Demon King’s body, I will then take a part of it.”

Thousand Goblin King looked coldly, “Young man, do not be overly confident.”

Yue Yang pointed to the sky with a finger and replied: “I’m telling you, stealing is my Innate Skill!”

Chapter 583 – Sleeping Dragon Dreamland

“Is it?” Thousand Goblin King snorted coldly, then looked at Demon Marshall Yan Shuo, “Don’t even dream about Heaven Realm if you cannot even kill Yue Clan’s Third Young Master!”

“I will kill him now!” Demon Marshall Yan Shuo quickly declared.

In front of Thousand Goblin King, Demon Marshall Yan Shuo was very respectful, and did not dare to show an ounce of an Ancient Demon’s arrogance.

Xiang Yu that was cursed suddenly woke up. Using the last bit of strength he had, he climbed up and stumbled towards the passageway. Demon Marshall was getting ready to fight Yue Yang. His Heaven Rank power increased suddenly. If it was in the past, he would still be able to barely brace himself. But now that his pure energy was stolen by Thousand Goblin King, and he was only left with Innate Level 6 powers, he would definitely die if he stayed in the battled arena.

Nine-headed Sea Goblin King also climbed up quickly and followed him.

With regards to the departure of these two men, Demon Marshall Yan Shuo did not stop them. In their eyes, they were as insignificant as ants.

Thousand Goblin King needed to concentrate on breaking the

Constellation Diagram, while Demon Marshall Yan Shuo had to use 100% of his focus to deal with Yue Yang. It would not be a joke if Yue Yang managed to take advantage of his weaknesses and attacked him. Regardless if it was the World Exterminating Wheel or the Nirvana Flame, once they hit a target, that target was bound to die.

“Second Demon Form.” Demon Marshall Yan Shuo thundered in rage and black hell flames ignited on his body.

The huge horns on its head grew larger.

Demon teeth grew out densely in its mouth.

Sharp spikes grew from its spine out of its back, forming an odd-looking spiky back.

Its scales became even darker and shinier, Dark Hell Flame emerged from the top, transforming into two types of Demon Fire Scales. On his left arm, with the power of his Demon Chief State, a ball of Dark Hell Flame become an extremely hot Inferno Shield with high temperature. Even more Dark Hell Flame gathered on his right arm, forming a Demonic Fire Scythe. A very unique ring of light appeared beneath Demon Marshall Yan Shuo's body, which was over 90 metres tall. It was like numerous flames spread out on the floor to form a Flaming Rune Pattern. It continuously maintained Demon Marshall Yan Shuo's high temperature and also removed any advantages of fighting on ground.

A huge burst of Domain of Power appeared. It was fiery red and

shaped like a semicircle.

Demon Marshall Yan Shuo's powers increased many times inside his Domain of Power, totally breaking out of his Heaven Ranked level 3 power.

Every movement he made contained some kind of power that Heaven Rankers had. Other than Yue Yang, everyone else including Xiang Yu and Nine-headed Sea Goblin King that were already outside the passageway were affected. They felt strangled, could not breathe and almost fainted on the floor.

Yue Yang slowly closed his eyes and stretched his arms.

On both his sides, right and left, the world was totally different.

On one side, snow was falling and the air was cold; on the other, the temperature was soaring high and it was like hell. These two worlds were totally different. Other than the unaffected areas such as the surrounding ten metres around Thousand Goblin King's body and Demon Marshall Yan Shuo's Domain of Power, all of the surrounding there had already been under Yue Yang's Yin and Yang Abilities control.

As it turns out, the very arrogant Lava Dragon was dying.

Torrential rain gushed out from the sky, causing it to be in extreme pain.

However, what affected it more was the cold air emitted by Yue Yang's Yin and Yang Abilities. If it did not have such a high temperature, it would have turned into a frozen statue. Lava Dragon moaned in pain and wanted to fly to his owner but Storm Mermaid would not let him go. She controlled the water on the ground, and it moved towards her opponent like a tsunami. Lava Dragon spitted out hot lava, forming a layer of protection around it as it tried to prevent Storm Mermaid from blocking him.

A pair of Dual Iccicle Blades penetrated deeply into its throat. It was stopped while spitting out the lava halfway.

The skill that Lava Dragon was using was interrupted instantly.

The skill bounced back, causing more damage to Lava Dragon's body. Even more deadly ice frost entered its body and caused more damage, causing it to be very scared.

"Trying to escape?" Ice Serpent Demon threw away the dagger, clasp her hands together and gathered a ball of extremely cold air. Then, she stuffed it into Lava Dragon's throat when it tried to bite her. Almost at the same time, Lava Dragon became a frozen statue, then the ice started to melt into water. Lava Dragon's body was recovered.

Blazing Queen Bee in the sky was not willing not willing to lose a helper like Lava Dragon.

It was forced to stop laying eggs, as it left the volcano opening and flew high up in the sky.

It dived down fast.

It tried to save its teammate.

Ice Serpent Demon raised her hands highly above her head and shouted out, “Ice Mist.”

Thousands of ice pillars appeared around her like millions of ice guns and shot towards the sky.

When it hit Lava Dragon and Blazing Queen Bee, it instantly became balls of ice flakes, like lotus, it rotated rapidly and trapped Lava Dragon and Blazing Queen Bee inside.

Demon Bat whose head was bitten off by Golden Beast was in extreme pain.

It cried out continuously.

It then transformed into a golden ray.

Hoping to escape from Golden Beast.

Xiao Wen Li in the air had been waiting for a long time, and pure white energy emitted from her small hands. Demon Bat was unable to resist this type of pure white energy, thus it was forced to transform back into its original form. Thunder Naga's falling

thunder, Bloody Queen Red's whip of pain, hornless dragon Jiang Ying's Crescent Moon Blade hit their bodies at the same time..... The extremely injured Demon Bat shouted out in pain, wishing that its master would summon it back, otherwise it would definitely die.

At this point in time, Demon Marshall Yan Shuo was sleeping while standing up weirdly.

Sleeping Dragon Dreamland.

This was Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying special skill, a type of dragon power to force opponents into their dreamland. The less concentration their enemies have, the higher the chances of success, and the longer the time of sleep would be. She was just hoping to try this skill, and did not expect to be able to put Heaven Ranked level 3 Demon Marshall Yan Shuo into deep sleep.

Although it was only asleep for 10 seconds, it was already enough for Xiao Wen Li to surround and kill Demon Bat.

Without its master's energy and willpower support, Demon Bat's head kept getting eaten by little golden monster. With severe injuries, and Xiao Wen Li's Binding Inherent Skill, it could only watch helplessly as its enemies ripped it apart.

When Demon Marshall woke up, he realised that his Guardian Beast Demon Bat had already transformed into golden rays and returned back into the Holy Grimoire world.

Died in the battle!

Although this death was not permanent, Demon Bat could not be summoned out today anymore and his power would be decreased. Demon Marshall Yan Shuo glanced at Jiang Ying who was holding onto the Crescent Moon Blade and screamed, “Was it you? Did you put me into deep sleep? Darn you East Demon Tribe, I am going to tear you into pieces!”

“Continue sleeping!” Jiang Ying snorted.

Another ray of light appeared from her body in front of her, forming a beautiful Sleeping Dragon Diagram.

Demon Marshall Yan Shuo did not even get the chance to shout, and was forced back into sleep.

Fell back to sleep.

The Lava Dragon below had just escaped from flakes of ice mist. However, it did not even get the chance to fly before Xiao Wen Li, Bloody Queen and Ice Serpent Demon reached. They worked together and chopped Lava Dragon into 4 pieces. One hot Lava Dragon heart that was taken by little golden monster. It shot quickly like an arrow and chewed on the hot heart. Lava Dragon’s big body fell to the ground with a loud thud.

Storm Mermaid’s wave then engulfed Lava Dragon’s body.

When the wave receded, the smashed body had turned into a black rock.

Two of Demon Marshall Yan Shuo's beasts died one after another, and he was even sleeping when it happened. Due to the attack, even if Demon Marshall Yan Shuo was a Heaven Ranker, he was still unable to withstand it and got a migraine.

What angered Demon Marshall Yan Shuo was Blazing Queen Bee.

He put in so much effort in nurturing the Blazing Queen Bee, and it actually escaped from the battle.

The Spirit of Heaven Fire, who was formed of thick smoke, flames, lightning and tornado was chasing it down.

Spirit of Heaven Fire did not enter the battle at first. She drilled into the bottom of Blazing Queen Bee's volcano. At first Blazing Queen Bee thought that she was not used to the storm outside and ran into the volcano to seek shelter. No one expected that Spirit of Heaven Fire who was slowly gaining consciousness was learning how to endure and wait. While Blazing Queen Bee went to save Lava Dragon, it immediately drilled out and ate Blazing Queen Bee's eggs continuously. One by one, the Blazing Bee Soldiers were eaten by her without putting up any fight, turning into dead bodies.

Without wasting much effort, she had killed all of the Blazing Bee Soldiers that Blazing Queen Bee painstakingly gave birth to.

Moreover, it also absorbed large amounts of Fire Energy.

Blazing Queen Bee was unable to attack her as her body was made from purely elemental energy. Instead, she had to run away as Spirit of Heaven Fire chased after her. For Spirit of Heaven Fire, Blazing Queen Bee was just a tool to produce food for her.

Spirit of Heaven Fire was in no hurry to kill it.

She used her Heaven Fire continuously to burn Blazing Queen Bee..... Left with no choice, with Demon Marshall Yan Shuo looking at her, the Blazing Queen Bee surrendered to Spirit of Heaven Fire. She proposed to become her contracted Beast. Demon Marshall Yan Shuo almost vomited blood out of internal injuries. He spent so much effort nurturing Blazing Queen Bee and it had just become a prize for the enemy. It would have been better if the contract was to Yue Clan's Third Young Master, but it actually surrendered to his beast!

“All of you deserve to die!” Demon Marshall Yan Shuo waved his hand and threw out flaming storm. He wanted to burn the whole battle arena to ashes.

“Funny.”

In the 30 seconds that Demon Marshall Yan Shuo fainted, Yue Yang did not attack, but carefully made a Star Battle Rune Formation, imitating Night Empress' Starry Sky Domain. Using the runes as starlight, forming a Heaven Realm rune diagram, he then gathered them to form the look of the night sky.

This kind of Star Battle Rune Formation was definitely not as good as Night Empress Starry Sky Domain.

However, at Yue Yang's current level, it was already half a success.

Seeing Yue Yang setting up the Star Battle Rune Formation, Thousand Goblin King could not help but frown and felt helpless. He knew that even if Yue Yang was fighting Demon Marshall Yan Shuo, he would still be very cautious towards him. Thousand Goblin King did not even rely on the possibility that a snail-like Demon Marshall Yan Shuo would be able to defeat Yue Yang. He only needed to buy some time until he successfully break the Constellation Diagram. Then Demon Marshall Yan Shuo would have completed his task.

Flaming wind storm with unmeasurable amount of energy.

It was initially sufficient to burn the battle arena to ashes but with a wave of Yue Yang's right hand, the flaming wind storm immediately dissipated.

It was as if there was a black hole inside star rune battle pattern, and swallowed all the flaming wind storm.....

"Crap." Thousand Goblin King stopped the seal breaking action and stared.

The Star Battle Rune Formation was changing weirdly.

The sky that was full of stars shook, as if it was going to fall. Yue Yang's body which was floating in mid-air also plummeted 3 meters uncontrollably. Demon Marshall Yan Shuo was overjoyed, took out his scythe and wanted to chop Yue Yang.

Its hand was moving halfway before it got affected by Jiang Ying's Sleeping Dragon Dreamland and slept again.

Thousand Goblin King cursed. Does this person really have so little willpower?

How could he not even handle a beast?

Even if it was a Holy Beast, it was still not justified to sleep 3 times right? It was laughable for an Ancient Demon with such weak willpower.

"I was aligning the rune just now and let you off. Now, it is finally my turn to attack." Yue Yang rolled up his sleeves and flew towards him. With one attack, it was like a crazy 108 hit combo. His attacks were continuous, without any pauses. The first thing Demon Marshall Yan Shuo felt when he woke up was a feeling that his brains had been smashed to pieces.

"....." Thousand Goblin King frowned. Yue Clan's Third Young Master was not willing to use his special skills World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame as he was saving it to use

them on him. This lad was really troublesome. Could it be that he did not even need to use his special skills when facing Heaven Ranked level 3 Demon Marshall Yan Shuo?

Chapter 584 – Go, never-tiring Ah Man!

If Sleeping Dragon Dreamland could throw off Demon Marshall Yan Shuo for 10 seconds before he was able to wake up, then the Snow Mountain Giant would be in a great trouble.

The Heaven Rank Level 2 Snow Mountain Giant was strong. Its body was not only 100 meters tall, it also wore a Frost Heavy Armor. With its tenacious vitality, it would be hard for other Heaven Rank Level 2 beast to withstand against it. Although the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen gave the Thousand Goblin King a bad premonition, it was still an immature Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, so he still believed in his own Snow Mountain Giant. After all the Snow Mountain Giant was a terrifying Heaven Rank Level 2 beast that could make Ancient Dragons tuck their tails between their legs.

However, the current battle situation was something that Thousand Goblin King could never imagine, the Snow Mountain Giant was currently dying.....

To be more accurate, ever since it entered the Battlefield of Death, it had continued to stay asleep.

The Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen had spread Sleeping Flower Pollen in the entire Battlefield of Death. When they were both teleported, the Snow Mountain Giant had already sunk into an endless sleep before it was even able to stand firmly.

Naturally, the Sleeping Flower was only one of its tricks.

Its biggest trick was to use poison.

If there was only one Thorny Flower, then the poison on its thorns were insignificant against the Snow Mountain Giant. But, when the Snow Mountain Giant entered, what greeted its sight was an ocean of Thorny Flowers. As a result, hundreds of thousands of Thorny Flowers pricked its body. These thorns carried a certain sweet aroma. When they prick people, they would not feel any pain, on the contrary, they would feel pleasure as if they were in a dream. Once they fall asleep, their muscles and bones would also begin to melt..... Compared to a spider's venom that could melt the organs, this kind of 'Soul Eating' poison was thousands of times more terrifying.

Countless spores that carried the Soul Eating poison burst on the Snow Mountain Giant's body. On one side they melted the enemy's flesh, becoming the spore's nutrients; On the other side, it quickly absorbed the enemy's energy, turning it into poison.

If the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen's poison was not this terrifying, why would the Hell Black Dragon even be afraid of her?

Millions of Thorny Flowers weaved together to become a huge Thorny Flower tree that seemed to be able to support the heavens, as they gradually devour the Snow Mountain Giant.

It was being digested bit by bit.

The Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen was extremely bored as

she laid down on a flower bed. She held a book in her hands. This book was written by Yue Yang about different beasts that came from a portion of the record of the tragic guy's mother.

The book in Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen's hands contained knowledge on how to raise plant-type beasts from ancient times.

“There are so many characters that I do not understand..... I'll ask him when I return!” Duo Duo looked at it while crooking her head, then closed it and supported her cheeks as she became lost in thought.

In the Battlefield of Death, she could not leave as long as her opponent had not yet died.

Although the Snow Mountain Giant did not have the power to resist, it was still a Heaven Rank Level 2 beast. Killing it in an instant was not an easy task.

As a result, she could only wait.

Perfectly digesting it was not necessary. At the very least she must wait for it to breath its last breath before being able to return to Yue Yang's side.

Compared to the relaxed Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man was in a difficult battle. Whether it was the peak Heaven Rank Level 1 Heaven Realm Demon Dragon

or the 3 Huge Blazing Dragons, they were all enemies that she could not easily defeat. For the sake of sharing the burden with Yue Yang, she stepped forward bravely without any hesitation.

She would never give up the battle as his Guardian Beast.

Even if the enemy was stronger than her, she would fight until the end.

No regrets!

The Barbarian Cow Shadow had bound the God Binding Chains on the Heaven Realm Demon Dragon and chained it to herself.

As long as she was on the ground, the Heaven Realm Demon Dragon would never be able to take flight, unless it was able to pull the entire ground..... Ah Man possessed the Heart of Earth making her a war goddess that would never tire! The three thousand year old dragons had already dove down the sky a few hundred times and breathe fire towards Ah Man. However, Ah Man did not dodge them and only raised her fist, continuing to pummel the enemy in front of her, the Heaven Realm Demon Dragon.

The Heaven Realm Demon Dragon was extremely furious. This kind of undying and untiring enemy was what it hated the most.

It opened its mouth and crazily tried to devour her.

It intended to swallow the Barbarian Cow Shadow into its

stomach.

Ah Man kept on rolling and evading. The mysterious footwork and battle skills that Yue Yang imparted to her appeared one by one.

In terms of battle skills, she was the best among others. Even Xiao Wen Li and Bloody Queen Red were slightly inferior to her. Only she would meticulously learn Yue Yang's battle skills. She would deeply carve each and every one of them in her mind and then temper herself in battle. Xiao Wen Li and the others would incorporate the battle skills imparted to them with their racial characteristics. Only Ah man would not do this, she believed that the battle skills taught to her were the best in the world. She would completely learn them without adding any impurities. As a result, Ah Man was the best beast in terms of battle skills and close combat.

Facing her attacks, the Heaven Realm Demon Dragon monotonously tried to bite her and claw at her but it was simply too slow and unable to harm her.

It was an expert in aerial battles. It would dive down and use its wings to attack, use its dragon claws to catch the enemy, and it would also breathe fire.

But, the God Binding Chains had immediately deprived it of its ability to fly, depriving an overwhelming majority of its fighting capability. Even transforming was unachievable.

“Stupid Heaven Realm Lizard, you actually challenged my owner’s dignity. Today will be the day all of you will die!” Ah Man rolled in mid air and cleverly used the God Binding Chains to twine inside the Demon Dragon’s mouth, forming a horse bit to lock its mouth. This made the Heaven REalm Demon Dragon incomparably angry but it was unable to remove it.

One of the thousand year old Huge Blazing Dragon dove down trying to catch Ah Man, who was in mid air.

They already knew that Ah Man was matchless on the ground.

But, as long as she was in the air, she would lose the Heart of Earth’s support and would be unable to withstand a single blow from them.

Seeing the shadow charge over, Ah Man angrily shouted. She used her hands to take out the Golden Dragon Slaying Spear from the platinum storage ring that Yue Yang gave her. When the Huge Blazing Dragon used its claws to catch her, the spear deeply penetrated into its throat.

When it was attacking it was simply unable to dodge.

An unstoppable torrent of blood gushed out from its neck.

It wanted to fly up in pain but its body uncontrollably fell forward and sprayed out a long trail of blood.

The Golden Dragon Slaying Spear was effective in killing dragons. Let alone the thousand year old dragon, it could even injure the Dragon King in the past. The other two blazing dragon were scared witless that the flew higher. They cried out in panic and did not dare come down. As for the dragon pierced in the neck, it begun to let out painful cries with its torn throat as if asking help from its comrades. Then, it tried to get its head up but uncontrollably fell on the ground.

The second time, it struggled to get up.

It staggered as if asking help from its owner Heaven Realm Demon Dragon. But, before it was able to walk halfway, it was unable to endure the heavy injury and fell on the ground.

Ah Man did not let it go. She leapt over, rotated the Golden Dragon Slaying Spear, raised it up, and then nailed the Huge Blazing Dragon on the ground before the Heaven Realm Demon Dragon was able to unsummon it.

The Huge Blazing Dragon had been pierced in the head by the Golden Dragon Slaying Spear as it finally died.

The Heaven Realm Demon Dragon also begun to panic.

Facing Ah Man with the Dragon Slaying Spear and the God Binding Chains, it felt like it was in grave danger..... It roared to the sky, making the other two dragon recover from panic. They dove down and let out dragon breath on Ah Man. They intended to have Ah Man back away from the Heaven Realm Demon Dragon.

Although they instinctively felt fear, they did not dare disobey their owner's command.

“All of you, die!” The blood soaked Ah Man was like a war goddess as she threw the Golden Dragon Slaying Spear with all her might.

The Heaven Realm Demon Dragon was extremely cunning as it pulled on the God Binding Chain. Although it was not able to move Ah man, it was successful in disrupting her posture.

The Golden Dragon Slaying Spear missed due to the slight deviation and grazed the neck of one of the Huge Blazing Dragons, scaring it witless. The other Huge Blazing Dragon saw that Ah Man did not have any weapon and regained its confidence. It once again dove down and let out flame pillars.

Ah Man stomped down her foot, leaving a deep foot print.

Her entire body soared to the sky as she brought out the second treasure.

The Golden Dragon Slaying Dagger shined in Ah Man's hands..... Ah Man mounted the dragon's head and deeply pierced the dagger on its left eye.

At this moment, the Heaven Realm Demon Dragon took this opportunity to swing its tail to send Ah Man flying.

Rumble!

Ah Man's body smashed to the ground and unable to get up for a while.

She was trying to recover with the support of the Heart of Earth after receiving heavy injuries. The Heaven Realm Demon Dragon had already sent her flying a few times, but every time, she was able to quickly stand back up and continue fighting as she became more and more brave. The dragon that lost its left eye howled in grief. It flapped its wings to fly up high, distancing itself from the inexhaustible Ah Man.

The Heaven Realm Demon Dragon couldn't help but shudder in front of Ah Man, who was wielding the Golden Dragon Slaying Dagger that was dripping blood.

“Kill!” Ah Man's fighting spirit boiled as she loudly shouted.

She took huge strides and powerfully charge towards her enemy.....

No matter what enemy she was facing, she deeply believed that she would obtain the final victory! This was because she was protecting him. As long as she was protecting him, she would triumph in every battle!

While Ah Man was still in the blood soaked battlefield, a person appeared in the battle arena.

It was the yawning Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen Duo Duo. After half an hour the Snow Mountain Giant finally stopped breathing and she was able to return to her master's side. This result not only made Demon Marshall Yan Shuo speechless, even the Thousand Goblin King, who was about to begin opening the seal, did not dare believe it. Even after he received the feedback of his beast dying in his mind, he still questioned that his Heaven Rank Level 2 Snow Mountain Giant's death.

Even if it died in battle, it was impossible for it to die in such a short period of time with its strength and constitution.

Why?

Thousand Goblin King looked at the sleepy Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen. He truly could not believe that his Snow Mountain Giant actually died in her hands.

If the Snow Mountain Giant faced off against the Heaven Rank Level 3 Yan Shuo, Yan Shuo would have to take three days and three nights to defeat the Snow Mountain Giant. But, the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen only needed half an hour to kill his Snow Mountain Giant. Could it be that she was stronger than Demon Marshall Yan Shuo?

"I'm sleepy. There were many characters that I could not recognize in the book you gave me!" The Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen yawned again: "I will go back to take a nap and then come out later to help you beat that bad guy!"

“Once you begin reading you would get sleepy, what am I going to do with you.....” Yue Yang slightly dizzy. Duo Duo did not like to learn and would constantly be lazy; otherwise she would have been stronger.

“Then teach me again next time!” Duo Duo acted like a spoiled child and hugged Yue Yang, then quickly returned to rest.

Although she did not need to move to attack the Snow Mountain Giant, the attacks of the Thorny Flowers would still consume her energy and spirit. This was the reason why she needed to sleep after every battle. Actually it was not only her, even Xiao Wen Li, Bloody Queen Red, Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying and the others were all the same as humans. They would also get tired but they would be able to quickly recover during their rest.

Hui Tai Lang had also returned from the passage.

It charged towards Yue yang and barked twice, expressing that it was unable to accomplish its task. This means that Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo were still fighting and not yet beaten, or they were already beaten but they still continued to fight. As a result Hui Tai Lang could not drag them back.

Thousand Goblin King’s face darkened.

Yue Yang slightly smiled and waved his hand: “All of you go out and help. Xiao Wen Li staying behind would be enough. Right now, the battle situation is getting more and more interesting!”

Thousand Goblin King coldly snorted: “You really are a good schemer.”

Yue Yang waved his hands: “I wouldn’t dare take credit for this. This entire battle was mostly brought about by Empress Jellyfish. This young master is only a patch. I also forgot to tell you that I have an Innate Skill to patch things up!”

Chapter 585 – I Didn't Steal It, I'm Just Taking It!

Boundless Ocean, Meteorite Island.

Although the Meteorite Palace battle had come to an end, the rest of the battles on other islands were still ongoing.

Originally, this was an internal battle between the Sea Clans. Due to Empress Jellyfish's schemes and Yue Yang's appearance, many powerful individuals were implicated, even involving many other individuals that shouldn't have appeared in the first place. There were those who were trying to take advantage of the troubled situation, there were those who wanted to support their friends, there were those who wanted to add to the trouble, there were those who wanted to destroy from within, there were also those who wanted to harm others for personal profits...

On the edges of the Meteorite Island, two shadows appeared on the jade-coloured beach.

Quietly, they observed the battle from far away.

“Let's make use of this chaotic war and kill that Yue Clan's Third Young Master. He's a disaster that needs to be eliminated.” A figure that looked like a woman said. Although her body was semi-transparent, it was still clear that she was the Scarlet Consort that had injured Yue Yang heavily with her ambush.

“Let’s wait and see. Something seems wrong.” The other figure was obviously the Scarlet Emperor that had not been seen for a while.

“Thousand Goblin King is extremely cunning. I can guarantee that he will never kill that Yue Clan’s Third Young Master, instead, he will use him to stop Black Hell King. Right now, Black Hell King is already here, thus drawing the attention of the Dragon Emperor, Sky Execution, Emperor of the Underworld and the others. This is the right time for us to kill that Yue Clan’s Third Young Master. Even if we can’t kill him, it would be good if we can cut down one of his arms or one of his legs. The human body is extremely weak and is not able to regenerate. If the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master lost an arm, his powers will definitely decrease greatly.” Scarlet Consort was very clear on a human’s weakness.

“If that woman is not there, maybe we can consider it...” Scarlet Emperor was a little hesitant.

“Which woman?” Scarlet Consort asked a little sourly.

“That woman that is being called Supreme Elder Zhi Zun.” As Scarlet Emperor spoke, he looked around the perimeter, as if afraid that there was something wrong in the surrounding.

“Although Zhi Zun is strong, she is merely a woman! If only I had recovered my true strength, I would definitely kill her and eliminate this annoying trouble.” Scarlet Consort humphed annoyedly. However, she was actually jealous of Zhi Zun in her heart. This was because she had always thought that she was the

most accomplished woman in the world. Who would have thought that from what she had heard in the Tong Tian Tower, she found out that Zhi Zun had already reached the level of Prison Emperor last time.

“With your abilities?”

An arrogant voice sounded from behind Scarlet Emperor and Scarlet Consort.

Scarlet Emperor’s expressions changed.

Although he had not recovered all of his initial strength, how was it possible that he was unable to detect someone creeping up behind?

He always thought that Zhi Zun was one level below him. He never thought that her true strength was actually many times stronger than what he imagined..... Other than Prison Emperor, the extremely rare talent, Scarlet Emperor couldn’t remember if there was anyone else who was capable of getting past his guard and creeping up behind his back without his realization.

It should be during that moment when he felt that something was wrong.

It should be during that moment that Zhi Zun secretly crept up behind his back.

She had even successfully concealed her mind from his mind search ability...

Zhi Zun's back was facing Scarlet Emperor as she floated in mid-air. Although the ocean wind was blowing very strongly, it became very gentle around her, as if the ocean wind wanted to bow in respect to her. The waves on her feet would also turn into beautiful ripples when they slide across her feet, as if afraid that if they came too forcefully, it would be a sign of disrespect to her.

Beside Zhi Zun, the invisible Night Empress was also present.

Scarlet Emperor also couldn't see the invisible Night Empress' body, he could only feel her presence in that silent Starry Sky Domain.

"Are you the Scarlet Emperor from six thousand years ago? You are stronger than those few Heaven Realm fellows, no wonder you scared that kid Yue Yang. Giving you respect as a senior, I can let you go now. If you appear in Tong Tian Tower again, I will kill you." Zhi Zun coldly said.

"..." Scarlet Emperor's body shook a little. Anger boiled in his heart like an erupting volcano, but he quickly suppressed it and recovered his calm demeanour, "Oh, really?"

"What? Bitch, you dare to say such preposterous words and shame my Emperor?!" Scarlet Consort, on the other hand, was so angry that her lungs were about to burst.

In her heart, Scarlet Emperor was an exalted, untouchable existence. Anyone who dared to shame him, no matter if it was female or male, must be exterminated!

Wrath exploded and filled her heart in an instant.

Making her unable to endure her feelings.

Flames that erupted like a red lotus danced in the air, following Scarlet Consort who had lost control and was charging for an attack. In an instant, the environment was turned into flames that could destroy heaven and earth.

Scarlet Consort lashed out her claws, wanting to tear Zhi Zun into shreds. She wanted to stomp her to the ground at the very least, and force the enemy who had shamed her emperor to admit her mistake.

“You overestimate yourself!”

Zhi Zun didn't even turn around, she only flicked her hand leisurely.

Scarlet Consort's sharp claws that were engulfed in fire were captured easily by Zhi Zun. With a simple flick of a hand, Scarlet Consort's body was thrown away like a meteor, to the Coral Island which was ten thousands of meters away. With a loud boom, the Coral Island immediately shattered into pieces from the impact when it came into contact with Scarlet Consort's body.

When Scarlet Emperor saw this, his expressions slightly changed.

He wanted to stop her, but realised that he was too late.

Zhi Zun's power was not only beyond his imagination. From what he could observe just now, she was probably many times stronger than that.

Even the Scarlet Emperor who was peerless and only second to Prison Emperor six thousand years ago could feel that this woman was strong, completely exceeding his initial estimations. Her power was simply too deep to comprehend, he was unable to gauge her true strength.

She was a formidable opponent!

Other than Prison Emperor six thousand years ago, Scarlet Emperor found that he had two new terrifying opponents in his life.

One was that young brat, Third Young Master of the Yue Clan, Yue Yang, whose potential simply made him jealous. The other was this Zhi Zun, who was so powerful that he couldn't even measure her strength!

“In Tong Tian Tower, there will only be one Supreme Elder. If senior Scarlet Emperor is unwilling to go to the Heaven Realm and insist on staying to scare our young, little friends in Tong Tian

Tower, it is really not something a senior should do.” Night Empress heavenly voice sounded out: “We have chosen Yue Yang as the inheritor of the Prison Emperor’s name in this new age. Scarlet Emperor, Tong Tian Tower belongs to the new Prison Emperor. There is an extremely vast Heaven Realm up there for you to explore. As a senior, why would you continue to stay in Tong Tian Tower, this little place, and fight your juniors for resources? If senior became a stumbling block for the juniors, there will be no meaning to your existences. Seniors, please behave yourselves!”

“Damn it!” Scarlett Consort crawled out from under the crushed rocks. Her whole body was trembling in anger.

However, she was fully aware that she was not Zhi Zun’s opponent. Also, she had not recovered her full strength. With her current abilities, she would only receive greater embarrassment if they continue to fight.

Scarlet Emperor waved his hand lightly, and Scarlet Consort quickly flew into his embrace.

Golden light as bright as the sun shone out of Scarlet Emperor’s body.

In an instant, Scarlet Consort’s body recovered to her original appearance. She was no longer in a miserable state like just now.

Scarlet Emperor pacified Scarlet Consort’s anger as he patted his hands lightly and said: “Wait until we fully recover our strength.

Between us, we need to have a decisive battle. The winner will get Tong Tian Tower.”

Then, with Scarlet Consort in his arms, he disappeared from the ocean surface like smoke... Waiting for those two people to escape far away, after a long time, Night Empress appeared within her Starry Sky Domain and sighed slowly: “After Yue Yang cleared the Twelve Zodiac Temples, more and more Ancient Runes are losing their effectiveness. In the future, maybe there will be even more ancient beings appearing. This is such a headache! Fortunately Yue Yang is improving very quickly, otherwise we really won’t be able to cope with this.”

Zhi Zun didn’t reply.

However, her body was emitting a strong aura of battle, so Night Empress understood what Zhi Zun’s answer was.

Night Empress sighed heavily, her words gentle like the wind: “Rather than a life of active vigorous battles, I would actually prefer a quiet and peaceful life...”

“There will come a day that we will have a peaceful life.” Zhi Zun spoke and paused for a bit: “The day when we reach the summit of the world and look down on everyone should be enough.”

“Yes, I’m really waiting for that!” Both Night Empress who was inside the Starry Sky Domain and Zhi Zun turned into wind at the same time, disappearing from the beautiful Meteorite Island. It was as if they had never appeared before, only the Coral Island that

had been half-crushed from the impact of Scarlet Consort's body served as an evidence that a battle between powerful beings had taken place here.

Meteorite Fort, in the Battle Arena.

Yue Yang obviously had an advantage, and was winning very easily..

With the support of the Starlight Rune Pattern, Yue Yang avoided Demon Elder Yan Shuo's attacks with extreme speed, making the Ancient Demon very angry.

But he was just unable to deal with this tricky human brat. However, Demon Elder Yan Shuo was still feeling quite satisfied, because the longer the battle dragged on, the more advantageous it was for him. Thousand Goblin King would be finished undoing the Sky Vault Constellation Seal soon. When he was able to fully draw out his perfect Ancient Demon King body, he would be able to successfully complete his mission for the most part. With the perfect Ancient Demon King's body, Thousand Goblin King would definitely be able to help him to kill this deceitful Yue Clan third young master... As for himself, he would be able to finally leave this Snow World that he was trapped in for thousands of years and regain his freedom.

The Sky Vault Constellation Seal was undone. A wave of extremely powerful sealing power flooded across the whole arena.

Even the Heaven Rank Level 3 Demon Elder Yan Shuo also felt

hard to breathe.

Thousand Goblin King was overjoyed, his eyes were shining with excitement.

Finally, the Ancient Demon King's perfect body would belong to him.

With his Separation Inherent Skill, Ancient Demon King's blood, treasures, power, potential and abilities would all belong to him. Furthermore, the leftover perfectly preserved body can be made into his fourth doppelganger and become his fifth 'Thousand Goblin King'.

Resurrecting an Ancient Demon King?

That was the most absurd idea!

Thousand Goblin King would definitely not revive a being who was stronger than him. Hence, when he was fighting against Ancient Demon King's soul previously and stole his body, it was to actually prevent the Ancient Demon King reviving. Without this perfect body, the Ancient Demon King was definitely not his opponent... Thousand Goblin King was very clear of that, because before he was reincarnated as a human, he was actually the Ancient Demon King's subordinate, the strongest general. He was also the Ancient Demon King's son, but because his potential was unable to surpass his father's, he could only choose to be reborn as the race that was the weakest, yet had the most potential of all races, human being.

He succeeded.

That was how the Demon Abyss lost a strong Ancient Demon King's son, and how the Thousand Goblin King appeared in Tong Tian Tower.

As long as he continued to grow, Thousand Goblin King was confident that he would surpass his father, the Ancient Demon King... Of course, the fastest way to grow would be to steal the Ancient Demon King's perfect body.

"Sky above and earth below, bow down to me." Thousand Goblin King suppressed the excitement in his heart and used his power to force open the seal's power. He then searched for the crystal coffin that sealed the Ancient Demon King's body. As long as he obtained the power of the Ancient Demon King's body, he would finally be able to surpass the Ancient Demon King, his former life father. He would also be able to surpass the Prison Emperor, who once conquered the Tong Tian Tower.

"Congrats, congrats." Yue Yang cupped his hands and expressed his good wishes.

"..." Thousand Goblin King's expressions changed.

His complexion first turned white, then green, red, and lastly, black.

He summoned all of his power to suppress his anger and said, “Yue Clan Third Young Master, I know that you are the one who stole the Ancient Demon King’s Crystal Coffin. Please give it back to me. Not only I would spare your life, I will also give you a Holy-ranked equipment... Please give the crystal coffin back to me while I can still hold my anger and be patient. Otherwise, I swear I will destroy the whole of Tong Tian Tower, I swear I will! Yue Clan Third Young Master, give me the crystal coffin now!”

“What? I stole the crystal coffin?” Yue Yang put on his “I feel so wronged” face, and asked Xiao Wen Li who was beside him, “Little dear, you say, would I steal such a damaged looking crystal coffin?”

“...” Xiao Wen Li immediately shook her head.

“You didn’t steal it?” Thousand Goblin King’s eyes were ignited on fire, he almost burn Yue Yang to ashes with just his stare. He was so angry that his face twisted a little, almost changing his appearance.

“Of course, I definitely didn’t steal it! I, I just took it!” Yue Yang replied complacently, and Xiao Wen Li nodded her head cutely, as if saying “That’s right!”.

Chapter 586 – Innate Skill, Stagnation vs Restriction

No one knew what happened in Meteorite Fort?

Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo who were engaged in a difficult battle outside suddenly realised that the earth was shaking, followed by the shaking of the incomparably stable Meteorite Fort, which had cracked and smashed to pieces with a loud crack.

Two shadows flew out of Meteorite Fort which looked like a monster's ruptured mouth. They were a 100 times faster than lightning and they fought crazily in the air.

Their bodies emitted shock wave energy. Even though they were thousands of meters away, the blast wave was scarier than Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo's blast wave. It was obvious that one shadow was chasing after the other shadow. The shadow that was being chased was fleeing in disarray, flipping in the air continuously. Sometimes it would fly high into the clouds, sometimes falling towards the ground, sometimes, flying forward and sometimes flying backwards. In short, it was dodge slyly and also send blast waves occasionally.

"I will kill you!" the shadow that was chasing him was furious, and bombarded rain-like punches.

The energy in each punch was sufficient to kill heaven ranked level one ranker.

On the ground, numerous deep energy holes were formed.

But under the rain-like attack, the shadow that was escaping did not make any mistakes. He was relaxed and leisurely took time to attack his opponent.

Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo did not even care about fighting their opponent, and ran away. This was not a joke.

If you are hit by the rain-like blast wave, you will be struck to death or be badly injured.

Hui Tai Lang but onto Abyss Manatee which was about to die and held onto the other with his left claw. Then flew to chase after Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo at top speed. Bloody Queen Red and Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying cheered because they saw the that the shadow that was constantly dodging was Yue Yang. If it was someone else escaping from battle, they would have looked down on the person. But because this person was Yue Yang they felt that he looked very handsome even when he was escaping..... His opponent was Thousand Goblin King. Others would not have been able to withstand one punch from him. Who could cause Thousand Goblin King to feel so helpless and angry?

Only him!

Would be able to do this!

“Be careful, you must be careful.....” Hai Yingwu who was already 10km away still felt the power of the heaven ranker’s battle. It felt suffocating and she could not breath.

“Let’s go master. Nothing will happen. We have to leave.” Storm Mermaid persuaded Hai Yingwu to leave. Hai Yingwutogether with Stone Element Medusa, Storm Naga, Ice Serpent Demon, the loyal people that Empress Jellyfish left to her, Ocean Knights, Clownfishmen and Elder Xing Pan who would lead them to become loyal to the new Ocean Emperor.

“Yes.” Hai Yingwu lifted the ocean Emperor halbert, raised the energy protection and covered last few loyal ocean tribe out through the secret door.

Thousand Goblin King’s 3 doppelgänger, Chi Yan, Qing Yan and Zi Jiu.

The 3 of them did not understand why the real Thousand Goblin King was so angry?

Their character and temperament was exactly the same as Thousand Goblin King, they felt that nothing in the world can cause them to be angry as they had very good control of their body, why would he lose control? What happened in Meteorite Fort? Did Yue Clan’s Third Young Master destroy the sky vault constellation seal? Did Yue Clan’s Third Young Master destroy ancient demon King’s body?

The 3 doppelgängers immediately did something together.

Helped Thousand Goblin King a helping hand.

The 4 of them attack Yue Yang together.

With them joining the battle, Yue Yang immediately was unable to handle it, and almost got hit to the ground.

“You guys, do you know what I hate most about demon Warriors? It would be the holy sword, as I hate doppelgängers. What original body, what doppelgänger, all of you do and die!” Yue Yang was furious, as he was almost hit for a couple of times. He angrily took out Nirvana Fire Wings. While he was dodging attacks, he waved the super long Nirvana blade to cut the enemies in front of him.

“Too slow.....” Thousand Goblin King was the strongest, had the fastest reflexes, was able to avoid it and could even attack back.

The 3 other doppelgängers hesitated.

First they dodged the Nirvana blade, then work together to attack back.

They all knew that Yue Yang would be unable to continue this kind of attack. And with useless attacks, Yue Yang would not continue.

As expected, Yue Yang kept the Nirvana Fire Wings and escaped miles away at a speed 1000 times faster than lightning while Thousand Goblin King was preparing his attack. Doppelgänger Zi Jiu who was closest to Yue Yang immediately opened his arms wide, generated a ball of energy as hot as the sun to throw towards Yue Yang. Actually he wanted to use special attack to freeze Yue Yang, then let the original body kill him..... But that skill was not perfect and there was still a major flaw. He was not sure whether Yue Yang would be able to break it, thus he did not dare to use it.

Compared to Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo, this Yue Clan's Third Young Master is at a perverted level when it comes to potential and attack energy.

Before this, the number of rankers that died in his hands.

Are uncountable.

Not even mentioning the 3 doppelgängers, even if it was the furious and uncontrollable The original Thousand Goblin King, also maintained some sanity, and do not dare to fight Yue Yang hard on. Nonetheless, Yue Yang has both Nirvana flame and World Exterminating Wheel.

“This is too perverted.....” Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo were very shocked seeing this.

“Yue Yang's abilities aren't that high. How is he going to fight 4 enemies?” Xiang Yu who had decreased to innate level 6 also mumbled.

“I don’t care. If I die, I die! Go, go!” Feng Zhu roared loyally. Carried dragon capturing pillar and ran towards the center of the battle arena. He was prepared to help Yue Yang block one of his opponents, even if it was just for a minute. Yue Clan’s Third Young Master did not flee, means he must have a plan to win. Feng Zhu’s confidence increased and decided to charge forward.

“Zhu Zi, this, this is too risky..... Hey, this is too risky! You are a citizen of Soaring Dragon Continent, can sacrifice yourself for others bravery but I am not! If I die, it would be in vain. I am only here at Tong Tian Tower to have fun..... Darn it, seeing that I have watched over the seal, you still want me to risk my life for you guys, it’s not fair! You people of Soaring Dragon Continent is too much. No pay was given and you still want to risk my life?” Although Bei Feng Jia Suo was complaining, he was not much slower than Feng Zhu. With injuries all over his body, he also rushed forwarded, swinging moon beheading chain.

“Don’t care about the two fools!” Thousand Goblin King did not even care about Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo. They were already badly injured, and even if they were not injured, they would not be able to catch up to their speed.

“You dare to call me a fool? I’ll kill you!” Bei Feng Jia Suo was angered, but could not chase the original Thousand Goblin King. But could only work together with Feng Zhu to deal with the first doppelgänger, Chi Yan.

Hong long long.

A loud earth shattering sound came from Meteorite Fort.

In the broken opening, there was a 100 meter high Ancient demon walking out. It was Demon Marshall Yan Shuo.

Demon Marshall Yan Shuo had transformed into the third demon form. Between breathes, clack hell flames came out of it's nose. It seem so have been hurt. A small rotting injuring in it's leg. Once it saw Yue Yang in the sky, it immediately shouted, "darn you human, Yue Clan's Third Young Master, you dare to break my leg. I will make you pay 10,000 times for this disgrace....."

Yue Yang did not have the time to answer. Thousand Goblin King almost hit him in the vitals numerous times.

Using this good time to attack, the third doppelgänger Zi Jiu captured Yue Yang's hiding tracks.

Before that, it was buried half way.

Emitting special energy.

In this prediction, Yue Yang would definitely be 'frozen' by him, float in mid air and may never be able to escape. But he needed a few minutes.

With a few minutes, the powerful original body would be able to kill Yue Clan's Third Young Master at a very fast speed..... The best chance has arised!

“Be careful!”

Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo had been trapped before. Once they saw the light emitting from Zi Jiu's body, they immediately reminded Yue Yang.

But, by the time Yue Yang heard them, it was already too late.

Yue Yang floated in midair.

Frozen in front of Zi Jiu, not moving at all, his body still in the flying position. As long as the third doppelgänger Zi Jiu does not move, he would not be able to escape from 'freezing gift'. At least not at this moment. Once Heaven ranked level 3 Zi Jiu succeeded, he was confident to freeze Yue Yang in mid air for one minute. Even if it was the original Thousand Goblin King would be frozen for more than 5 seconds. This Yue Yang would never be able to escape from being trapped by this attack.

Thousand Goblin King stretched out his hands, sky destroying earth tearing energy exploded from his hands.

One hit and death!

He did not care about the consequences at all. All he wanted was to kill Yue Clan's Third Young Master.

Not only is this young man his life enemy, he was also very intelligent. He was even tricked by him, sky vault constellation seal was broken by him long time ago, but he did not move and even purposely made him personally break the seal, causing him to be happy for nothing.

When he thought about how he was disgraced, Thousand Goblin King felt so much hatred... He is the best out of all the humans in Soaring Dragon Continent.

If Yue Clan's Third Young Master was better than him.

Then, he must die!

Thousand Goblin King was unable to deny that he was jealous because Yue Yang was too smart, too scheming. No matter if he had Nirvana flame and World Exterminating Wheel, or the limitless potential in his body, all made Thousand Goblin King hate him out of jealousy.

"Go away..... " the first doppelgänger Chi Yan and the second doppelgänger Qing Yan attacked Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo, defeated them so that they would not affect the original body's attack.

"Let me!" Demon Marshall Yan Shuo had so much hate for Yue Yang, rushed forward, also wanting to chop him into pieces.

"One by one, slowly, I welcome you guys to kill!" Yue Yang who

was hanging in mid air suddenly talked. The third doppelgänger Zi Jiu was stunned. How is this possible? His freezing gift isn't effective? Why was Yue Yang able to speak when he was frozen? Did he manage to see through the flaw of his inborn gift?

The third doppelgänger knew the situation was not good and wanted to escape.

But the cute snake demon Lolita appeared and stared at him.

Heaven ranked level 3 Zi Jiu did not struggle. A rule of irresistible restricting energy locked him up. Flying, transporting and treasure were all useless. What's scarier was that an angel-like shadow appeared behind snake demon Lolita. – weird armor was on her body.

With a raise of her hand, numerous black hole gold rays appeared and into Zi Jiu's heart.

The scary energy.

With the gathering of all the black hole rays.

Every Ray was equivalent to Thousand Goblin King's sky destroying earth tearing energy.

Thousand Goblin King immediately flew now, using the sky destroying earth tearing energy towards Yue Yang..... Now, he no longer relied on this attack to kill Yue Yang but hoped that it

would force Yue Yang to retreat. Save the third doppelgänger that he painstakingly made.

Without the third doppelgänger's freezing gift, the the group's powers would decrease dramatically.

The third doppelgänger Zi Jiu was not allowed to be injured.

“Too late.”

Yue Yang laughed coldly, a bright light in his eyes and a unmeasurable amount of energy exploded from his body. Numerous Nirvana flames formed Nirvana fire pillar and rose up as if it was destroying the sky vault. A fire Phoenix with wings spanning 100 meters rose from Yue Yang's head, charged towards the ball of destroying energy in Thousand Goblin King's hand and swallowed it whole into it's stomach.

Seeing this, Thousand Goblin King flew down to save the third doppelgänger without caring about his safety.

He was tricked!

Thousand Goblin King realized now.

In fact , Yue Yang had already planned this early on. He wanted to kill his third doppelgänger, that's why he send out Hui Tai Lang. It was a kind a check.....

As Yue Yang stretched out his hands, an irresistible law energy emitted from his body. Thousand Goblin King's quick descending power became slower and slower, until it was as slow as a snail.

In an instant, Hui Tai Lang became world exterminating demon wolf, rushed to Thousand Goblin King who was about to reach his hand out to save the third doppelgänger and kicked him till he flew.

Battle warrior Yi Ka shot out a cannon.

The target was the third doppelgänger who could not move, Zi Jiu's heart.

If Zi Jiu stays at heaven ranked level 3, he would not be able to withstand a cannon. But under Xiao Wen Li's restricting gift, he was unable to dodge the attack. He watched helplessly as the destroying energy came towards his head. Thousand Goblin King's arm suddenly extended out and pulled Zi Jiu's body away, but was unable to stop Yi Ka's attack.

It hit him directly, without missing.

Badly injured Zi Jiu was pulled by Thousand Goblin King but was unable to even escape by 10 meters before Yue Yang chased them.

He held World Exterminating Wheel in his left hand and the

forever wheel in the other..... Thousand Goblin King angrily saw that the third doppelgänger had been frozen in mid air again. And his arm was hit away by the world exterminating demon wolf again. He roared helplessly, and rushed back at top speed to help. But even though he rushed back to help, it was too late..... Yue Yang took out the World Exterminating Wheel and cut into Zi Jiu's chest. With the armor and heaven ranked energy, a slight cut and it went into his chest without any resistance.

Blood spewed out like a fountain.

Thousand Goblin King rushed over, Yue Yang had already nailed a Gui Cang sword into the third doppelgänger Zi Jiu's head.

And a Shuang Hua sword into the heart which was the source of energy.

World Exterminating Wheel went through Zi Jiu's chest, and out through the chest.

Chapter 587 – Looking Death In The Eye, Bloodeye Double Kill

Zi Jiu's shocked expression stagnated.

Thousand Goblin King rushed over. Hui Tai Lang in World Exterminating Demon Wolf form waved his sharp claws and drew long gashes of blood onto his back.

“No.” Thousand Goblin King pushed away Yue Yang, grabbed Zi Jiu's body and roared in grief.

For Thousand Goblin King, although Yue Yang killed his third clone, it was still a part of him. It was the same as his own death, the only difference was that the main body was still alive. The first clone Chi Yan and second clone Qing Yan wanted to go there too, but Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo kept them there. Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo were not powerful enough to deal with Chi Yan and Qing Yan, but they tried their best.

A special golden light emitted from the Prison Dragon Pillar, directly imprisoning the two of them on the pillar, firmly binding Qing Yan and Bei Feng Jia Suo tightly together; Similarly, Bei Feng Jia Suo's Beheading Moon Chains emitted a bright silver light and bound Chi Yan and Feng Zhu together.

Qing Yan and Chi Yan kept struggling and using shockwaves, hoping to shake the opponent tied with them to their deaths.

Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo held on bitterly.

As long as they still have the willpower and haven't fainted, then the enemies would never be able to escape.

For 6000 years, they had been in a state of training, constantly getting used to the power of the other party's Holy Weapon. This type of battle technique was created by them when they got bored guarding the Ancient Demon King.

For Bei Feng Jia Suo and Feng Zhu were already used to Prison Dragon Pillar and Beheading Moon Chains' restrictive power.

But for Qing Yan and Chi Yan, not only did they need to resist the restrictive power of the Holy Weapons, they also had to be aware of the attacks from Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo. They had sunk into a quagmire as they fell for the trap. Escaping in a short time was impossible. Even if someone came to rescue them, they would not be of much help because Prison Dragon Pillar and Beheading Moon Chains both have protective properties, preventing enemies from saving them. Unless they kill the owners, the weapons will never loosen.

Demon Elder Yan Shuo rushed forward.

He wanted to take advantage of the crisis.

But when he saw Zi Jiu get killed by Yue Yang in an instant, he immediately got so scared that his soul almost left his body. He

instantly stepped back and did not dare to move forward again in fear of getting killed.

Gui Cang sword dissipated slowly, Shuang Hua sword also quickly disappeared.

But the deadly injuries these 2 Divine Swords inflicted on the third clone Zi Jiu's body would never recover nor heal.

The gathering point of the Stagnation Innate Skill and the body's energy were seen through by Yue Yang's Heaven Eyes Divine Vision. Zi Jiu will never recover no matter what Thousand Goblin King did to revive him, it was all useless. World Exterminating Wheel had already cut open the energy core in his body. Even if Yue Yang did not use Gui Cang sword and Shuang Hua sword, Zi Jiu would not be able to revive.

“No, no.....” Thousand Goblin King roared in despair.

“It's okay, original body, even if you don't have me, this third clone, you would still be able to conquer Tong Tian Tower and conquer Heaven Realm. Even if I go, you will have a new third clone in the future. I have existed, and I am happy enough about it.” Energy kept seeping out of Zi Jiu's head. More energy shot out like fountain from the big hole in his chest and back. As it turns out, as his body died, he was also losing his power and had fallen to Heaven Rank Level 1 within a minute.

“Zi Jiu, I will never have another third clone. The position of third clone will forever belong to you. You are the most perfect one

in the whole world.” Thousand Goblin King had tears in his eyes.

“I truly could not tell that you were this narcissistic.” Yue Yang coughed a few times and wiped away some blood at the corner of his mouth: “Don’t worry, I will send you off to the other world soon so that you can accompany your most perfect third clone. Thousand Goblin King, today will be the day you die!”

“Yue Clan’s Third Young Master, I swear that I will make you pay ten thousand times!” Thousand Goblin King stared at Yue Yang with a poisonous look.

“That day when your followers killed my servants and kidnapped my family, I also swore like that. Compared to the Black Hell King, I hate you even more!” Yue Yang gathered his emotions, “Your servant, Thousand Goblins Sect Leader and other crazy followers planned to kill Fourth Uncle and the Feng Clan’s Young Miss, then kidnapped Fourth Mother and Shuang’er, almost killing my whole family just to obtain the key to Heaven’s Stairway. I won’t talk about trivial matters like entering Heaven’s Stairway, destroying things wantonly, your plan to destroy the foundation of Tong Tian Tower, collapsing Tong Tian Tower’s space or enjoying the benefits of God’s Ruins alone..... But you harmed my family, so you deserve death! Thousand Goblin King, stop acting like you deserve pity, you kill people like cutting grass. Tong Tian Tower’s degeneration was all caused by you. How many Heaven Ranked Rankers and seniors that had good potential did you massacre? You are literally trash as you relied on Separation Innate Skill to steal the powers that people spent time and effort in training. I’m shocked that you even dare call yourselves a genius!”

“Today, one of us will die.....” Thousand Goblin King regained his composure.

“No, main body, quickly leave! This is a scheme, a trap, don’t stay here any longer!” The nearly dead Zi Jiu started to struggle and pounced towards Yue Yang: “Leave now while I still have some strength!”

The nearly dead third clone Zi Jiu tried to use his last energy to hold back Yue Yang, so that the main body could escape through the secret door.

Using the last bit of his strength, Zi Jiu swung his fist towards Yue Yang with as much force as he could muster.

Battle Angel Yi Ka stretched out her right arm, and heavily punched Zi Jiu’s head. In the instant that Zi Jiu was sent backwards from the attack, she immediately made her move and pressed her hand on Zi Jiu’s forehead and directly pressed him into the ground.

Rumble.

A huge noise erupted.

A huge deep round crater from the explosion appeared on the ground, with Battle Angel Yi Ka’s arm as the center, spreading in all 4 directions, 10 meters deep and more than 10 meters wide.

A kill with just one attack.

Zi Jiu could not even self-destruct in the end as Yi Ka had killed him.

Yue Yang did not care about all this, but watched Thousand Goblin King silently, paying attention to his every move. His summoning grimoire was shining brightly beside him, it was the halo-type 'World', and it was absorbing the energy from Zi Jiu's dead body, and converted them to its own energy to level up.

Thousand Goblin King felt very regretful now.

He knew that he was very rash this time..... If it was not due to the fact that he had not yet regained his peak strength after breaking through the seal on Heaven's Stairway, he would not have watched the third clone die right in front of him. Yue Clan's Third Young Master had many beasts, many treasures, unlimited potential but this guy was too young. At his peak state, Yue Yang would not even be able to defend against him. But he wanted the Ancient Demon King's body too much and got tricked by Empress Jellyfish and Yue Clan's Third Young Master.

Thousand Goblin King had a lot of hatred in his heart.

He hated Yue Yang and also hated himself.

The third clone was the best clone. He was originally the best helper to conquer Tong Tian Tower. It was a pity that his greed for

the Ancient Demon King's body led to his death and he lost a good general.

It was too late for him to regret.

This was Thousand Goblin King's true emotions.

Rumble, Rumble..... Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo, who were badly injured, could not take it anymore and fainted onto the floor.

Their Prison Dragon Pillar and Beheading Moon Chains loosened their grip when their masters fainted. They released Qing Yan and Chi Yan as they fell to the ground weakly.

Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo had already used up all their energy. Facing enemies that were too strong for them, they had fought continuous battles, received many injuries and depleted their energy. They could not support themselves anymore and fainted. Yue Yang looked at them and felt respectful towards them, these two guardians had stood by Prison Emperor's orders, no one other than them could have been able to withstand 6000 years of loneliness, and persevered in guarding the seal. Especially after Prison Emperor's death, when the orders no longer worked, they still guarded the Sky Vault Constellation Seal at the fort for 6000 years. Until Yue Yang, the new generation Prison Emperor appeared, they still had not stopped their mission.

What was the thing that people look up to most?

People that kept to their promises for thousands of years like Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo were the most respected figures.

As Yue Yang and Thousand Goblin King continued to fight, getting ready to find out the enemy's weak spot to attack, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man was chasing after Heaven Realm Demon Dragon and the barely surviving Huge Blazing Dragon inside the Battlefield of Death.

Ah Man, who possessed the God Binding Chains, Golden Dragon Slaying Spear, Golden Dragon Slaying Dagger and a never tiring body, had the upper hand.

But, as the Heaven Realm Demon Dragon felt death approaching, it used an incredibly crafty skill to escape from the God Binding Chain's restriction.

This was a very special type of dragon clan skill, Death Substitute.

Heaven Realm Demon Dragon swallowed the badly injured Huge Blazing Dragon into his stomach and used death substitute to fake its death, then offer its contracted thousand-year-old dragon as a sacrifice. During the offering, it was able to successfully trick the God Binding Chain, making it instantly pass through Heaven Realm Demon Dragon's body, bone and onto the thousand-year-old dragon inside its stomach and trying them tightly together.

In the extreme pain, Heaven Realm Demon Dragon did not make it in time to spit the thousand-year-old dragon out of its mouth,

before Ah Man, who saw that things were not going smoothly directly dragged it out from its rib area.

The left side of its body at the stomach area had a huge bloody hole and its ribs were broken.

When the thousand-year-old dragon was dragged out of the body, Heaven Realm Demon Dragon was in so much pain that it had preferred death.

Luckily, with the pain, it also returned him his freedom. Heaven Realm Demon Dragon did not care about the broken rib and internal organs. Instead, it flew to the sky hurriedly, moaning in pain and using energy to heal his severe wounds on the way.

“Sly worm, you guys won’t be able to escape.” Ah Man was furious.

The God Binding Chains had not been completely purified by Yue Yang. If it combined with Yue Yang’s soul, then Ah Man, as his Guardian Beast would be to use it. As long as she could combine with the God Binding Chain, this Heaven Realm Demon Dragon would not have been able to escape. Ah man would not let its death substitute skill trick her. Now the Heaven Realm Demon Dragon had regained his freedom and flew into the sky, it would be difficult to kill it.

The barely surviving Huge Blazing Dragon was left. To give the Heaven Realm Demon Dragon more time to recover, it rushed forward without any care for itself.

It spewed out a long fire pillar towards Ah Man.

Its aim was not to kill the enemy but to attract the enemy's attention.

“Die!” Ah Man was super furious. She felt that her whole body was about to explode, a type of anger that she had never felt before rose in her chest. She had a prediction that a very rare and uncontrollable skill had been successfully activated. Ah Man's eyes became blood red. Flames came out of her mouth and nose and her body emitted light.

Without Ah Man's control Doom's Eyes were triggered.

What was more terrifying was that this time, after Doom's Eyes was triggered, the second even harder to trigger Bloodeye Double Kill was also released together.

In the sky, the Huge Blazing Dragon, which was rushing down while spitting flames at Ah Man, and the Heaven Realm Demon Dragon, that had luckily escaped just now, both let out a cry of pain at the same time.....

Chapter 588 – Two Women Used Their Powers, Sacred Weapons Taken Out

Inside the perfected battlefield space that the Old Fox Kai Pi and Yue Yang made, three people were fighting fiercely.

Princess Qian Qian clenched her teeth tightly as she held onto the Prison Emperor Divine Sword, making sure she does not collapse.

Her whole body was covered in blood, the Gold Rank White Tiger Armor that Yue Yang made for her personally as a gift was almost totally smashed. Wounds that were deep till the bone could be seen at every damaged spot. Other than the look of stubbornness on her face, she was covered in injuries. Her two arms, shoulders, chest, back, abdomen, both legs and ankle..... Fresh blood stained the entire White Tiger Armor. Drip by drip, they dripped onto the floor. If Prison Emperor Divine Sword was not supporting her body nor her tenacious willpower, she would have fallen to the ground just like others.

Compared to Princess Qian Qian, Xue Wu Xia was more badly injured.

What was interesting was that Xue Wu Xia did not have any surface wounds, all her injuries were internal injuries.

Different from Princess Qian Qian who was standing still and straight, Xue Wu Xia was unable to stand at all. She seemed very peaceful, sitting on the ice pillar behind Princess Qian Qian with her legs crossed and eyes shut. Due to the ice frost cold air she let

out during the battle, the whole battlefield had turned into an icy world. The beasts that the Fallen Angel summoned were either killed by Princess Qian Qian or frozen in other extremely cold ice pillar.

Xue Wu Xia's face was whiter than snow, without any color on her cheek.

Other than her cherry lips that had a slight breathtaking colour, showing that she was still a living human.

Fallen Angel Mo Fei who had badly injured Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia also suffered some consequences.

Fallen Angel Mo Fei was cut in half through the waist by Princess Qian Qian. Everything below his waist, had been smashed to pieces by Xue Wu Xia's lightning. Losing the lower half of his body was just the beginning. He had already lost his eyesight after being frozen by Xue Wu Xia's Absolute Zero atmosphere and smashed to pieces. If Xue Wu Xia has not destroyed Mo Fei's eyes, the two girls would still be in danger..... Now, the badly injured Mo Fei was still being chased by Xue Wu Xia's Guardian Beast Blizzard Lady.

He knew that when these 2 women recover, it would be the day he, a Heaven Rank Level 1 Fallen Angel, loses his life.

Fallen Angel Mo Fei wanted to circle around Blizzard Lady and attack the two women who were recovering.

He believed that he would be able to kill them with one sword.

With Blizzard Lady blocking in front of him, no matter how Fallen Angel Mo Fei tried to circle around her, he was still unable to circle around her blockade. What's scarier was that if he even touched Blizzard Lady slightly, he would immediately be frozen even when he was a Heaven Rank Level 1, becoming 10 times slower and move like a snail.

“You guys are so badly injured. Hoping to recover in this battlefield is a pipe dream.” Although Fallen Angel Mo Fei lost his sight, his lower body gone, he was still confident in killing them, because the other party's injuries were so bad.

It would be impossible to recover in a short period of time.

As long as he find an opportunity to wave his sword, he would be able to kill the opponent.

Mo Fei circled around patiently, trying to sneak attack while Blizzard Lady was blocking him. Most importantly, he was still adjusting to blindness.

As long as he gets used to it, he could still fly freely, then the opponent would definitely die! If he did not lose his sight, and was not used to flying blindly, Mo Fei believed that he would have already killed these two scheming women. They were very smart, very sly and were good in planning and buying time. They were unafraid of getting injured and risked their life. They could be said to be very outstanding.

But they had a huge weakness, which was their lack of strength.

Their levels were way too low.

Even with Prison Emperor Divine Sword in hand, they were still unable to use 100% of the Divine Sword's power.

“Sword Qi Cross Slash.....” Fallen Angel Mo Fei felt that he had gotten used to it, thus he started to plan in his mind. First, he would use the sword qi to chop Princess Qian Qian. He knew that this type of attack would not be able to harm her because Blizzard Lady would be able to absorb the damage. Sword qi and energy shockwaves would be useless, since her blizzard body could swallow everything.

“Blizzard.” Xue Wu Xia's Guardian Beast, Blizzard Lady, stood in front of princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia to block the sword qi in an instant. She absorbed the sword qi attack into its body by freezing it.

She changed from a moving state to a still state to block the attack, instantly getting caught by Mo Fei.

It was time to attack.

Fallen Angel Mo Fei immediately went in front of Princess Qian Qian.

His prediction was very accurate. First, he used airflow to figure out Princess Qian Qian's position, then locked in his concentration, before finally teleporting and sending out a thousand volt thunder. Before this, Mo Fei did not use teleportation to increase his chances of success, so he acted like he was not good at it and also acted like he was very affected by the loss of his sight. All those acts were for this moment.

Princess Qian Qian waved the Prison Emperor Divine Sword and held off the attack.

As long as she had the Divine Sword, it would be impossible to hit her even if there was another Fallen Angel Mo Fei.

The power of the Divine Sword could not be removed by a Heaven Rank Level 1 Fallen Angel like Mo Fei..... Of course, this was predicted by Mo Fei.

The enemy would never standstill like an idiot. Mo Fei predicted that Princess Qian Qian would receive his attack and counter it. As a result, when he swung the Angel Demon Sword, he also took out a short Angel Demon Dagger with his other hand from the handle of the Angel Demon Sword, and stabbed it into Princess Qian Qian's heart at a very fast speed.

He believed that Princess Qian Qian would not be able to withstand this blow.

As for Xue Wu Xia, Mo Fei would not let her rescue successfully.

With a spread of the Angel Demon Wings behind his back, hundreds of black feathers that were as sharp as blades shot towards Xue Wu Xia.

This human woman that was good in lightning and ice was not even able to protect herself and definitely could not save someone else. His wings becoming 'feather arrows' was Mo Fei's special skill. This was not a skill normal angels or fallen angels have. To learn this skill, Mo Fei killed and ate a hundreds of the Porcupine Clan's Golden King Beast, causing everyone in the Porcupine Clan to know about the killings.

"Go die! What I hate women that are prettier than me!" Although Mo Fei was born in Heaven Realm, he did not have pure angel blood, but was more closely related to the winged clan. He did not have any gender, so he was neither male nor female. His looks resembled a man more. In the past. He was not interested in men or women. But after meeting Thousand Goblin King, he realized that being a woman was far better than being a man, thus he decided to identify as a woman. From then on, Fallen Angel Mo Fei felt jealous of every pretty woman and hated them. He hated beauties like Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia.

"You will be the one to die, you genderless idiot!" Xue Wu Xia opened her eyes suddenly.

She jumped up from the ice pillar and flew faster than lightning by 100 times.

She pounced forward as if she was never injured.

Mo Fei did not care at all. This woman was welcoming his feather arrows. This was not an attack but seeking death.

No one expected that something made him scared out of his wits happened. With a flick of Xue Wu Xia's wrist, a shining Divine Weapon appeared. It had incomparable amount of energy. Once it was taken out, everything thing in the battlefield stagnated, and was under its suppression.

It was more powerful than Prison Emperor Divine Sword.

Fallen Angel Mo Fei wanted to escape but was unable to do so.

He lost his sight, so he could not see the Divine Weapon. But sensing the air, he could clearly sense that this Divine Weapon that had a suppressing seal energy was coming towards his head.

Rumble!

Fallen Angel Mo Fei felt that his head was smashed and in indescribable pain.

It was as if his soul was dragged out forcefully by a Primordial Monster and bitten into pieces. It was literally unable to go back into his body.

He was not able to be stay fully conscious, his brain burst with

loud noises. It was as if Thousands of people were walking around and also like thousand of mammoths were running around..... He was struck by the Divine Weapon..... It took a long time before he remembered that Xue Wu Xia hit his head with the Divine Weapon, but his thoughts were surprisingly slow and he was unable to react.

When Xue Wu Xia attacked again, his ears exploded and he painfully woke up.

Xue Wu Xia used the lightning in her left hand and the ice on the right to strike towards Mo Fei's ears.....

"I need to escape or I will die." Fallen Angel Mo Fei 'woke' up. He used his strength to stretch out his wings, preparing to escape.

"Where do you think you're going!" Princess Qian Qian's Prison Emperor Divine Sword reached out. She jumped up high, raising the sword high above and cut down.

"Aaaaaaaaaaaaaa....." Fallen Angel Mo Fei was a Heaven Rank Level 1 Ranker, so he managed to dodge the sword at the last minute. His head was spinning but he managed to escape from the fatal blow. When Prison Emperor Divine Sword hit his shoulder, he did not even care about his left arm and wing before he escaped high into the sky.

With the remaining arm and wing, Fallen Angel Mo Fei was still able to fly.

But, not only did the plan to kill Princess Qian Qian fail, he actually fell into the trap set by the two women, and got severely injured, and he almost died on the spot by being chopped into two.

Mo Fei let out cries of agony in the sky.

He had never suffered such serious injuries, and had never been disgraced by his enemies.

Both the plan and the fight was lost in front of the two woman! This severe injury was not his first. He fell for their trap early on in the battle and this when Xue Wu Xia froze his legs and almost decapitated by Princess Qian Qian. At that time, Mo Fei used the Angel Demon Sword to cut away his legs, thinking he could be free after sacrificing them. But princess Qian Qian came at him and cut him at his waist.

Luckily his beast sacrificed itself to save him when he was severely injured.

Thus he was able to escape.

While he was fleeing, he was caught by the woman that was good at ice and lightning, causing him to lose his sight.

He thought that this scary woman had ran out of ways to attack, but she actually had an even stronger Divine Weapon waiting for him to fall for their trick. This woman was not well known, who was she? Mo Fei could not understand and could not imagine how

such a scary woman was not well known in Tong Tian Tower.

Of course, if Mo Fei knew Xue Wu Xia was almost as smart as the sly Yue Clan's Third Young Master and had always been his right hand, he would not have been so reckless.

Chapter 589 – Funny, Do You Think That You Will Have A Future?

“Don’t be too smug. I will make you guys pay 10 times for the disgrace of cutting off my limb and wing.” Fallen Angel Mo Fei spat out black blood and looked at the two women hatefully.

The battle could no longer continue at this stage.

The enemy had two Divine Weapons, and Fallen Angel Mo Fei was badly injured. Even if he was not injured, he would not continue fighting.

He decided to leave the place instantly. Anyway, this Battle Dimension was not a Death Battle Dimension. The laws did not limit that one party must die first. In the Battle Dimension, once both parties have reached the limits of the battle, one party will have to admit defeat to be able to leave the place. The rules were not that strict here.

Fallen Angel Mo Fei took out teleportation crystal, ready to leave the place.

As he crushed the teleportation crystal, Fallen Angel looked back at the two women hatefully.

The two women looked calm, it was as if they did not see him leave.....

Outside the fort.

The Thousand Goblin King, who was crazily chasing after Yue Yang, suddenly stopped in midair and coughed painfully. Fresh blood came out of his nose.

He exclaimed in fear: “What? Mai Bo En!”

Thousand Goblin King sensed that Heaven Realm Demon Dragon was dead. With the help of 3 Hue Blazing Dragon, and with a level of peak Heaven Rank Level 1 Heaven Realm Demon Dragon Mai Bo En was actually dead. The 4 of them fought the Barbarian Cow Shadow and died within an hour. Thousand Goblin King could not believe this. Although Barbarian Cow Shadow had the God Binding Chains, her strength was far weaker than the Heaven Realm Demon Dragon. How did she manage to kill 4 huge dragons? Before this, Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen had killed the Snow Mountain Giant. Thousand Goblin King also could not figure out why this happened even if his Snow Mountain Giant was stronger.

Similarly, Heaven Realm Demon Dragon and the 3 Huge Blazing Dragons were much stronger than their opponent but were also defeated by Barbarian Cow Shadow.

This was totally impossible!

What kind of battle actually happened to produce such terrible results?

One teleportation pillar flashed from the place Fallen Angel Mo Fei disappeared.

When Thousand Goblin King saw this, he felt at peace..... Luckily, his Fallen Angel was strong enough. After the death of both Snow Mountain Giant and Heaven Realm Demon Dragon, only he managed to defeat his opponents and come back to his side.

Golden light spread out.

Pa!

A one winged Fallen Angel appeared in front of Thousand Goblin King, then collapsed to the ground slowly under Thousand Goblin King's happy gaze.

Before he died, he even stretched out his only arm towards Thousand Goblin King.

He seemed to have something to say but fresh blood had already sealed his throat.

Thousand Goblin King's happy smile stopped like how lava solidify after coming out of the volcano.

He looked like death pale because hisbeasts died one after another. The recoil of losing so many contracted beast almost made his head explode. Fresh blood came out of his mouth and

nose like a gushing spring.

“Mo Fei, even you the number 1 in wisdom also died in battle? What kind of enemy did you face in the battle?” Thousand Goblin King could not imagine it, as he watched Fallen Angel Mo Fei die. Mo Fei, the Fallen Angel he trusted most, teleported back not in victory but to see him one last time before he died.

“You guys are back? It has been hard on you guys, leave the rest to me and take a rest!” On the other side, it was like Yue Yang was welcoming a big hero. He hugged Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia, who teleported back, and kissed them passionately to express his happiness.

Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man tied by the God Binding Chains also came back at the same time.

Ah Man was covered in blood.

She carried the the Golden Dragon Slaying Spear behind her and the Golden Dragon Slaying Dagger at her waist. Her unparalleled might was like a war goddess that never tires..... She stretched out her arms out from behind Yue Yang and hugged Yue Yang, Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian together, to show her defensive spirit. The long God Binding Chain on her body was stained with the Fallen Angel Mo Fei's blood.

Thousand Goblin King instantly understood that not only did this female Barbarian Cow Shadow kill the Heaven Realm Demon Dragon, she also teleported into the Battle Dimension to help the

two women kill Mo Fei.

The Battle Dimension must have been tweaked by Yue Clan's Third Young Master, so there must have been a problem, but it was already too late to realize it now.

Thousand Goblin King's nightmare was not yet over In the other Death Battle Dimension, another battle was coming to an end. Heaven Rank Level 3 Ancient Demon collapsed to the ground. Although it was Thousand Goblin King's most powerful beast, he was destined to fail. That was because his opponent had also reached Heaven Rank Level 3, the giant loli. The giant loli possessed the Ancient Titan King's bloodline and had not yet grown up. Even if she had yet to recover her memory and was unable to use all her power, she was still the Guardian Wargod of the Western Heaven Realm. Thus, she had limitless amounts of energy which the Ancient Demon could not handle.

Giant loli, who was wearing the Titan Armor, screamed with a voice as loud as ten thousand soldiers.

The Ancient Demon was unable to stand up under the suppression of her arms, trembling in pain.

In the end, the neck that was unable to withstand Titan Energy snapped with a cracking sound..... The head of Ancient Demon, who was badly injured, was broken and snapped off by the giant loli.

Its battle with the giant loli was completely void of suspense.

The giant loli did not even use 80% of her strength before she killed the Ancient Demon. If the Ancient Demon was not good in flying, and did not fly around to dodge the attacks to buy some time, then the battle would have ended earlier than the battle between Snow Mountain Giant and Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen. After snapping the Ancient Demon's neck, giant loli was ready to leave. After thinking for a while, she frowned and decided to split its body into two.

Seconds later, she went back to Yue Yang's side, carrying the Ancient Demon's head in one hand and its leg in the other.

Thousand Goblin King looked deathly pale.

The first clone Chi Yan, second clone Qing Yan and Demon Elder Yan Shuo, who had all rushed behind Thousand Goblin King, started to tremble in fear. They started to regret. If they knew that things were going to turn out like this, they would not have started a war with the Yue Clan's Third Young Master. They initially thought that this was an easy opponent. They never expected that he was the real nightmare.

Compared to the Ancient Demon King Soul that was nowhere to be found, compared to the Scarlet, who was super powerful and in hiding, compared to Zhi Zun, who was ranked first in Tong Tian Tower..... Thousand Goblin King always thought that Yue Yang, the new generation Prison Emperor with a high potential was the easiest to deal with. After all, Yue Yang was very young, too young that it amazed everyone. He was only a bit over 20 years old, how high could his cultivation be? Two years ago, this boy had just

stepped into Innate Level. Even if he could fly, he would not be his match!

Thousand Goblin King felt like that.

Thus, defeating Yue Yang who had the potential to grow was the best choice for him to come out of retirement, and was also the easiest aim to achieve.

No one expected that even with traitors like Nine-headed Sea Goblin King and Xiang Yu removed; even if the demon brothers drained the enemy's energy before this; even if they released Demon Elder Yan Shuo from the seal, making him his helper; even if he owned the strongest Heaven Ranked beasts, where all of them were strong enough to bring down Tong Tian Tower, they still lost terribly during the fight against the Yue Clan's Third Young Master.

Now, the Thousand Goblin King slightly understood why Yue Yang became the successor of the Prison Emperor, why such a young man could survive the Death Battle Dimension, why he was able to kill Heaven Rank Rankers and capture Heaven Ranked beasts, why he was able to defeat the Black Hell King, who had woke up early and set up a plan.

The reason was that he had something others would never have.

Holy Weaponss, Divine weapons, Battle Angel, Nirvana Flame, Barbarian Cow Shadow, Ancient Titan, Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen..... If anyone had one of these things, they would be

able to have the position of a Supreme Ranker.

But , the Yue Clan's Third Young Master had everything.

“No, no..... My Holy Grimoire, don't be like this, don't abandon me!” Thousand Goblin King's summoning grimoire suddenly emitted a bright light, and scattered into numerous stars, disappearing into the sky. The Holy Grimoire became smaller and smaller, its pages flipped, some powers and laws that a Holy Grimoire must have all disappeared. This was caused by the death of his beasts and the third clone, Thousand Goblin King no longer had the qualifications to sustain the Holy Grimoire.

Thousand Goblin King's looked in despair as it dropped to a high-grade Diamond Grimoire.

Then to the middle-grade.

Lastly, a Holy Grimoire with endless potential had dropped to the lowest-grade Diamond Grimoire.

Thousand Goblin King used Separation Innate Skill to 'create' 3 clones. All of them existed like beasts.

Because there was Chi Yan, Qing Yan and Zi Jiu, the 3 special clones, in addition to the Ancient Demon, Snow Mountain Giant, Heaven Realm Demon Dragon, Fallen Angel and other Heaven Ranked Beasrs, the myth about Thousand Goblin King's summoning grimoire increasing in level strangely began. Because

of this, it also made him have high ambitions until he had the ambition to conquer the world.

Today, the defeat immediately put him back to his original state.

Using a thousand years to increase the level of his summoning grimoire to Holy Grimoire, and within an hour, thousand years of hard work disappeared.

Thousand Goblin King was so upset that he had no tears..... The third clone cannot be revived, and cannot be made again. The dead Ancient Demon was a very loyal subordinate. Even though he was human, it made a contract with him without thinking twice, and continued to help him. Along with the Heaven Realm Demon Dragon, Snow Mountain Giant and Fallen Angel Mo Fei, who had the highest potential, were not Guardian Beasts. This their deaths signified the final goodbye.

“Yue Clan Third Young Master, this hatred is more than killing father, stealing bride or even destroying country.” Thousand Goblin King put away his summoning grimoire, held his shaking hand and took a deep breath to remain calm: “I will admit that I have lost this battle. Before this, I looked at you with contempt, but I will never do that again. In the future, I will take my revenge on you a thousand fold. I will make your life a living hell, until you seek death but can’t die!”

“Funny, do you think that you will have a future?” Yue Yang let the severely injured Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia in his Grimoire World to rest.

Xiao Wen Li, Ah Man, Battle Angel Yi Ka, Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen all stood behind him.

Ever since Black Hell King used his Betrayal Innate Skill to escape from the Death Arena, Yue Yang learnt from his mistakes that once he started killing his enemies, he must never let them escape. Either do not attack or attack, but once you start, you must not stop until the enemy was defeated.

Chapter 590 – I Will Never Trust An Enemy!

At the entrance of the secret door, Bloody Queen Red , Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying, Elder Nan Gong and two Abyss Manatees were waiting for Yue Yang quietly. Once he comes out, they would immediately lock the secret door, trapping the enemies inside forever. Even if he was unable to kill the enemy, they would not let them leave. This was Yue Yang's initial plan.

Hui Tai Lang flew in and out, as he dragged the muttering near death Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo out.

Prison Dragon Pillar was wrapped around Bei Feng Jia Suo while the Beheading Moon Chain was around Feng Zhu

They were not having fighting against each other but protecting.

Both of them used their treasure to protect the other person.

The Prison Dragon Pillar and the Beheading Moon Chain were unable to protect their own masters. But, if both of them have the intention to protect the enemy from outside harm, they were the best tools in the shed.

If they did not use Prison Dragon Pillar and Beheading Moon Chain as a safety precaution, they would have died in the battle between Thousand Goblin King and Yue Yang.

The shockwave that blast out from the battle was not something

that flesh and blood were capable of withstanding.

Feng Zhu and Bei Feng jia Suo had used up all their energy.....

Hui Tai Lang brought the two of them outside the secret door, then flew back quickly to help Yue Yang. Although Thousand Goblin King was injured, he was still powerful. Even if Yue Yang had Battle Angel Yi Ka, Ah Man, Duo Duo and Xiao Wen Li, it would still be difficult for them to have the upper hand. Thus, Hui Tai Lang immediately ran back to fight after escorting everyone else outside the secret door.

In the beginning, the angry Thousand Goblin King let out a terrifying energy and chased after Yue Yang.

Yue Yang almost did not have a chance to catch his breath, but luckily managed to dodge the attacks.

Xiao Wen Li used her Binding Innate Skill a few times to escape from Thousand Goblin King's thunder bolts, this fatal attack.

With the addition of Hui Tai Lang, the odds started to shift in Yue Yang's favor. Although Ah Man was not as powerful as first clone Chi Yan, she could never be tired. Thus, no matter how many times Chi Yan attacked her, Ah Man was able to stand up quickly again. The battle between the second clone Qing Yan and Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen was also in a deadlock. Qing Yan's attacks were ineffective against Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen Duo Duo. But even if she held the little golden beast that formed a dagger, she was still unable to defeat the crafty

second clone Qing Yan. This kind of continuous chase and catch battle might take 3 days 3 nights for a winner to emerge.

The only one that had the upper hand was the giant loli.

She fought Demon Elder Yan Shuo until he was very depressed.

Demon Elder Yan Shuo had the strength of Heaven Rank Level 3. Once he recovered all his strength, he would be at the peak of Heaven Rank Level 4. But, it was hit by giant loli until he could no longer be angry. An Ancient Demon meeting with Ancient Titan with the same level of power was bound to be a tragedy. Moreover, this Ancient titan was a Titan Royalty, Ancient Titan's Guardian War God.....

Luckily, the giant lol had not yet grown up; Otherwise, Demon Elder Yan Shuo would have been badly beaten up.

“Charge!” Giant loli's shout was like thunder shaking the world.

Every time she charged, Demon Elder Yan Shuo would fly from the hit.

On the other hand, Demon Elder Yan Shuo used all the evil energy, demon's power and Hell Fire but was still unable to hurt her. That was because she was resistant towards any negative energies. Even the Hell Fire that Ancient Demons were born with was unable to harm her.

The fight continued on.

After an hour, Yue Yang gradually started to shift the odds to his favor.

Thousand Goblin King was very strong, but he still got tired. He was not like Ah Man, who had the Heart of Earth to absorb the earth's energy to recharge. Under Yue Yang's harrassment, every move he made only made him weaker. When he wanted to attack Yue Yang, Yue Yang, who was as sly as a fox, would run away quickly. But when Thousand Goblin King prepared to leave, Yue Yang would attack him again..... Thousand Goblin King knew that Yue Yang's aim was to tire him out.

Competing their consumption. Competing their persistence.

Competing their endurance.

If it was the past, Thousand Goblin King would be very confident in winning against Yue Yang.

But now, he no longer had the Holy Grimoire, and lost Fallen Angel Mo Fei, Heaven Realm Demon Dragon Mai Bo En, Snow Mountain Giant and Ancient Memon. Most importantly, he lost the third clone Zi Jiu.

If he continued the fight with Yue Yang, Thousand Goblin King believed that even if he escaped the secret door, even if Dragon Emperor, Sky Execution, Night Empress and Zhi Zun didn't attack

him, Black Hell King and Scarlet King would not let him off. Thousand Goblin King could not use up all his strength as he needed to leave some. Thus, when it came to Yue Yang's attacks he was very angry. He was attacking on the surface but planning his escape in his mind.

If Yue Yang was alone, it would be easier for Thousand Goblin King to escape.

The problem was that there was the lamia loli that had the scary Binding Inherent Skill, the lowly god that was able to transform into a World Exterminating Demon Wolf and the Ancient Divine Soldier, Battle Angel.....

The battle continued.

2 hours past by.

Yue Yang had totally turned the odds in his favor. Under the help of Xiao Wen Li and the others, they managed to be on the same fighting level at Thousand Goblin King.

Thousand Goblin King tried to escape numerous times but failed, as he was stopped by Yue Yang halfway.

Furthermore, when he had the thought to leave, Battle Angel Yi Ka and Hui Tai Lang would start to attack the first and second clones. If he loses them both, Thousand Goblin King felt that he would be weaker than Black Hell King. The dream of defeating the

Scarlet Emperor, controlling Tong Tian Tower or conquering Heaven Realm would become impossible without his clones. He would become a useless person for the rest of his life.

“Rumble!”

Demon Elder Yan Shuo used all the methods but was still unable to defeat giant loli.

It could not even remember how many times she made him fall to the ground. Only this time, Demon Elder Yan Shuo did not immediately bounce back up like the previous times. He cried in agony to Thousand Goblin King: “I tried my best..... The enemy is just too strong. Your highness, let’s go. We can’t fight anymore!”

Even first clone Chi Yan and second clone Qing Yan were very tired.

They also wished that Thousand Goblin King would make the decision to leave this place.

Of course, if Thousand Goblin King decided to fight till the end, they would do so as well.

Giant loli raised her chest, gasping for air. She also felt tired but her strong willpower helped her persevere as she charged against the enemy again.

“You guys should leave immediately, I will guard the back.”

Thousand Goblin King suddenly gave up on Yue Yang, appearing in front of Demon Elder Yan Shuo and made the giant loli retreat.

At the same time, an energy shield appeared.

It refracted the ray that Battle Angel Yi kai shot out and bounced it off into the sky.

Thousand Goblin King felt upset, as he missed the chance to kill Yue Yang today. In the future, he would not have such a good chance again.

With Yue Yang's growth, he might be able to be at the same level as him within months.....

Within years, this boy would surpass him.

No matter how tired he was, Thousand Goblin King still wanted to endure until he killed Yue Yang.

Yue Clan's Third Young Master was also very tired. But he bit gritted his teeth and endured. As long as this boy had some flaws that he could exploit, then he would be dead.

It was regretful that Demon Elder Yan Shuo, the first Chi Yan and second clone Qing Yan could no longer continue fighting. If Fallen Angel, Heaven Realm Demon Dragon, Snow Mountain Giant and the others had not died, he would not have been in this position.

Thousand Goblin King knew that he did not have the ability to continue fighting. If he continued to fight with Yue Yang, it would not only be meaningless but very dangerous.

It would no longer be possible to defeat Yue Yang.

Even if he does, he might still be attacked by Scarlet Emperor, Black Hell King, Ancient Demon King soul's new vessel, Sky Execution, Dragon Emperor, Emperor of the Underworld, Night Empress or Zhi Zun when he escapes through the secret door. The badly injured first clone Chi Yan, second clone Qing Yan and Demon Elder Yan Shuo, who had yet to regain his full power, were his last helping hands. If he loses any one of them, it would be a big blow to the overall power.

Without the Holy Grimoire, he no longer had the ability to lose anything else.

“Go!” Thousand Goblin King used all his strength to block all the attacks, handling all the attacks from the opponent.

“Understood.” Demon Elder Yan Shuo, Chi Yan and Qing Yan did not take their time but immediately ran towards the secret door.

“Leave the Thousand Goblin King to me. I am enough to handle him. You guys go kill them..... Use this chance to kill him while he is down! Today is the best chance to kill Thousand Goblin King!” Yue Yang’ killing intent soared to the skies. He took out Prison Emperor’s Seven Stars Pillar and stuck it into the ground. At the

same time, he also summoned the domain of 'World' from his grimoire to boost everyone's strength. But on Thousand Goblin King's side, the world was in disarray and 'World' was absorbing the energy in his surroundings.

Energy surged until it reached a level where Yue Yang could shake Thousand Goblin King with a punch.

Both of them did not put down their guards and used treasures or beasts to protect themselves.

Fist swung around and they hit each other.

Both of them were very tough on themselves. When facing a deadly punch, both of them did not step back..... Until now, Thousand Goblin King finally realized the true strength that Yue Yang possessed. After fighting for so long, he realized that Yue Yang still possessed an unused strength. If he had not wanted to escape the secret door, this boy would have continued to hide the truth and act like he was too weak to fight him.

"Fight fight fight fight fight....." Yue Yang swung punched like a storm. First it was the same speed as Thousand Goblin King, then it increased in speed and it become more powerful than Thousand Goblin King's attacks until he had no choice but to be in a defensive position.

"Damn it!" Thousand Goblin King had a feeling that he was going to die. He did not expect the Yue Clan's Third Young Master to be this powerful.

Was he really going to die here?

Thousand Goblin King felt shocked, and his energy exploded.

It cause Yue Yang to fly back, and he quickly escaped in the other direction towards the secret door.

Yue Yang chased after him relentlessly. He would not let Thousand Goblin King go further than 1000 meters away from him because this was the maximum distance Yue Yang's energy and spirit could reach. If Thousand Goblin King was more than 1000 meters away, he would be able to teleport or use a teleportation crystal to escape outside the secret door, escape the snow world. As long as Yue Yang was still within 1000 meters of him, Thousand Goblin King would not be able to escape successfully.

Thousand Goblin King ran in the opposite direction of the secret door. He did not plan to leave immediately.

He had to create an opportunity for Demon Elder Yan Shuo, first clone Chi Yan and second clone Qing Yan to escape.

Chi Yan, Qing Yan and Demon Elder Yan Shuo ran to the secret door and was shocked to see the secret door closing..... The two girls that entered Yue Yang's grimoire could be seen through the small gap outside the door, staring at them coldly. They held onto Divine Weapons in their hands. If anyone of them rushed to the secret door, the Divine Weapons would cause them to fall and the person would be squashed by the door and die there.

They were in despair.

Even if one of them could escape, the other two would not be able to. Their boss Thousand Goblin King was still inside.

Chi Yan and the others stopped and looked at the secret door close helplessly.

The enemy had control of the secret door from the start.

They wanted to escape but could not.

They were helpless.....

Hui Tai Lang was the fastest, Ah Man, Duo Duo, Battle Angel Yi Ka and the giant loli were not too far behind.

At this time, the Thousand Goblin King suddenly stopped as if he saw the secret door close. He sighed and unexpectedly begged Yue Yang: “Yue Clan’s Third Young Master, I hate you and you hate me too. But, we don’t have to fight each other till death today. Doing this would only be doing Black Hell King and Scarlet Emperor a favor. Don’t forget, Ancient Demon King Soul’s new vessel is still in Tong Tian Tower. He is still glaring like a tiger watching its prey. He may have even infiltrated your clan and impersonated a member. Killing me is not that easy. Even If you killed me, I will also drag you down with me. You will be badly injured, and maybe after this, you may never be able to regain your power and

potential. Yue Clan's Third Young Master, we can find another time to have a duel to the death. You can go kill Black Hell King and Scarlet Emperor first as I am no longer your biggest threat. If you are willing to let me go, I will tell you the way to identify Ancient Demon King soul's new body as an exchange. Don't you want to know who the Ancient Demon King Soul had become in your circle?"

"I was almost convinced by you." Yue Yang nodded his head and said seriously: "What you said makes sense. But I want to tell you that I will never trust an enemy. Even if the enemy is dead, I would not believe him! Thousand Goblin King, repent. You should not have made me your enemy. There is only one outcome being my enemy, and that is death!"

Chapter 591 – Thousand Goblin King, Die!

Even after 6 hours, the battle still continued.

Thousand Goblin King was really the toughest opponent that Yue Yang had ever met in his life. He was cunning, scheming and very strong-willed. Even though he was trapped in a very dangerous situation, he would still be able to continue fighting, unlike other warriors who would probably become discouraged. Xiao Wen Li, Ah Man, Duo Duo, Battle Angel and Hui Tai Lang had worked together and just defeated his first body Scarlet Fire, second body Green Fire, they were coming over to help Yue Yang to defeat Thousand Goblin King.

As for Demon Elder Yan Shuo, he was out long ago.

3 hours ago, Demon Elder Yan Shuo had begged Thousand Goblin King to save him. Before he escaped into Thousand Goblin King's Grimoire world, Yue Yang succeeded in ambushing him and cutting his body into half.

If it were not for the fact that he possessed the special powers of an Ancient Demon's body, that he would not be 'truly dead if his demon heart was not destroyed', if he was a human, he would have already died.

Of course, after losing half of his body, although Demon Elder Yan Shuo could still recover, his abilities would be greatly decreased.

It looked like he wouldn't be Heaven Ranked Level 3 anymore.

In the end, it would also be luck if Demon Elder Yan Shuo managed to keep his level to Heave Ranked Level 2.

Scarlet Fire and Green Fire had also returned to Thousand Goblin King's Grimoire World. They had completely been defeated. Scarlet Fire had even almost ended up getting swallowed whole by Hui Tai Lang. It was a pity that Hui Tai Lang ended up vomiting it out. Hui Tai Lang's level and power was too low, and it couldn't maintain its World Exterminating Demon Wolf's form too long. Otherwise, Scarlet Fire would definitely be toast.

"Does God really want me to die?" Thousand Goblin King was also heavily injured. Facing Hui Tai Lang, Xiao Wen Li and the others who were slowly surrounding him, he mumbled.

"You should think about the 'good' things you have done. When you destroyed someone's whole clan, when you destroyed someone's whole country, when you destroyed all lives in a continent, have you ever thought of today? Do you still remember when you ordered your fanatical followers to purge the clan in Valley of Hundred Butterflies and Flowers, causing rivers of blood and death count of tens of thousands lives? Before all of this, you have also ordered your army to destroy the Dawn Kingdom, which was the Valley of Hundred Butterflies and Flowers Clan previously, killing millions of people and causing such a great tragedy and mountains of corpse. In order to obtain the secret of God's Ruins, you even incited the Ancient Demon King to invade Heaven Stairway and colluded with the Black Hell King to betray the Prison Emperor. You caused both parties to be greatly injured, and

even drew Heaven Rank warriors to the Soaring Dragon Continent... If it weren't for you, why would the Heaven Stairway be closed? Why would Tong Tian Tower be degenerated to such states? Everyone had always thought that Black Hell King was the traitor, but actually, the greatest traitor of Tong Tian Tower was you, Thousand Goblin King!" Yue Yang denounced angrily as he slowly increased his power.

"Did Black Hell King tell you this?" Thousand Goblin King even thought that the Black Hell King was the one who informed Yue Yang.

"In this 3000 years, you have reincarnated many times and continuously sow dissension between different powers in Tong Tian Tower, causing great wars after great wars. You must think that no one would be able to tell that it was you... But regrettably, the moment I first saw you, I think you are very familiar." Yue Yang coldly humphed, "Last time, your subordinates had purposely lied to the world that you were sealed at the Heaven Stairway. In reality, there was no such thing. You continuously cause discords between different powers in Tong Tian Tower with a different identity each time."

"Oh really?" Thousand Goblin King was slightly shocked, but he recovered his calm instantly. He asked, "May I ask if third young master has seen me before?"

"I never met you before." Yue Yang then said a name that made Thousand Goblin King's face immediately changed colour. "However, when I saw you afterwards, I immediately know that that person was your clone."

“You really have great eyesight...” Thousand Goblin King swallowed his saliva, his expression was calm when he asked, “Then what else have you seen?”

“Thousand Goblin King, you, you actually don’t have a Guardian Beast!” When Yue Yang said this, Thousand Goblin King immediately froze.

Shock coloured his eyes, he was unable to conceal it anymore.

Yue Yang made a finger gun with his hands and point it towards Thousand Goblin King, “You are an Ancient Demon, you are not a human. You have used a shameless method to steal a talented youth’s body. As a punishment, the Code has taken away the youth’s Inherent Skill and Guardian Beast. You, as an Ancient Demon thief, would never be able to have another’s Inherent Skill and Guardian Beast. Even your own Guardian Beast had been taken away forever by the Code, ceasing to exist... You must have initially thought that you can possess two Inherent Skills and two Guardian Beasts this way, but in the end, you even lost your own Guardian beast.”

Thousand Goblin King’s hands shook a little. He felt like Yue Yang had completely seen through him, as if all of his secrets had been leaked out.

He felt terrified.

Could it be that this brat could even find out his weakness?

Or was he only guessing? He had never summoned his Guardian Beast to fight before, so Yue Yang was suspicious?

Thousand Goblin King took a deep breath and smirked at Yue Yang, “So what? Even though I don’t have a Guardian Beast, I still have the unique Separation Inherent Skill. As long as I have this skill, I would be able to possess countless other bodies. Each body, as long as I have enough power, I would be able to grow it to Heaven rank and above. How many Heaven Rank opponents can you defeat?”

Yue Yang clapped his hands, as if he wanted to praise his opponent, “Countless other bodies, is it? What a lovely dream! Pity, the more clones you made, the more your original body’s ability will be reduced to 20% of its original each time. You don’t have that much potential in the first place, you can only rely on tricking other people, then steal their pure energy to increase your level. If you didn’t have your original strength as an Ancient Demon, you wouldn’t even be as strong as Black Hell King, that idiot... You, who have been hiding in dark corners and steal other people’s energy to create clones continuously for this six thousand years, are as pathetic as a rat! Did you think you can become a person if you stole a little cheese? No, you are forever going to be a pest that others want to exterminate. I know what you want to get when you tried entering the God’s Ruin. You want God’s Blood! You want to use God’s Blood to be reborn anew... Do you want to hear the painful truth? Thousand Goblin King, a monster like you who stole other people’s bodies and abilities, you are neither human nor demon. You would never be able to receive God’s Blood’s recognition, because, not only you have the remaining sealing curse of the Ancient Demon King on your body, you also still have the seal on Prison Emperor’s body... Although these seals

didn't trap you inside a dimension, they have completely destroy your future. In the future, no matter what you do, you can only be miserable. What you can only get in the end will be nothing! This, this is the rightful punishment for a traitor like you."

"No, that's not possible!" thousand Goblin King sweated nervously.

His will was shaken.

Yue Yang's words were more damaging than World Exterminating Wheel, sharper than Innate Sword Qi and more engulfing than Nirvana Flame.

He never thought that the Ancient Demon King and Prison Emperor who had let him go thousand of years ago had actually put a curse on his body and destroyed his future.

He remembered Ancient Demon King's ridiculing eyes then.

He also remembered Prison Emperor's eyes that were filled with contempt.

Thousand Goblin King had finally understood a little, turns out that he had been played in the hands of Prison Emperor and Ancient Demon King all this while. He was still trapped under their shadow... He believed that Black Hell King couldn't have told Yue Yang all these, as he wouldn't know so many secrets of his. It was definitely Prison Emperor, he had told the next generation of

Prison Emperor his secrets.

Or maybe information about him was recorded on the crystal coffin where the Ancient Demon King's body was preserved.

This Yue Yang must have seen that information written on the Ancient Demon King's crystal coffin.

“No, even though the whole world becomes my enemy, I won't be afraid. I possess the Separation Inherent Skill, an undefeatable Inherent Skill! It doesn't matter if it is Ancient Demon King or Prison Emperor or you, third young master Yue. You are all not my opponent! Even if I lose now, it will just be temporary. I will definitely win in the end! Ancient Demon King is dead, and he couldn't even get back his body. Who caused him to die? Me! Prison Emperor is also dead, and he was as strong as warriors from the Heaven Realm. Who caused him to die? Me! Right now, it will be the same, third young master Yue. The failure today won't mean anything as long as I'm alive, I will have the chance to turn the tables.” Thousand Goblin King shouted frantically and pointed at Yue Yang, furiously yelling, “You can enjoy this moment now, but I will definitely live longer than you. It doesn't matter what Inherent Skill you have, it doesn't matter how much potential you have. You will definitely die in the future, but I, who possess at least the life force of 100,000 years, will definitely continue to live. The Soaring Dragon Continent and Tong Tian Tower that you desperately want to protect, I will burn them to ashes the moment you die. Just like how I bathe the Heaven Stairway and Dawn Kingdom in bloodbath! Yes, it's all my doing, what can you do to me? Third young master Yue, with your current abilities, do you think you can kill me? Even if you destroy my whole body, I can still continue to live through my other bodies. As long as one of my

bodies still exist in a safe place in this world, my demon heart would not be destroyed. You won't be able to kill me in all eternity!"

"Oh really?" Yue Yang stared at Thousand Goblin King and slowly raised his hand, "Do you know why I said all those words? The reason is because I want to know what's your card!"

"No matter what, I will be the one laughing in the end..." Thousand Goblin King realised that he had fallen into his trap.

Because of Yue Yang's words, he lost his calm and logic for a moment.

He had said some things that he shouldn't say. Thousand Goblin King felt very regretful.

However, he still had a small hope in his heart. Even if Yue Yang knew about his demon heart, he would never know where he hid it.

Yue Yang, Xiao Wen Li, Battle Angel and the others started surrounding Thousand Goblin King. Thousand Goblin King put up a strong front and laughed coldly, "Third young master Yue, you will never know my trump card."

When Hui Tai Lang heard this, it woofed.

What did this bastard dog mean?

Thousand Goblin King didn't understand. What did the bastard dog want to say?

Yue Yang explained, "Hui Tai Lang said, no one will ever know your trump card, because it doesn't even exist! Even my house's watch dog know this, who do you want to play your tricks with? Thousand Goblin King, I'm done with probing you. I'm really sorry to inform you that, if you haven't revealed the secret that you don't have a trump card, I wouldn't use my secret move to kill you. Now, since you are definitely going to die, try to search for your clones with that demon heart of yours! That clone which is only Innate-ranked, do you think I didn't send anyone to kill him? Three hours ago, I have already sent out my two most trusted people to kill him! Now, I can guarantee that as long as you die, your clone would immediately be killed. Prison Emperor killed you once, and with great difficulties, you finally recover your powers after thousands of years. Thousand Goblin King, this time, you will never be able to recover your powers..."

"Are you trying to scare me? You are too young for this!" Thousand Goblin King still have two clones outside. When he heard that Yue Yang only killed one, he was very calm.

"Old man, you are long past your expiry date." Yue Yang coldly stretched out his arms as an immense level of power started to accumulate in his hands.

Thousand Goblin King immediately summoned hundreds of slaves and with a jolt, all the slaves' bodies suddenly burst into pieces.

Blood rained from the sky!

Thousand Goblin King who gained the energy from the blood of hundreds of slaves started to condense the power into a ball, creating a terrifying “Cursed Blood Demon Ball”. Then, he fired it towards Yue Yang.

Thousand Goblin King didn't think of kill Yue Yang with this attack. As long as this Cursed Blood Demon Ball was able to stop Yue Yang for a second, he would be able to escape.

However, Thousand Goblin King then saw something that he wouldn't even dream of. From Yue Yang's body, an unstoppable wave of Code Energy burst out.

Thousand Goblin King body was suddenly flattened to the ground from an invisible force, unable to budge at all.

A gigantic, gold-coloured Giant suddenly grew from Yue Yang's body. On this Golden Giant's feet, Hui Tai Lang, Xiao Wen Li, Ah Man, Duo Duo and the others all started to grow Golden Giant statues on their own, which grew to more than 100 metres tall. Every single Golden Giant possessed Code Energy too, and every single one was capable of killing a Heaven Rank warrior. The first clone Chi Yan and the second clone Qing Yan rushed out to save Thousand Goblin King, but they were immediately flattened to the ground too.

It was merely a step. The Golden Giant which was at least 1000

metres tall had only lifted his foot and stepped on the Thousand Goblin King and his two clones, but they were immediately flattened to the ground.

Chi Yan and Qing Yan's cloned bodies immediately crumbled to pieces.

When Thousand Goblin King's body broke to pieces, a ball of energy attempted to stitched itself to the Golden Giant's toe to escape.

Yue Yang reached out his hands, and the Golden Giant emitted a kind of unparalleled Code Energy. Yue Yang easily captured that ball of energy and together with the Cursed Blood Demon Blood, he compressed it into a blood-coloured pearl in an instant. It looked similar to the Dark Pearl that sealed the Dark Golden Sceptre who was hiding inside the White Jade Beetle, and the Silver Pearl that sealed the Golden Devil from the Five Elements Palace.

The Golden Giant which was made of Code Energy very quickly disappeared afterwards.

Xiao Wen Li and the others also quickly reverted to their original appearance.

It was as if nothing had happened in that snow world. It's just that there was a visible footprint on the ground, remnants of three crushed bodies and a dark looking grimoire.

Hui Tai Lang wasn't about to be polite. It immediately gnawed on its food. It didn't care what kind of status did Thousand Goblin King had, as long as it was meat whose energy it can absorb, it was food to Hui Tai Lang.

It would be a waste not to eat it!

“Goodbye, Thousand Goblin King.” Yue Yang grabbed the Blood Pearl, and lighted Nirvana Flame on his hands.

“...” That Blood Pearl seemed to release some kind of strange waves, as if it was struggling...or begging.

In the midst of Nirvana Flame, the Blood Pearls abnormal waves slowly became quiet.

After being purified by Nirvana Flame, the Blood Pearl looked even more beautiful and scarlet. Its colour became a very unique shade of red.

At this time, the battle finally came to an end. On Yue Yang's body, Hui Tai Lang's body, Xiao Wen Li's body.... On all the other beasts' bodies who participated in the fight, a pillar of level up light appeared.

Outside the secret door, when the pillar of level up light appeared on Bloody Queen Red's and Dragon Girl Jian Ying's bodies, everyone immediately burst into cheers.

Everyone understood what this means. This meant that Yue Yang was victorious!

Ye Kong and Fatty Hai who were detaining a guy who was kneeling in front of the secret door, ignored that guy's pleas and beheaded him.

“There's still one more.” When Princess Qian Qian level up, her closed eyes suddenly opened.

“That person is at...” Xue Wu Xia nodded, “He won't be able to escape!”

Chapter 592 – New Prison Emperor's Command: Mission Completed!

When the secret door opened once again, Yue Yang slowly walked out.

Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia welcomed him and gave him a tight hug.

This battle was so difficult. The process was extremely dangerous, to the extent that a single mistake would have caused them to be completely doomed with no chance of recovery. Fortunately, Empress Jellyfish' strategy was already in place. Afterwards, when Yue Yang improvised the strategy, the two generation's plan merged into one. In the end, they managed to turn the tides to their favour and won the battle.

Although Thousand Goblin King had been killed, not all the enemies had been completely annihilated.

Ancient Demon King's soul vessel hadn't been found since the start, it was hidden in a secret place.

As for Scarlet Emperor and Scarlet Consort, if it wasn't for the appearance of Zhi Zun and Night Empress, both of them would have invaded the secret door long ago.

Lastly, there was also the great battle between the terrible Black Hell King and Sky Execution in the Soaring Dragon Continent... It

was only because Dragon Emperor, Underworld Emperor and Sky Execution joined hands together that they were able to defeat Black Hell King and forced Black Hell King to stop making a ruckus in the Soaring Dragon Continent. This helped Yue Yang to have a piece of mind when fighting Thousand Goblin King, without having the need to worry about Soaring Dragon Continent. That was how he was able to successfully kill the cunning Thousand Goblin King who had reincarnated millions of times.

“How did you guys manage to catch Prince of Zhi Jin?” Yue Yang saw the human head on Ye Kong’s hands and confirmed that it was one of Thousand Goblin King’s clones, Prince of Zhi Jin.

“We didn’t catch him, we only spoke with the Zhi Jin’s Heavenly Imperial Guardians. Although the Kingdom of Zhi Jin has bad blood with us, they weren’t able to cover up this matter anymore. The fact that Prince of Zhi Jin was Thousand Goblin King’s clone, those two Heavenly Imperial guardians should already be aware of it. When we reached them in the Innate Alliance, they seemed to already know our reason for finding them. They left to discuss the matter with their Kingdom for around an hour, then handed over the Prince of Zhi Jin to Ye Kong and Fatty Hai. We then moved him here and killed him according to what you have planned.” Princess Qian Qian summarized what had happened to Yue Yang.

“There was actually a condition put forth by the Kingdom of Zhi Jin to take the Prince of Zhi Jin. In 10 years, we are not to invade the Kingdom of Zhi Jin under any name. Of course, they cannot send out troops to attack us too. On the previous invasion, they will compensate us according to the loss.” Xue Wu Xia’s face turned cold as she said, “They are only delaying the inevitable.”

“That’s right, if you haven’t told us to spare that big one, we would definitely kill that fellow too.” Princess Qian Qian nodded.

“?” Ye Kong and Fatty Hai were both very curious.

They thought, who was the other clone actually?

Was it the Young Sect Leader, Bai Yun Fei, whose was Prince of Zhi Jin’s good friend?

Or was it another person?

Maybe it was that low-keyed but was in truth a battle maniac, Emperor Chu Tian Xiao of Kingdom of Zhi Jin? Or was it the strongest warrior amongst the nobility in Kingdom of Zhi Jin, the one with close relationship with Demon Abyss, Marquis of Zhi Jin?

Even Yue Yang’s First Uncle Yue Shan was under Ye Kong’s and the others’ suspects radar.

This was because Yue Shan’s actions were usually very suspicious.

Problem was, if Yue Shan was really one of Thousand Goblin King’s clones, how did Yue Yang not know about that since long ago?

Prince of Zhi Jin was definitely not Thousand Goblin King’s

clone last time. However, with the appearance of Yue Yang who grew stronger at an unprecedented rate, then Ye Kong and Fatty Hai who improved tremendously with Yue Yang's help, Prince of Zhi Jin became depressed. In the end, he fell into Thousand Goblin King's temptation of power. It was really a pity. The Prince of Zhi Jin who was also a self-titled "Deer-Hunting God" and master of the "Desert Gale Sand" scimitar skill, due to his impatience of gaining power and greed of receiving great power, had lost his original heart.

The most pitiful thing was that Prince of Zhi Jin was actually reduced to a sacrificial pawn by his own Kingdom in the end.

Ye Kong sighed slowly in his heart.

In life, there were times that it seemed that you are standing in front of a crossroad. One will lead you to glory, the other will lead you to a cliff.

If you walked the wrong way, you might make a great mistake and and lose your everything, with no hope of reprieve.

"Don't worry, that fellow will definitely look for the Thousand Goblin King's demon heart... We will wait for him to find the demon heart, then we can kill him in one go. Thousand Goblin King's original body is already dead, so what does a clone matter? Actually, if we think about it, the reason why we are able to kill Thousand Goblin King is because Ancient Demon King has secretly added fuel to the fire. Otherwise, it would really be difficult to kill Thousand Goblin King." Yue Yang shook his hand, indicating to the girls not to care about Thousand Goblin King's clone, because,

what they ought to be afraid of was the Ancient Demon King who nobody knew was the Ancient Demon King at that time.

“Ancient Demon King secretly helped us, maybe he was trying to carry out some kind of plan, like resurrection.” Xue Wu Xia immediately thought of a reason.

“That’s right, Thousand Goblin King’s existence might be a hindrance to Ancient Demon King’s plans for resurrection. That’s why he used us to eliminate Thousand Goblin King. Or maybe it’s like this. Ancient Demon King didn’t believe that we could kill Thousand Goblin King at the beginning, hence he purposely laid out very obvious clues for us, afraid that our abilities were not enough to defeat Thousand Goblin King. However, the things he revealed were a little too much. With Ancient Demon King’s intelligence, it shouldn’t be this way. Maybe at first he thought that Thousand Goblin King and us would fight until both of us were fatally injured. Humph, he must have miscalculated this time.” Princess Qian Qian was also a clever girl, even if she couldn’t guess the whole picture, she could still sense the truth.

“We have the perfect body of the Ancient Demon King. Ancient Demon King would probably not harm us.” Fatty Hai laughed out loud.

“Did you really think we managed to get the Ancient Demon King’s perfect body?” Yue Yang denied it.

“Is the Ancient Demon King’s crystal coffin still inside?” Ye Kong froze in shock.

“Actually... There was nothing inside the Sky Dome Constellation Sealing Circle.” Yue Yang looked at Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, Xue Tan Lang and the others, shaking his head, “Of course I would say that I had obtained the Ancient Demon King’s crystal coffin, that was to trick Thousand Goblin King. If I didn’t say that, why would he fight me as if his life depended on it? He would have escaped long ago!”

“It was empty inside?” Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian didn’t dare to believe this, because Yue Yang never told them the truth before.

“Yes it was empty. Not even a fake crystal coffin was there.” Yue Yang nodded.

“What?” The ones who didn’t believe this the most were Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo, who had guarded the place for 6000 years. They almost fainted. It turns out that they have wasted 6000 years guarding the place. No one would be able to take this kind of blow.

“6000 years ago, Prison Emperor must have sensed that Ancient Demon King’s soul had escaped. When he left Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo, the two seniors, to guard this place, it must be because he wanted to trick Ancient Demon King. Because Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo are the Prison Emperor’s most trusted aides, there must be something very important if they were the ones protecting it. Unexpectedly, this was all just a trap.” Hai Ying Wu had a mother-like wisdom, and was able to figure it out at once, “The real seal must be at another place. A place where Ancient

Demon King would never find.”

“We are totally, completely fooled...” Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo wanted to hug each other and cry.

6000 years of guarding, if there was Ancient Demon King’s crystal coffin inside, at least their work was not for nothing.

But there was nothing inside.

They completely wasted 6000 years of their lives, it was really a discouraging situation for them.

Yue Yang looked at Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo, then suddenly shouted, “Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jiao Suo, hear my command!”

Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo looked at each other in confusion when they heard Yue Yang.

What is this brat saying?

“This is the Prison Emperor’s command, attention!” Yue Yang shouted loudly again.

“Ah?” Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo immediately stood on attention when they heard it was Prison Emperor’s command. They looked at Yue Yang, still not understanding what he was about to tell them.

“Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo, you did not abandon your post for 6000 years. In view of your loyal services, I, Yue Yang, who has assumed the title of the new Prison Emperor, hereby pronounce you as the Heavenly General, Guardian of Tong Tian Tower. Feng Zhu will be the Left Heavenly General and Bei Feng Jia Suo will be the Right Heavenly General! Every single warrior in Tong Tian Tower will worship and respect you two. Those who doesn’t follow the Prison Emperor’s command will be ousted.” Yue Yang’s initially strict and serious face caused everyone to tense up and hold their breaths, but his expression suddenly turned gentle as he nodded towards Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo who were still at a daze, and said, “This is the last command from the Prison Emperor: Your guarding mission has been completed. You two, it’s been hard on you!”

“It has really ended?” Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo tried to restrain the excitement and surprise bubbling up within them and asked to confirm.

“Yes, your mission has ended.” Yue Yang deeply bowed towards them to show his respect.

Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian were also bowing behind Yue Yang.

Then Elder Nan Gong bowed.

Then Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, Xue Tan Lang, Prince of Tian Luo, Li Brothers, Hai Ying Wu, Bloody Queen Red, Dragon Girl Jiang

Ying... Everyone all bowed deeply to show their respect. These two had stayed in front of the fort within the secret door for 6000 years, to guard the being sealed inside the Sky Dome Constellation Seal. They were seniors whom everyone really respected.

Other Sea Clan members such as Elder Xing Pan, had all knelt down on the ground together with all the Sea Generals and Clown Fishmen.

They prostrated themselves in worship.

Even the Abyss Manatees whom Yue Yang had captured as slaves were also respectfully bowing towards Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo. Compared to them, the Abyss Manatees' loyalty and service was nothing. Only warriors like Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo were people that was worth of trust. These two Abyss Manatees initially felt some grievances. They thought that if they had not been threatened by Yue Yang, they wouldn't have become slaves. However, now they suddenly understand that to earn others' respect, it did not only depend on status. The most important thing would be faith.

Not everyone could have what Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo had, a conviction that did not waver 6000 years.

Ye Kong and Fatty Hai looked towards each other in mutual understanding after they bowed.

In each other's eyes, they saw the same kind of determination.

It was a determination to be the kind of loyal subordinate like Bei Feng Jia Suo and Feng Zhu... In the previous Prison Emperor's side, there were trusted aides like Bei Feng Jia Suo and Feng Zhu. Who would be on the new generation Prison Emperor's side? Ye Kong and Fatty Hai would not hesitate to volunteer themselves! They knew that they were never a Prison Emperor material, but they knew they could do something like what Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo did.

That was their target.

"Thank you." Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo revealed a smile full of relief, and bowed towards Yue Yang respectfully.

"No, thank you." Yue Yang bowed to them again the second time. This time, he was bowing as a junior to a senior, not as the new generation of Prison Emperor.

"Time passes so quickly. In a flash, 6000 years has passed." Feng Zhu sighed, "Now we can finally rest, but we don't even know where to go. We have been separated from the outside world for too long, so much that we are even afraid to meet people..."

"Feng Zhu, do you want to go to the Heaven Realm? On behalf of our thousands of years of friendship, I can be your tourguide for free." Bei Feng Jia Suo suddenly wanted to return to the Heaven Realm.

"You must also introduce to me, this big brother of yours, to a nice girl. Otherwise I won't accompany you to the Heaven Realm."

Feng Zhu circled his arms around Bei Feng Jia Suo's shoulder.

“Dammit, who's my big brother? You should call me big brother! I'm older than you!” Bei Feng Jia Suo was angry.

“So you are automatically the big brother because you are older? Being the older brother means you are stronger, and I'm stronger than you!” Feng Zhu defended that he was stronger than Bei Feng Jia Suo.

“Then let's fight and see who's stronger!” Bei Feng Jia Suo couldn't take it lying down.

“Let's fight then, you think I'm afraid of you?”

The two old fellows who were still like little children even after living for thousands of years, walked out, noisily bickering. Their figure became smaller and smaller.

When Xue Tan Lang saw Ye Kong and Fatty Hai, he nodded quietly, as he felt that these two people were truly quite alike like the two old seniors. It was just that their abilities were far weaker.

Yue Yang saw that everyone was still there, and he waved his hands, “Go, go, go. We have finished the battle. If you have girls go to your girls, if you don't, train your martial art skills. Everyone leave this place, I really want to rest. Don't stay here and hinder my happy time.”

When Fatty Hai heard this, he immediately whined out, “Hey, hey! Are you really going to be like this? Where is your sense of brotherhood? We all worked so hard to finally win the battle, how could you not introduce us to some Sea Clan girls? Are you going to just drive us all away like this and hog all the beautiful girls? This won’t do, you have to introduce us to beautiful Sea Clan girls today no matter what, otherwise I won’t leave.”

Yue Yang didn’t even bother to look at him, “Then stay, I’ll introduce to to eight-handed octopus girl. Please have little octopus children in the future.”

“Octopus? Ne-never mind then...” Fatty Hai felt that humans were still better, octopus girls were a little out of his comfort zone. Furthermore, with so many hands, wouldn’t he be out of breath if she hugged him? That would be a big problem!

“Tsk!” Ye Kong had already known that Fatty Hai was perverted but had no guts to pursue his sexual urges. He gave him a middle finger and looked at him in disdain.

Chapter 593 – You Can't Obtain Happiness By Waiting

Everyone respectfully bowed to Yue Yang, then left quietly.

Including Elder Nan Gong.

He nodded towards Yue Yang and smiled slightly, then strode away with a peace of mind. The expression on his face was as if it was the first time in his life that he felt this happy. He had watched Yue Yang grow gradually to become the new generation of Prison Emperor. Compared to Feng Zhu and Bei Feng Jia Suo, he was also a guard who protected the Tong Tian Tower without rest for eternity. With the appearance of Yue Yang who was so successful, he was naturally happy.

“It’s still early now. Let’s wait for him to grow stronger first, then I will tell him all the secrets!” Elder Nan Gong softly mumbled, as he turned back and saw Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia hugging Yue Yang tightly.

Elder Xing Pan, Countess of Jie Wei, Count Yan and all the other Sea Clan Knights were all kneeling on the ground, paying respect to Yue Yang, then bowed to Hai Ying Wu.

Then, they left one by one.

They have acknowledged Hai Ying Wu to be the new generation of Empress of the Boundless Ocean. Of course, before this, they

understood that behind the Ocean Empress' back, there was the backing of the new Prison Emperor. With the two of them, the Sea Clan would be revived anew and rise quickly, just like what the Empress Jellyfish had envisioned. As subordinates, they only need to do their own jobs properly, there was no need for them to do extra.

Yue Yang felt very tired and couldn't wait to return to his Grimoire World to rest.

When Princess Qian Qian returned, she said to Hai Ying Wu who was waiting, "Come now, right now it doesn't matter if there is an additional person anymore!"

When Hai Ying Wu heard this, she immediately became overjoyed, but she still looked nervously at Xue Wu Xia. She knew that amongst all Yue Yang's wives, Luo Hua City mistress, Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia, were the only wives that held authority. The sickly beauty was very gentle in disposition, Yi Nan was still young, and as for Sky Law, the new Elder, she didn't care about anyone at all.

If Xue Wu Xia didn't agree, Hai Ying Wu did not dare to enter the Grimoire World.

She knew that Xue Wu Xia's position in Yue Yang's heart was the most important one, even slightly more than Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress.

"..." Xue Wu Xia looked at Hai Ying Wu and did not speak.

“Thank you, ma’ams.” Hai Ying Wu was a clever girl, she knew that Xue Wu Xia meant acquiescence when she did not speak. Hai Ying Wu was so happy that she almost started dancing. She quickly declared to Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia that she would not dare to ask for the status of Yue Yang’s wife. She just wanted a lower status, just like the half-elf girl, she was willing to acknowledge her status as slave. Furthermore, in Hai Ying Wu’s heart, it was better to be Yue Yang’s slave than become the Ocean Empress.

Look at the half-elf girl, how happy was her life? She would either draw, create Yue Yang’s clothes, or cook for Yue Yang every day.

Although both of them met Yue Yang at Tong Tian Tower around the same time, that childish looking half-elf girl with huge breasts had already succeeded inserting herself into his life.

As for herself, she still needed to ask permission.

This was the difference in their status.

Together, they entered the Grimoire World. This was the first time for Hai Ying Wu to enter Yue Yang’s Grimoire World.

She marveled at the beauty of this Grimoire World, and at the same time, was extremely shocked at the structures in this place. With her eyes, she was able to see that all of the buildings were handcrafted one by one by someone. Each building or area was

designed from different architect, there were buildings with simple, gorgeous, delicate and even minimalistic design... Not only his wives, there were also residences constructed for his beasts. Hai Ying Wu naturally hoped that she could enter this place and become one of their members.

Not only for today, but she already had this hope for a long time.

“Sister Hai Ying Wu is here! I’m very happy!” The first one to welcome Hai Ying Wu was the half-elf girl.

Although she did not possess any fighting power, Yue Yang would borrow some of the half-elf girl’s special skills at times, for example the Scent Recognition Inherent Skill or her heart senses. Half-elf girl’s usefulness to Yue Yang was no less inferior to Liu Ye who possessed the Perforate Deer and Purification Inherent Skill. It’s just that half-elf girl did not possess any fighting capabilities, so she could only help Yue Yang sometimes.

Hai Ying Wu emotionally hugged the cute half-elf girl back, “Call me Hai Lan! My mother gave me that name. Although nobody knows about it, my true name is Hai Lan. Hai Ying Wu is just a codename that the Sea Clan gave me! Here, you can call me Hai Lan...”

Half-elf girl nodded her head seriously, telling her that she has remembered it.

Suddenly, she thought of a thing.

She panickedly lifted up her maid skirt and strive to run as fast as possible, wailing adorably, “Oh no, I forgot to prepare mouth rinsing water for master, master. Master shouldn’t use the face washing water for mouth rinsing water!” As she stepped onto the stairs, she almost tripped as she was in a hurry. Fortunately Yue Yang managed to catch her in time as he comforted her with a smile, “Don’t worry, I will not drink it... Why don’t you prepare a cup of water for me? I’m really thirsty.”

Half-elf girl’s face turned red with embarrassment as she quickly ran to the kitchen, disappearing in an instant.

That was her little domain, other than Yue Yu and the sickly beauty who would sometimes go in. Other people wouldn’t go there usually, for example, Luo Hua City Mistress, Princess Qian Qian, Phoenix Fairy Beauty and the other would wait for food to be cooked instead.

Hai Ying Wu quickly chased after her and prepared something for Yue Yang to eat and drink together with the half-elf girl.

In the Thunder Fortress previously, Hai Ying Wu had never showed off her cooking skills.

In reality, she was actually an expert.

Since she was very young, her mother who was disguised as a slave, her mother, the Jellyfish Empress who wasn’t able to hear her own daughter call her mother even at her death, had taught her something before, “As a woman, if you want to capture a man’s

heart, you have to first fill his stomach...

Inside the house, Yue Yang stripped Princess Qian Qian naked and healed her wounds with his Innate Qi.

Xue Wu Xia pretended as if she didn't see anything as she expertly helped to clean Yue Yang's wounds and bandaged them. Other than allowing Yue Yang to heal her wounds, Princess Qian Qian also helped Xue Wu Xia. For example, after Xue Wu Xia finished wrapping Yue Yang's wounds, she would tie a cute ribbon knot. The three of them work together as one. Maybe they were shy at the start, but after going through so many battles, the three of them had managed to not think of distracting things. They only want to use their best skills to heal the others' injuries. Furthermore, inside the Grimoire World, there was no outsiders. They were free to do anything they wanted, there was no need to feel uncomfortable

Hai Ying Wu stood rather speechlessly in front of the door, carrying a plate of warm food.

She had not managed to blend in fully, so she was at a loss of what to do in this situation.

She didn't know if she should interrupt them.

However, the half-elf girl was different, she didn't have any hesitation as she quickly walked forward and helped. When Yue Yang was healing Xue Wu Xia's inner injuries, she immediately took over Xue Wu Xia's wound-cleaning and bandaging work,

allowing the exhausted Princess Qian Qian to rest.

When Hai Ying Wu saw this, her eyes blinked with revelation as her heart came into a realisation.

They rested for three days.

In the Meteorite Island in Boundless Ocean, Tong Tian Tower Tenth Floor.

Today, the Sea Clan unrest finally came to an end, and they welcomed the new Ocean Empress.

Under the support of the two Abyss Manatees and the witness of Elder Nan Gong of the Innate Alliance and the Underworld Emperor of the Darkness Continent, Hai Ying Wu whose real name was Hai Lan was officially crowned as the Ocean Empress. In the whole crowning process, Yue Yang didn't participate directly, he only watched quietly from afar, quietly observing as she became Ocean Empress. Actually, everyone knew that the reason why the new Ocean Empress could smoothly rise was hugely because of this Yue Clan third young master... Another reason was also because the new Ocean Empress' mother, Empress Jellyfish, had schemed for a thousand years in order to revive the Sea Clan and her daughter. She did not even hesitate to sacrifice her own life for it.

After congratulations from ambassadors and worships from the officials, the Sea Clan broke into celebrations.

The new Ocean Empress had ascended the throne. There was a new hope for the revival of the Sea Clan.

Afterwards, Shark King, Elder Xing Pan, Countess Jie Wei and Marquis Yan led their subordinates and retreated like waves. The Meteorite Palace was only left with Yue Yang and Hai Ying Wu.

Hai Ying Wu who was sitting on her throne with a serious expression just a moment ago suddenly stood up and released the Ocean Empress Halberd in her hands. She ran towards Yue Yang.

With tear-stricken face, she jumped into his embrace.

Compared to the Ocean Empress throne, she would rather stay in his embrace.

However, unable to reject her mother's last will and the Sea Clan's hopes, she had no other choice but to stand firm and became the new Ocean Empress, to lead the whole clan to recovery and advancement. Of course, this would benefit Yue Yang, because he was the new Prison Emperor, so he would need more people to help protect the Tong Tian Tower.

"Sit, please sit here..." Hai Ying Wu led Yue Yang to the Ocean Emperor's throne and asked him to sit. She, on the other hand, knelt on the ground in front of him respectfully. She pulled his hand and kissed his fingers, "That day, you said that you would make me the new Ocean Empress. I have become the Ocean Empress now. It was you who have given everything I have today. You have seen me crying, take pity on my pleas, and fulfilled my

wishes. You have given me all these things that I could only dream about... Did you remember? That day, I have also promised you that I will do everything in my power to repay you... With my love, with my whole being, with all my abilities, with all my wisdom, with all my loyalty, with my everything...”

“Are you sure? I won’t be able to stay here to accompany you!” Yue Yang reached out and propped her chin slowly, gently wiping the tears that were rolling down her cheeks.

“I would rather stay in the Grimoire World and serve you everyday. I never hoped to become the Ocean Emperor. If only I hadn’t become the Ocean Emperor and was able to give my all to help you. I was never interested in that position.” Hai Ying Wu sobbed as she shook her head, “This is not what I want. The thing I want the most is to live inside that warm Grimoire World, waiting for you to come back peacefully.”

“There was also that thing before...” Yue Yang remembered that he had pretended to become a perverted butler to tease her before. Now that she had seen the Dragon Girl Jiang Ying, she definitely knew what was going on.

“At that time, it was true that I was very angry. But when I knew it was you, I thought that it was very funny. Thinking back, it was really a marvel. Maybe that was fate! Because of that incident, our lives became entangled into one. Although it was a little weird, it was our unique experience together. I would definitely remember that memory forever.” As she spoke, Hai Ying Wu slowly took off her empress clothings, then her silk underwear, revealing her breathtaking, perfect body.

“This is your Ocean Empress Throne!” Yue Yang’s heartbeat escalated. He felt a kind of excitement, like he was having a clandestine love affair. His passion roared but he was a little afraid of being seen by other people.

“Inside the Grimoire World, everyone is there. I don’t feel very comfortable there! This Meteorite Palace, this Ocean Emperor Hall, this throne, they belonged solely to us. Please allow Hai Lan to offer everything to you here! Although this is my first time, Hai Lan has secretly watched other mistresses doing it before, many times. If my service is not comfortable for you, please let me know anytime. Hai Lan will definitely work on that. My love, I want to give you the best, because that is how much I love you...”

Hai Ying Wu’s eyes slowly become blurry.

As if she was drunk, and dazed.

She suppressed the embarrassment in her heart as she reached out her hands bravely, gently taking off her lover’s clothes.

Since she loved him so much, she would offer him her everything. As a girl, this was her first trial. She must learn fast and become an expert in the future, so that her man could be satisfied. Only then would he be able to feel happiness and satisfaction.

You couldn’t obtain happiness by waiting for the heavens to give it to you, you have to obtain it through your own effort!

Chapter 594 – Secret, The Mysterious Past

Yue Clan Castle.

Yue Yu would usually visit her father when she returned. Although there were subordinates taking care of her father, Yue Yu still wanted to use her own Beast to heal her father.

“Cough, cough!” Yue Shan’s sickness was on and off, sometimes it gets better, sometimes it gets worse.

There was a period of time he could get out of bed and walk about, as if he was about to completely recover. Unexpectedly, in just a few days, Yue Shan’s injuries turned worse, and he became bedridden. He even lost his consciousness and wits, becoming unable to recognise the servants at his side. With great difficulty, he could only recognise his own daughter and father, and he looked like he was about to die. Yue Yu really couldn’t understand, why was he like that?

With her current healing abilities, she could heal any injuries, no matter how serious it was.

Why did father’s injuries relapse again and again, and more serious each time?

What was the cause of this?

Yue Yu wanted to wait for Yue Yang to return and take a look at

Yue Shan. He would definitely be able to find the root cause of the illness.

“You came? Come, sit down.” Yue Shan very rarely had a conversation with Yue Yu. He would usually only nod when he saw his daughter, he almost never spoke to her. Today, his condition was quite good. It seemed that he wanted to have a chat with his daughter. “Sit here. I’m fine, you don’t have to cure me anymore. I know my own body best, I won’t die for the time being, but I won’t be cured.... How’s your third brother doing? Did he win?”

“Yeah.” Yue Yu nodded. Usually, her father very rarely cared about Yue Yang, what happened to him today? She sat down in front of his bed feeling a little astonished. As she ordered the servants to open up the windows to allow air circulation, she poured a cup of water for her father, “Yue Yang is still in the tenth floor of Tong Tian Tower now. Hai Ying Wu ascended the throne as the new Ocean Empress, he had to stay to attend the ceremony.”

“That young lady seems to be quite weak. Will she be alright becoming the new Ocean Empress?” Yue Shan heard about Hai Ying Wu from Yue Yu before, but he didn’t have a deep impression on her.

“It’s like this. Her birth mother was actually Empress Jellyfish...” Yue Yu told her father about Empress Jellyfish’s thousand-year-old scheme. When Yue Shan heard this, he muttered to himself for a long time before nodding in praise, “What an amazing woman that Empress Jellyfish is. It’s a pity that she is a woman, otherwise she would definitely surpass Ocean Emperor Guan Lan. Although there are many capable people in Tong Tian Tower, an excellent person

like Empress Jellyfish is really very rare, very rare. Thousand Goblin King has died, Black Hell King is gravely injured, and Scarlet Emperor has escaped to Heaven Realm. Tong Tian Tower should be peaceful for a while. Yu'er, I have a question that I wanted to ask you since long ago. You, have you thought about your future?"

"What future?" Yue Yu was confused. Did she need to be worried about her future? Right now, the Yue Clan's position was at the top, and their name was well known all over the Tong Tian Tower. She wouldn't be bullied by anyone anymore. Furthermore, she didn't have any intention to fight for power, she only wanted to go through life peacefully.

"..." Yue Shan was silent for a while, then suddenly said, "Yu'er, think about this for a while. It's really not good if you don't have anyone to take care of you in the future."

Yue Yu was extremely shocked. Could it be that her father had actually seen through her heart?

Was it that obvious?

Her voice was a little hesitant and denying as she said, "Oh, so you are talking about this. Since the Xue Clan had withdrawn their marriage proposal, my heart has become indifferent. I don't want to think about that stuff for the time being. There are many single female warriors in the world, like Zhi Zun, Night Empress, Sky Law, Sky Calamity, and many, many others. They all remained single in order to pursue their martial art cultivation."

Yue Shan shook his head slowly, “Yu’er, you have a gentle, kind and sweet personality, you are not the type of person who would want to pursue martial art cultivation. That kind of loneliness is not something that normal people can endure. In the future, if I’m not around anymore, and if your grandfather and uncles have all passed away, your brothers and sisters have all married and have their own families, you will be all alone. That will be very miserable. If there is someone there to take care of you, even if I’m gone, I will also feel relieved.”

Yue Yu quickly waved her hands, “You are still fine, why would you say such ominous things? With Yue Yang around, everyone would at least live for a thousand years, don’t worry about these life and death things... Even if everyone have their own families, I’m still a part of the Yue Clan. If it is not convenient for me to stay at others’ place, I can still stay at Yue Yang’s. Qian Qian, Luo Hua and the others are all very nice to me. You don’t have to worry about my late years or things like that. These are all things that are very far in the future. You should concentrate on recovering from your illness now. Don’t worry about me, I can take care of myself. In two days, when Yue Yang returns, I will ask him to look at your illness. Maybe you can be cured immediately.”

Yue Shan revealed a bitter smile.

As if he wanted to say, “No need.”

But he didn’t want to brush off his daughter’s kind thoughts, so he didn’t say it out loud. When Yue Yu stood up and was about to walk out of the door, Yue Shan softly called out to her again,

“Yu’er, wait.”

“?” Yue Yu turned around. What else did her father want to say?

“That ‘Golden Rune Locked Talisman’ that your mother left you, do you still have it?” Yue Shan asked.

“I do, do you want to see it?” Yue Yu had been wearing the Golden Rune Locked Talisman since young. Originally, it was an object to give her blessings. As her mother died young, Yue Yu always wore the talisman on her body as her mother’s keepsake. When Yue Shan asked about it today, Yue Yu had initially thought that her father was missing her mother and wanted to see her keepsake.

“No, you keep it, keep it properly.” Yue Shan shook his hand and paused for a while, then added, “Actually, your Golden Rune Locked Talisman is actually a pair. The other one...”

“Yes?” Yue Yu saw that Yue Shan seemed to be hiding something. She couldn’t help but feel suspicious. Could it be that there was some kind of secret related to the Golden Rune Locked Talisman?

“It was a pair. There is another one, which should be in your younger twin sister’s possession.” When Yue Shan said this, Yue Yu had the shock of her life.

“Mother did not only give birth to me?” Yue Yu couldn’t help but shout in surprise.

“Actually, it is like this... That year, we were in the midst of a battle. Your mother and I, together with two other comrades, were counter attacking the Demon Abyss invasion. We were surrounded and were trapped inside a mountain cave. Your mother had an early birth and couldn’t help but give birth to you and your younger sister inside the mountain cave. Miraculously, when you two came into the world, the whole battlefield was enveloped in a pure light. The demon soldiers were greatly weakened, so much that even the Demon Commanders and Demon Generals surrounding us quickly withdrew from the battlefield. It was also because of this that your mother and I were able to escape with you.” Yue Shan explained. “Then what about my sister?” Yue Yu asked impatiently. She remembered that since young, no one had told her that she had a sister.

“Your sister... As we were trapped in a critical situation at that time, my two comrades had taken your sister to escape in another direction. When the turbulent war situation settled down many months later, your mother and I wanted to look for your sister, but we couldn’t find her anymore. Those two comrades at that time, they should have already passed away. However, your sister should still be alive, because the Golden Rune Locked Talisman that you have been wearing since young did not break all this while. This proves that your sister is still alive. It’s just that there are too many people in this world, so we couldn’t find her anymore.” Yue Shan sighed slowly.

“I will definitely find my sister. Other than the similar Golden Rune Locked Talisman, what kind of distinctive feature does my sister have?” Yue Yu asked anxiously.

“We have been separated since young, so I don’t know too.” Yue Shan paused slightly, then suddenly warned Yue Yu, “Yu’er, about your sister, although I have already told you about her, remember not to look for her openly, so as to avoid our enemies knowing about this. Your sister is very lucky, she will definitely have the chance to return to the Yue Clan. You don’t have to worry about her.”

“I understand. Father, I will definitely look for her secretly. What are the names of those two comrades of yours?” Yue Yu asked.

“We acquainted with each other from the battleground, so we don’t know their names at that time.” Yue Shan hung his head down when he said this.

Yue Yu was afraid that her father would be sad, so she stopped asking.

However, her heart was filled with doubts.

If they were fellow soldiers whom her father didn’t know, how could he trust them? It was fine if they ended up fighting together, but why would he even entrust her sister to them? Could it be that the situation was that dangerous at that time?

Another doubt was that Yue Yu knew that her father had been held captive by their enemies before.

He was even dragged into the Demon Abyss, until a Demon Abyss Countess helped him, allowing him to escape alive.

The two warriors that her father spoke about, could it be that Demon Abyss Countess? It was not convenient for him to mention the Demon Abyss Countess' name, was that the reason why her father said the excuse of not knowing them? Could it be that her sister was really entrusted to the Demon Abyss Countess? If that were so, her sister was actually inside Demon Abyss? That was not quite right too. If it were last time, maybe there was that possibility. However, after Yue Yang emerged and became so powerful without rival, even the Great Demon King Baruth had to show him manners. If her sister was really at the Demon Abyss, as long as Yue Yang asked, how could the Demon Abyss not let her sister return?

Or maybe there was some kind of secret?

Yue Yu became even more confused the more she thought.

She didn't pay attention to her steps, and she almost tripped over the door. Fortunately her reaction was quick and she managed to regain her footing.

Fifth Grandfather who just happened to walk by laughed out loud, "Girl, what have you been thinking? Why are you so out of it? Your third brother will be returning tomorrow, you don't have to worry about him!"

Yue Yu quickly bowed in respect, then explained to him that she

was not worrying about Yue Yang. When Fifth Grandfather was about to leave, she suddenly remembered something about her sister and asked, “Fifth Grandfather, when the Demon Abyss invaded us last time, was I really born in the midst of the bloody battlefield? Wasn’t I born in the Yue Clan Castle?”

Fifth Grandfather’s long beard twitched a little as he shook his head in disagreement, “What do you mean? The one that was born in the battlefield is not you!”

Yue Yu was completely speechless when she heard this.

Fifth Grandfather knew that he had misspoke, he quickly tried to salvage the situation, “Girl, actually, at that time, you were born inside the Yue Clan Castle. However, the Yue Clan Castle was a battlefield at that time. It was a Demon Abyss invasion after all, the battle was extremely intense. Did someone tell you weird things? Those are not true, you are definitely born in the Yue Clan Castle. You are the Yue Clan second mistress, and you are my obedient granddaughter. Who dared to say you are not? Girl, don’t think too much. There are many gossips outside, you shouldn’t believe in them. Remember, you are forever going to be a part of the Yue Clan!”

His words made Yue Yu froze in shock.

Her life story should have been very ordinary and simple, when did it get so mysterious?

What actually happened at that time, that everyone felt that

there was a need to hide it from her? Father and Fifth Grandfather's words, which one was the truth and which one was the lie?

"Ah, thank you Fifth Grandfather. I shall go back now." Yue Yu didn't dare to ask more. Furthermore, she had already raised her Fifth Grandfather's vigilance, he probably wouldn't reveal anything much.

"Girl, don't think too much. Just live well with Yue Yang! We, the elders, are already old. You are the Yue Clan's hope. With Yue Yang's crabby temperament, the clan can only rely on you and A'Xian. You must take care of him and make sure that he does not walk the wrong path, since his father is gone. We, old people, were in deep sorrow, but luckily, Yue Yang still worked hard for the clan, or else we would have lost face when we meet with our ancestors after death!" Fifth Grandfather was afraid that Yue Yu might take things too hard so he warned: "Girl, don't think about it too much. Don't pay attention to outsider's words. You are you and no one can replace that. If anybody bullies you, come find me. Your fifth grandfather will stick out for you. If anybody makes thoughtless remarks, then I will risk my life to fight them! Oh right, your third brother's temper is bad, so don't tell him about other people's nonsense. All of those are nonsense!"

"I understand, Fifth Grandfather please rest easy, I won't tell Yue Yang about this." Yue Yu became even more alarmed when she heard that. She hurriedly said goodbye and left.

"Sigh... this child, what a hard life she has!" Fifth Grandfather suddenly gave out a long sigh as he watched Yue Yu's figure

retreating further and further away.

Chapter 595 – Gu Feng Continent Secret Door: Where Does It Lead To?

Although Hai Ying Wu couldn't bear to leave Yue Yang, she must stay and restore the Sea Clan.

For the next few years, she would be very busy.

With the power her father had transferred to her and the Holy-ranked Weapon, together with her mother's plans and clan support, and also Yue Yang's support, Hai Ying Wu's job as the Ocean Empress was easier than she initially thought. Previously, she had prepared her heart to undertake an extremely difficult and burdensome job. However, most of the Sea Clans had currently recognised her as the new Ocean Empress. Let alone Hai Ying Wu, even the two Abyss Manatees' who were Yue Yang's slaves previously were regarded as the new Guardian Gods by the Sea Clan...

"I will do my best! I will first become a successful Ocean Empress, when things here have settled down, I will become a successful wife who can take care of you everyday!" Hai Ying Wu's tears rolled down as she kissed Yue Yang emotionally. It was time for them to part. Even if her subordinates were watching her, she wouldn't care about them.

"Cough cough!" Actually, Countess Jie Wei, Countess Yan, Elder Xing Pan, Shark King and all other Sea Clan warriors had all known about Hai Ying Wu's intimate relationship with Yue Yang.

Forget about people who can see, even blind people wouldn't be able to tell.

Towards Hai Ying Wu's passionate action of kissing Yue Yang in public, they turned their heads and pretended not to see anything.

To the Sea Clan, the joining of Yue Yang and Hai Ying Wu was the best outcome they could hope for.

The Yue Clan third young master is definitely the best candidate for a husband. Maybe, right now was not a very good time for the Sea Clan to announce this marriage. But the matter of the two people getting together was a good thing, be it for the the Soaring Dragon Continent on the first floor of Tong Tian Tower or for the Boundless Ocean on the tenth floor of the Tong Tian Tower. They were two completely different groups of people, but because of the marriage between the two most important people from the respective places, these two groups of people have been firmly bonded together and become a trustworthy alliance.

The Soaring Dragon Continent had the most talents and also the most outstanding youth of them all, the Yue Clan's third young master.

The Sea Clan possessed the most prosperous ocean, vast lands, and the Ocean Empress, who would be the perfect wife for Yue Clan third young master... The strong alliance would definitely lead to better growth in Tong Tian Tower in the future.

After leaving the Boundless Ocean, Yue Yang returned to the

Thunder Fortress in the Sixth Floor.

He was welcomed by a wave of congratulatory wishes.

All the slaves, servants and guards were very proud of their master's miraculous performance. They had already known that little Titan was actually Yue Clan's third young master. The Titan Corp's CEO, fat frog Jia De, had already become the most important figure in the sixth floor of Tong Tian Tower. Even Innates would show respect to him when they met him. Those who looked down on him last time came in waves and apologized to him deeply, afraid that this fat toad would hold grudges. Ofcourse, all the glory he was enjoying was because of Yue Yang's splendid performance. He had come back alive from the Death Battle Arena, wreck havoc in the Heaven Realm, defeat Heaven Realm warriors and even captured Abyss Manatees from the Heaven Realm. Then, he journeyed to the Boundless Ocean, stopped the Sea Clan rebellion and helped Emperor Guan Lan's daughter, Hai Ying Wu, to ascend the throne, all by himself...

Through some gossips, the third master of the Yue Clan even killed a three thousand years old warrior, Thousand Goblin King.

Facing against such powerful display of power, no one in Tong Tian Tower wouldn't bow in respect.

Hence, the fat toad Jia De was also respected by everyone, even though he was just the Yue Clan third young master's subordinate, someone who helped him run errands.

“Where is Xia Yi?” Yue Yang realised that the things in the Thunder Fortress looked normal, only that girl Xia Yi who always picked a fight with him was missing. Yue Yang immediately felt something was missing from his heart.

“Miss Xia Yi is still in the Gu Feng Continent. She has sent a letter a few weeks ago, but that letter is still with the Xia Brothers... Xia Brothers didn’t know that master is returning home, they have gone to Silver Leaf City to sign a contract today. It is almost time for them to come back, let me check that!” Jia De really wished he could grow wings and capture the Xia Brothers back from the Silver LEaf City. Actually, the Xia Brothers didn’t need to go out for business today originally, but Jia De had an urgent appointment at the last minute, hence Butler Yan Zheng had sent out the Li Brothers instead.

“It’s okay, I think the content of the letter would be nothing of importance.” Yue Yang waved his hand, showing that he wasn’t interested.

If Xia Yi was in danger, the Xia Brothers would definitely be anxious.

If they still have the leisure to go to Silver Leaf City for a business trip, this means that Xia Yi was very safe.

Octopus Boss and Swordfish-man Ji Feng had returned a long time ago. To them, Boundless Ocean was not as fun as Soaring Dragon Continent. They were originally human innates after all. It was just that after becoming a fishmen, they still liked to live on land, as it was in their bones. They didn’t have a place to return to

in the Sea Clan, but they led a good life in the Thunder Fortress. All the servants here respected them very much, they would even worship them everyday. Furthermore, they had also fought to protect this place before, hence they have developed feelings for this place and kind of make it their second hometown. The other reason was that they were sworn enemies with the Sea Clan.

Although they did not broach the subject anymore and their relationship had turned into an alliance, they still felt a little awkward.

“If you are busy, go ahead and do your stuff. We these elderlies have our own hands and legs, we can drink and eat ourselves. You don’t have to care about us. Just remember to invite us over to the Heaven Realm when you have marked your territory there.” The Octopus Boss laughed out loud.

“...!!” The talkative Mudskipper Fishman Sui Zui wanted to speak, but the Swordfish-man Ji Feng firmly covered his mouth to prevent him from speaking, making him so angry that he kept trying to struggle free.

“This time, I’m treating you guys to this Ancient Demon’s blood.” Yue Yang tossed them a Runic Silver Bottle containing the Ancient Demon’s blood, which was caught by the Mudskipper Fishman Sui Zui, who was nearby and quick. When he opened the bottle, the magma-hot Ancient Demon Blood almost burnt through his whole skin. Utterly shocked, he quickly closed the bottle again, screaming in panic as he passed the bottle to Swordfish-man Ji Feng.

“Go and get some strong wine with ice. Without the strong wine to dilute this Ancient Demon Blood, with your current abilities, you would probably never be able to drink it!” Swordfish-man Ji Feng sent a kick to Mudskipper Fishman Sui Zui’s butt.

“This is good stuff!” Whale Fishman Zhang gave Yue Yan a thumbs up.

With their current abilities, they would probably not be able to acquire this Ancient Demon’s Blood in their lifetime.

Right now, even the weak fat toad Jia De was holding an iced ‘Bloody Wine’ in his hands... They were servants who were below the Innate level, of course they wouldn’t dare to drink ‘Bloody Wine’ that would cause them to change into a Fishman Variant. They poured ten buckets of wine onto a big water container, then added a huge amount of ice. Lastly, they added just a single drop of Ancient Demon’s Blood. Even then, they felt like their body was about to burst, as if they were engulfed in fire. Fat toad Jia De had only drank a sip, but he actually spat out fire from his throat in the next instant. His expression was filled with both satisfaction and shock as he said, “I could actually spit fire, oh my god, I thought I was gonna die just now! This is too scary, too scary. This good stuff, how much are we going to sell it for? 50 gold per cup? No, I definitely won’t sell it below 500 gold!”

The old-fashioned butler Yan Zheng also revealed his rarely-seen smile.

Yue Yang didn’t stay in the Thunder Fortress for long. With the Xia Brothers as his guide, he made his way to the Gu Feng

Continent.

Gu Feng Continent.

It was a world that resembled the Soaring Dragon Continent. The land was mostly dominated by humans, but there was also some gnomes and demi-humans. When the demons invaded during the Demon Invasion last time, they brought gnomes and demi-humans as slaves. They were the descendants of those slaves. All the intelligent species from the Demon Abyss that came during the Demon Invasion had taken dominance in this place. They either become a king of a small kingdom or become the lord of a certain region. There were very few human Lords.

From the entrance of the continent, to the Great Hall and the teleportation portal, they were all managed by the Demon Abyss Priests.

Towards normal warriors, their attitude were not very good.

However, towards the three guests who were at least at Level 7, they didn't dare to mistreat them at all, especially Yue Yang, who was sitting in between the two Xia Brothers. His level was not something that the Demon Abyss Priests could pry on. In their eyes, Yue Yang was without a doubt an Innate Ranker at least.

“My lord, we welcome you to the Gu Feng Continent.” Those few Demon Abyss Priests bowed respectfully towards Yue Yang.

Fortunately Yue Yang covered his face with a mask, otherwise, if these Priests found out that the person in front of them was Yue Clan's third young master, their heart would probably jump out of their mouth from shock.

The Xia Brothers were returning to their hometown to fetch their mother and relatives, so that they could live with them in the Thunder Fortress.

Yue Yang searched for Xia Yi, who was still secretly scouting on the Black Hell Army's news. According to the contents of the letter, that girl had managed to found out different reports about the Black Hell Army. For example, she had found out the location of the Black Hell Army's secret base, and also the open period of an Ancient Teleportation Portal. She had researched them very carefully and completed her mission, but she had discovered some kind of special, important report, so she had not returned to the Thunder Fortress and stayed behind to continue observing the situation.

As Yue Yang was worried about the safety of the great miss Xia Yi who always liked to make things difficult for him, Yue Yang decided to fetch her personally.

Although her reports were important, her little life was more important.

Black Hell King was hiding at a secret place, it would be really bad if he managed to catch her.

Of course, this possibility was very small. Black Hell King wouldn't even bother to do anything to Xia Yi. If Black Hell King wanted to kidnap someone, he would kidnap people from the Yue Clan castle... It was just that, there was a very small possibility of that happening, and Yue Yang didn't want any tragedy to happen.

"Teleportation Portal?" Yue Yang followed the map that Xia Yi left behind, and after walking for half a day, he reached a place that looked like an abandoned teleportation portal.

This was one of the important signs that Xia Yi had marked on her letter.

If it were others, they would never be able to find such a desolate place. Even if they discovered the teleportation portal, they wouldn't care about it, because it looked like it had been abandoned long ago. However, through Yue Yang's Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, he saw something about this teleportation portal. He saw that this teleportation portal had been used recently. Furthermore, it was more than once.

Where does it lead to?

On the fourth floor of the Tong Tian Tower, there was also a similar-looking abandoned teleportation portal.

That teleportation portal had led to a very mysterious place. In there, there was the Golden Barrier that Yue Yang was unable to enter, and a Divine Grimoire without an owner. This teleportation portal in Gu Feng Continent, could it also lead to a similarly

mysterious place? Could it be that there was a second Divine Grimoire? Or maybe, this was the Black Hell King's secret base, his last sanctuary?

There was also another possibility; It could also be an entrance into the God's Ruin.

Although Xia Yi liked to make things difficult for him, she knew his orders well. She wouldn't do impulsive things, so she must have a special reason when she decided to stay. Most importantly, he had a feeling that like the Gu Feng Continent's teleportation portal, the ancient teleportation portal in Ao Jia Continent and other continents, especially this kind of ruined teleportation portals that looked like they had been abandoned for a long time, have something strange about them.

Maybe it was something that Black Hell King had been making use of. Because of this suspicions, Yue Yang had ordered Xia Yi to investigate them.

Now it looked like the suspicions in his heart was right.

"Damn that thief. If I manage to catch that cunning fellow, I will definitely skin him alive! He is really too evil, he is simply like a ghost that continued to haunt us. If this goes on and we still can't find that treasure, I am really going to go mad." On the valley outside the teleportation portal, a group of warriors Level 4 Hero and above suddenly appeared, walking towards Yue Yang. Just as they were walking past Yue Yang, who was hiding his presence, one of the men whose face was full of fats grumbled continuously.

“Who don’t love treasures? That fellow was high-levelled and quick, if we didn’t use tricks, it will be difficult to catch her.” A skinny man spat out a mouthful of saliva.

“When we capture him, that thief’s head is mine! You can leave me out on the treasure distribution, but that thief is mine, and she must be alive. What do you know, that thief is actually a girl. Although she dressed up as a thief, I could tell that she was a beauty with one look! She has such slender waist and long legs, that body is definitely not a man’s!” A fat man drooled as he said this.

“That doesn’t mean she is a beauty. You didn’t see her face, so no one can guarantee that.” Another person refuted.

“That’s enough, we reached the destination already. Lord Mo Long is arriving soon, everyone shut your mouths. Don’t ever mention ‘thief’ or anything else to Lord Mo Long. Forget about that thief, I don’t care if he’s a he or she, just forget about that thief. You guys are all here to look for treasures, not to look for girls! Furthermore, that thief doesn’t have the key to open the door, the ‘Golden Key’. She would never be able to enter the teleportation door with us. We don’t have to care about her at all!” A tall and sturdy man took out precious stones from his bag and carefully placed them on the area directly opposite the teleportation portal.

The teleportation portal immediately shone with shining light. What shocked Yue Yang was that the light actually started turning into a shining building.

It was like a small fort.

At the front of the shining building, there was a shining door that was shaped by interlocking runes...

Incredible, where does this door lead to? Forget about Xia Yi, even Yue Yang curious now. He couldn't wait to enter the door and see mountains of treasures. How could he go home empty handed!

Chapter 596 – Apple or Egg?

After Yue Yang waited for another ten minutes, an Innate Level 1 Demon Abyss Lord arrived.

Amongst the thirty plus people, the strongest one was only Level 7. Now, Yue Yang understood a little why Xia Yi dared to follow this group of people. That was because she had confidence that even if she couldn't defeat these enemies, she would still be able to escape.

“How strange.” Yue Yang planned to kill everyone initially, snatch the Golden Key and enter the door to search for treasures personally. However, when he saw that the enemies were so weak, he couldn't help but feel suspicious. There was no reason for someone like Lord Mo Long to be able to possess such an important Golden Key. Even if it was in his possession, without a strong Ranker backing him up, how could the likes of this Lord Mo Long search for the treasure?

With just the abilities of these group of people, whose highest level was only Level 7? Wasn't this just simply a joke?

Harboring his suspicions, Yue Yang slowly waited.

Lord Mo Long was extremely cautious. Before he took out the Golden Key to open the shining secret door, he first ordered his subordinates to keep a lookout on the surrounding.

If it were another person, they would have already noticed it.

But, Yue Yang's secret skill of hiding his presence was secretly learnt from the super assassin An Xi. An Xi's presence concealing skill was so high levelled that even Ocean Emperor Guan Lan was unable to detect it. Even if Yue Yang couldn't master An Xi's skill completely, fooling a bunch of warriors who were not even Innate-ranked was an easy feat for him. Forget about these people, if Yue Yang was really serious on hiding his presence, together with his Counterfeit Inherent Skill, even Innate Level 10 or Supreme Innates would probably not be able to detect him. Yue Yang was actually hiding right under these people's noses, he was less than 20 meters away from them. However, they were unable to detect him at all.

After his subordinates finished searching around, Lord Mo Long finally felt safe to take out the shining Golden Key.

When the Golden Key was pressed close to the shining secret door, which was made up of runes interlocking against each other, a golden arrow of light immediately shot up to the sky through the clouds...

In the sky, there seemed to be some kind of energy that was faintly responding to the golden arrow of light. Then, on the ground, the mysterious runic shining door on the miniature fort made out of light soundlessly opened.

It revealed a simple passage built from stones. It looked extremely long, deep and dark.

Right at this moment, from the entrance to the valley far away, a figure suddenly appeared. In a few seconds, the figure managed to

reach a rock that was 50 meters away from the entrance.

Lord Mo Long seemed to sense something, and he humphed loudly. He waved his hands and ordered his subordinates to quickly enter.

When every single person had entered, Lord Mo Long took the Golden Key out and quickly entered the door as fast as lightning before it vanished.

When he was standing in front of the stone passage, he suddenly stopped and turned around. He looked at the surrounding outside the secret door, as if he wanted to give the enemy that was following him a mortal attack. The figure hiding behind the rock didn't move an inch, as if she was never there before. When Lord Mo Long discovered that no one was following him, he breathed a sigh of relief and slowly closed the secret door, disappearing. Only the Ancient Teleportation Portal was left, as if nothing happened there at all.

The figure stood up, feeling a little unresigned as she took a small step out.

Suddenly, there was a black hand that crept up from behind her, then grabbed onto that figure's chest.

"Eh?" That figure's body froze, as if she never thought that there would be someone who would ambush her. However, her reaction was very quick, within 0.1 seconds, she had already took out the Silver Dagger on her waist and swung it behind, towards her

ambusher.

“Are you trying to kill your husband?” Yue Yang appeared from behind. He stuck his body close to the figure, one holding the figure’s chest, and the other holding her hand that was holding the dagger. The figure’s body froze once again as she turned her head in surprise. It was none other than Xia Yi. When she saw Yue Yang, she was surprised, happy, angry, embarrassed and anxious. She struggled and scolded: “It’s you? Are you still not letting go!”

“Ah!” Yue Yang pretended to be an obedient child and quickly let go of her hand that was holding the dagger.

“I’m saying your other hand!” Xia Yi was completely pissed off. What kind of person was this?!

“Ahem, this is actually a custom from my hometown. When we want to surprise our best friends, we grab their chests. Xia Yi, I’ve journeyed so far to find you, isn’t this a nice surprise?” Yue Yang slowly let her go, very reluctantly. Under Xia Yi’s angry glare, he even smelled his hand to sniff her lingering scent. This almost drove Xia Yi mad.

“The custom in my hometown is to beat someone that we haven’t seen for a long time up, to surprise them!” Xia Yi really wanted to bite Yue Yang to death.

“Oh really? Your hometown’s custom is not as cool as my hometown’s custom... Actually, in my hometown, there is also another custom of hugging when we meet our friends. If you don’t

mind, I can demonstrate for you. This is all for knowledge, you should study it a little.” Yue Yang prepared to give Xia Yi a big hug.

“Go away, stay away from me.” Xia Yi threatened Yue Yang with her dagger and didn’t let him come near. She was afraid that he would really hug her. She was more afraid that her heart would soften because of that.

“Girl, you got thinner.” Yue Yang pretended to be concerned about her and touch Xia Yi’s face.

“It’s none of your business.” Xia Yi was originally very moved, thinking that with those few words of his, the hardship she had suffered all this while was worth it. But she suddenly noticed something wrong. Then she realized that this brat only said that as an excuse to feel her body. She was so pissed off! This guy was too much! He could even lie about his concerns for her. Other than perverted thoughts in his mind, was there anything else in that stupid brain of his?

“That’s okay then, I initially wanted to give you some new clothes.” Yue Yang looked a little wronged as he grumbled out.

“Give me.” Xia Yi’s heart immediately softened. It was good that he still remembered to give her presents. She was afraid that he forgot her completely.

“I designed it especially for you. Look at this, do you like it?” Yue Yang took out a piece of lingerie. It was made of lace, and it was transparent, its material as thin as cicada’s wings. It felt very soft

to touch, but as for its uses as a piece of clothing, it looked like there wasn't much difference between wearing and not wearing it...

“...” With the piece of lingerie in her hands, smoke seemed to come out from Xia Yi's head. She wanted beat him up, but she knew she wouldn't be able to hit or catch him. She got even angrier.

This brat, he was definitely born to piss her off!

He probably came here just to make her cry.

So, she must definitely not cry.

Xia Yi bit her lips and took a deep breath. After she took back the tears that were about to fall from her eyes, she promised herself that no matter what, she would not let him see her weakness.

She took the transparent lingerie and put it away. Pretending she was all cool, she asked: “This young master, what are you doing here instead of doing perverted things to your big-breasted female slave? Oh, right. You idiot, why didn't you rush inside just now... You just watched them go inside and did nothing? There might be treasures inside. You, you are really an idiot!”

Yue Yang quickly explained, “I was waiting for you, you know? You didn't rush inside, so of course I will stay behind with you!”

Xia Yi immediately recognised it as an excuse, and she shouted in frustration: “You stayed behind me so that you can ambush my chest, is that it?!”

“Ahem, I am a true gentleman, the role model of virtue amongst the youths in Soaring Dragon Continent. I’m a pioneer, the driving force of a better, new generation of community. How could I do such a shameless thing? You have completely misunderstood me.” Yue Yang clenched his fist and said in a serious tone. Xia Yi almost fainted to the ground. Oh my god, was there an even more shameless person than this brat in this world?

“So, how does your hand feel?” Xia Yi coldly glared and asked Yue Yang.

“Nothing much!” Yue Yang shook his head.

“Nothing much?!” Xia Yi immediately exploded, just like a cat whose tail had been stepped on. He molested her, and even said the feeling was nothing much?!

“Uh, that, I mean, I didn’t feel it very clearly.” Yue Yang quickly explained.

“You touched it for a long time, and you didn’t feel it very clearly?!” Xia Yi looked at Yue Yang in disdain.

“It’s too small... I touched for a long time, but I can’t find-” Yue Yang had not finished speaking when he was sent flying with a

punch by the furious Xia Yi, who had gone berserk. Seething with anger, Xia Yi was completely furious as she took out a giant axe, waving it furiously at Yue Yang as she chased after him, “Die! Right now! I will send you to a special hell for shameless guys like you!”

Half an hour later.

When Yue Yang opened the shining secret door, before entering the stone passage, Xia Yi’s fury had not dissipated yet, so she gave a punch on Yue Yang’s back.

Yue Yang quickly reminded her: “Hey, you are the one who said ceasefire. Didn’t you say we should look for treasures first, then flirt – no, I mean, then we divide the treasures... My dear Miss Xia Yi, you shouldn’t be too petty as a person, you have to have a big chest (means big heart in English)!”

Xia Yi wanted to forgive him in the beginning, but when she heard ‘big chest’, she couldn’t help but to explode in anger again: “Yes, I AM petty, and my chest is not big! Why don’t you find a cow with a big chest to help you search for treasures? I’m not going to bother with a spoiled young master like you! Let me go, let me GO!” Yue Yang was grabbing onto her arms, so she tried struggling free, but seeing that she was unable to let go, she gave up on struggling. Actually she didn’t intend to go, but she was angry and she thought that this fellow didn’t care about her feelings at all. He knew that her chest wasn’t big, but he always teased her about them. How could she not be angry?

Yue Yang chuckled, “There are different flavours. I can’t be

eating one type of flavour every day. I should be eating eggs on some days. People shouldn't be too picky."

Xia Yi rolled her eye when she heard this.

She reckoned that amongst all the guys in the world, only this Yue Clan third young master could say such things.

She had seen many shameless people, but even the most shameless person would seem humble compared to this young master. He was simply unrivalled in shamelessness!

With regards to Yue Yang's shameless words, Xia Yi humphed as she retorted determinedly: "What do you mean eggs? Who do you mean eggs? I am at least an apple, a big apple!"

"If I don't listen to my conscience, I will agree with you." Yue Yang had not finished speaking when Xia Yi pulled out her giant axe again.

"Just go ahead and say it one more time..." Xia Yi's giant axe was raised high, hanging right on top of Yue Yang's nose.

"Alright, alright, you are an apple. Apple laptop, Apple Daily (a newspaper in Hong Kong)!" Yue Yang replied with a shaky voice. Although Xia Yi didn't understand what was Apple laptop and Apple Daily, she had a feeling that it wasn't a good name. She felt that he was calling her flat.

Actually, Xia Yi wanted to chop this despicable fellow with her axe.

However, she suddenly changed her mind.

She threw out her axe.

Yue Yang froze. Not good, this girl was going to cry!

Just as he was thinking on how to comfort her, he suddenly saw Xia Yi started taking off her clothes. She took off her leather armour and revealed her body that was only wearing an undergarment. In an instant, her virgin smell touched Yue Yang's nose. Looking at her flawless naked body, Yue Yang's chin almost dropped to the ground. He speechlessly looked at her, thinking that this girl must have gone insane. Was she really thinking of 'attacking' him?

Xia Yi pulled Yue Yang's right hand, then pressed it against her chest.

"What on earth-" Yue Yang was completely shaken. This, was this a dream or reality? Was this some kind of mistake? This kind of action, only Sky Law would dare to do it!

"Is it apple or egg?" Xia Yi asked calmly.

"A-apple!" Yue Yang replied on reflex.

“Thank you... Now you can go and die!” Xia Yi sent a flying kick to Yue Yang who was still in a daze. Then, she calmly wore back her leather armours and black thief clothes.

“It’s not a dream!” Yue Yang who had fallen on the ground, smelled his hand and suddenly jumped up from the ground. To Xia Yi’s shock, he held her hands tight and said: “Pretty lady, how do you do. I am Yue Yang, people call me the third young master of the Yue Clan. My house is the Yue Clan Castle in Soaring Dragon Continent. I have a lot of money, I am handsome and talented. I am affectionate, I have good character and excellent temper. I am also a really good friend...”

Before he managed to say ‘I can warm your bed, please take me in’, he was sent flying with Xia Yi’s punch.

Chapter 597 – Wyvern Valley, Heaven Realm Draconians!

Stone Passageway.

Even if it was Yue Yang's first time coming here, he could tell that the stone passageway behind this secret door would definitely not lead to Gu Feng Continent.

Even though the gravity here was similar to Gu Feng Continent's, but along the entire stone passageway, there was a type of formless power of the Ancient Code, almost as though it was sealing something. Yue Yang had felt this type of force from the seal that was sealing the Scarlet Emperor in the Dragon's Lair. However, Yue Yang was comforted by the fact that the power of the Ancient code here was not as strong as that of the Ancient Seal used to seal the Scarlet Emperor. Or else, another enemy like the Scarlet Emperor would just cause Yue Yang to be dizzy.

It was hard enough to kill the Thousand Goblin King, Yue Yang still wanted to take a breather for a while.

Cultivation caused experience accumulated from battle to transform.

A breakthrough to a new realm.

Yue Yang would never be satisfied with the mere strength of Innate Level 8. Although he could now skip levels and battle with

Heaven Rank rankers, but after all was said and done, there still existed even more powerful enemies like the Scarlet Emperor. Yue Yang didn't dare to be complacent with his training for even a second.

“How did you open the secret door?” Xia Yi suddenly recalled this matter.

“What else but with the gold key?” Yue Yang answered, grinning brightly. His smile stunned Xia Yi with a look and shortly after, her face turned a bright red. She lowered her head to avoid looking at him, softly saying: “Smiling just like a lecherous wolf, so unsightly!” She was unwilling to admit that she was attracted by Yue Yang's smile, defending herself while meaning otherwise in her heart, purposely saying that his smile was unsightly... Actually, Yue Yang's smiles had long become a kind of “bewitching” skill, causing the fairer sex to be charmed.

It was only natural for girls like Xia Yi who argued with him often on the surface but secretly longed for affection and romance to be even more charmed.

With just a smile of Yue Yang's, her heart would skip a beat.

Even though she continuously called it unsightly, her heart was thumping like the beat of a drum and she couldn't help lower her gaze and steal a few looks at him.

She was unable to explain why she insisted on being at loggerheads with Yue Yang all the time either. Actually,

everything that happened before was simply a minor misunderstanding, and she knew that he actually treated her very well, only enjoying provoking and teasing her.

He always left the young girl without any face, thus, she wished that he would treat her a little bit better.

To not bully her like this!

“I thought you didn’t have the golden key?” Xia Yi recalled that only Lord Mo Long possessed a gold key, and when entering, it was still in his hands. No matter how quick his hands were, he would not have been able to steal it. Just now, he got her to turn her back to him, and then he managed to open up the secret door. The question was, how did he do it? Did he make a duplicate of the key? It seemed to be the only possibility! Only, how did he duplicate it? Could you actually make a duplicate of the gold key?

“I made a fake one. Ha, the secret door isn’t a person and won’t be able to tell it apart. I deceived it!” Yue Yang grinned, incredibly pleased with himself.

“I knew you were a huge fake!” Xia Yi purposely snorted, but she was actually quite delighted in her heart. Although this fellow was quite lecherous, his capabilities were still rather admirable.

“Is this your praise for me? Thanks!” Yue Yang paid no mind at all to her words. Seeing his self-satisfaction was evident, Xia Yi wished for nothing more than to pounce on him to give him a ruthless bite. Or else, her hate would never dissolve.

Reaching the end of the stone passageway, they arrived at a gigantic cave.

There were seemingly infinite number of passageways scattered about inside, leaving them at a loss on which path to take.

If Xia Yi had come alone, she would be left completely helpless in the face of this maze-like cave.

Now though, the situation was different. She looked to Yue Yang with full confidence in him. She couldn't find the way out herself, but he definitely could. Such a tiny little maze would definitely fail to stump him, after all, he could even clear the Five Elements Palace and the Death Arena.

Such a tiny little maze was basically child's play.

As expected, Yue Yang easily figured out the correct path that Lord Mo Long took.

He summoned the Quintet Gold Seeking Mice and five mechanical mice appeared. They begun tracking down Lord Mo Long's remnant scent. Even though Lord Mo Long had already used a special technique to conceal his scent and set off a few small animals with strong scents to mislead any possible enemies, all these tricks were ineffective on the Quintet Gold Seeking Mice. Their main tracking ability was their sensing capabilities.

As long as Lord Mo Long left any abnormal energy, he should not even bother attempting to evade the Quintet Gold Seeking Mice's search.

After successfully making it out of the maze-like cave, they meandered their way through a large mountain wall.

Passing through multiple mountains caused them to feel somewhat uncertain.

Eventually when the paths slowly converged, Xia Yi and Yue Yang saw the light.

Distantly, there appeared an extremely small ray of light up ahead, the exit... Yue Yang and Xia Yi felt a burst of joy. Although they could adapt to the dark, they still preferred brightness. Having spent a significant amount of time walking in the cave, their moods grew melancholic. After all, humans were more adapted to life above ground.

Carefully advancing forward, Yue Yang and Xia Yi discovered that up ahead, near the exit was a seemingly man-made beehive-like cave.

Countless exits, densely packed, just like something akin to a mesh arranged in front of the main exit's two sides.

Yue Yang and Xia Yi concealed themselves at a smaller exit.

Taking a peek, immediately, they let out gasps of surprise at the outside world.

The small exit that the two of them stood at was actually a rest stop for beasts with flying capabilities. Below was a bottomless cliff and in front, tens of thousands of Wyverns were flying about everywhere, occasionally letting out a loud cry, producing continuous bursts of up and down beats of the “Wyvern’s Song”. Some of the Wyverns, having been tired out by flying, would enter those beehive-like exits to rest. Others would carry food that was dripping with blood, entering to feast.

In a distance, there was an extremely high mountain peak that was peeking through the clouds.

Similarly, there were countless Wyverns circling it, except that their colours, build, rank and power were comparably higher than the rest.

“This is, this is the legendary Wyvern Valley!” Xia Yi’s complexion changed drastically as she watched and her small hands held onto Yue Yang’s arm tightly: “I heard that there is an incredibly terrifying Wyvern King that is even scarier than the Demon Kings of Demon Abyss. If the Wyvern King ever left Wyvern Valley, then the entire Gu Feng Continent would be destroyed! I remember when I was younger, my mother told me that the Wyvern King was a terrifying existence...” She said shakily.

“Are you sure your mother wasn’t just scaring you?” Yue Yang didn’t find the Wyvern King as terribly scary.

If the Wyvern King existed in the Tong Tian Continent, then it was a beast below Innate Level.

A beast that had truly formidable power was not the Wyvern, but the Giant Dragon.

Moreover, Xia Yi might have been mischievous in her childhood and thus her mother had only said so to scare her, which led to leaving an affect on her psychologically.

What's more, regular people have incorrect impressions on power. To a regular person, Innate Level One Rankers were very powerful, Innate Level Five and above ranked Heavenly Royal Guards were very powerful, Demon Kings, who were at least Innate Level Nine and above, were also very powerful. To a regular person, all three of them didn't have much differences, because they were all unimaginable existences that a regular person would never be able to put up resistance against. However, switching to Yue Yang's perspective was a different matter altogether. Innate Level One Rankers were a flash kill; Innate Level Five and above Heavenly Royal Guards were also easy to defeat; Innate Level Nine and above Demon Kings were barely enough to be a well-matched opponent.

Xia Yi's mother seemed to be a regular person with not much strength.

In other words, she basically could not clearly tell apart the differences in strength between a Wyvern King and a Demon King,

only knowing that they were both incredibly fearsome.

If not for the existence of an Ancient Seal-like power of the Ancient Code here, Yue Yang wouldn't even care.

What Wyvern King?

Wasn't it just a flash kill trophy?

Don't even mention Yue Yang, even the Reaper Mantises had killed many Wyvern Kings.

If Yue Yang was to let loose the Reaper Mantis, all of the tens of thousands of Wyverns in the canyon would be so scared they would flee with their tails tucked between their legs.

“No. The Wyvern King is a very fearsome existence, reportedly, having killed countless in Gu Feng Continent. Many of Gu Feng Continent's most powerful were slaughtered by the Wyvern King. And since most of Gu Feng Continent's most powerful were extinguished, we were unable to defend against the Demon Abyss Army's attack and came under Demon Abyss's rule to be enslaved by the Demons.

“Don't be afraid, let's survey the situation first. Relax, there's still me.” Yue Yang noticed that Xia Yi was frightened to the point of having her lips turn pale and hurriedly comforted her gently.

“...” Having been comforted by him, Xia Yi felt herself relax

much more but her small hand still held onto his arm, unwilling to loosen her grip.

Yue Yang noticed that there was a few black spots quite far in the distance, seeming quite abnormal in the midst of all the Wyverns.

He used his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision to take a look and was rather stunned.

It was because, he saw a rather peculiar life form, a type that didn't belong to any group of life form existing in Tong Tian Continent. After a battle in the Heaven Realm, Elder Nan Gong had gifted Yue Yang a book. That book was said to have been written by Elder Dan Qing from the time of the Prison Emperor, recording 3,600 types of common life forms in the Heaven Realm and 108 peculiar life forms.

Those unusual black dots up ahead were one type of the hundred and eight peculiar life forms.

Heaven Realm Draconians!

This type of Heaven Realm Draconians were very similar to humans, however, they were taller. Regardless if they were male or female, their average height would be two meters and above, and they had retractable dragon wings on their back. The men were especially handsome while the women were generally plain, some even ugly. The complete opposite of another life form of the Heaven Realm, the Heaven Realm Demons. The males of the Heaven Realm Demons were ugly while the females were dainty

and enchanting.

During combat, Heaven Realm Draconians mostly had women to form battalions and attack the enemy.

The males of the Heaven Realm Draconians all held a governing position and every male possessed more than ten women.

Aside from reproducing and protecting their territories, males of the Heaven Realm Draconians basically didn't participate in any battles, which in other words meant, aside from petty rivaling for women, they all didn't know how to fight.

This type of male of the Heaven Realm Draconians were given the title of "Laziest Parasitical Men" in the entire Heaven Realm and on the receiving end of much disdain from other races ...Most unusual was, this type of lazy males of the Heaven Realm Draconians were unexpectedly put under the same category of "Most Irritating" existences in Heaven Realm along with the males of the Heaven Realm Demons, who spent their lives battling and greatly enjoyed plundering other races.

Heaven Realm had a phrase: The most despicable race does not exist, only Heaven Realm Draconians are more despicable than others!

Yue Yang found it hard to understand.

Why were Heaven Realm's parasite-like Heaven Realm

Draconians here? And who exactly sealed these parasites in this Wyvern Valley?

However, Yue Yang could immediately understand one thing. The Black Hell King wanted to borrow the strength of the Heaven Realm Draconians. In layman's terms, the Black Hell King was prepared to set the Heaven Realm Draconians free. Although Lord Mo Long was a leader of the Demon Abyss, even the blind could see that the real mastermind was the Black Hell King. Furthermore, he should be Black Hell King's subordinate, Thunder of the Center, that Thunder Lizard Commander's subordinate.

Lord Mo Long wasn't here to search for treasure. He was here to negotiate terms of cooperation with the Heaven Realm Draconians.

Yue Yang rejoiced inwardly, fortunately, he had discovered the matter in time.

If not, letting these Heaven Realm Draconians of the Wyvern Valley run loose would just be another pounding headache... They were the scariest parasites, loathed universally, with a trash reputation to match and notorious existences in the Heaven Realm.

Chapter 598 – Human Faced, Beast’s Heart (Two-faced)

“The Demonic Mirror has already absorbed the blood in the blood pond for one whole month, isn’t it enough? Although we don’t care about the lives of those female slaves, but after thousands of years, there were only 700 female slaves that were reproduced. Right now we have already sacrificed 300, but there is still no reaction from the world inside the Demonic Mirror. All our female slaves are about to be depleted!” There was a Heaven Realm Draconian who was wearing a golden crown, grumbling very unhappily to Lord Mo Long.

“Master said that it is very difficult to open the world of the Demonic Mirror. Maybe we need more time!” Although Lord Mo Long’s abilities were far below the other party, his attitude was neither servile nor overbearing.

“I asked you to offer more people here as a sacrifice, but you only offered a few whenever you come here. They couldn’t even compare to a single female slave, there was no sincerity at all in your offering! You should have sent us a few hundreds or thousands of people for sacrifice...” Another Heaven Realm Draconian who was wearing a silver crown humphed.

“I can’t do that. If we do that, we will attract our enemies’ attention. If we attract too many people here and words get out, the consequences will be unimaginable. You will never be able to imagine how strong that Yue Clan third young master is. He can defeat Heaven Realm Warriors and capture Abyss Manatees which were Heaven Rank Level 2. Moreover, those Abyss Manatees were

elites of the elite that were only born after thousands of years. The Abyss Manatees were some kind of Guardian Gods to the Sea Clan, but they were only beast slaves to the Yue Clan third young master! It's not like my master is looking down upon you Heaven Realm Draconians, but you won't be able to defeat Yue Clan third young master even if your whole clan comes. Your only advantage is your numbers... As long as he leaves Tong Tian Tower and entered the Heaven Realm, your numbers and my master's stratagem could easily shake the Soaring Dragon Continent and occupy the entire Tong Tian Tower." Yue Yang understood everything after listening to Lord Mo Long.

These Heaven Realm Draconians were cannon fodders that the Black Hell King found.

Black Hell King wanted to borrow the Heaven Realm Draconians to divert his attention.

The crafty Black Hell King was trying to open the golden barrier, enter the Divine Grimoire and obtain the treasures inside to fight a war attrition with Yue Yang. However, Black Hell King will never know that the treasures inside had already been taken away by the Phoenix Sister and Qilin Girl Bing Yin. Moreover, on what basis did the Black Hell King think about contracting the Divine Grimoire?

It seems that these parasitic Heaven Realm Draconians were really cannon fodders found by the Black Hell King to distract his attention.

With the strength of the Heaven Realm Draconians they were not

bad as a chess piece.

If he did not dispatch Xia Yi back to the Gu Feng Continent to search for problems, then after these Heaven Realm Draconians escape and wreck havoc in Tong Tian Tower, he would really be too busy to pay attention to Black Hell King and allow him to recover his injuries and succeed his plot.....

Unfortunately, the heavens will not let him have his way!

Xia Yi already discovered this secret, so Black Hell King's plan to release the the Heaven Realm Draconians to deal with him would fall through and become his enjoyment!

“What Yue Clan Third Young Master, there is nothing to fear from such an inferior race. Only we, Heaven Realm Draconians, are the most outstanding life forms. Our strongest ancestors could reach Heaven Rank Level 8 and we also have elders at Heaven Rank Level 5, that insignificant Yue Clan's Third Young Master would be toast. In the past, our ancestors possessed even stronger subordinates than the Abyss Manatee elites. They possessed Ancient Pythons, Nine-headed Demon Dragons and Golden Crown Wyverns. Any of these servants was stronger than Abyss Manatees!” The Heaven Realm Draconian with a golden crown disdainfully sneered.

“.....” Lord Mo Long did not speak. He wanted to say that ‘although your ancestors were glorious, that was the past and not the present!’

“Based on the current speed of sacrifices, we would still not be able to escape after a month!” a Heaven Realm Draconian with a silver crown strongly shouted with dissatisfaction “We can’t endure for another day. Freedom, we need freedom! Our wings need to soar into the wide skies and not in this wretched Wyvern Valley. I can’t stand very single grass and every single tree in this place anymore! We must escape from this place immediately . I can’t endure staying here for another day anymore. I don’t care how many slaves get sacrificed, the more the better. Being able to sacrifice themselves for use noble men would be those lowly slave’s life’s greatest honor.”

“That’s right. We must quickly make more sacrifices.” Another Heaven Realm Draconian with a silver crown spoke and nodded in agreement.

“Then everyone should sacrifice five more slaves each!” The Heaven Realm Draconian with the gold crown made a decision.

“Prince Bo Lun, please endure for a bit longer! Every single Heaven Realm Draconian female is still at least Innate Rank Level 5. Sacrificing every one of them in a single instance is too pitiful. Please wait for at least 19 more days.” Lord Mo Lun advised.

“Don’t use those lowly and ugly female slaves? Don’t mention them on equal terms with us noble and handsome males. They are only slaves, dying for us is their destiny. We have already killed 10,000 wyverns and killed 300 female slaves. I do not care about killing 300 more. 19 days is not long but no one can guarantee that the Demonic Mirror would open after 19 days. We need to quickly see results, understand? We can’t continue waiting..... Wyvern

Valley is the place of our humiliation, so we can't endure this place anymore. Only the vast and boundless Heaven Realm is the place where we noble Heaven Realm Draconian belong. After conquering Soaring Dragon Continent and Tong Tian Tower, we would immediately return to Heaven Realm. A small place like Tong Tian Tower could never contain us. Our wings need to soar a vaster, wider sky. You lowly mortals will never understand!" The egotistical and arrogant Heaven Realm Draconian Leader used an overlooking position to ridicule Lord Mo Long.

"Fine, everything is as you will!" Lord Mo Long did not oppose anymore.

Yue Yang felt there was a deep meaning when the Black Hell King sent out this 'weak' Lord Mo Long. A normal person would definitely be unable to endure this Heaven Realm Draconian's arrogance, but this Lord Mo Long definitely suited the task due to his good disposition.

Lord Mo Long's attitude served to ignite and grow the Heaven Realm Draconian's arrogance.

The more he lowers his attitude the more these Heaven Realm Draconians become unbridled. Only then could they prevent frightening these Heaven Realm Draconians, who were only at Innate Level 8. The more arrogant they became, the more they did not place the enemy in their eyes and the more Black Hell King became happy. After the Heaven Realm Draconians make a complete mess of Tong Tian Tower, who would remember Black Hell King's existence?

Distracting people from the source of the calamity was the reason why Black Hell King would release them.

Luckily, Yue Yang came to find Xia Yi and accidentally discovered this Wyvern Valley, or else he would truly receive a headache. That said, if there is no strong Heaven Realm Draconian inside the Wyvern Valley, then Yue Yang could determine that these Heaven Realm Draconians have degenerated and there was already nothing to fear.

In the records, Heaven Realm Draconians were at least Heaven Rank, so they were extremely strong!

However, after being sealed in this Wyvern Valley for thousands of years, these surviving Heaven Realm Draconians had already become rubbish. The strongest was only Innate Level 8, while the weakest was only Innate Level 6. What was unexpected was that..... The only thing that did not change was their arrogant attitudes. In their eyes no one was their equal! Just like in the records, they were extremely dislikeable!

A few Heaven Realm Draconian had already flew higher with Lord Mo Long at this time.

Yue Yang predicted that they were planning to sacrifice more people.

He very carefully evaded the wyverns and teleported with Xia Yi a few times to reach the valley floor.

The valley floor was incredible dirty and filled with the smell of blood.

Animals and insects scattered in disarray.

On the underbrush, tens of thousands of wyvern corpses were thrown everywhere.

Some of them had already rotted to a high degree, some had still had dripping blood on them as if they were just killed. They could all be seen everywhere. Xia Yi kept vomiting as she saw this vile and infuriating scene.

Beside the wyvern corpses were naked female corpses.

There were old and gray-haired elderly, little girls, and most of them were middle aged women. Their reason for dying were all the same, loss of blood. Their throats were cut open, hearts were dug out, they all died after losing all the blood in their body. The thing that made Xia Yi unable to endure her anger was that before their deaths every single one of them were sullied, even those little girls that were only a few years old..... Their breasts had been cut apart and their lower bodies were all maliciously violated, some of them even had a wooden stake run through them..... Their state of death was too horrible to endure watching!

“Kill them all, these bastards are all trash! They do not deserve to live in this world!” Xia Yi tightly gripped Yue Yang’s arm. Hot tears on Yue Yang’s furious clenched fist.

On the summit of the Wyvern Valley, there was a huge altar.

There was a newly built blood pool on top of it.

There was a single Demonic Mirror inside the blood pool, absorbing the energy of the blood. This Demonic Mirror was a Holy Ranked treasure that emitted an evil aura.

The hundred wyvern all let out mournful cries as they were killed. While they made their final struggle, huge amounts of fresh blood sprayed out from their throats and splashed on the Demonic Mirror. They were being killed one by one and their corpses were thrown down to the valley floor. The surviving wyverns tried to escape in fear, but nothing was capable of flying above the Wyvern Valley. They could only hover back into their nest and await for the time they will be sacrificed.

Because there were almost ten thousand of them, there should at least be half of them surviving.

Only half of them surviving.

That was the wyverns' fate.

The fates of the female Heaven Realm Draconians were ten times more tragic than those domesticated wyvers, especially when Prince Bo Lun decided to add them to the sacrifices.

Every single female Heaven Realm Draconian were losing their

heads out of fear as they looked at Queen Qi Ge. She was the one who gave birth to Prince Bo Lun and was the only princess who survived in her generation. Although her position was not high, she was the only woman in the entire tribe who could offer words of advice to Prince Bo Lun.

“Your Majesty, we... we have already sacrificed 300 of our sisters. The elderly and the middle aged had all become sacrifices. Quickening the sacrifices is good but if we reduce the amount of sisters then we might not succeed in hunting. Please reconsider this your majesty. Your graces, please also think about it. If the number of female slaves decreased, then there is no way to be as perfect as the past.” Queen Qi Ge was the mother of Prince Bo Lun and other princes. She was the only woman who gave birth to more than ten male Heaven Realm Draconian. If it was not due to this, then she would have already become a sacrifice.

Queen Qi Ge kneeled on the floor and served her son.

She used the most respectful voice, hoping to change her son's mind, to slow down the sacrifices and use people from the outside to substitute people from the clan.

All of the female Heaven Realm Draconian crawled on the floor, using their limbs to petition. Although their numbers were more than the male Heaven Realm Draconians and their strength was not inferior to males, they were in an inferior position even to female slaves. Males were the only ones who made decisions.

Males could at anytime decide their deaths.

Even if they were their mothers or their sisters.

In response to her begging, Prince Bo Lun gave Queen Qi Ge a kick. Fresh Blood sprayed out from her mouth and she rolled backwards. He gave her another kick to the chest before she was able to get back up. And then he spoke with an overbearing attitude: “Slut, are you talking to me? Do you know who is the strongest person in the entire Wyvern Valley? It is me. I had successfully defeated father to become the new king! It has already been a year, do you not understand your new role? Do you think you are still my mother? Without father protecting you, you are my toy, a prostitute that I hated for years. Father had always kept you as his exclusive property. He wouldn’t even allow me to touch you. Now that he is dead, what have you become? You have become a toy, a commodity for me to humiliate everyday. Do you think that father could protect you for life? You are too naive. Its funny how you think that you still have the qualifications to talk to me. You slut, the only reason I kept you alive is to humiliate you for a long time, not because you are my mother nor the queen..... Allowing you to continue being the queen is a type of humiliation for father, to let everyone see my power. The once powerful Wyvern King had already been killed by my hands. His wife and queen had already become my spoils of war..... Do you understand? I am the new Wyvern King who decides everything!”

“That’s right. I also hate this slut. Before father died, this slut had refused to sleep with me many times.”

“Slut, it seems that the humiliation she received is not enough!”

A few silver crowned men went up to kick Queen Qi Ge, who was spitting out blood.

They were all her sons.

After they worked together to overthrow the previous Wyvern King, they had become the new rulers.

When the female Heaven Realm Draconians saw this, they all began to sob.

Inside the tribe, they begun to cause a disturbance and some even thought of pleading for mercy, but they were all beaten up by the dozens of male Heaven Realm Draconians there.

Lord Mo Long pretended to be blind. He looked at the scene in front of him, as if he could not see anything.

As for the mercenaries that accompanied him to search for treasures, they had already become sacrifices. Only two of Lord Mo Long's assistant were alive. They strongly held back their fears without even daring to let out a peep.

Quietly, Yue Yang and Xia Yi had reached a hundred meters away from the location.

Although Yue Yang used his qi to cleverly mask the energy fluctuations around Xia Yi, the main reason they were able to get so close was due to the crying voices and the disturbance caused by

the Heaven Realm Draconians. Xia Yi had already pulled on Yue Yang's arms a few times, indicating that he should ignore her and just kill them all, kill all of those male Heaven Realm Draconians.....

However, Yue Yang did not do this, because only now did he discover the secret to Xia Yi's bloodline!

Chapter 599 – Worse Than A Beast

Although Yue Yang could understand why Xia Yi would be angered to the extent of wanting to attack immediately, he still chose to stop her.

He still needed to gain a better understanding of it all.

He needed more time to understand the inner realm of the Demonic Mirror, the secrets surrounding the sacrifices of the Heaven Realm Draconians or even Xia Yi's ancestry.

If this was Black Hell King's scheme, acting rashly would only cause the situation to worsen. Regarding those bastardly males of the Heaven Realm Draconians, Yue Yang shared an extreme hatred for them with Xia Yi. Men like them were just like parasitic maggots. If you let such a race that was more disgusting than maggots escape, it would definitely cause the downfall of Tong Tian Tower and Soaring Dragon Continent.

“Shhh!” Yue Yang gently held Xia Yi's small hand, signalling for her to calm down

With Xia Yi's small hand in his grasp, she cooled down significantly.

She struggled slightly.

Seeing that her small hand was unable to struggle free, she just

let Yue Yang hold onto it. She rolled her wide eyes at him and whipping her face away from him, not letting Yue Yang see her face gradually redden. Perhaps due to the mistreatment of males from the Heaven Realm Draconians, in comparison, Yue Yang's comfort and protection left her feeling gradually warm up in her heart.

Even though he often argued and disagreed with her, he never treated her like those worse than beast-like males of the Heaven Realm Draconians.

Xia Yi knew that Yue Yang only enjoyed teasing her.

The selfish, cruel and unfeeling Heaven Realm Draconians could not even compare to the dirt under his shoes.

“Come out, you, you and you, get over here and sacrifices yourselves!” Wearing a gold crown, the Prince Bai Lun pointed at the women kneeling on the floor. The women that he chose were all older or generally plainer-looking, leaving the younger and prettier ones.

“...” The women of the Heaven Realm Draconians, who were chosen, paled.

They had been through such eliminations many times, thus, the ones who were older or uglier had already become sacrifices.

Regarding death, they had already mentally prepared themselves

for it. However, there were some women who thought that they could get away from such a fate, but because of the sacrifices happening more often, there was a higher demand for people, and so in the end they were also unable to make it out alive. The women who were chosen stood up with ashen faces and shaking bodies. They hugged their sisters who had not been chosen and bid farewell. Before, they had also sent off their mother's generation this way and now it was their turn.

The girls who had yet to be chosen burst into tears.

They hugged their loved ones who were about to become sacrifices tightly, unwilling to let them go.

Xia Yi watched on angrily, there were even a few pregnant women with swollen bellies picked out... A few young girls who were willing to volunteer to take their place stepped forward only to be slapped by Prince Bai Lun before they could say anything.

“Just let them live, they can contribute more people for our people. If you let them live, there will be more female servants.” Queen Ji Ge, who was covered in blood, crawled to Prince Bai Lun, tightly hugging his legs, pleading him: “Leaving Wyvern Valley will cause many of our people to die, the children in their bellies are best for helping further populate us.”

“Let us take their place!” A few young girls rushed forward, kneeling alongside Queen Ji Ge to plead.

“Get away, we don't need more burdens! We don't need the

female servants in their bellies and we don't have the patience to spend years waiting for them to slowly grow up. We have more than enough women, no matter how many beauties we want, we can always capture them. The higher ups of the Demon Dragons will also send in large numbers of beauties from Tong Tian Tower's each race for our enjoyment. I don't care at all for ugly and lowly servants like you that cause me to lose my appetite with just a look!" Prince Bai Lun pulled at Queen Qi Ge's hair while slapping her, causing her to bleed profusely from her mouth.

"My Lord, they can't all be girls, there could be boys too." Queen Qi Ge forced herself to bear the pain and bitterly plead for Prince Bai Lun to let the pregnant women to live.

"If they are boys, then they deserve to die even more! I won't let any of the younger generation take my throne, the title of Wyvern King forever belongs to me, do you understand? Such an evil and disgusting slut, what are you even trying to hide? Did you really think I didn't know? I know your intentions, you raised both me and those whores' children so that we could fight amongst each other for the throne... Disgusting slut, let me tell you, stop dreaming! I'll never fall for your scheme! Wyvern King's Throne will forever belong to me, and it can only belong to me, The Great Bai Lun!" Prince Bai Lun angrily threw Queen Ji Ge to the floor and kicked her away forcefully.

"That's right, we cannot follow the same old road to ruin." A few of the males of the Heaven Realm Dragon race wearing silver crowns had an expression of sudden realisation.

"Thinking of Father and Uncles' deaths with unresolved

grievances, perhaps in the future, you will also die in your own son's hands in order to gain what you have now. Brothers, think carefully, do you all still want the children in their bellies?" As expected, with Prince Bai Lun's words, the males of the Heaven Realm Dragon race who still held some pity for the pregnant women immediately began supporting Prince Bai Lun, joining in cursing Queen Ji Ge's poisonous intentions.

"..." Lord Mo Long closed his eyes, pretending to be unaware.

Two of the assistants were trembling like a bundle of nerves with ashen-white faces.

Xia Yi no longer bothered to convince Yue Yang to attack. She knew, he would definitely strike.

And, he would definitely pick the most opportune moment to strike. Xia Yi sneaked a look at Yue Yang and noticed that his eyes were slightly closed. His hands were reaching forwards, waving his hands towards the Demonic Mirror that was more than a hundred metres ahead, as though tracing the Heaven Runes.

Telekinesis was an ability that many Innate could do but doing so with a distance as far as a hundred meter was a feat that not many succeeded at.

Most importantly, Yue Yang's telekinesis, that was virtually undetectable, was even harder to achieve. One must note that there were around three hundred Heaven Realm Draconians who were at least Innate Level 5 and above. To be able to hide your

ability from those three hundred and also perform telekinesis with a distance of a hundred meters was unimaginably difficult. Xia Yi watched with bated breath, afraid she would disturb Yue Yang.

She knew definitively that he was attacking the Demonic Mirror. As to why he was doing so, she had yet to figure it out.

Was it to close up the portal in the Demonic Mirror, to prevent the Heaven Realm Draconians from ever leaving?

“Strip! Strip off all your clothes lowly servants, before your deaths, I grant you all one last honour of serving royalty!” Prince Bai Lun glanced at the hundred over female servants who had been chosen to become sacrifices and felt it would be somewhat wasteful to have them just die like that. Thus, he decided to toy with them one last time so that they could serve their proper purpose.

“Let’s play with this old bitch. I remember back then she had always refused to join us in our beds. If we don’t take the chance before her death, we’ll never have a chance again.” Two men who were wearing silver crowns stepped forward and tore off Queen Ji Ge’s clothes, exposing her old and declining body ruthlessly. Queen Ji Ge knew that there was no point in resisting and so she shut her eyes bitterly, her tears rolling down to mix with the blood on her face to become tears of blood.

“I can’t even look, her breasts are all withered and sagging!” One of the men wearing silver crowns carelessly toyed with Queen Ji Ge’s body.

“I remember when we were younger, they were still very big when breastfeeding. Our Father, that old thing, must have enjoyed it all to himself. Dammit, we should have killed him sooner. Early on, that old thing was already useless, yet we still kept waiting. How idiotic we were.” The other man with a silver crown also start to strip, and even pulled out his vulgar thing, ready to sully Queen Ji Ge’s mouth: “Slut, open up your smelly mouth, if you can’t fully satisfy us, then we won’t mind making your daughters sacrifices!”

At the other side, Prince Bai Lun ordered women to serve him while enthusiastically attending to Lord Mo Long: “Have whoever you want. They’re all lowly female servants anyway.

Lord Mo Long respectfully lowered his head: “Prince Bai Lun, thank you very much, I would love to accept your bestowal. However, my body’s composition is different and I’m unable to enjoy them.”

Hearing that Lord Mo Long was unable to enjoy the female servants that he bestowed upon him, Prince Bai Lun burst into laughter: “Failure, I can’t help myself but say, you are such a failure of a man. What kind of man are you if you can’t even enjoy women? Such a pity. No wonder your higher ups allowed us high and mighty Heaven Realm Dragon race to leave, it turns out the women of the Tong Tian Tower are all waiting for us to bring them joy...”

Lord Mo Long’s complexion changed slightly, but still chose to restrain himself.

A male of the Heaven Realm Draconian grabbed onto a young girl

who was barely a few years old and tore off her clothes.

At a side, a woman who seemed like her mother dropped down on her knees and pleaded piteously : “My lord, she is just a child, and she isn’t a sacrifice either. Please let me take her place, I will serve you to the best of my ability...”

Her pleading was only answered with a slap.

How Xia Yi wished she could charge forward and kill that damned man of the Heaven Realm Draconian. However she could not do so as she worried that her own moment of recklessness would affect Yue Yang’s on-going plan. Yue Yang tightly shut eyes opened and nodded at Xia Yi with a hint of weariness. “Success!”

Success?

Xia Yi had not even reacted before she discovered the Demonic Mirror that was sucking blood suddenly showed a blinding crimson red light.

The inner realm of the Demonic Mirror was open!

A light shot out of the Demonic Mirror in the altar’s blood pool, forming a mysterious crimson red portal.

A stone tunnel seemed to appear in the Demonic Mirror.

Further in, there was even a small space that should be the inner realm of the Demonic Mirror.

On the exterior of the Demonic Mirror, there were many different types of runes, shining and dazzling, just like stars. Except, there were some differences between the stars in the sky and the runes... they shined with an unusual and sinister blood red glow. Seeing that the portal to the Demonic Mirror's inner realm had been activated, Prince Bai Lun and the other males of the Heaven Realm Dragon race were so excited that they could not even be bothered with the women and dashed into the blood red portal.

The women of the Heaven Realm Draconians, who were about to meet a cruel end and those who were about to be sullied, managed to get away this time.

The girls, who made a lucky escape, burrowed themselves into their mother's embrace and both burst into tears.

Queen Ji Ge allowed her two sons to toss her to the ground.

Xia Yi excitedly held onto Yue Yang's hands

She knew that this was all his doing.

If not for him, the Heaven Realm Draconians could sacrifice a hundred women, and even then they might not have succeeded.

Except, she didn't quite understand. Why did Yue Yang help the Heaven Realm Draconians? Nevermind saving those pitiful women, why did he have to open up the inner realm of the Demonic Mirror?

“Guess?” Yue Yang smiled slightly, causing Xia Yi to feel both joy and angry, wishing that she could take a ruthless bite out of his arm.

Chapter 600 – Go Die You Scums

On top of the altar, Those female Heaven Realm Draconians, who had just received a new lease in life, embraced each other.

They rejoiced that they were able to narrowly escape.

Just a bit more and 100 sisters would have become sacrifices. They were lucky that the the world inside the Demonic Mirror opened.

Lord Mo Long showed a flabbergasted expression. It vigilantly looked at the surroundings, searching for something suspicious. With Lord Mo Long's strength, it was impossible for him to discover Yue Yang or Xia Yi. Moreover, there were still 300-400 female Heaven Realm Draconians crying and cheering after being moved to this new lease in life by its side.

The entire place was in chaos and filled with tears.

However, this was definitely excitement, recovering after despair vanished.....

Although they had almost become sacrifices, the opening of the Demonic Mirror world had completely infected them.

They believed that all their hardships have ended.

One by one, they embraced each other, reluctant to part with the Wyvern Valley. Everyone of them orderly entered the Demonic Mirror.

However, reality was incomparably cruel. After 40 women entered, the Demonic Mirror suddenly reached its limits and no one could enter anymore. If the number was calculated, then the Demonic Mirror could only contain 100 people. Those women who have already entered discovered that their sisters could not enter anymore. They immediately cried and some of them ran back out.

They held back their tears as the most senior of them made arrangements. They planned to let the youngest enter first, for example, those young children.

“Bang, pack, boom!”

Those few girls, who had entered, were heartlessly thrown out by Prince Bo Lun.

It was clear that these girls did not suit his tastes.

He wanted strong and young women, not little girls.....

Queen Qi Ge had now supported those that have been thrown onto the ground. Her face that had just eased from despair suddenly change. She used her fastest speed to push away those pregnant women that had been refused to enter, telling them to quickly leave, leave far away from the altar.

However, it was too late.

Prince Bo Lun once again walked out of the Demonic Mirror.

He coldly stared at Queen Qi Ge and stared at those pregnant women. His intention was clear and every woman also understood it. Prince Bo Lun wanted to leave but he was unwilling to leave behind future threats..... If girls were inside the bellies of those women, then it would be good. But, if they were male, then the Wyvern Valley would be able to populate itself. In the future, the men would increase, and they would definitely mature and steal the throne, just like how Prince Bo Lun stole his father's throne!

“Your Majesty, once you leave, you would return to Heaven Realm. We would forever be trapped in this Wyvern Valley without any means of escaping. Please leave us a bit of bloodline! We are willing to send the best female slaves to serve you.” Queen Qi Ge clenched her teeth and led the women to kneel down, once again begging for mercy.

“They must die.” Prince Bo Lun ruthlessly sneered.

In his eyes, the pregnant women must die.

Queen Qi Ge must also be executed. He would absolutely not leave her and the pregnant women as future threats.

Without any men inside the Wyvern Valley, they would be

quickly die out. Prince Bo Lun would absolutely not leave a single male even if it was a fetus. The Demonic Mirror was going to bring them away. In the future, there might be someone else who would enter and bring the women away. Prince Bo Lun would absolutely not give them this chance. Even if he was not going to live here anymore, he would not let it fall in someone else's hands.

“No, Your Majesty. Please leave us a bloodline!” Empress Qi Ge painfully wailed as Prince Bo Lun ruthlessly trampled on her body.

“Stop it.” A young woman charged over and lied on Queen Qi Ge's body to stop Prince Bo Lun from trampling her.

“Damn slut. You dare offend me?” Prince Bo Lun Was startled and thought that this little sister wanted to attack him. Seeing that it wasn't so, he became calm and immediately lit the fire in his heart, holding up the little sister's hair and knocked her head down the ground: “Women are born slaves. A lowly slut like you dare to charge against this supreme Wyvern King? You are courting death!”

Prince Bo Lun pulled out the jeweled sword from his waist and chopped down.

Queen Qi Ge shrieked and quickly used put her hands together to clasp the sword.

Although it was clasped, the sword qi had already injured the young woman's back and blood flowed down.....

Prince Bo Lun was so angry that his chest heaved up and down. He angrily charged against Empress Qi Ge and roared: “You brazen whore, you actually dare block me?”

At this time, all of the female Heaven Realm Draconians were stunned.

Although it was Empress Qi Ge, this was still the first time they had seen someone resist men like this.

“Sister, kill him and seal the Demonic Mirror. We will live peacefully in this Wyvern Valley. We can have a new king and slowly think of a way to escape. There must be a different way. A thousand years ago some of our sisters were also able to escape..... We must kill Bo Lun or else we will die! He is not a good king. The king that we need is not him!” Empress Qi Ge was a Level 7 Innate, so she was no match for the Level 8 Innate Prince Bo Lun, but she hoped that more sisters stand up and work together to kill Bo Lun and then seal the Demonic Mirror.

“What?” Every women were stunned. The thought of rebelling had never come to their minds, so they could not immediately respond.

“I will kill all of you!” Prince Bo Lun used his strongest power to capture Queen Qi Ge.

The Heaven Realm Draconians behind him all came back out and attacked the stunned women.

With a strong assistance, Prince Bo Lun became even more full of himself.

He grasped the neck of the Queen Qi Ge and raised her high: “Haha, I could finally see it. You lowly bitch, it seems that you had already planned to kill me early on. I knew that you would not easily acknowledge me.”

Queen Qi Ge painfully coughed up blood as she spoke in phrases, helplessness filled the depths of her eyes: “In the past..... I had never thought of killing you..... it was..... you..... who changed. It was you who thought of killing the tribe..... power had already been degenerated by you..... Kill me. I do not care..... Under your rule..... those who died..... were stronger than those who lived..... You do not suit the position of king, you are only a crazed bastard who wants to..... seize the throne..... You do not understand..... how to value. You are bound to..... fail in the future.....”

Prince Bo Lun’s angry face warped as his eyes reddened.

He used his sword to make a cut on Queen Qi Ge’s chest and crazily laughed: “You want to die? It won’t be that easy! I will peel all you skin and turn it into undergarment. I want to eat your flesh for every meal and drink your blood, forever turning you into a meat slave! You whore, you actually dared to plot a rebellion? Who bestowed you with this authority. Do you want to lead the women to declare war against the men? Did you think that these damned slaves are like you? Did you think that they dared to challenge my might? Spit! They are born sluts, born slaves! Come men, kill all of the women that have connections to this whore. If any of you

slaves dare to object, I will kill you! Remember this, I am Wyvern Valley's king and I can punish you anytime. You are all just lowly slaves! As long as you are obedient, you can obtain the life that I can grant you and leave this Wyvern Valley..... Anyone that dares to challenge my authority, this whore Qi Ge will be your example!"

A few women that had been born by Queen Qi Ge had been dragged out by the silver crown wearing men.

A few married women, who were Queen Qi Ge's little sisters, were also dragged out.

Even if these people were their closest sisters, those silver crown wearing men did not care about this. In their eyes, these were only slaves that could be killed anytime.

"Waa waa!" A little girl, that was around 8-9 years old and had been hidden behind, begun crying as she saw that her mother and sister were about to be killed.

Even if they wanted to hide her, it was already impossible.

She charged forward ignoring the crowd around her.

She embraced the bloodied Queen Qi Ge and shouted mom, mom.....

Prince Bo Lun lifted his feet high up and prepared to trample her into meat paste!

Lord Mo Long covered its eyes as it could not look on. Even if it was known as the most merciless, most ruthless, most ferocious Demon Abyss Leader, it discovered that he was nothing compared to these Heaven Realm Draconian men!

Queen Qi Ge's eyes were calm and silently hugged her daughter, awaiting death. Death was a type of freedom and they did not need to fear anything anymore. It was better to die than live under this rule. The daughters and sisters beside her wailed and charged over to give her a tight hug, awaiting for execution.

Every Heaven Realm Draconian women kneeled down to , bid Queen Qi Ge farewell.

Many people were regretting everything.

If they had immediately listened to Queen Qi Ge's instruction..... But there were not ifs in this world. They could only cry and miserable curse their fate.

“Stay your hand.” Xia Yi jumped out. Naturally, she was not short tempered as she asked Yue Yang's approval first. She was like a valiant knight, angry at the injustice. She used her furious voice to shout: “You scums, stay your hand! I thought that I had seen trash before, he was the world most despicable, shameless, vulgar and despicable scum, but I never imagined that scums like you do not even deserve being called scums. You are the world's most disgusting maggots!”

Prince Bo Lun was stunned. He never expected that a stranger would appear.

Lord Mo Long's eyes widened larger than a lantern.

Although he had never met Xia Yi, she could still guess her identity.

Those female Heaven Realm Draconian stupidly looked at Xia Yi. They were all baffled, they simply could not understand how a young lady appear in this Wyvern Valley, that was cut off from the rest of the world. Moreover, she dared to come out and settle the record. Shouting against the men like her was something they never imagined!

The silver crown wearing men began to smile: "Haha, it's a beauty. My god, it's really one of those rumored human beauty! Her looks are too great!"

Xia Yi suddenly became angry: "What are you looking at! I will gouge out your lewd eyes!"

Other than Yue Yang, she would not allow other men to size up her body, let alone these damned scums.

Prince Bo Lun laughed loudly: "It's really a beauty, moreover a spicy one. I heard that human women have spicy personalities. But This is good, conquering them would be more pleasant! Little beauty, with your strength, coming to Wyvern Valley is only

delivering yourself on a plate. Haha, What a fresh vegetable. Brothers, step aside. This king will have the first taste, in the future you can play with her.”

“Before that, I’ll have to trouble you to ask whether the sword in my hand agrees or not.....” Yue Yang stood on top of the Demonic Mirror and yawned. He had been sitting on top of the Demonic Mirror for a while now but because they were stunned of Xia Yi’s appearance, they had completely ignored him.

“Ah!” When Lord Mo Long saw Yue Yang he almost had a heart attack.

“Who are you?” Prince Bo Lun was once again stunned. How could stranger pop up in Wyvern Valley one after the other?

“I am her finacee.” Yue Yang shamelessly answered. Xia Yi coquettishly stamped down her foot but did not deny it. He stuck out for her so instead of being angry, she was secretly happy but feigned anger.

“Choose 100 slaves and I’ll exchange with you!” Prince Bo Lun could not measure how strong Yue Yang was so he did not dare recklessly make a move.

“My woman is my treasured darling. Even if you used the world, I would never exchange for it.” Yue Yang used the number one line for picking up girls. When Xia Yi heard this, her heart was filled with sweet honey as she bashfully hanged down her head, not daring to look at him and especially did not refute she was his

woman. Her heart had already melted when he said ‘treasured darling’.

“.....” Every female Heaven Realm Draconian looked at Yue Yang with flabbergasted expressions. Even in their dreams, they never imagined that there were still men who treasured their woman.

“Since you don’t want to exchange, then I’ll steal.” Prince Bo Lun was angry. He waved his hand: “Brothers, let us go simultaneously, steal!”

“Don’t act on impulse. He is the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master.” Lord Mo Long finally could not endure keeping quiet. He immediately knelt down in front of Yue Yang and kowtowed: “Third Young Master, my master has something to say. If I saw you, he told me to pass his goodwill. My master is willing to stay hidden forever in Heaven Realm and never set another foot on Soaring Dragon Continent. Please grant his wish. It’s better to squash enmity than to keep it alive. My master is willing to compensate for everything and turn you into a friend.”

“I’m sorry, I don’t have the time to negotiate right now.” Yue Yang raised Hui Jin Magic Blade and Crescent Moon. In front of everyone, he used Hui jin Magic Blade to penetrate the Demonic Mirror and slice with Crescent Moon.

First slash, Earth Splitting Slash! The silver crowned man that had just moved in front of Xia Yi and was about to turn Xia Yi into a hostage was instantly cut in half by the sword qi without any resistance.

Yue Yang's beautiful control had allowed the sword qi to disappear just as it was about to reach Xia Yi's nose.

Killing an enemy without harming a single hair on Xia Yi.

Even if the Black Hell King personally came and saw Yue Yang's skill, his heart would grow cold as he saw Yue Yang's improvements.

Countless Heaven Flames burst out from Yue Yang's body, turning the Wyvern Valley into a valley of Heaven Flames..... When Yue Yang stamped his feet on the ground, a raging pillar of flame shot out like a fountain from the ground, directly sending a slower silver crowned man into the sky as he painfully burned to ashes.

Prince Bo Lun's mouth trembled. He was just about to say something when he saw a fire whip coming down at him.

The sword in his hand had been lashed in half.

The injury caused by the Whip of Agony could be said to be the heaviest in the world..... It ignited Prince Bo Lun's internal organs, burning his insides. Yue Yang floated down the Demonic Mirror and used his foot to step on Prince Bo Lun's head: "The sole founder of the Heaven Realm Draconian, Heaven Dragon Emperor, gives his decree: All men in Wyvern Valley must commit suicide on the orders of the sovereign, none shall be spared!"

Xia Yi looked at his god-like might. Her heart became moved that she raised her hand and shouted: “Go die all of you scums!”

Lord Mo Long knew that everything was over as he immediately fainted on the ground.